BX 5037 .B6 1842
Bramhall, John, 1594-1663.
The works of the Most
Reverend Father in God,
v.5

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

https://archive.org/details/worksofmostrever05bram

THE WORKS

OF

ARCHBISHOP BRAMHALL.

THE

WORKS

OF THE

MOST REVEREND FATHER IN GOD,

JOHN BRAMHALL, D.D.

SOMETIME LORD ARCHBISHOP OF ARMAGH,
PRIMATE AND METROPOLITAN OF ALL IRELAND.

WITH

A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR,

AND A COLLECTION OF HIS LETTERS.

VOL. V.

OXFORD:
JOHN HENRY PARKER.
MDCCCXLV.

OXFORD:
PRINTED BY I. SHRIMPTON.

PROPERTY OF
PRINCETON
THEOLOGICAL

PREFACE.

The present volume contains Part the Fourth (and last) of Archbishop Bramhall's Works, which with the Index completes the publication. The volume consists, partly, of several tracts upon various theological subjects, written at different periods, but published for the first time, after Bramhall's death, in the folio edition of his Works, and reprinted here from that edition; and partly also, of three sermons, being the whole of those published by Bramhall himself during his lifetime, reprinted also from the folio edition, as the original sermons in their separate form have not been met with. A considerable number of sermons, in addition to these three, were it appears prepared by Bramhall for publication, but were accidentally destroyed[a]. And some funeral sermons of his are also mentioned[b]. The criticism of Dean Comber however[c], who records the occasion and circumstances under which one of these was delivered, is so far borne out by the three sermons still existing and here published, that it is not pro-

[a] See the Life of Bramhall, above in vol. i., p. xxxiv.

[b] For Mr. Slingsby, Lord Strafford's secretary, who was slain in the civil wars, at Gisborough Jan. 15, 164$\frac{2}{3}$ (Whitelocke's Memor., p. 63). His body was carried to York, and buried in the Cathedral there, after a sermon by Bramhall, "who" (says Rushworth, vol. v. p. 774), "had a large experience of him." Also for Sir Christopher Wandesford (Dean Comber's Mem. of Wandesford, p. 140), whom he had attended at his death (id. ibid. p. 132). Another sermon, entitled "The Loyal Prophet," preached at St. Peter's in York (i. e. the Cathedral) on Monday July 13, 1668, at the Summer Assizes, by Will. Bramhall, Rector of Goldsbrough and one of his Majesty's Chaplains (4to. York 1668), is erroneously attributed to Archbishop Bramhall in the Preacher's Guide.

[c] Bramhall, says Comber (as just quoted, p. 140), "was not either by nature or study much of an orator." And compare what Vesey himself says of him in his Life, above in vol. i. p. xiv.; and the quotation from Thurloe's State Papers, given above in vol. iii. p. 23. note f.

bable the loss of the remainder has much diminished their author's reputation. The Sermon upon the Restoration (Discourse iii.) has been lately reprinted by Mr. Brogden[d]; and the Discourse to Sir Henry de Vic, of Persons dying without Baptism (Discourse v.), has also found a place in another series of republications[e]. Of both of these, of the other two Sermons (Discourses ii.[f], iv.), of the Answer to Captain Steward's Papers (Discourse vi.), and of the Reply to S. N.'s Guide of Faith (Discourse vii.), such account as is needed, may be found in the notes to the several Discourses and in vol. i. pp. xxxiii., xxxiv. Some account may be found also in the last-named place of the first Discourse in the volume, upon the Sabbath and Lord's Day. This, there is no doubt, was written about 1658 or 9 in Holland, although not published until 1677, after the author's death, in the folio edition of his Works[g]. It is not so plain however to whom it was addressed. The case stands thus. It appears from the tract itself[h], that a friend (unnamed) had requested Bramhall's opinion on the subject of it, some time apparently in 1658, in general terms; and that Bramhall had accordingly complied with his request by a "discourse" upon the question,

[d] Illustrations of the Liturgy and Ritual of the United Church of England and Ireland, vol. iii. pp. 471-502. 8vo. Lond. 1842. The Speeches at the end of the Sermon are omitted, and the Sermon itself not very carefully or accurately reprinted.

[e] Tracts of Anglican Fathers, vol. II. Pt. viii. pp. 153-159. Lond. 8vo. 1841, where it is reprinted from the folio edition very carefully and accurately, with the exception of a (seemingly intentional) alteration, obviously incorrect, in p. 174. l. 27. of this edition, the line being there read thus, "there may *not* be the same invincible necessity" &c.

[f] The prayer from the Scotch Liturgy (so to call it), prefixed to the Sermon before the Marquis of Newcastle (below pp. 89, 90), appears to have struck Bramhall; as he refers to it again five years later in his Fair Warning, c. xiii. (vol. iii. p. 283, Disc. i. Pt. ii). It is curious, that the very same prayer (for this Liturgy or rather Directory was in use and frequently reprinted as late as at least 1635), is quoted by the Covenanters themselves in the very same year (164¾),—in which the Sermon was preached, in the "Declaration of Reasons for assisting the Parliament of England against the Papists and Prelatical Army, by the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland" (Rushw., vol. vi. p. 472); where the aid given to the Scots against the French (as mentioned below p. 89. note a), and subsequently against "the general Popish faction" (in 1573, in the capture of Edinburgh Castle by English troops when held for the Queen by Kirkaldy of Grange), are assigned by them as reasons (not for supporting the king but) for assisting the English rebels.

[g] See above in vol. i. p. xxxiii. notes f, g; and below p. 74. note n.

[h] Below pp. 9-11, 74.

addressed to no particular controversy upon it, but treating generally upon the immutability of the ordinance of the Lord's Day, and upon the authority on which the change rests from the seventh day to the first. A fragment of a letter still exists, and has been printed above in vol. i. of this edition (pp. xcviii-ci. as Letter XI. of the series), which, as regards the place whence it was written, and in its contents, agrees exactly with the "discourse" thus described; and this fragment, which was copied and preserved by Bp. Barlow, is endorsed by him as addressed to Dr. (Nicholas) Bernard, sometime Dean of Ardagh and Chaplain to Archbishop Ussher, a person certainly upon terms of friendship with Bramhall[i]. If this letter be identical with the discourse, and if Bp. Barlow's endorsement be correct, it follows, that the tract (which was addressed to the same friend[j] who had elicited the preliminary "discourse") was likewise addressed to Dr. Bernard. It appears however further, from other passages in the tract, that subsequently to writing this "discourse," Bramhall accidentally met with a book written by the friend to whom he had addressed it, and with another by Dr. Heylin, either in answer to this book or to which it was an answer, and which last he describes as "in part upon the subject" of the Sabbath question[k]; that he was induced upon this to write a formal treatise upon the point (viz. the tract itself), in order to moderate between the two[l]: and that subsequently still, after his treatise was nearly completed, he received from England two books then just published by Dean Bernard[m], containing certain papers of Archbishop Ussher's (at that time recently dead), and two among the rest upon the Sabbath question, and the abrogation of the Irish Articles; of the existence of which, and of the controversy between Bernard and Heylin, which had arisen from

[i] See below p. 74.
[j] Below p. 11.
[k] Below p. 11.
[l] Ibid.
[m] Below pp. 74, 81. notes n. p.

them (or at least of Abp. Ussher's share in it), and which had in fact prompted the question originally put to him by his friend, he had been up to that time entirely ignorant. If Bernard then was really that friend, it seems inexplicable, that he should be mentioned by Bramhall in the closing section of his tract in terms, which seem to imply that then (while finishing the work) the Bishop had for the first time become aware that he was at all concerned in the matter. And if the terms in which Bernard is mentioned be not thought necessarily to imply this (which however they appear to do), it remains still inexplicable, on the same supposition, how Bramhall should then for the first time have discovered Ussher's connection with the dispute (which he affirms in plain words); since there is no book of Bernard's upon the subject which is not made up almost entirely of Ussher's own writings, and with Ussher's name prominently placed in the title-page, and no work of Heylin's in answer to Bernard which is not expressly directed in point of fact against Ussher rather than against his Chaplain[n]. Nor can we suppose, what, if allowable, would remove this difficulty, that the first section of the tract (where the treatises of Heylin and his opponent are mentioned) was written, as well as the last section, subsequently to the remainder of the work, and that one of Bernard's books described in the latter is to be identified with the "treatise" of the friend alluded to in the former. For the words of the first section are inconsistent with such a supposition; not to mention, that Bernard's books were sent to Bramhall from England, while Heylin's tract and his adversary's

[n] Heylin's Reply to Bernard is entitled, "Respondet Petrus or the Answer of Peter Heylin D.D. to so much of Dr. Bernard's Book entituled the Judgment of the late Primate of Ireland &c. as he is made a Party to by the said Lord Primate in the Point of the Sabbath, And by the said Doctor in some others. To which is added an Appendix in Answer to certain passages in Mr. Sanderson's History of the Life and Reign of K. Charles, relating to the Lord Primate, the Articles of Ireland, and the Earl of Strafford, in which the Respondent is concerned." Lond. 4to. 1658.

were accidentally found by him in a friend's possession, so that the last-named could not be identical with either of the former; and, lastly, that Bernard's books could neither of them be rightly described as a 'treatise by him' upon the Sabbath question, inasmuch as the fragments which are contained in them upon the subject, are not his at all, but Archbishop Ussher's. On the other hand, the Letter above referred to tallies so well with the description given of the "discourse," that it is hard to suppose them distinct. It is still less likely, that Bp. Barlow, who probably took his copy of the Letter from the original, should have endorsed a wrong address upon it. And in addition to this, it does not appear, that there was ever any treatise of Heylin's which could be said to be "partly" upon the Sabbath question, except his reply to Bernard[o]. It appears on the whole, then, that Bramhall's tract was probably addressed to Dean Bernard, although the editor can offer no explanation of the difficulties above suggested, which lie in the way of the supposition.

Subjoined to this Preface, for want of a better place, will be found a Letter of Bramhall's printed by Whitaker in his History of Richmondshire, the existence of which was unfortunately not known to the editor until the first volume of the present edition was printed off[p]. It should have appeared

[o] The only other book of Heylin's upon the subject at all in his History of the Sabbath which is about nothing else: not to add, that it was published so long before as 1636.

[p] Some letters of Bramhall's upon the state of the Irish Church, addressed to Laud, besides that found among the State Papers and printed above in vol. i. pp. lxxix-lxxxii, are mentioned in the Strafford Letters, vol. i. pp. 212, 331; ii. p. 101: but are unfortunately not preserved. And a curious paper, which may serve to illustrate Bramhall's opinions respecting rites and ceremonies (see above in vol. iii. p. 170, and below pp. 123, 215), has been rescued from oblivion in a dissenting publication of the last century, though with no very friendly motives; entitled, "The Manner of Consecration of the Bishops in Dublin by the Lord Primate in the year 1660," appointing (Sunday) January 27. (166$\frac{0}{1}$) for the Consecration (see the Life of Bramhall in vol. i. p. xiii), and signed "Jo. Armachanus." It consists of a rather minute programme of the Procession, Service, Anthem, &c., to be used upon that occasion, sent by the Primate "to those concerned, to the end that all things might be done in order;" and is printed at length in p. 338. of vol. ii. of a book by one Richard Baron called The Pillars of Priestcraft and Orthodoxy Shaken (8vo. Lond. 1768).

The opportunity may be here taken of clearing up two difficulties respecting dates, in Bramhall's Life, of no particular importance unless for the sake

as the first of the series then published, being earlier in date than any of them.

The following quotation, professedly taken from Archbishop Bramhall, which is found in a posthumous work attributed (although upon grounds far from conclusive) to Bp. Ken[q], is here added for the sake of its contents. Something to a similar purpose may be found in the Preface to the Replication to the Bishop of Chalcedon (in vol. ii.) and elsewhere in other works of Bramhall, but the passage itself does not occur. Whence Ken (or the author of the tract) derived it, the editor is entirely ignorant.

"He was a wise and good and reverend son of my bosom who said, 'that in the greatest maturity of his judgment and integrity of his conscience, when most redeemed from juvenile errors, popular fallacies, vulgar partialities, and secular flatteries, he declared, to the present age, and posterity, that since he was capable to move in so serious a search and weighty a disquisition as that of religion is; as his greatest design was, through God's grace, to find out, and persevere in, such a profession of Christian religion, as hath most of truth and order, of power and peace, of holiness and solem-

of accuracy. In vol. i. p. xi. note a. the writer in the Biographia Britannica is shewn to be mistaken in the date he assigns for Bramhall's return to England upon the Restoration. It appears (from White Kennet's Register, p. 288), that he had misunderstood his own authority; the Public Intelligence which he quotes, of Oct. 23, 1660, containing the tidings of Bramhall's arrival in that month, not at London, but in Dublin. In the same volume, p. xvii. note D, a discrepancy is noticed between Bp. Vesey and Browne Willis respecting the date of Bramhall's appointment to his Prebend at York; the former supposing it to have preceded Abp. Matthews' death in 1628, the latter assigning it to June 13, 1633. Willis, who had access to the York Registers, and gives a precise date, would be more probably right than Vesey, who speaks only in vague terms and with less authentic information; and any doubt upon the subject is removed by a letter of Laud's to Strafford, then Viscount Wentworth, dated July 30, 1631, from which it appears that Bramhall was at that date intended for the Prebend but not yet appointed. (Straff. Letters, vol. i. p. 58).

[q] Bp. Ken (as is *supposed*), in a tract entitled, "Expostulatoria: or, The Complaints of the Church of England against I. Undue Ordination. II. Loose Prophaneness. III. Unconscionable Symony. IV. Encroaching Pluralities. V. Careless non-Residence, now reigning among Her Clergy. To which is added a List of the non-Residents," &c. &c. 8vo. Lond. 1711. pp. 8, 9 (publ. after Ken's death) —speaking in the person of the Church of England, and quoting from "*Archbishop Bramhall.*"

nity, of Divine verity, and Catholic antiquity, of true charity and holy constancy: so he could not (apart from all prejudices and prepossessions) find in any other Church or Church-way, antient or modern, either more of the good he desired, or less of the evil he would avoid, than he had a long time discerned, and, upon a strict scrutiny, more and more observed, in the frame and form, in the constitution and settled dispensation, of the Church of England.' 'No where,' says he, 'Diviner mysteries, no where sounder doctrines, holier morals, warmer devotions, apter rituals, or comelier ceremonies. All which together, by a meet and happy concurrence of piety and prudence, brought forth such spirituals and graces, both in their habits, exercises, and comforts, as are the quintessence and life, the soul and seal, of true religion; those more immediate and special influences of God's Holy Spirit upon the soul, those joint operations of the Blessed Trinity, for the Justification, Sanctification, and Salvation of a sinner.' "

A. W. H.

October, 1845.

LETTER[a].

Noble Sir,

Amongst so many and so importante occasions to have but once thought upon a poore country friend had bene sufficiente: but as it is I thanke you, and rest yet more obliged. Your goodness makes a burthen imposed to seeme a curtesy, and a favor done to be a benefitt received. Practise and emploiment to a lawyer is beneficial, and may deserve thankes, but to you p'judiciall, only it affordes you matter for some virtue to worke upon. Day and night do not more duly succeed one another, than our hopes and feares of your success have done. Nowe we seeme to sayle in the haven, having intelligence of his Majestie's most gracious answer[b]; yet even now, whilest I am writing this letter, I heare newes of some disgusts, to speak plainly, a dissolution[c]. But your known wisedomes will not suffer me to hold it a thing possible. We offer dayly for you the tribute of our prayers. And when we heare of an happy end of this long session[d], will then stile it *parliamentum beatum, beatus ante obitum nemo*. My good friend and neighbour Mr. Moody is come upp to solicite you about his old hospitall business. I know how propense you have allwayes bene to do him good, and how needless it is for me to interpose my suite. It goes hard, that they must judge of superstition who doe not know what is superstition; that a diamond should be forfeited because it hath a specke or flawe; that piety should grow to be a

[a] From Whitaker's History of Richmondshire, vol. ii. pp. 152, 153. It was "found among the papers at Kirtlington," Wandesford's house in Yorkshire, and was "written about the year 1628, when Bramhall was Sub-dean of Ripon, and when Wentworth and Wandesford were on the point of changing their political connexions" (Whitaker, ibid.) See also the Life of Bramhall, in vol. i. of the present edition, p. iv.

[b] Viz. the answers of Charles I. to the Petition of Right, June 2 and June 7, 1628.

[c] Parliament was not dissolved until March 10, $162\frac{8}{9}$; but messages from the King were brought June 2 and June 5, declaring his intention of ending the Session on June 10.

[d] The Session began March 17, $162\frac{7}{8}$.

supplanter of charity, and the warrant of a parlament be no security from the process of an ordinary courte[e]. But I forgett myself and crave pardon. God bless you, keep you. And for mine owne parte, I shall rest a dayly oratoure for your whole house in general, and to yourself in speciall.

A most observante and

obliged friend,

JOHN BRAMHALL.

Ripon, June 18.

To his right worthy Frind Christophere Wandesford, Esq. at his Chambers in Westminster, these.

[e] This refers of course to Mr. Moody; but it does not appear what the particulars of his business were, further than the letter itself hints at them.

CONTENTS OF VOL. V.

Page

Discourse of the Sabbath and Lord's Day. Part iv. Discourse i. 3

Sermon on 2 Sam. x. 12, before the Marquis of Newcastle, being then ready to meet the Scotch army, preached in York Minster, Jan. 28, 164$\frac{3}{4}$. Part iv. Discourse ii. . 87

Sermon on Ps. cxxvi. 7, preached at Dublin April 23, 1661, being the day of his Majesty's Coronation: with two Speeches in the House of Peers. Part iv. Discourse iii. 111

Sermon on Prov. xxviii. 13, preached in St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin, June 16, 1661, before the Honourable House of Commons, at their solemn receiving the Sacrament. Part iv. Discourse iv. . . . 145

Short Occasional Discourses written while in exile: . 165
Viz.

1. Of Persons dying without Baptism; to Sir Henry de Vic. Part iv. Discourse v. . . . 167
2. An Answer to two Papers, brought by Captain Steward, Of Protestants' Ordination, and the Ministry of Reconciliation: with a Letter to Miss Cheubien. Part iv. Discourse vi. 181

An Answer to S. N.'s Objections against Protestants' Ordination in the Twentieth Chapter of his Guide of Faith. Part iv. Discourse vii. 193

THE WORKS

OF

ARCHBISHOP BRAMHALL.

PART THE FOURTH;

CONTAINING

THE DISCOURSES ON MISCELLANEOUS SUBJECTS.

DISCOURSE I.

THE CONTROVERSIES

ABOUT

THE SABBATH AND THE LORD'S DAY,

WITH

THEIR RESPECTIVE OBLIGATIONS;

CLEARLY, SUCCINCTLY, AND IMPARTIALLY,

STATED, DISCUSSED,

AND

DETERMINED.

BY JOHN BRAMHALL, D.D.,

BISHOP OF DERRY.

CONTENTS.

Page

SECTION THE FIRST.

The author's fears and doubts. 9
satisfied. 11

[*A. Of the Sabbath.*]

SECTION THE SECOND.

The question concerning the name Sabbath impertinent. . . . ib.
And [concerning] heathenish festivals. 12
And other weekly holy-days. . . . . ib.

SECTION THE THIRD.

Two questions concerning the Sabbath. 13

SECTION THE FOURTH.

I. First, whether it were a *moral* (or natural) law. . . . . ib.
Natural reason dictateth not the holiness of one day in the week more than another. 14
First reason;—[from the testimony of man's own conscience.] . ib.
Second reason;—[from the impossibility of the same day of the week being observed by all mankind. . . . ib.
Third reason;—[because the day has been changed.] . . 15
An objection answered. 16
Fourth reason;—[from the grounds of the commandment of the Sabbath.] 17
Moral upon supposition a contradiction. . . . 18

SECTION THE FIFTH.

II. The *positive* law of the Sabbath. . . . . ib.

Page

SECTION THE SIXTH.

First promulgation pretended, Gen. ii. . . . 19
1. Gen. ii. 3. no precept. . . . . ib.
First reason. 20
Second reason. 21
The first Sabbath. . . . . ib.
2. The meaning of Gen. ii. 3. . . . . ib.
The opinion of the Fathers. 22
Authorities answered. 23
[Origen. . . . . ib.
St. Cyprian. 24
St. Basil and St. Gregory Nazianzen. . . . 25
St. Athanasius. . . . . ib.
Epiphanius.] 26

SECTION THE SEVENTH.

The law of the Fourth Commandment. 28
[Conclusion.] 29

[*B. Of the Lord's Day.*]

SECTION THE EIGHTH.

Of the Lord's Day, the question not so great as some imagine. . 30

SECTION THE NINTH.

Five questions. 32

SECTION THE TENTH.

I. First, by what authority the Sabbath was changed. . . . ib.
[If not by our Lord's,—which there is no cause to doubt,—at least by that of the Apostles. . . . . ib.
Undeniable, that the Lord's Day is an Apostolical tradition.] . 33
First objection;—[that this would render it only a human law. . 36
It is not a prudential constitution merely. . . . 37
Second objection;—[that there is no precept in Scripture for the change of day. . . . . ib.
1. It is immaterial whether there be a *formal* precept. . ib.
2. ——————— whether there be a *written* precept. . 38
3. It is not so clear that there is no precept of the kind recorded in Scripture. . . . . ib.
Conclusion.] 41

Page

SECTION THE ELEVENTH.

II. When the Lord's Day began first to be observed. . . . 41
[Through the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age. . 42
And in the days of the Apostles themselves. 43
Rev. i. 10. . . . . ib.
The Judaico-Christian observance of the Jewish Easter and of the Jewish Sabbath or Saturday.] 44
1 Cor. xvi. 2. 47
[Acts xx. 7. 48
Acts ii. 1. 51
Passages in the Gospels. 55
Conclusion.] 58

SECTION THE TWELFTH.

III. Why the weekly festival changed from Saturday. . . . ib.

SECTION THE THIRTEENTH.

IV. Whether the Lord's Day may be changed. 61
[Such a change unlawful. 62
1. No sufficient authority. . . . . ib.
2. The ground of the ordinance prohibits a change. . . 63
3. The perpetuity of the duty prohibits a change.] . . ib.

SECTION THE FOURTEENTH.

V. Of the manner of sanctifying the Lord's Day. 64
[1. According to the law of nature. . . . . ib.
2. ——— the evangelical law. 65
3. ——— the positive law of God. 66
4. ——— human laws. 67
Conclusion.] . . . . . ib.

SECTION THE FIFTEENTH.

Objections out of the Homilies considered. 68
[The Homily of the Place and Time of Prayer.] . . ib.

SECTION THE SIXTEENTH.

The conclusion concerning my Lord Primate. 73
[1. Respecting the Sabbath and Lord's Day. . . . 77
2. ——— the Irish Articles. 80
3. ——— the Earl of Strafford.] 83

PRINCETON THEOLOGICAL

DISCOURSE I.

THE CONTROVERSIES

ABOUT

THE SABBATH, AND THE LORD'S DAY:

[FIRST PRINTED AT DUBLIN, A.D. 1676, AMONG THE AUTHOR'S COLLECTED WORKS[a].]

SECTION THE FIRST.

The author's fears and doubts.

You desired my judgment of the true state of the question concerning the Sabbath and the Lord's Day, indefinitely, without intimating any particular question now agitated about them. Whereupon I suspected, that either Theophilus Brabourne's[b] recanted error, of the perpetual morality of the Jewish Sabbath and an absolute necessity that all Christians were obliged to observe it everlastingly, had been revived to trouble the Church; or that Anabaptism had spread its roots wider and deeper in England of late, which doth not allow so much as a relative holiness of one day, or one place, or one person, more than another[c]; or, at the least, that the

[a] [For an account of this tract, and of the person to whom it was probably addressed, see the Preface to the present volume.]

[b] [Theophilus Brabourne was "an obscure schoolmaster, or, as some say, a minister, of Suffolk" (Wood, Ath. Oxon. ii. 541. ed. Bliss), who in 1628 published a book supporting the doctrine mentioned above, entitled "A Discourse upon the Sabbath Day, viz." (among other points) "that It is Not Abolished, and that the Lord's Day is not the Sabbath by Divine Institution" (Lond. 4to.); which he followed in 1632 by a second, under the title of "A Defence of that most Ancient and Sacred Ordinance of God, the Sabbath Day" (Lond. 4to., reprinted 8vo. 1660, according to Watts); and in 1654 by a third in answer to a Mr. Collings. He was summoned before Abp. Laud in 1634 or 5, and compelled to conform. See Heylin's Life of Laud, Pt. II. pp. 257, 258; and Fuller's Ch. Hist., bk. XI. c. ii. § 32.]

[c] [See Fred. Spanheim's Historical Narration of the Original &c. of the Sect of the Anabaptists, c. iv. p. 34. as translated into English and published at London, 4to. 1646.]

PART IV.

opinion of some eminent divines had sprouted up higher than formerly it used to do in our coasts, who have asserted a power and liberty to the Catholic Church, or to any particular Church, to translate the public assemblies of the present Church from the Lord's Day to any other day in the week, and to make that to be their Lord's Day; yea, with such a latitude as not to bind the Church to the septenary number, which, if it thought fit, might set apart one day in eight or ten for the service of God[d]. And although none of these did ever actually change the day, nor any of them ever go about to change it, that I have read of, except one[e] (neither do I condemn him, but leave the credit of the story to the author), yet I feared, lest this bold licentious age, under the mistaken notion of Christian liberty, (like Africa) might produce some such new monster: and according to my suspicion I applied

[d] [Such a doctrine was held by many eminent doctors in the Roman schools; as, e. g. Tostatus, Suarez, and (though less broadly) Thomas Aquinas: for whom see Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. vi. § 1, 2. But Bramhall doubtless refers to the similar doctrine held by nearly all the Reformers upon the subject, e. g. by Calvin (see the next note), Zuingle, Bullinger, &c.; of whom also a list with proofs may be seen in Heylin, ibid. § 6. (and see also his Respondet Petrus, sect. ii. pp. 17—19. 4to. Lond. 1658); where their doctrine on the subject is summed up under three heads, "1. that the keeping holy one day of seven is not the moral part of the Fourth Commandment, or to be reckoned as a part of the law of nature; 2. that the Lord's Day is not founded on Divine commandment but onely on the authority of the Church;" and "3. that *the Church hath still authoritie to change the day and to transferre it to some other.*"—Tindal and Frith are the only two Englishmen quoted by Heylin, but the former is one of the most extreme of the party.—"As for the Saboth," he says, "a great matter, *we be Lords over the Saboth*, and may yet chaunge it *into the Monday* or any other day, as we see neede; or may make every *tenth day* holy daye onely, if we see a cause why: we may make *two every weeke*, if it were expedient, and one not enough to teach the people. Neither was there any cause to chaunge it from the Saterday then to put difference betwene us and the Jewes, and least we should become servauntes unto the day after their superstition: *neither needed we any holyday at all*, if the people myght be taught without it" (Tindal, Aunswere unto Maister More's first booke, c. xxv. Works, p. 287. Lond. 1573).]

[e] ["Apud quem" (scil. CALVIN) "agitatum diu ferunt de transferendâ solemnitate Dominicâ *in feriam quintam*" (scil. Thursday);—Joh. Barclay, Parænesis ad Sectarios, lib. i. c. 13. p. 160. as published at Cologne in 1617 cum permissu superiorum:—quoted by Heylin. Calvin himself in his Institutes goes nearly as far as this:—"Si quis hanc numeri observationem ceu nimis argutam fastidiat, nihil impedio quominus simplicius accipiat; Dominum *certum* diem ordinasse" &c.;—"ita tamen *ut superstitiosa dierum observatio arceatur*" (Calv., Instit., II. viii. 31. p. 99. ed. Amstel. 1667, and margin);—and again;—"Non *sine delectu* Dominicam quem vocamus diem *veteres* in locum Sabbathi *subrogarunt;*"—and a little further;—"Neque sic septenarium numerum moror ut ejus servituti Ecclesiam adstringam; neque enim Ecclesias damnavero, quæ *alios conventibus suis solennes dies* habeant, modo a superstitione absint" (Id., ibid., 34. p. 100). Barclay was the author of the once celebrated Argenis, and is certainly a prejudiced witness. An account of him may be found in Bayle, in the 2nd. edit. of the Biogr. Brit., and in Chalmers.]

my discourse to the establishing of the perpetual necessity of observing the Lord's Day by all Christians, and the immutability of it. Neither do I shrink now from any thing I said then. DISCOURSE I.

Since, I found by chance in the hands of a friend two treatises, the one yours, the other Dr. Heylin's[f], written in part upon this subject. I confess, my cursory view of them was not sufficient whereupon to ground an exact discussion of the differences between you, but sufficient to direct me to the true state of the question; which, if I conceive rightly, doth not much concern those things which are truly controverted at this day in the Christian world. I shall deliver you my judgment clearly and succinctly, rather paring away what seemeth to me superfluous, than adding any thing that is heterogeneous, to encumber the question. satisfied. 908

[*A. Of the Sabbath.*]

SECTION THE SECOND.

As, first, I boggle not at the name of Sabbath applied to the Lord's Day, so we understand it rightly of an analogical Sabbath. The immutable law of nature doth require, that God be worshipped, and that some time be set apart for the worship of God. This indefinite time was limited to the seventh day by the positive law of God, as the day peculiarly designed to the public worship of God; which ordinance was to last as long as the Jewish polity; but that being expired, the first day was set apart to Christians for the same end. So, without controversy, our day succeedeth their day in the performance of that everlasting duty, which by the law of nature we owe to God. Those days which are designed to the same end, are capable of the same denomination. To be a sabbath, or a day of "rest," is common to them both. Yet, I confess, I judge other names more proper than that of Sabbath; either Sunday, in a civil dialect, or the Lord's The question concerning the name Sabbath impertinent.

[f] [There is some difficulty in ascertaining what "treatises" are here intended, arising from what is said below in sect. xvi. pp. 73, 74. An account of the matter may be found in the Preface to the present volume.]

PART IV.

Day, in an ecclesiastical. But to imagine, that because our day succeedeth theirs in the performance of that moral duty which we owe to God, therefore an express commandment to sanctify their day doth oblige us to observe our day, or therefore our Lord's Day is subject to the rules of the Jewish Sabbath, is just such another mistake, as if a man should argue thus,—Baptism succeedeth circumcision, therefore God's injunction of circumcision to Abraham doth oblige us to be baptized, or therefore all the laws of circumcision do bind Christians in Baptism. As the Sacraments are diverse, Jewish and Christian, so are their grounds.

And [concerning] heathenish festivals.

Secondly, neither do I trouble myself about those authorities or testimonies which are brought out of heathenish writers, to prove that the seventh and eighth days were esteemed holy by them[g]; because I esteem the whole discourse to be impertinent to our present controversy. For neither were those observations universal (as all the laws of nature are), nor the worship Divine worship, nor the object the true God; neither did they ground their worship upon right reason, but upon heathenish lies and fables. I might add, that they who make some of these allegations, do mistake the day of the month for the day of the week[h].

And other weekly holy-days.

Thirdly, I quarrel with no man about the other weekly holy-days besides the Lord's Day; that is, Wednesday, Friday, and Saturday. The two former were never esteemed festivals by the Church, but fasts[i]. Saturday was kept festival indeed, but neither universally in all places, nor perpetually in all ages[j]. Sunday alone hath been observed evermore and every where. All these impertinent debates, concerning the name of the Sabbath, or other heathenish or Christian holy-days, I do willingly pass by in silence.

[g] [See, for instances, Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. I. c. iv. § 8—10.]

[h] [The example is set by no less an authority than Clement of Alexandria (Strom., lib. v. Op. tom. ii. p. 713. Oxon. 1715), and from him and one Aristobulus by Eusebius (Dem. Evang., lib. xiii. cc. 12, 13; pp. 667, 668; 677, 678. Paris. 1628), of quoting from Hesiod (Op. et Dies 768) such lines as, "Πρῶτον ἕνη τετράς τε καὶ ἑβδόμη ἱερὸν ἦμαρ," and others of a similar kind from Homer, Linus, and Callimachus, as though they were parallel to the Jewish Sabbatical periods. But it was left to more modern divines (e.g. Ames, Medull. Theol., II. xv. 10. p. 294. Amstel. 1648) to quote them as directly relating to the seventh day of the *week* instead of to that of the *month*.]

[i] [See the authorities in Bingham, XXI. iii.]

[j] [Ibid., XX. iii.].

SECTION THE THIRD.

Two questions concerning the Sabbath.

Then to give you my sense of this present controversy clearly and succinctly.—The main questions which concern the old Sabbath, are two: first, whether the law of nature (which is properly the moral law) doth prescribe to all mankind the sanctification of this or that seventh day in particular, or any seventh day in the week indefinitely; secondly, if the law of nature do not prescribe it, whether it were imposed upon mankind by any positive law of God.

SECTION THE FOURTH.

I. First, whether it were a *moral* (or natural) law.

To the first question I answer, that a law may be called moral, either from the end, that is, to regulate the manners of men; and in this sense, without doubt, the law of the Jewish Sabbath was, and the law of the Christian Lord's Day is, a moral law. Or a law may be called moral from the duration of it; which is not made upon temporary respects, nor alterable according to the various exigences of times or places or persons. So a perpetual law is called a moral law, though it be no express precept of the law of nature. In this sense also, without doubt, the law of the Sabbath was a moral (that is to say, a perpetual) law; I mean, respectively to the Jewish Church, or so long as that Church, religion, and polity did continue. Therefore it is called a "perpetual covenant," and a "sign between" God and them "for ever." Exod. xxxi. 16, 17. Thirdly, the moral law, in the most strict and proper sense, doth signify the law of nature; that is, the dictate of right reason, that such and such things are good, [so] that it is disagreeable to the intellectual nature to omit them, and such and such things bad, so that[k] it is disagreeable to the intellectual nature to practise them, or approve them. Now,
909 before I answer positively, whether this law of nature do prescribe the observation of a seventh day, it is necessary to premise this distinction:—the law of nature is sometimes taken strictly, for the principles of moral honesty, and conclusions drawn evidently from them, which natural reason

[k] ["So bad that," in the folio edition; apparently by a misprint.]

PART IV.

doth dictate to all intellectual creatures; and sometimes more largely, so as to comprehend not only such principles and conclusions adequate to them, but moreover all such things as reason dictateth to all men to be consentaneous or agreeable to those principles or conclusions. In this second sense, it is undeniable, that the seventh day's Sabbath and the Lord's Day are both founded upon the law of nature: that is, the law of nature doth prescribe, that some time be set apart for the worship of God; and, in pursuance hereof, the positive law of God, or of the Church, doth set apart one day in the week for this time. But in the first and more proper sense, the law of nature dictateth nothing of our weekly account, or of the holiness of any one day in the week more than the rest.

Natural reason dictateth not the holiness of one day in the week more than another.

My reasons to make good this assertion, are four.—

First reason;—[from the testimony of man's own conscience.]

The first is taken from the testimony of every man's own conscience. Let any man examine the practical notions of God and of religion, which he findeth dictated to him by natural reason; and if his mind be serene, not clouded with unruly passions, nor diverted by exorbitant desires, especially if he have not extinguished those rays of heavenly light by a long custom of presumptuous and habitual sins, and so superstamped the image of Satan, or some brute beast, upon the image of God, already much decayed by the fall of man; he shall find, that the light of natural reason doth dictate to him, that there is a God, and that this God ought to be worshipped, and some time set apart for His service; but he shall find nothing at all of the computation of time by weeks, much less of one precise day in the week to be dedicated to the service of God. This knowledge is derived unto us, either by the revelation of God, or by education and the institution of man; as is confessed by the greater part of them, who stand for the perpetual morality of the Sabbath in this stricter sense.

Second reason;—[from the impossibility of the same day of the week being observed by all mankind.]

My second reason is taken from the absolute impossibility of observing one and the same precise day in the week by all mankind; by reason of the different rising of the sun in several countries, insomuch that our midnight is noonday with our antipodes; and much more, by reason of the impossibility of distinguishing one day in the week exactly from

another in many countries, who have no evenings and mornings distinguished by the setting and rising of the sun, but all day, or all night, for two months, three months, four months, five months together: whereas the laws of nature are common to all mankind, and oblige all mankind, whomsoever, whensoever, wheresoever; they are the indispensable rules of justice in God Himself. Positive laws are made "ἐπὶ τὸ πλεῖστον[l]"—for such cases as do usually occur. In extraordinary cases, the law-giver may dispense with his own ordinances. But there is no dispensation with the law of nature, being the eternal rule of justice in God Himself, and imprinted by Him in the heart of man. And therefore, seeing, that not only the precise observation of one and the same day in several countries, but also the exact and distinct observation of any one day in seven in many countries, is often impossible, it followeth demonstratively, that the law of nature doth neither prescribe the observation of one and the same day precisely to all men, nor the observation of one day of seven distinctly to some men.

Third reason;—[because the day has been changed.]

My third reason is, because the law of nature is immutable and indispensable, as being a copy of the eternal rule of justice in God, and therefore called the image of God, much decayed by original sin, but not quite defaced. All other things are turning shadows upon the old exchange of this world, but in God alone there is "no shadow of turning by change." Therefore the Schools do teach us, that God doth often "will a change," but never "change His will[m]." To will a change, argueth a change in us, not in God; as a crown and a sword may hang immoveable upon the roof of a house, yet a man may remove himself from under the one to be under the other: but if God should change His will, He should be
910 mutable Himself; for the will of God is God Himself[m].

[James i. 17.]

[l] [See Aristot., Ethic., V. xiv. 4.—"Ἐν οἷς οὖν ἀνάγκη μὲν εἰπεῖν καθόλου, μὴ οἷόν τε δὲ ὀρθῶς, τὸ ὡς ἐπὶ τὸ πλέον λαμβάνει ὁ νόμος, οὐκ ἀγνοῶν τὸ ἁμαρτανόμενον."—The argument in the text, from the different length of the day in different countries, may be found in full in Bp. White (Of the Sabbath, pp. 175—180. 3rd edit. 1636), and Heylin (Hist. of Sabb., Pt. I. c. iii. § 2, 3).]

[m] ["Velle mutationem"—"Mutare voluntatem." Thom. Aquin., Summ., P. Prima, qu. xix. art. 7.—"Quod non est in Deo aliquid quod non sit Deus." Pet. Lomb., Sent., lib. I. dist. viii. qu. v. tit.—See above in the Vindic. of True Liberty against Hobbes, Numb. xv. (vol. iv. p. 108.) Disc. i. Pt. iii. The illustration of the sword and crown is borrowed from Anselm, according to Bramhall's own reference (see the Vindic. of True Lib., Numb. xii. ibid.

PART IV.

Therefore the dispensations of God may change, and the positive laws of God or man may change, according to the changes of places and persons and times; but the moral law, or law of nature, which is the unchangeable will of God or the eternal law of God to man, can never change. But it is evident and undeniable, that the Sabbath, or the day set apart for the service of God, hath been justly changed from the seventh day to the first day of the week; and the law of the Sabbath hath been changed. Therefore the law of the Sabbath is no express branch of the law of nature, and the observation either of the first day or of the seventh day was not determinately prescribed by the law of nature.

An objection answered.

It is objected[n], that though the law of nature do not prescribe one certain determinate day in the week for the public service of God, yet it prescribeth some one day in the week indefinitely. Thus they confess, that by the law of nature all days are indifferent, and no one day holier in itself than another, but relatively,—as it is designed or employed to more holy uses than other days. But that which they object, is evidently untrue. Natural reason taketh no notice of any such natural and universal computation of time by weeks. And it hath been demonstrated already, that the universal observation of one day of seven neither is nor can be the dictate of natural reason. Neither is there any ground, either in reason or revelation, nor authority Divine or human, to prove this pretended prescription of nature for the sanctification of one day in seven indefinitely. The Scripture saith, [Gen. ii. 3. —Exod xx. 11.] "God blessed the seventh day and hallowed it;" and the Commandment, [Exod. xx. 10.] "The seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God;" both these places are determinate to "*the* seventh day," not indifferent to any one day of seven: and under the Gospel, Christians observe the first day in the week determinately: but where we shall find this one day of seven indeterminate, I know not. It is clear, that it was devised merely to reconcile the Jewish Sabbath with the

p. 77); but the passage has not been found in his Works.]

[n] [This appears to be Zanchy's opinion (In IV. Præcept., Op. tom. ii. p. 650), and is adopted (though in a very confused way) by Bound, Of the Sabbath, bk. i. pp. 60—75. So also the Lutheran Dietericus, as quoted by Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. vi. § 8. And see other references in L'Estrange, pp. 68, 69. of God's Sabbath &c. as quoted below p. 23. note b.]

Lord's Day, and to make the commandment for the one to fit the other. All the truth which it hath in it, is that which we say;—that the light of nature doth shew us, that God ought to be worshipped, and consequently that some time ought to be set apart for His service: but what that time is, or ought to be,—an hour, two, or three, in each day, or one day, or more, in each week, or both an hour or more in each day, and a day or more in each week,—dependeth either upon the election of particular persons according to their occasions and opportunities, or upon the positive precepts of God or our superiors. Discourse I.

Fourthly, I prove, that the law of [nature][o] dictateth nothing of the holiness of one day in the week more than another, from the grounds and reasons of the commandment of the Sabbath:—if they be natural and universal and such as are known to mankind by the light of natural reason, then the law of the Sabbath is a law of nature; if not, it is otherwise. Now the grounds of the commandment of the Sabbath are these:—"God blessed the Sabbath day and sanctified it," because "He rested in it from all His works which God created and made;"—and the fourth Commandment,—"In six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day, wherefore God blessed the seventh day and hallowed it." Now the creation of the world in six days is known only by Divine revelation, not by the light of natural reason; and although it were known by natural reason, yet this conclusion,—that the seventh day is therefore to be sanctified for ever,—is no necessary inference by the light of natural reason, but dependeth upon Divine or human institution. Another reason of the Sabbath is set down Deut. v. 15;—"The Lord thy God brought thee out of Egypt with a mighty hand and stretched out arm, therefore the Lord thy God commanded thee to keep the Sabbath day." This reason is neither natural nor universal, but concerneth the Israelites only. There be other reasons of the Sabbath; as, to be a "sign" to distinguish the Israelite from all other nations, and to be a "type" of the rest of Canaan, of the spiritual rest of Christians, and of the rest of Heaven. But now Christ hath broken down the partition wall between

Fourth reason;—[from the grounds of the commandment of the Sabbath.]

Gen. ii. 3.

[Exod. xx. 11.]

[Exod. xxxi. 13.—Ezek. xx. 12.]

[Heb. iv. 4—9.]

[o] ["mankind" in the folio edition, by an obvious misprint.]

PART IV.

Jew and Gentile, and so there is no longer any use of a distinctive sign. Now all types are fulfilled, and all these dark shadows must fly away at the glorious arising of the Sun of Righteousness. From all these reasons put together it appeareth evidently, that the grounds of the Sabbath were not 911
natural nor perpetual, and by consequence that the law of the Sabbath was no law of nature. Neither do I see any thing natural in it, but the setting apart a time for the service of God and the seasonable rest of the creature; which might be done by hallowing a part of each day, or a part or parts of some other day or days, or a sixth day or an eighth day, for any thing that natural reason doth dictate to the contrary. I confess, there are sometimes reasons given of moral precepts, of the eternal laws of nature; as this,—"That thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee;"—and this other,—"The Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh His name in vain:" but they are no such reasons as these. They were reasons for the observation of the law, and these are reasons of the institution of the law. As the reason of the institution is, so is the law; the reason is not natural, therefore the law is no law of nature.

[Exod. xx. 12.]

[Exod. xx. 7.—Deut. v. 11.]

Moral upon supposition a contradiction.

Some[p] make the law of the seventh day's Sabbath to be moral and of perpetual right, not absolutely, but upon supposition of Divine ordination; which (if they understand the moral law properly and strictly, as they ought, for the law of nature) is a plain contradiction '*in adjecto*.' The law of nature is eternal, without any respect to the positive laws of God. And that law which oweth its perpetuity to a positive law of God, is no branch of the law of nature.

From all which hath been said, I conclude, that the law of nature doth not prescribe a seventh-day Sabbath.

SECTION THE FIFTH.

II. The *positive* law of the Sabbath.

And so, from the law of nature, I proceed to the positive laws of God; to examine, whether any positive law of the

[p] [The allusion appears to be to Ames, Medull. Theol., lib. II. c. xv. § 6, 12. pp. 291, 295. 8vo. Amstel. 1648. See Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. vi. § 6. p. 184. L'Estrange (God's Sabbath &c., pp. 65—67, see below, p. 23. note b) has attempted to defend Ames's position. And see also a tract entitled Sabbatum Redivivum, by D. Cawdrey and H. Palmer, Members of the Assembly of Divines, Pt. I. c. i. pp. 11 &c., 4to. Lond. 1645.]

seventh-day Sabbath did and doth oblige all mankind universally and perpetually from the beginning. Laws do not bind before they be promulged[q]. The law of nature is promulged sufficiently by being written in the heart of every man by the finger of God; and therefore it is called "*lex nata, non data*[r]"—"a law born" with us and in us, "not given" to us. But we have seen sufficiently, that the law of the seventh-day Sabbath is no such law; and therefore bindeth not before promulgation.

SECTION THE SIXTH.

The first promulgation of this positive law is supposed to have been as early as the creation;—"God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it;" that is, He consecrated it to His own worship, and commanded mankind to keep it holy. And without all peradventure, if the Sabbath was not commanded then, yet it was predetermined and destinated then. But, first, supposing that this interpretation were as authentic as the text itself, yet, this being confessed to be but a positive law of God, and no essential branch of the eternal law of nature, it is dispensable, and bindeth no longer than the good pleasure of Him who imposed it, and may be changed by the same authority which made it. I add further, that though this did include in it an express commandment of Almighty God, yet it concerneth not our question about the Lord's Day at all, otherwise than exemplarily. An express law to observe the seventh day of the week as the public day of God's worship, doth not establish, but (if it were still in force) did controul, the setting apart of the first day to that very use, exclusively to the seventh. And so I might omit this whole discourse as impertinent.

First promulgation pretended, Gen. ii. 3.

But for the reader's further satisfaction, I add two other answers.

1. The former,—that though I will not absolutely deny, but that a law may perhaps be close couched in these words—"God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it,"—because

1. Gen. ii. 3. no precept.

[q] ["Leges instituuntur cum promulgantur." Gratian., Decret. P. I. Dist. iv. Can. In istis Temporalibus.]

[r] ["Est hæc non scripta sed nata lex," &c. Cic., Pro Milone, c. iv.]

PART IV.

some persons[s], whose judgments I honour, have thought so, yet I am not so sharp-sighted as to discover it; as finding neither any certainty of it, nor strong presumption for it. The text telleth us what God did Himself, not what He commanded us to do. God may do one thing Himself and yet command us to do the contrary. As, God may think fit to take away the life of a man's parent, and yet the son is bound by the commandment of God to pray for his parent's life; neither is there any contradiction herein, because the subject is not the same.

To deal ingenuously, those apposite reasons, which are brought to shew that this place containeth no actual law, are either absolutely convincing to a person unbiassed, or come very near it. I will name but two reasons for the present.

First reason.

The one is, that it doth not appear otherwise than by weak and far fetched conjectures, that ever the seventh day was observed as a weekly festival until the days of Moses: neither 912 by Adam himself, to whom it is pretended that this law was given; nor by Abel, his religious son; nor Seth; nor his son [Gen. v. 24.] Enos; nor Enoch, who "walked with God;" nor Noah, "a [Heb. xi. 7.] preacher of righteousness;" nor Melchisedec, a "priest of [Gen. xiv. 18.] the most high God;" nor Abraham, "the father of the [Rom. iv. 16.] faithful;" nor Isaac; nor Jacob: nor any other patriarch or person whatsoever. We find oblations, and priests, and altars, and sacrifices, and groves or oratories, and prayers, and thanksgivings, and vows, and whatsoever natural reason doth dictate about the service of God; but we find not one instance of the execution of this supposed law of the seventh-day Sabbath. And doth not this seem strange?—that such a solemn law should be given to Adam and all mankind, and not the least print or token of the observation of it be to be found for two thousand years; until it was renewed to the Exod. xvi. [22—30.] nation of the Jews in the wilderness, first, preparatorily, at the falling of manna, in order to the gathering and disposing thereof, and then more solemnly and more legislatively upon Mount Sinai; and that thenceforward the history of the

[s] [E. g. Abp. Ussher, as appears by his letter to Dr. Twisse, Of the Sabb. and Observation of the Lord's Day, pp. 78, 79 of Bernard's Judgment of the late Abp. of Armagh (8vo. Lond. 1657). Catharinus, Bound, and Ames, whom Heylin quotes (Hist. of Sabb., Pt. I. c. i. § 3, 4. pp. 6—12), are not likely to have excited much of Bramhall's sympathy.]

Second reason.

following ages should abound with so many proofs of the constant observation of it. The other reason is taken from the testimony of Holy Scripture:—Neh. ix. 14,—"Thou camest down also upon Mount Sinai," &c., "and madest known unto them Thy holy Sabbath by the hand of Moses Thy servant;"—and Ezek. xx. 12,—"I brought them into the wilderness," &c., "moreover I gave them also My Sabbath to be a sign between Me and them." Laws are "made known" and "given," not when they are renewed, but when they are first promulged; but the law of the Sabbath was "made known" by Moses and "given" by God in "the wilderness." After this, we see how often God complaineth of them for polluting His Sabbaths; before this, we find no such complaint: but if this place of Gen. ii. 3. had been a positive law of the Sabbath, there had been ten times more cause of such a complaint before than after.

[See Nehem. xiii. 15—22;—Jerem. xvii. 20—27;—Ezek. xxii. 8;—Isai. lviii. 13:—&c.]

The first Sabbath.

The first Sabbath that we find in Holy Scripture to have been ever observed by the Israelites, was in the wilderness upon the seventh day after the first falling of manna, which was the two and twentieth day of the second month. But it is evident, that the fifteenth day of the same month, which ought to have been their Sabbath or day of rest, if they had constantly observed any Sabbath or weekly day of rest before that time, was not observed as a Sabbath or day of rest at all, but spent in journeying and murmuring. From whence one of these two things must necessarily follow; either that the Israelites in the wilderness (where they were at their own disposition) did observe no weekly Sabbath before that time, or that they observed it not upon the same day of the week that they did afterwards. Whethersoever of these they admit, either the one or the other, their pretended necessity of the universal observation of the seventh day from the first Creation, by virtue of a positive law of God given to all mankind, doth fall flat to the ground.

Exod. xvi. 1.

2. The meaning of Gen. ii. 3.

2. My second answer to this place of Gen. ii. 3, is this;— that the sanctifying of the seventh day there, is no more than the 'sanctifying' of Jeremy "from his mother's womb," that is, the designing or destinating of him to be a prophet; or than the 'separating' of St. Paul "from his mother's womb." So the sanctification of the seventh day may signify the

Jer. i. 5.

Gal. i. 15.

PART IV.

decree or determination of God to sanctify it in due time; but, as Jeremy's actual sanctification, and St. Paul's actual separation, followed long after they were born, so the actual sanctification of the Sabbath might follow long after the ground of God's decree for the sanctification of that day, and the destination of it to that use[t].

The opinion of the Fathers.

I have weighed seriously those testimonies, which are produced out of the Fathers by both parties *pro et contra*. First, of those, who maintain the negative;—that there was no law of the Sabbath imposed, either upon mankind in general or the Jewish nation in special, for the sanctification of the seventh-day Sabbath, before the time of Moses; and that none of the patriarchs from Adam to Moses did ever observe it as commanded expressly by God. The chiefest of these, and the prime leaders, are Justin Martyr[u], Irenæus[v], Tertullian[x], Eusebius[y], Epiphanius[z]; who all speak clearly and fully to the point, not at random or upon the by, but upon set purpose; insomuch as there remaineth no third [course], but either to acknowledge what they say to be true, or to renounce their authority in this particular point. To whom

[t] [See Poole's Synops. in loc., and the commentators quoted by Bp. White, Of the Sabbath, p. 41.]

[u] [Just. Mart., Dial. cum Tryphon., pp. 140. D, 141. B. Paris. 1636.—"Τὸν Ἐνὼχ καὶ τοὺς ἄλλους πάντας" (the Patriarchs from Adam to Moses), "οἳ μήτε περιτομὴν τὴν κατὰ σάρκα ἔχοντες μήτε Σάββατα ἐφύλαξαν, μήτε δὲ τὰ ἄλλα, Μώσεως ἐντειλαμένου ταῦτα ποιεῖν." And further on;—Εἰ γὰρ πρὸ τοῦ Ἀβραὰμ οὐκ ἦν χρεία περιτομῆς οὐδὲ πρὸ Μωΰσεως σαββατισμοῦ," κ. τ. λ. And elsewhere in the same Dialogue. These and the following references are (apparently) borrowed from Bp. White, Of the Sabbath, pp. 43, 44. 3rd. edit. 1636, and Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. I. c. iv. § 4. pp. 73, 74.]

[v] [Iren., Cont. Hær., lib. iv. c. 30. p. 319. ed. Grabe.—"Ipse Abraham sine circumcisione et sine observatione Sabbati 'credidit Deo et reputatum est ei ad justitiam et amicus Dei vocatus est.'"]

[x] [Tertull., Cont. Judæos, c. ii. (Op. p. 136. E, F. fol. Rothom. 1662); "Cum igitur neque sabbatizantem Deus Adam instituerit, consequenter quoque sobolem ejus Abel, offerentem sacrificia, incircumcisum, nec sabbatizantem, laudavit; .. Noah .. non sabbatizantem de Diluvio liberavit; Enoch justissimum et non circumcisum nec sabbatizantem de hoc mundo transtulit; . . Melchisedech Summi Dei sacerdos . . non sabbatizans ad sacerdotium Dei allectus est." See also ibid. cc. iv, v.]

[y] [Euseb., Hist. Eccl., lib. i. c. 4. (p. 15. ed. Reading);—"Οὕτ' οὖν σώματος αὐτοῖς" (scil. the Patriarchs before Moses) "ἔμελεν, ὅτι μὴ δὲ ἡμῖν· οὐ Σαββάτων ἐπιτηρήσεως, ὅτι μὴ δὲ ἡμῖν." —Id., Præp. Evang., lib. vii. c. 6 (p. 304. Paris. 1628);—"Ἰουδαίοις μὲν πρῶτον ἀπάρξασθαι τῆς νομοθεσίας Μωσέα. Σαββάτου τινὸς παραδόντα ἡμέραν· . . Ἑβραῖοι δέ πρεσβύτεροι Μώσεως γενόμενοι τοῖς χρόνοις, πάσης τῆς διὰ Μώσεως νομοθεσίας ἀνεπήκοοι ὄντες, ἐλεύθερον καὶ ἀνειμένον εὐσεβείας κατώρθουν τρόπον." — Id., Demonst. Evang., lib i. c. 6 (p. 12. D. Paris. 1628);—"Αὐτίκα τὸν Μελχισεδὲκ ὁ Μωσῆς εἰσάγει Ἱερέα τοῦ Θεοῦ Ὑψίστου, οὐ τὸ σῶμα περιτετμημένον, . . οὐ Σάββατόν τί πότ' ἐστιν εἰδότα," κ. τ. λ.]

[z] [Epiphan., as quoted below, p. 27. notes l, m.]

913 a larger reserve or recruit of other authors might be added; who though they speak not so directly or point blank as these, yet they say the same thing in effect, or they say that from which the same thing may be inferred by necessary consequence[a]. Discourse I.

On the other side, the testimonies of Origen, Cyprian, Basil, Nazianzen, Athanasius, are alleged; but as their times were later, so their testimonies are not so full, nor levelled directly at the question. Authorities answered.

First, the testimony of Origen maketh strongly against them who produce it:—"Those things which were afterwards commanded about the Sabbath, those Job anticipating did both fulfil himself, and taught his sons to fulfil[b]." First, it is most certain, that the example of Job can have no relation to the law of the weekly Sabbath. Those solemn devotions of Job and his sons were not performed every seventh day, according to the law of the Sabbath, but every eighth day; not with any reference to the days of the week, or of the [Origen.]

[a] [Other authorities, answering this description, are quoted by Heylin and White: e. g. Athanas., De Sabbat. et Circumcis. (below p. 25. note g), and Synops. Script., in Exod. (below p. 26. note h);--St. Jerome, In Ezek. c. xx. (Op. tom. iii. p. 834), "Hæc precepta et justificationes et observantiam Sabbati Dominus dedit in Deserto, ut facientes illa viverent in eis;"—Theodoret., In Ezek. c. xx (Op. tom. ii. p. 398, A. Paris. 1642), "Τῆς δὲ τοῦ Σαββάτου φυλακῆς οὐχ ἡ φύσις διδάσκαλος ἀλλ' ἡ θέσις τοῦ Νόμου;" and again ibid. C, "Τὴν δὲ τοῦ Σαββάτου φυλακὴν μόνον τὸ Ἰουδαίων ἐφύλαττεν ἔθνος;"—Macar., Hom. xxxv. (inter Bibl. PP. tom. iv. p. 92. B), "In umbrâ Legis per Mosem datâ jussit Deus unumquemque Sabbato quiescere et nihil agere;"—Bede, Comm. c. 19. in Luc. Evang. c. vi. (Op. tom. v. p. 268. Colon. 1612), "Lucas. . volens intimare Sabbati Legalis observantiam cessare ultra debere, et naturalis Sabbati libertatem, quæ ad Moysi usque tempora cæterorum dierum similis erat, oportere restitui," &c.;—Joh. Damascen., De Fide Orthod., lib. iv. c. 23 (Op. tom. i. p. 298. D, E. ed. Lequien), "Ὅτε μὲν γὰρ οὐκ ἦν νόμος, οὐ γραφὴ θεόπνευστος, οὔτε τὸ Σάββατον τῷ Θεῷ ἀφιέρωτο· ὅτε δὲ ἡ θεόπνευστος γραφὴ διὰ Μωϋσέως ἐδόθη, ἀφιερώθη τῷ Θεῷ τὸ Σάββατον."]

[b] Origen., Hom. in Job, c. i. v. 5; [cited in part and translated by Bramhall (as are all the quotations which follow) from Hamon L'Estrange (God's Sabbath before and under the Law, and under the Gospel, briefly Vindicated from Novell and Heterodox Assertions, p. 29. 4to. Cant. 1641,—printed with a license from Parliament, as an answer to White, Brerewood, Heylin, &c.). The passage is from a Latin Commentary upon the book of Job (c. i. v. 4.), lib. i. inter Op. Origen, tom. ii. p. 858. ed. Delarue, Paris. 1733, decided by Huet to be not a genuine work of Origen's. It stands with its context as follows;—after speaking of Job's seven-days' feast for his seven sons, and his solemn sacrifice and worship on the eighth;—"Præcepit namque in Lege et dicit, 'septem diebus celebrabis diem festum Domino Deo tuo, et epulaberis tu et filius tuus et filia tua et servus tuus et ancilla tua et advena qui est in te et egenus gentis tuæ;' *quæ* ergo *in Lege post hæc præcepta sunt, hæc nimirum anticipans Job, et ipse implevit et filios implere docuit*, et hospitalitatem et eleemosunam et misericordiam et pauperum et miserorum beneficia atque consolationes, quæ sunt Deo valde acceptabiles cum fide perpetratæ atque perfectæ." L'Estrange quotes the clause in italics.]

PART IV.

Creation, but according to the number of his sons; and if he had had another son, the assembly must have been put off until the ninth day, that is, until "the days of their feasting were gone about." Secondly, he saith the contrary to that, which they would have him say,—that the law of the Sabbath came in after Job's time:—otherwise, in what tolerable sense could Job have been said to have "anticipated" the commandment of the Sabbath, if the commandment of the Sabbath had been of force even from the Creation? And that pretended command (if it had been a command) had really obliged Job; but the commandment given by Moses the legislator of the Israelites could not have obliged Job, if he had lived in those days, as he did not. Thirdly, I answer, that Origen never thought of the weekly Sabbath in that place, but of an anniversary festival; which festivals are called Sabbaths, as well as the weekly. The words of Origen are,—"*Præcipit namque in Lege,*" &c.—"The Lord commandeth in the law and saith, 'Seven days shalt thou celebrate a festival to the Lord thy God, and thou shalt feast, thou and thy son and thy daughter and [thy] servant and thy maid and the stranger that is within thy gates and the poor or needy.'" This was the commandment which Job "anticipated." Then follow the words alleged by them; and immediately, in the same sentence,—"*Et hospitalitatem et eleemosynam et misericordiam,*" &c. The law which Origen intendeth, is the law of hospitality. He dreamed no more of the weekly Sabbath there, than of the man in the moon.

Job i. 5.

["præcepit."]

[St. Cyprian.]

Saint Cyprian saith no more, as he is alleged by themselves, but that "the number of seven obtained authority from the Creation of the world[c];" which is most true, from that ground he saith, not from that time: and that "it was honoured with the solemnity of a command[d];" but when it was so honoured, Saint Cyprian is silent. The very designation or destination of it to the public worship of God was a

[c] [Pseudo]-Cyprian, De Spiritu Sancto: [a work of Arnoldus, who flourished about 1162 (Cave); p. 61. in fin. Op. Cypr. ed. Fell.;—as quoted and translated by L'Estrange, ibid., who gives the original of the first clause only. The entire passage is as follows:—"*Sacratus hic septimanus numerus a conditione mundi auctoritatem obtinuit;* quoniam in sex diebus prima Dei opera patrata sunt et septima consecrata quieti; quasi sancta et sanctificans *solennitate vacationis honorata.*"]

[d] [Id., ibid.—The mistranslation—"vacationis" rendered "command"—is L'Estrange's.]

great 'honour,' but the accomplishment of that honour was at the legal establishment of it. It is much more material, that in the same place St. Cyprian restraineth the seventh day's Sabbath to the Jews;—"*In hebdomadibus apud* Hebræos *dies septimus Sabbatum, id est, Requies, appellatur*[e]."

[St. Basil and St. Greg. Nazianzen.]

It had been better to have passed by St. Basil and Nazianzen in silence, than to produce them as witnesses, when they say nothing material to the present controversy. All that they are pretended to say, is this,—that "the seventh day from the Creation was made the Sabbath[f]." Who doubteth of it? But what day, the same individual day or the same specifical day,—and whose Sabbath, or day of rest, God's or man's,—and when it was made, at the Creation or in the wilderness,—and how it was made, legislatively or exemplarily, by God's decree [and] destination or by actual establishment,—(which are the only things in question) they say nothing.

[St. Athanasius.]

That of Athanasius seemeth to have more weight in it, as it is cited by them:—"As long as the former age and creation obtained their force and efficacy, so long the Sabbaths were observed[g]." Yet even this cometh not home to a law. Many are ready to admit, that from the Creation some devout persons, either out of respect to God's example or by some special inspiration, did freely observe the seventh day as holy to the Lord, who do yet deny any universal law binding all mankind to the observation of it. And that this is the uttermost which Athanasius could intend, appeareth evidently from himself; where he telleth us, that in the book of

[e] [Arnoldus, ibid.]

[f] [Basil., Hexa-em. (as quoted in Latin by L'Estrange, ibid. p. 30). The passage cited is from S. Greg. Nyss., In verba Faciamus hominem. Orat. ii. (Op. tom. i. pp. 159. D, 160. A. Paris. 1638), "Ἀφέσεως ἁμαρτημάτων, ἀναπαύσεως τελείας, οὗ σημεῖον τὸ Σάββατόν ἐστιν ἡ ἑβδόμη ἡμέρα ἀπὸ γενέσεως:"—which orations were considered at one time (e. g. by Tilmannus and Combefis) as Hom. ix, x. of S. Basil's Hexaemeron.—Greg. Naz., Hom. in Nov. Dominic. (Op. tom. i. p. 700. B. Paris. 1609),—"Ἡ πρώτη κτίσις τὴν ἀρχὴν ἀπὸ κυριακῆς λαμβάνει· δῆλον δὲ· ἀπὸ γὰρ ταύτης ἑβδόμη τὸ Σάββατον γίνεται, κατάπαυσις οὖσα τῶν ἔργων:"—also cited (in Latin) and translated by L'Estrange, ibid.]

[g] Athanas., De Sabbatis et Circumcisione, [Op. tom. ii. p. 55. ed. Bened.; translated by Bramhall from the Latin as quoted by L'Estrange, ibid. The entire passage in the original runs thus:—"Ἀκόλουθον ἦν ἕως τὰ τῆς κτίσεως ἐνεργεῖτο, ἐπὶ τῆς Ἱερουσαλὴμ ἕως τότε φυλάττειν τὰ Σάββατα· ἐλθούσης δὲ τῆς ἑτέρας γενεᾶς καὶ τοῦ κτιζομένου λαοῦ, κατὰ τὸ λεγόμενον" (scil. Ps. ci. 19), "ἀνάγκη μήκετι τὸν λαὸν τοῦτον τηρεῖν τὸ τῆς προτέρας κτίσεως τέλος ἀλλὰ τὴν ἀρχὴν τῆς δευτέρας κτίσεως ζητεῖν."—For those (modern and hardly "many") authors, who believed the Patriarchs to have observed the Sabbath "out of piety," see Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. I. c. i. § 5.]

PART IV.

Exodus "the Sabbath had its beginning"—"*Tunc et Sabbati observantia initium sumpsit*[h]." But the plain truth is, Athanasius is grossly abused in citing him thus. His "former age" is the age until Christ: and the observation of the 914
Sabbath which he speaks of there, was in "Hierusalem:" as Athanasius hath it expressly, but that the words are most guilefully omitted in the citation. It is much to be wished, that they who cite great authors, would either view them more carefully, or cite them more faithfully; and not apply that to the patriarchs before the flood, which the author speaketh expressly of the children of Israel. If I were to choose some place of a Father whereupon to ground my judgment of the Sabbath and the Lord's Day, I could not easily fix on a better place than this of Athanasius.

[Epiphanius.]

But their most material objection is out of Epiphanius; who, they say, 'maketh a twofold Sabbath; the one by nature, defined from the beginning, the other defined afterwards under the Law[i].' If this be true, then not only the positive law of God, but the very law of nature, doth prescribe a Sabbath. But the truth is, Epiphanius knoweth no such thing. He knoweth some Sabbaths which came weekly by the course of nature, but he knew no such determinate Sabbaths which are prescribed by the law of nature: yea, just contrary, in the very place alleged, he maketh all sorts of Sabbaths to be legal Sabbaths, or Sabbaths defined by positive law;—"*Σάββατα γὰρ διάφορα ὥριζεν ὁ νόμος*," &c.—"the Law" (saith he) "hath defined diverse sorts of Sabbaths[k];" and so he divideth them into weekly Sabbaths, and

[h] [Athanas.,] Synops. Scripturæ, [in Lib. Exod.; ibid. p. 132.—"*Ὅτε καὶ ἀρχὴν ἔσχεν ἡ τοῦ σαββάτου παρατήρησις ἤτε ἐν τῷ ὄρει τῷ Σινᾷ Θεόθεν νομοθεσία.*"]

[i] ["Epiphanius mentioneth a twofold Sabbath under the old Law: the naturall or weekly, which was defined from the Creation; the Legall or Ceremoniall, which was enjoyned by the Law of Moses:"—L'Estrange, ibid., quoting Epiphanius,] Contra Ebion., p. 73. [(scil. fol. Basil. 1544), thus,—"*τὸ φύσει σάββατον τὸ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ὁρισθέν· τὸ ὑπὸ νόμου ὡρισμένον.*"]

[k] [The entire passage from Epiphanius, which is taken from his] Panarium, [lib. I. tom. ii. Hær. xxx. Cont. Ebionæos, num. 32. (Op. tom. i. pp. 158. D, 159. A.)] edit. Petavii, [runs as follows,—after speaking of the "*σάββατον δευτερόπρωτον*,"—"*Σάββατα γὰρ διάφορα ὥριζεν ὁ Νόμος· τὸ μὲν κατὰ ἑβδομάδα ἀνακυκλούμενον φύσει σάββατον τὸ δὲ διὰ τὴς ὑποπιπτούσας τῆς κατὰ σελήνην νεομηνίας καὶ τὰς καθεξῆς ἑορτὰς*" (scil. Tabernacles, Passover, &c.)· "*ὅτε γὰρ ἐμπίπτουσιν αὗται αἱ ἡμέραι, ἤτοι ἐν δευτέρᾳ σαββάτων, ἢ ἐν τρίτῃ, ἢ ἐν τετράδι, Σάββατον καὶ αὐτὸ αὐτοῖς ὁρίζεται.*" The word "*φύσει*" is rendered "proprie," both here and where it occurs again a few lines further on, in the Latin translation of Petavius; and the context proves him to have rightly so rendered it.]

monthly Sabbaths, and yearly Sabbaths; but still he maketh them to be all Jewish Sabbaths, all legal Sabbaths. Epiphanius is clear enough in the case:—"The seventh day God ceased from all His works, and blessed it and sanctified it, and manifested it to Moses by an angel[1]." It was not the first individual seventh day, but the same specifical seventh day, which God manifested unto Moses. If the seventh day had been observed constantly from the Creation, though it had been only by the Israelites, there had been little need that God should have made it known to Moses by an angel. The same Father in his Panarium saith:—"There were only types in the Law, but in the Gospel truth itself is contained; in the Law the circumcision of the body was prescribed, and that lasted until the great circumcision followed, that is, Baptism, which circumciseth us from our sins, signing us in the Name of the Lord; moreover they had the Sabbath, which leadeth us to the great Sabbath, that is, the rest of Christ, that we may rest from our sins in Him[m]." If the same law which prescribed circumcision to the Jews, prescribed also Baptism to the Christians; or the same law which prescribed the Sabbath to the Jews, had prescribed the Lord's Day to Christians; this had been the proper place for Epiphanius to have told us of it: but he knew no such thing. Then the law of the Sabbath and the law of circumcision had not ceased at all; but they did cease.

I conclude this point;—that it is most probable those words Gen. ii. 3,—"God blessed the seventh day and hallowed it,"—do not necessarily imply a commandment; and if they did, yet Christians do not observe the Lord's Day now by virtue of it. But I seem to myself to have insisted too long upon this point; seeing I have formerly declared, that although we granted all which they desire,—that those words did include an universal commandment to all mankind,

[1] [Epiphan.,] De Pond. et Mens., num. 22; [ibid. tom. ii. p. 179.—"Καὶ ἀνεπαύσατο ὁ Θεὸς ἐκ πάντων τῶν ἔργων Αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ ἑβδόμῃ ἡμέρᾳ, καί ηὐλόγησεν αὐτὴν, καὶ ἡγίασεν αὐτὴν, καὶ ἐδήλωσε δι' ἀγγέλου τῷ Μωϋσῇ."]

[m] Id., Panar., lib. I. tom. i. [Hær. viii.] num. 6; [Op. tom. i. pp. 19. D, 20. A. ed. Petav.—"Οἱ τύποι ἐν τῷ Νόμῳ ἦσαν ἡ δὲ ἀληθεία ἐν τῷ Εὐαγγελίῳ· ἔκει γὰρ ἡ περιτομὴ σαρκικὴ ὑπηρετήσασα χρόνῳ ἕως τῆς μεγάλης περιτομῆς, τουτέστι τοῦ Βαπτίσματος τοῦ περιτέμνοντος ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ ἁμαρτημάτων καὶ σφραγίσαντος ἡμᾶς εἰς Ὄνομα Θεοῦ· καὶ ἦν ἔκει σάββατον, κατέχον ἡμᾶς εἰς τὸ μέγα Σάββατον, τουτέστιν εἰς ἀνάπαυσιν Χριστοῦ, ἵνα ἐν Χριστῷ σαββατίσωμεν ἀπὸ ἁμαρτημάτων."]

PART IV. —yet, being at the most but a positive law, and therefore free, and therefore changeable, and the day being now actually changed by just authority, they do not at all oblige Christians: neither doth the observation of the Lord's Day at all depend upon them.

SECTION THE SEVENTH.

The law of the Fourth Commandment.

The next positive law is the fourth Commandment of the Decalogue. But if the former, even being supposed to be an universal commandment, doth not bind Christians, much less doth the fourth Commandment, as it was given by Moses to the people of Israel, bind them; that is, as it was a national law. I say, as it was given by Moses to the people of Israel: for, in the fourth Commandment, something is moral, or prescribed by the law of nature, namely, that a sufficient time be set apart for the service of Almighty God; this is perpetual and immutable, as being grounded upon the eternal rule of justice; and this the Schools call the substance of the commandment: and something in the fourth Commandment is not moral, in the strict and proper sense, that is, it is not prescribed by the law of nature, but enjoined by the positive law of God; as the determinate time and other circumstances, which they call "*modum sanctificandi*"—"the manner of sanctifying" the Sabbath[n]. This "manner of sanctifying" the Sabbath, with the time, and many other circumstances, were prescribed by God to the Jews; yet not so precisely in all respects, but that many things were left to the determi- 915
nation of the Jewish Church, as the forms of their hymns and prayers and thanksgivings. All that which concerneth the manner of sanctifying the Sabbath, is mutable, and may be actually changed; so it be by those who have competent authority to make such a change, and so as the law of nature be not violated, which requireth that a sufficient time be set apart for the service of God. But whether that time which is sufficient once, be sufficient evermore, and whether that time which is necessary once, be necessary evermore, is

[n] [See above, in vol. i. pp. xcviii, xcix, Bramhall's Letters, Letter XI.; and Thom. Aquin., Summ., Secund. Secundæ, Qu. 122. art. 4.]

not so pertinent to this present question. The continual volubility of human affairs, and the perpetual practice of all Churches, do seem to require more humiliation and more invocation and more thanksgiving at one time than at another. Certainly so much time is necessary as is prescribed *pro hic et nunc* by the just laws of God or man.

Some[o] catch hold upon the letter of the fourth Commandment,—"Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day;" that is, say they, not precisely the *seventh* day, but the *Sabbath* day, whether it be Saturday or Sunday, the seventh day or the first day, or any other day of the week, indefinitely and indifferently, which is set apart by just authority for the service of God. But the words following do absolutely controul them, setting down expressly and determinately what Sabbath day is there intended;—"The seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God;"—and the reason following;—"For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth and rested the seventh day, wherefore the Lord blessed the seventh day and hallowed it." The reason is not indifferent for one day in the week indefinitely, but for that one day in the week determinately. It is over-great supineness to make the Spirit of God argue thus,—God hallowed the seventh day for reasons proper and peculiar to that day, therefore do thou remember to observe the first day, and not that day.

[Exod. xx. 8.]

[Exod. xx. 10, 11.]

Thus we have seen, that although the law of nature doth not prescribe the sanctification of the seventh day determinately, yet the sanctification of the seventh day was grounded upon the law of nature; and although the positive law of God in the Old Testament concerning the Sabbath doth not bind us now, further than it containeth in it some express

[Conclusion.]

[o] [E. g. Zanchius, In IV. Præcept., Op. tom. iv. p. 657.—"Notandum est, in mandato ipso, quod hoc v. 8. continetur (nam quæ sequuntur, ad explicationem pertinent mandati), non sine causâ non dixisse, Memento ut diem septimum, sed, ut diem Sabbati, id est, quietis, sanctifices," &c.; going on to draw the inference mentioned above in the text. And from him L'Estrange, God's Sabbath &c., p. 42;—"I would gladly know where in expresse terms the Saturday-Sabbath or seventh from the Creation is commanded in this precept" (the 4th Commandm.): "examine and dissect it throughly;—'Remember thou sanctifie the Sabbath Day;'—the Sabbath Day it is you see, not the seventh from the Creation: therefore Zanchie," &c. (as just quoted). Bramhall's argument from the latter part of the Commandment rests partly on the Septuagint version. The Hebrew (and thence the Vulgate) reads, "The Lord blessed the *Sabbath* day and hallowed it."]

PART IV.

principles or conclusion[s] of the law of nature, yet the equity of those laws, and whatsoever they have in them of the law of nature, doth still oblige us. We are more bound to God than the Jews, and ought at least to pay Him as much moral duty and service as they: excepting always such typical and pædagogical and some other rigorous injunctions, wherewithal God thought fit to nurture that stiff-necked nation.

[*B. of the Lord's Day.*]

SECTION THE EIGHTH.

Of the Lord's Day, the question not so great as some imagine.

So I proceed from the Sabbath, and that relation which it had to the law of nature and the positive laws of God in the Old Testament, to the consideration of the Lord's Day. All parties do agree, that the Saturday-Sabbath is abrogated, and the moral duties of that day justly translated to Sunday: but whether Sunday be now observed by Divine right or human right; whether the change was made immediately upon the Resurrection or Ascension of Christ, or afterwards in process of time; and by whom it was made, whether by Christ, or by His Apostles, or by the Church;—is controverted. Yet I hope the controversy is not so great, or important, as some imagine. They who ground the Sabbath upon Divine right, do not affirm peremptorily, that it was commanded by Christ in His own person; and they who ground it upon human right, do not exclude His Apostles. Some say, it was decreed by the Apostles; they who fly lowest, say, it was approved by the Apostles. They who hold, that there was a Divine precept for this change, do not hold positively, that it was the personal precept of Christ, but either of Christ in His [own] person, or of His Apostles, or of Christ by His Apostles. And, on the other side, they who deny a precept, do not deny it absolutely, but with this restriction, —'recorded in Holy Scripture.' So all parties do acknowledge it to be an Apostolical tradition. And, for my part, although I do most firmly believe, that all supernatural

truths necessary to salvation in point of the Christian faith, the Holy Ghost so guiding the pens of the Evangelists and Apostles, are contained in Holy Scripture, wherein our greatest adversaries when they state the question exactly do agree with us ("I say, that all those things were written by the Apostles which were necessary for all men," saith Bellarmine[p]), so, in truths of an inferior nature, and especially in
916 practical truths such as this, I do wholly subscribe to the determination of Dr. Field:—"It is not the writing which giveth things their authority, but the worth and credit of him that delivereth them, though but by word and lively voice only[q]." And his Appendix to the fifth book:—"They" (the Papists) "make Divine traditions equal with the words, precepts, and doctrines of Christ, left unto us in writing; Apostolical" (tradition) "with the written precepts of the Apostles; and ecclesiastical, with the written precepts of the pastors of the Church[r]." And he "confesseth," that "there is no reason why they should not so do, if they could prove any such unwritten traditions[s]," or (as it is in the former place) "any such unwritten verities[t]." All the danger is, lest particular traditions should be obtruded for universal traditions, or new upstart traditions for old Apostolical traditions. But in this case concerning the Lord's Day we may set our hearts at rest. For though the original institution of the Lord's Day be not recorded in Holy Scripture expressly, yet so much is recorded, as is sufficient to satisfy all conscientious Christians, that there was such an institution, either of Christ, or of His Apostles, or of Christ by His Apostles; and, with the help of the perpetual practice and tradition of the Catholic Church ever since the Resurrection of Christ, is sufficient to convince all gainsayers. He that professeth Christianity, and will not be satisfied with the perpetual and undoubted tradition of the universal Church of Christ, that is, of the whole world of believers, including the Apostles themselves, is utterly incapable of any real satis-

[p] De Verbo Dei, lib. iv. c. 11. [Op. tom. i. p. 244. B.—"His notatis, dico, illa omnia scripta esse ab Apostolis, quæ sunt omnibus necessaria, et quæ ipsi palam omnibus vulgo prædicaverunt: alia autem omnia non scripta esse."]

[q] Of the Church, lib. iv. c. 20. [p. 375. ed. 1628.]

[r] [Id., ibid., Append. to Bk. v., p. 850.]

[s] [Id., ibid.]

[t] [Id., ibid., lib. iv. c. 20. p. 375.]

PART IV.

faction, and buildeth his religion more upon his own wilful humour and private phantasy than upon true judgment, and too much undervalueth the authority of the Catholic symbolical Church, and the promise made by Christ unto His Church, that He would "be with it always even unto the end of the world."

Matt. xxviii. 20.

SECTION THE NINTH.

Five questions.

Now, for the reader's further satisfaction, in my ensuing discourse upon this subject I will resolve these five questions:—first, by what authority, Divine or human, the weekly festival of the Church was changed from Saturday to Sunday, and who changed it; secondly, when or at what time this change was made; thirdly, what were the reasons or grounds of this change; fourthly, whether the Lord's Day, as [it] is now established, be changeable to another day or not; and, fifthly and lastly, what is the right manner of sanctifying the Lord's Day.

SECTION THE TENTH.

I. First, by what authority the Sabbath was changed.—[If not by our Lord's (which there is no cause to doubt), at least by that of the Apostles.]

To the first question, by what authority this change was made, I find no cause to doubt, for my part, but that it was made by the authority of Christ, that is, by Divine authority. It is true, that we find no express precept recorded in Holy Scripture for the setting apart the first day of the week for the service of God. Neither is it necessary, that there should be such an express precept for it found in Holy Scripture, to prove it to be of Divine right. The perpetual and universal practice of the Catholic Church, including all the Apostles themselves, is a sufficient proof of the Divine right of it;—that at least it was an Apostolical institution and ordinance; not temporary, for an age or two, but perpetual; not local, for a place or two, but universal. I say, at the least an Apostolical institution; for the Resurrection of Christ upon this day, and His divers apparitions to His Apostles upon this day, and His sending to them the Holy Ghost upon this day, and all this at such time as they were assembled together in their usual place of prayer, and in all probability whilst they

were performing the duty of the day, did at least evidently point out unto them this day for His public worship, and ratify their assembling upon this day to do Him service. Wherefore Athanasius saith[u],—"Anciently the Sabbath" (or Saturday) "was in high esteem, which solemnity the Lord translated to the Lord's Day." And Epiphanius, in his sermon upon Christ's Resurrection, upon the day of His Resurrection,—"This is the day, which God blessed and sanctified, because in it He ceased from all His labour, when He had perfectly accomplished the salvation both of those on the earth and those under the earth[v]." And St. Austin saith, that "the Lord's Day was sacred" (or consecrated) "by the Resurrection of Christ[x]." The same he saith in divers other places, and particularly in his hundred and nineteenth Epistle, to Januarius[y],—"But the Lord's Day was declared or promulged (not to Jews but) to Christians by the Resurrection of the Lord, *et ex illo cœpit habere festivitatem suam:*"—which last words may admit three various constructions; either "*ex illo*"—"from him," it "began to have its festi-
917 vity;" or "*ex illo*"—"from that time," it "began to have its festivity;" or "*ex illo*"—"from that thing," that is, from the Resurrection of Christ. Choose which of these senses you will, if you stand to the authority of St. Austin, the difference is ended. To say, that the Resurrection of Christ was the occasion of it, is not enough, either for a "*sacratus est*"—that it "was made sacred" by it, or a "*sanctificatus est*"—that it "was sanctified" by it, or a "*declaratus est*"—it "was promulged" by it.

But it is not at all material to me, or to the Divine right of the Lord's Day, whether it was consecrated by Christ Himself, or by His Apostles directed by His Spirit. That it

[Undeniable, that the Lord's Day is an Apostolical tradition.]

[u] Athanas., Hom. de Semente, [§ 1: Op. tom. ii. p. 60. A. ed. Bened.—"Πάλαι μὲν γὰρ ἦν ἐν τοῖς ἀρχαίοις τὸ τίμιον Σάββατον· μετέθηκε δὲ ὁ Κύριος τὴν τοῦ Σαββάτου ἡμέραν εἰς Κυριακήν."]

[v] Epiphan., Hom. de Resurr., [Op. tom. ii. pp. 277. D, 278. A. ed. Petav.—"Αὕτη ἡ ἡμέρα, ἣν ηὐλόγησεν ὁ Θεὸς, (καὶ) ἡγίασεν αὐτήν· ὅτι ἐν αὐτῇ κατέπαυσεν ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν ἔργων Αὐτοῦ, τελειώσας τὴν σωτηρίαν τῶν ἐπιγείων, ὁμοῦ δὲ καταχθονίων."]

[x] Aug., De Civ. Dei, lib. xxii. [c.] 30. [§ 5; Op. tom. vii. p. 702. F. ed. Bened.—"Dominicus Dies velut octavus æternus, qui per Christi Resurrectionem sacratus est," &c.]

[y] [Id.,] Epist. cxix. c. 13. [editt. before Bened.—Epist. lv. c. 13. § 23; Op. tom. ii. p. 136. F. ed. Bened.—Ad Inquisitiones Januarii, lib. II.—"Dies tamen Dominicus non Judæis sed Christianis Resurrectione Domini declaratus est, et ex illo cœpit habere festivitatem suam."]

PART IV.

is an Apostolical tradition, no man can well deny; and that it was no temporary or local constitution, which are mutable, but perpetual and universal, both the duty which is required, that is, the worship of Christ, and the ground whereupon it is required, that is, the Resurrection of Christ, and the uniform practice of the Catholic Church, do prove sufficiently. Whensoever, wheresoever, the Christian faith was propagated, the observation of the Lord's Day was propagated with it. Joseph of Arimathæa taught them the observation of the Lord's Day in Britain in the very reign of Tiberius Cæsar[z]. St. Matthew or the Eunuch read them the same lecture in Ethiopia[a]; and St. Thomas in India[b]: and although many of their converts have had little or no commerce with the rest of Christendom until of late years, yet from their conversion until now they have all of them observed the Lord's Day religiously. From whence we may safely infer, that if it was not instituted by Christ Himself, which is much most probable, it was an Apostolical constitution, and not a free custom intruded into the Church in long tract of time; nor yet a constitution of one single Apostle, but of all the Apostles, or the Apostolical College; and that speedily after the Resurrection of Christ. It is St. Austin's rule, that "whatsoever the universal Church doth hold, that was not instituted by Councils but always retained, is most rightly believed not to have been delivered but by Apostolical authority[c]." Such an universal tradition is the Lord's Day. The same Father speaketh yet more expressly as to the day itself:—"The Apostles and Apostolic

[Acts viii. 27—39.]

[z] [Bramhall appears to have assumed the story respecting Joseph of Arimathea's mission to England to be true; See, e. g., The Just Vindic., c. v. (above in vol. i. p. 160. note g) Disc. ii. Pt. i. The assertion that he taught the observance of the Lord's Day, is a mere inference from the assumption that he preached the Gospel and the fact that the Lord's Day was observed from the first in the British Church: at least there is no special mention made of the point in the many authorities (so called) quoted by Ussher, Antiq. Brit. Eccl., c. ii.]

[a] [S. Matthew preached in Ethiopia according to Socrates, (Hist. Eccl. lib. i. c. 19) and Rufinus (Hist. Eccl. lib. x. c. 9); see Tillemont, Mémoires &c., S. Matth. p. 391. note ii. The assertion respecting the Lord's Day is but an inference, as in the former case.]

[b] [For the ancient authorities respecting St. Thomas's preaching to the Indians (whatever nation be understood by the name), see Tillemont, ibid., S. Thomas pp. 356, 357, and note iv. There is no more express testimony here than in the other cases, respecting the Lord's Day.]

[c] S. Aug., De Bapt. Cont. Donat., lib. iv. c. 24. [§ 31; Op. tom. ix. p. 140. C, D.—"Quod universa tenet Ecclesia, nec Conciliis institutum sed semper retentum est, non nisi auctoritate Apostolicâ traditum rectissime creditur."]

men decreed" ("*sanxerunt*"), "that the Lord's Day should be observed with religious solemnity[d]." By "Apostolical men" in St. Austin we ought to understand, not ordinary pastors endued with Apostolical qualities, but such persons, who though they were not of the number of the twelve Apostles, yet were employed by Christ as Apostles in the planting of Churches and the government of them. These twelve prime Apostles, and the secondary Apostles, who were their contemporaries, whom he calleth "Apostolic men," that is, the Apostolical college, accordingly either as they had been directed by Christ after His resurrection but before His Ascension, or were inspired by the Holy Ghost, were those who decreed the religious solemnization of the first day of the week or the Lord's Day. Therefore with good reason doth St. Basil reckon this as an Apostolical tradition, that "upon the first day of the week they made their prayers standing upright[e]." Here are two Apostolical traditions twisted together: first, for the time of their holy assemblies, —"upon the first day of the week;" secondly, for the gesture, that was, "standing;" and both in memory of the Resurrection of Christ. Neither was this the tradition of one single Apostle, as Saint John's tradition about the observation of Easter[f] is supposed to have been (though for my part I believe no such thing, but that some of his disciples did mistake a prudential compliance with the Jews, both for the keeping of that festival and of the Sabbath for a time, the better to gain them to Christ, for a different tradition), but a tradition of the whole Apostolical college. This appeareth

Discourse I.

[d] [Id.,] Serm. [ccli.] de Temp., [editt. before Bened.—Pseudo-Aug., Serm. cclxxx. § 2; Op. tom. v. Append. p. 467. A. ed. Bened.—"Dominicum ergo Diem Apostoli et Apostolici viri ideo religiosâ solemnitate habendam sanxerunt, quia in eodem Redemtor noster a mortuis resurrexit."—The words are borrowed by the author of the sermon from a tract attributed to Alcuin (De Div. Offic., c. 27. Op. p. 1072. Paris. 1617), as quoted by the Benedictine editors; which however is not Alcuin's according to Cave, but was written after A.D. 1000.]

[e] [Basil.,] De Spiritu Sancto, c. xxvii. [Op. tom. ii. p. 212. A, B. Paris. 1618.—"Καὶ ὀρθοὶ μὲν πληροῦμεν τὰς εὐχὰς ἐν τῇ μιᾷ τοῦ Σαββάτου· τὸν δὲ λόγον οὐ πάντες οἴδαμεν· οὐ γὰρ μόνον ὡς συναναστάντες Χριστῷ, καὶ τὰ ἄνω ζητεῖν ὀφείλοντες, ἐν τῇ ἀναστασίμῳ ἡμέρᾳ τῆς δεδομένης ἡμῖν χάριτος διὰ τῆς κατὰ τὴν προσευχὴν στάσεως ἑαυτοὺς ὑπομιμνήσκομεν· ἀλλ' ὅτι δοκεῖ πως τοῦ προσδοκωμένου αἰῶνος εἶναι εἰκών."—And compare (as regards the Lord's Day being identical with the first day of the week) the Hexa-em., Hom. ii. ibid. tom. i. p. 28. C.]

[f] [Irenæi Epist. ad Victor., ap Euseb., Hist. Eccl., lib. v. c. 24. p. 249. ed. Reading; and Polycratis Epist. ad Victor., ap. Euseb., ibid. p. 244.]

PART IV.

by the uniform observation of the Lord's Day in all Churches. Neither was it a new upstart tradition; because no Apostolical Church doth take any notice of any new or later introduction of the Lord's Day among them, but derive it from their first conversion. I might prove this more, but that [it] is generally acknowledged, even by those who are not suspected to have attributed too much to the Lord's Day. As that learned Bishop,—"We believe that the holy Apostles ordained Sunday to be a weekly holy day[g]." If "the Apostles" did "ordain" it, then there was an Apostolical precept for it, either written or unwritten. The same is asserted by Brerewood:—"How hath the first day of the week gained the celebration and solemnity to become the Sabbath of Christians? by the constitution of the Church, and only by that; yet of that most ancient Church (I confess) which next followed the Ascension of our Redeemer[h]." 918

First objection;—[that this would render it only a human law.]

Against this which I have said, two things of moment are objected; first, that a constitution of any Church whatsoever makes but an human right[i]. If they did only oppose that Divine right of the Lord's Day, which some endeavour to derive from the fourth Commandment, or from any positive law of the Sabbath in the Old Testament, I should not oppose them at all; for I do firmly believe, that none of them do bind Christians now, further than their natural equity, and exemplarily. But to make Apostolical constitutions to be but human laws, that I cannot admit, and withal believe that the Holy Ghost hath Divine authority. Let them but cast their eyes upon that Apostolical sanction;—"It seemeth good to the Holy Ghost and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things." And that very Apostolical constitution there mentioned doth concern this very case, more than perhaps most men apprehend; for it dis-

Acts xv. 28.

[g] Bishop White, Of the Sabbath, [A Treatise of the Sabbath Day, containing a Defence of the Orthodoxall Doctrine of the Church of England against Sabbatarian Novelty, by Dr. Francis White Bp. of Ely, p. 189. 3rd edit. 1636.]

[h] [Brerewood, Treatise of the Sabaoth (so spelt throughout the work) Oxf. 4to. 1630.] pp 37, [38.—Brerewood's doctrine is, in brief, that the 4th Commandment has (being a temporary law) ceased altogether, that the Lord's Day is simply an institution of the Church and not analogically related to the Sabbath, and consequently that it is an error and Judaistic to conceive the law of the Sabbath to be in any way the law of the Lord's Day.]

[i] [See e. g. Brerewood's Second Treatise of the Sabbath, p. 21. 4to. Oxf. 1632.]

chargeth all the Gentiles which were Christians, from the necessary obedience of the Law of Moses, and particularly from the observation of the Jewish Sabbath. Is it a likely thing, that the Jews' Sabbath should be abrogated by Divine law and the Christians' Lord's Day be introduced by human laws?

[It is not a prudential constitution merely.]

The former objection is yet further urged[k]:—that those constitutions which were made by the Apostles, as they were Apostles and were inspired by the Holy Ghost, did make a Divine right; but those prudential constitutions, which they made as pastors of the Church, do make but human right. Let it be admitted, that the Apostles themselves both might make and did make some dispensable constitutions, such as the Church might abrogate: but either they were local or temporary laws, fitted to some particular times or places; whereas this observation is perpetual and universal, for all times and all places of the Christian world, where there is, and so far as there is, a possibility to observe it: or else those Apostolical constitutions were about some petite ceremonies and circumstances; whereas this constitution is about that one necessary thing, the service of Almighty God, and that time which is to be set apart for the performance thereof: or, lastly, the grounds or reasons of those constitutions were mutable grounds or reasons; and being actually changed in tract of time, and so become impeditive of greater good, God Almighty doth dispense with them, and the succeeding Church may abrogate them; but the ground of this constitution is everlasting, to honour Christ's Resurrection, and to acknowledge Him to be our God.

Second objection;—[that there is no precept in Scripture for the change of day.]

Secondly, it is objected[k], that there is no precept of Christ or His Apostles for the abrogation of Saturday and solemnization of Sunday recorded in Holy Scripture.

[1. It is immaterial whether there be a *formal* precept.]

I answer three ways. First, it is not material, whether there be a formal precept for it or no, either written or unwritten. The precept is written in man's heart by the finger of God,—that a time is to be set apart for God's service,—and needeth not to be recorded in paper: which being so, the practice of the Apostles to solemnize the first day of the week to that end that Christians might imitate them (which is

[k] [Brerewood, ibid. pp. 27, 34, and pp. 18, 19.—Ironside, Seven Questions of the Sabbath Briefly Disputed, c. xix. pp. 173, 179, and c. xx. pp. 195, 196. 4to. Oxf. 1637.]

PART IV.

recorded in Holy Scripture), is a sufficient precept or direction of Christians to the particular time. Not only the formal precept, orally given, of those who have authority, but the certain intimation of their pleasure, by what way soever it be done, doth oblige their subjects. Tarquin intimated his pleasure to his son sufficiently by cutting off the tops of the fairest poppies, without speaking a word; and he both understood him and obeyed him[l]. The ancient or common law of England doth not consist in statutes, but in old customs, and precedents grounded upon practice. A custom immemorial uncontrolled is a sufficient proof of sovereign approbation, and example is a more compendious way of direction than precepts. To question now, whether there was a formal precept for that which all the Christian world hath obeyed ever since Christ's time, and shall obey until Christ's second coming, is a strange degree of folly.

[2. It is immaterial whether there be a *written* precept.]

Secondly, I answer, that so there was a precept, it is not material whether it was written or not. A general's order must be obeyed, howsoever it be given, whether by word or writing. And he who shall disobey it, and except against it, because it was not given him in writing, if he be called before a council of war for his contempt, will find his error. I have shewed formerly[m], that our obligation to obey Apostolical pre- 919
cepts doth not depend upon the writing of them, but upon Apostolical authority; because Christ made them His vicegerents in His Church:—"As My Father sent Me, so send I you." He who had a certain guide, and would not follow him without a note or direction in writing, deserved to be left behind. "*Mutato nomine de te narratur fabula*[n]." The Lord's Day was solemnized by Christians before the New Testament was written.

[John xx. 21.]

[3. It is not so clear that there is no precept of the kind recorded in Scripture.]

Thirdly, I answer, that it is not so clear as some would make it, that there is no Apostolical precept recorded in Scripture for transferring the moral duties of the Sabbath to the Lord's Day. First, we have a solemn decree of the Apostolical College in the point, for discharging Christians from the necessary observation of the Law of Moses; whereof the law of the Sabbath is a part. Secondly, for the observation of the Lord's Day as a time set apart for His service, we

Acts xv. [23—29.]

[l] [Liv., i. 54.] [m] [Above pp. 32—36.] [n] [Horat., Sat., I. i. 69, 70.]

have, either a precept, or that which cometh very near it, and strongly implieth that there was such a precept:—"Now concerning the collection for the Saints, as I have given order to the Churches of Galatia, even so do ye; upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come." I observe, first, that this was no bare intimation of the Apostle's desire, but an act of Apostolical authority, or an express ordinance or command:—"As I have given order to the Churches of Galatia, even so do ye." Secondly, that this was no peculiar ordinance for the Churches of Corinth, but for the Churches of Galatia also; and from the parity of reason it may be justly presumed, that it was for all other Churches where such collections were to be made. Thirdly, that the received custom and practice of the Church was then, about twenty years after the Passion of Christ, for Christians to assemble themselves together constantly upon the first day of the week. If it had not been for this reason, that is, the public assembly of all who were interessed in this affair at that time, and the agreeableness of such a pious and charitable work with the other duties of the Lord's Day, the first day of the succeeding week had been a most improper day for all Christians to cast up their accompts of the forepast week, and to proportion their weekly charity to their weekly gains (as the text requireth—"As God had prospered him"), after the week was ended and the weekly festival was past. Now such assemblies could have no other ground but the Resurrection of Christ upon that day, and the sanctification of that day to the public service of God. That this was the common practice then, and this the end of their assembling, is evident both from other texts of Holy Scripture and from the perpetual custom of the universal Church. Fourthly, we observe hence, that the collection for the Saints is a proper work of a festival, and a part of that duty which we owe to Christ upon the Lord's Day:—"Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of these little ones, ye have done it unto Me;"—whereupon the same Apostle groundeth his exhortation,—"To do good and communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased." And that it was so esteemed in the primitive times, Justin Martyr is a luculent witness,

DISCOURSE I.

1 Cor. xvi. 1, 2.

[Matt. xxv. 40.]

Heb. xiii. 16.

PART IV.

who maketh these collections or oblations to be a Lord's Day duty[o]; and St. Cyprian, who taxeth the omission of this duty upon that day as a fault,—"Dost thou being rich believe that thou celebratest the Lord's Day rightly, who never regardest the poor man's box[p]?" From all which observations I conclude, that though the text do not expressly command that the first day of the week should be observed as the Christians' weekly festival, neither can it be inferred from these words in a divided sense, yet, if we take them in a compounded sense, with respect to the uniform practice of the primitive Church then and ever since, they do plainly prove, that the first day of the week was the weekly festival of Christians at that time, and do strongly imply or rather suppose, that before this Apostolical ordinance there was another antecedaneous precept for the observation of the Lord's Day: according to the judicious determination of Bishop White in his treatise of the Sabbath[q];—"It is not necessary to demonstrate out of Scripture, that the Apostles ordained the Sunday a weekly holyday," &c.; "for it could not possibly have come to pass, that all and every Apostolical Church throughout the universal world should so early and in the beginning of their plantation have consented together to make the Sunday a weekly festival, unless they had been directed thus by their first founders, the holy Apostles themselves;"—and so he concludeth out of St. Austin[q], 920 that "it is most rightly believed to have been delivered by Apostolical authority." If it was "delivered," not only by pastoral, but "by Apostolical authority," that is, by Apostles as Apostles, there is no reason to doubt of the Divine right of it.

"Corbonam."

[o] [Just. Mart.,] Apol. Secunda, [pp. 98. D, 99. A. Paris. 1636.—"Τῇ τοῦ ἡλίου λεγομένῃ ἡμέρᾳ πάντων κατὰ πόλιν ἢ ἀγροὺς μενόντων ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ συνέλευσις γίνεται," (and after reading the Scriptures, prayers, and the Holy Eucharist) "οἱ εὐποροῦντες δὲ καὶ βουλόμενοι, κατὰ προαίρεσιν, ἕκαστος τὴν ἑαυτοῦ, ὃ βούλεται δίδωσι, καὶ τὸ συλλεγόμενον παρὰ τῷ προεστῶτι ὑποτίθεται, καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπικουρεῖ ὀρφανοῖς τε καὶ χήραις," κ. τ. λ.]

[p] [Cypr.,] De Pietate et Eleemos., [De Opere et Eleem., Op. p. 203. ed. Fell.—"Locuples et dives es, et Dominicum celebrare te credis, quæ" (S. Cyprian is addressing the "matronæ in Ecclesia Christi") "corbonam omnino non respicis; quæ in Dominicum sine sacrificio venis; quæ partem de sacrificio, quod pauper obtulit, sumis?" Where see Fell's note. "Corbona" =gazophylacium (Ducange, Gloss., quoting Matt. xxvii. 6,—"Non licet eos mittere in corbonam, quia pretium sanguinis est").]

[q] [Bp. White, Of the Sabbath,] pp. 192, [193:—from St. Aug., De Bapt. Cont. Donat., lib. iv. c. 24. § 31; Op. tom. ix. p. 140. C, D. See above p. 34. note c.]

Discourse I. [Conclusion.]

I conclude, that it is evident that the Lord's Day was an Apostolical ordinance, and that it is very probable that the Apostles were directed personally by Christ to do what they did, both about the time and place of His worship and the persons who were to serve Him; according to that remarkable place of St. Clement, a contemporary and very familiar with the Apostles, in his undoubted epistle to the Corinthians, as authentic a testimony as can be produced after the Holy Scripture;—"We ought to do all things in order, which our Lord commanded to be performed at set seasons, both oblations and liturgies, and commanded them not to be done rashly or disorderly, *ἀλλ' ὡρισμένοις καιροῖς καὶ ὥραις*"—"but at appointed seasons and hours; and where and by whom He would have them performed, He Himself hath determined by His sovereign will, that all things being done holily, and according to His good pleasure, might be agreeable to His will; they therefore, who make their oblations at the appointed times, are acceptable and blessed, who following the commandments of the Lord do in no wise transgress[r]." If Christ Himself did prescribe rules, both for the times and places, when and where Divine offices were to be performed, and the persons by whom, as St. Clement affirmeth with great confidence, there is little doubt to be made but the Lord's Day was His own ordination. And so I have done with the first question, by what and whose authority the Lord's Day is observed in the Church.

SECTION THE ELEVENTH.

II. When the Lord's Day began first to be observed.

The second question is, when Sunday began to be observed as the weekly festival of Christians; to which I answer by degrees.

[r] Clement., Epist. I. ad Corinth., [pp. 52, 53. ed. Jun. 4to.] Oxon. anno 1633. [—c. xl. p. 170. tom. i. inter Patr. Apost. Cotelerii.—"*Πάντα τάξει ποιεῖν ὀφείλομεν, ὅσα ὁ Δεσπότης ἐπιτελεῖν ἐκέλευσεν. Κατὰ καιροὺς τεταγμένους τάς τε προσφορὰς καὶ λειτουργίας ἐπιτελεῖσθαι, καὶ οὐκ εἰκῇ ἢ ἀτάκτως (ἐκέλευσεν) γίνεσθαι, ἀλλ' ὡρισμένοις καιροῖς καὶ ὥραις· ποῦ τε καὶ διά τινων ἐπιτελεῖσθαι θέλει, Αὐτὸς ὥρισεν τῇ ὑπερτάτῃ Αὐτοῦ βουλήσει· ἵν' ὁσίως πάντα γινόμενα ἐν εὐδοκήσει, εὐπρόσδεκτα εἴη τῷ θελήματι Αὐτοῦ. Οἱ οὖν τοῖς προστεταγμένοις καιροῖς ποιοῦντες τὰς προσφορὰς αὐτῶν, εὐπρόσδεκτοί τε καὶ μακάριοι· τοῖς γὰρ νομίμοις τοῦ Δεσπότου ἀκολουθοῦντες οὐ διαμαρτάνουσιν.*"]

PART IV.

[Through the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age.]

First, that it was kept holy by all Christians throughout the universal Church immediately after the age of the Apostles: for which we have almost as many witnesses as there are writers of those ages, whereof some were successors of the Apostles and some were their contemporaries; as St. Clement[s], St. Ignatius[t], Melito[u], who wrote a book of the Lord's Day, Dionysius of Corinth[v], Justin Martyr[x], Tertullian[y], Origen[z], &c. This truth is undeniable; and so generally confessed, that I forbear to set down any testimonies about it. This

[s] [There is no passage in the genuine works of St. Clement of Rome more pointedly referring to the Lord's Day than that just quoted. But Bramhall alludes to such passages as the 64th of the (so called) Apostolic Canons (in Lib. viii. Constit. Apostol., tom. i. p. 450. Patr. Apost. ed. Cotel.—"Εἴ τις κληρικὸς εὑρεθῇ τὴν κυριακὴν ἡμέραν ἢ τὸ σάββατον, πλὴν τοῦ ἑνὸς μόνου" (viz. the Saturday before Easter Day) "νηστεύων, καθαιρείσθω· ἐὰν δὲ λαικὸς ᾖ, ἀφοριζέσθω"), which go under the name of Clement. See the notes of Beveridge and Cotelerius upon the passage. This, with most of Bramhall's other references here, and some additional (see e. g. S. Basil as above quoted p. 35. note e, and St. Aug. as above quoted p. 33. notes x, y, and S. Cypr., Epist. 64. Ad Fidum, p. 161. ed. Fell, to which many others might be added), may be found in Bellarm., De Cultu Sanct., lib. iii. c. 11. Op. tom. i. p. 2172. D, and the other writers upon the controversy.]

[t] [Ignat., Epist. ad Magnes., § ix. p. 57. tom. ii. ap. Cotel.—"Καὶ μετὰ τὸ σαββατίσαι ἑορταζέτω πᾶς φιλόχριστος τὴν κυριακὴν, τὴν ἀναστάσιμον, τὴν βασιλίδα, τὴν ὕπατον πασῶν τῶν ἡμερῶν· ἣν περιμένων ὁ προφήτης ἔλεγεν" (quoting Ps. vi. 1, xi. 1, i. e. the titles) &c., "ἐν ᾗ καὶ ἡ ζώη ἡμῶν ἀνέτειλε, καὶ τοῦ θανάτου γέγονε νίκη ἐν Χριστῷ."—This is an interpolated Epistle of St. Ignatius, and a large portion of the above passage is given up by later editors as spurious (see Jacobson's edit. of the PP. Apostol. tom. ii. p. 314); but enough remains to prove what is here in question. Ussher assailed this very passage in one of the Letters (published after his death by Dr. Bernard), which gave rise to the controversy connected with the present tract.]

[u] ["Μελίτωνος . . ὁ περὶ Κυριακῆς λόγος." Euseb., Hist. Eccl., lib. iv. c. 26. p. 188. ed. Reading.]

[v] [Ap. Euseb., Hist. Eccl., lib. iv. c. 23. p. 187. ed. Reading.—"Λέγει γοῦν" (viz. Dionysius, in an Epistle to Peter then Bp. of Rome, and to the Roman Church), "'Τὴν σὴμερον οὖν κυριακὴν ἁγίαν ἡμέραν διηγάγομεν, ἐν ᾗ ἀνεγνώκαμεν μὲν ὑμῶν τ�ὴν ἐπιστολήν,'" κ. τ. λ.]

[x] [Just. Mart., Apol. Secunda; see above p. 40. note o.]

[y] [Tertull., Apol., c. xvi. (tom. i. p. 47. A. fol. Rothomag. 1662), "Æque si diem Solis lætitiæ indulgemus, aliâ longe ratione quam religione Solis," &c.; where Tertullian is answering a charge against the Christians of worshipping the sun.—Id., De Idololat. c. xiv. (ibid. p. 243. C.), "Quæ nullam solennitatem Christianorum sibi vindicat, non Dominicum diem, non Pentecosten."—Id., De Cor. Mil. c. iii. (ibid. p. 289. B), "Die Dominico jejunium nefas dicimus, vel de geniculis adorare;" and c. xi. (ibid. p. 292. E), "Jam aut stationes aut alii magis faciet quam Christo, aut et Dominico die quando nec Christo?"—Id., De Jejun. c. xv. (ibid. p. 988. D), "Duas in anno hebdomadas xerophagiarum, nec totas, exceptis scilicet Sabbatis et Dominicis, offerimus Deo."]

[z] [Origen., Hom. vii. in Exod., c. 5. Op. tom. ii. pp. 153. D, 154. R, ed. Delarue.—"Ex Divinis namque Scripturis apparet, quod in die Dominicâ primo in terris datum est manna. Si enim (ut Scriptura dicit) sex diebus continuis collectum est, septimâ autem die, quæ est Sabbatum, cessatum est, sine dubio initium ejus a die primâ, quæ est dies Dominica, fuit. Quod si ex Divinis Scripturis hoc constat, quod die Dominicâ Deus pluit manna de cœlo et in Sabbato non pluit, intelligant Judæi jam tunc prælatam esse Dominicam nostram Judaico Sabbato," &c.]

was one of the grounds of that great mistake and calumny which the heathens cast upon the primitive Christians,—that they adored the sun,—because they prayed towards the East, and kept Sunday as a weekly festival[a]. The heathens might well scoff at our Sunday devotions, but no Christians did ever dislike or disesteem them; not the Ebionites themselves, who thought the law of the Sabbath continued still in force[b], much less Clemens Alexandrinus[c] or Origen[d]. Those two Fathers did not at all dislike the solemnization of Sunday; that was far from them: but they disliked the indevotion of their hearers upon other days in the week. "Tell me, you that meet at the Church only upon festival days" (the emphasis lies in the word "*only*"), "are not other days festival days? are they not the Lord's Days[e]?" The very truth is, they were not well pleased, that their auditors in Alexandria did not repair as frequently to their daily sermons as they desired, or as they did to Sunday assemblies.

[And in the days of the Apostles themselves.]

My second conclusion is, that Sunday was observed by Christians as a weekly holyday in the days of the Apostles themselves, and by the Apostles themselves: whence St. John calleth it "the Lord's Day," as by an usual and well known name, either because the Lord was the author, or the Lord was the object, of Sunday devotions; and so the Catholic Church hath evermore understood that place. I am not ignorant, how some[f] would have "the Lord's Day" to signify

Rev. i. 10.

[a] [Tertullian., Apol., c. xvi. as quoted above in note y.]

[b] [Euseb., Hist. Eccl., lib. iii. c. 27. p. 221. ed. Reading.—Theodoret., De Fabul. Hæret., lib. ii. c. 1; tom. iv. p. 328. ed. Shulz.]

[c] [Clem. Alex., Strom., lib. vii. tom. ii. p. 877.—"Οὗτος ἐντολὴν τὴν κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον διαπραξάμενος, κυριακὴν ἐκείνην τὴν ἡμέραν ποιεῖ, ὅτ' ἂν ἀποβάλλῃ φαῦλον νοήμα καὶ γνωστικὸν προσλάβῃ, τὴν ἐν αὐτῷ τοῦ Κυρίου ἀνάστασιν δοξάζων." See Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. ii. § 6. pp. 49, 50. Bramhall's explanation relates only to the passage which he himself cites from Origen. The passage of St. Clement just quoted, and other expressions of Origen, which are brought forward as disproving the literal observance of a set day as the Lord's Day, are really (as is obvious in the quotation just made) nothing more than exhortations to a perpetual observance of it in spirit.]

[d] Origen., [In Genes. Hom. x. (Op. tom. ii. p. 88), as quoted in the next note, and elsewhere. See Heylin, as just quoted, § 9. pp. 54, 55.]

[e] [Id., In Genes. Hom. x. § 3.—"Dicite mihi vos qui tantummodo festis diebus ad Ecclesiam convenitis, cæteri dies non sunt festi? Non sunt dies Domini? Judæorum est dies certos et raros observare solemnes; et ideo ad eos dicit Dominus, quod 'neomenias vestras et Sabbata,'" &c., "'non sustineo,'" &c.; "odit ergo Deus eos qui unum diem putant festum diem esse Domini; Christiani omni die carnes Agni comedunt," &c.]

[f] [E. g. Gomarus, De Sabbati Origine, c. vi. § 33, 34 (Op. tom. iii. p. 338. b. fol. Amstel. 1644); referred to by Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. i. § 12. p. 34.]

PART IV.

the Day of Judgment, but most improperly and without any reasonable ground. Was the Day of Judgment a fit time for [Rev. i. 1.] the revelation of "things that must shortly come to pass?" What have the seven golden candlesticks, and seven stars, and seven epistles, to do with the Day of Judgment? Others[g], by the Lord's Day, would understand (not the weekly but) the anniversary day of Christ's Resurrection, or Easter day; which, according to the Jewish manner of observing that Feast (which St. John followed), might fall upon any day of the week. Though it were supposed, yea, admitted, that St. John did tolerate the observation of Easter according to the time set down in the Mosaical law, or (it 921
may be) observed it so himself at Ephesus in a congregation of converted Jews, to comply with the dispensation of the Apostles (made upon prudential reasons, the better to gain the Jews to Christ or to retain them in the Christian religion), and to make a distinction between Jewish rites, whereof God had been the author, and, lastly, to give the Mosaical Law an honourable burial; yet what reason was there to observe it after the Jewish manner in Patmos, which was the place of his exile, where in probability there was never a Jew? Howsoever, the common consent of all interpreters, and the perpetual practice of the Catholic Church in all ages, from St. John to St. Ignatius his scholar, and so downward until this day, to give the name of the Lord's Day to Sunday and to no other festival of the Church weekly or annually, do sufficiently assure us, what St. John did understand by the Lord's Day.

[The Judaico-Christian observance of the Jewish Easter and of the Jewish Sabbath or Saturday.]

But because this question concerning the observation of Easter of old did make such a noise and hubbub in the world, and seemeth to commit the Apostles together, St. John against St. Peter and St. Paul, as if they left contradictory traditions and precepts to their disciples; and because this supposed tradition of St. John is made an argument to prove, that the Lord's Day was not instituted by Christ or His Apostles; I will endeavour to shew, that this difference was (as most differences prove to be, when they are examined to

[g] [This interpretation is also suggested by Gomarus, ibid. § 37. p. 339. a; and by Brabourne, Disc. on the Sabbath, p. 9.]

the bottom) of no great concernment in theology, but a point of prudence and discretion only.

We find a question started by some pharisaically affected Christians, whether "it was needful for the Gentiles" to be circumcised, and to observe the Mosaical Law. Under the Mosaical Law both the law of the Sabbath and the law of the Passover were comprehended. To decide this doubt, the Apostles and Elders of the Church assembled in council: wherein they freed and discharged the Gentiles from all necessary obedience to the Law of Moses; but as for the Jews, though they declared the Law to be a burden, "which neither we nor our fathers were able to bear," and that both we and they must expect salvation, not from our obedience to the Mosaical Law, but "through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ," yet they did not forbid the Jews all compliance with the Law of Moses; nay, rather, out of prudential and charitable considerations, they both advised them to it, and by their own example encouraged them in it;—"Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe, and they are [all] zealous of the Law; and they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses," &c.; therefore they exhort him to "purify" himself, adding, that "touching the Gentiles which believe," they had "written and concluded that they should observe no such thing." Thence it was that St. Paul caused Timothy, whose mother was a Jewess, to be circumcised;—to give satisfaction to the Jews. This prudent indulgence and charitable condescension of the Apostles to the Jews, the better to retain those in the Christian religion who were converted, and to facilitate the conversion of those who were unconverted, was the true and the only reason of the observation of Saturday as a weekly festival in the primitive Church, for some ages, after the law of the Sabbath (as to the legal obligation of it) was utterly abrogated; especially in the Eastern Church[h], where the Jews were dispersed all over in the most noted places. But in most parts of the Western Church, where assemblies of Jewish converts were very rare, Saturday was observed rather as a weekly fast than a festival. This was the true reason, and the only

Acts xv. 5.

Acts xv. 10, 11.

Acts xxi. 20, [21.]

[Acts xxi. 24, 25.]

Acts xvi. 3.

[h] [See authorities quoted in Bingh., XIII. ix. 3. and XX. iii. 5, 6.]

PART IV.

reason, of the observation of Easter in some Asiatic Churches according to the Jewish accompt; and, likewise, why Easter was never observed according to the Jewish accompt in the Western Church, where there were no such considerable number of Jews or Jewish converts in those days. Yet neither did this Apostolical indulgence extend at all either to the diminution of the festival-solemnity of Sunday, in any Churches, Eastern or Western, nor produce any such irregular keeping of Easter in the Western Church; where, though the Britannic Churches did not observe it uniformly with the Roman upon the same Sunday, by reason of their different computation, yet they always kept it upon a Sunday, and yet derived their manner of keeping it from the example of St. John[i]. Neither did this Apostolical dispensation extend 922
to the introducing of any Jewish rites, which were opposite to the truth of Christian religion. They had no Paschal Lamb at Easter; they had no Jewish sacrifices upon Saturday, as they used to have in the Temple upon their Sabbath; which
[John i.29.] had derogated too much from the true Paschal "Lamb, that taketh away the sins of the world," and from the all-sufficient Sacrifice of the Cross.

Thus we see, upon how small grounds that great controversy about Easter was founded;—that St. John might well be the author of the Revelations, and yet his "Lord's Day" be Sunday. A general precept, and a particular dispensation made by the same authority that gave the law, are not contradictory one to the other, nor inconsistent one with another. The law of circumcision upon the eighth day precisely was
[Josh. v. 2—9.] neither abrogated nor invalidated by the necessary delay of circumcision in the wilderness for many years together: much less were the observation of Saturday for a time in many Churches, and the keeping of the anniversary feast of Easter in some Churches of the East at the Jewish times but after the Christian manner, inconsistent with, or contradictory to, the more regular and more Christian practice of the Catholic Church; whilst neither the one nor the other were sought to be obtruded as necessary upon Christians. And this was the reason, why Polycarpus and those other Eastern

[i] [See authorities, with a brief account of the controversy, in Bingham, Orig. Eccl., XX. v. 2—4.]

Bishops, who kept the feast of Easter at the same time with the Jews, were not condemned as heretics or schismatics by the Church;—because they did not maintain their own custom to be of universal necessity, nor condemn the customs of other Christians. And yet the Quarto-decimans, who observed the same custom that Polycarpus and Polycrates did, were justly condemned as heretics and schismatics by the Church; because they maintained, that their custom was universally necessary, and would have imposed it upon all other Christians. Discourse I.

This is the first time that we meet with the name of Lord's Day, but we find the thing more early; as in the place formerly cited;—"Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come." In which words we find two acts required. The first is the private act of every Christian, which no man can take cognizance of but himself; that is, to liquidate his clear weekly gains, and lay by a proportion of it for charitable uses freely of his own accord,—"παρ' ἑαυτῷ τιθέτω;"—the other act is public, to deposit his bounty or charity in the common treasury of the Church, which followeth in the next word—"θησαυρίζων"—"treasuring" or storing up, that is, in the common treasury of the Church. That this is the right sense appeareth by the last words,—"That there be no gathering when I come." If every particular Christian had detained his oblation in his own hands, there must of necessity have been a new "gathering." But whatsoever the Apostle proposed to himself, it is likely some of them proved backward enough. For which reason he sent an express to them to see that their "bounty" was "made up aforehand." I shall need to add nothing to what I have said before[j] upon this text, but only the judgment of a learned Bishop who cannot be accused of being a Sabbatarian:—"Although this text of St. Paul maketh no express mention of Church assemblies on this day, yet, because it was the custom of Christians, and likewise because it is a thing convenient, to give alms upon the Church days, it cannot well be gainsaid, but that [if] in Corinth and Galatia the first day of the week was appointed to be the day for

1 Cor. xvi. 2.

2 Cor. ix. 5.

[j] [Above, sect. x. pp. 38—40.]

PART IV.

alms and charitable contribution, the same was also the Christians' weekly holyday for their religious assemblies[k]." He saith not 'condescended unto,' but "appointed."

[Acts xx. 7.]

We find the Apostolical practice yet more clearly Acts xx. 7:—"And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech until midnight." Sundry old books[l] read it, "When *we* were come together;" intimating, that St. Luke himself was present and an eye witness; which Beza takes to be the truer reading. We have seen formerly weekly collections for the Saints, "upon the first day of the week," which is one branch of the duty of the Lord's Day. Now we have religious assemblies, and communicating, and preaching, upon "the first day of the week." We find that Christ rose again upon the first day. We find sundry of His apparitions upon the first day. 923 We find the Holy Ghost given at such an assembly upon

[Lev. xxiii. 16.—Acts ii. 1.]

"the day of Pentecost;" that was the first day. In all these places the time, that is, "the first day," is emphatically expressed. He who would persuade us, that all this happened by chance, which happened so often, let him shew us as much for the second day or the third day, or any other day of the week, so emphatically expressed, without any apparent reason.

But they say, the words, "Ἐν τῇ μιᾷ τῶν σαββάτων," do signify some "one" day of the week indefinitely, both in this and other places[m]. They have a hard province, not only to oppose the authority of the Church of England, which translateth it "upon the first day," but also the unanimous consent of the Fathers, who expound it of the first day, and the very letter of the text. We never find these words, "Ἐν τῇ μιᾷ τῶν σαββάτων," throughout the whole Scripture, taken indefinitely for some "one" day in the week; neither will the particle which is added, suffer it to be taken indefinitely[n].

[k] Bp. White, Of the Sabbath, pp. [211,] 212. [3rd. edit. 1636.]

[l] [See Beza's note on the passage in his New Testament (p 494. fol. Genev. 1582). "Ἡμῶν" is the reading of the celebrated Codex Bezæ (among others), and is preferred by Griesbach, instead of the received "τῶν μαθητῶν." See also Mill and Wetstein in loc.]

[m] [Vide Gomarus, De Sabb. Orig., c. vi. § 2—11. Op. tom. iii. pp. 335, 336; and Erasmus, and Calvin, ad Act. xx. 7, as quoted by him.]

[n] [See Beza's note in loc.]

Moreover they make the Holy Ghost to babble superfluously. If no more ought to be understood but some one day of the week indefinitely[o], what needed so many emphatical expressions of that which all the world knew before? Whatsoever is done, must be done upon some day of the week, unless they could find out some day which is none of the seven days. If St. Paul had ordained that collections should be made upon some day of the week indefinitely, what account could he in reason have expected of his precept, when "the trumpet gave" such "an uncertain sound?" But it is evident, that that "one day" whereupon Christ did rise again, was the first day, and no other. And that "one day" whereupon He appeared, was the same first day. And so throughout, "one day" is the first day, and no other. The reason of this denomination is obvious: one day by a Hebraism signifying the first day properly, as, "The evening and the morning were one day," that is, the first day.

Discourse I.

[1 Cor. xiv. 8.]

Gen. i. 5.

It followeth,—"when the disciples came together;" not, when they were called or summoned to come together extraordinarily. It implieth strongly, that the ordinary religious assemblies of the primitive Christians were upon the first day of the week: as, if one should say, "At the feast of the passover when Pilate did release a prisoner to the people," it implieth Pilate's custom of releasing a prisoner to the people every Passover.

[Matt. xxvii. 15.—&c.]

"To break bread." I know, that "breaking of bread" in Holy Scripture often signifieth temporal refection[p]; but in this place and sundry others it signifieth evidently distribu-

[o] [Heylin (Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. i. § 9), to whom Bramhall is principally replying, suggests also, that "τῇ μιᾷ τῶν σαββάτων" may mean merely "on a certain Sabbath day;" an interpretation suggested, but not preferred, by Calvin (ad loc.).]

[p] ["Therefore it seems by him" (viz. S. Chrys. ad Act. xx. 7.), "that as the meeting was at *an ordinary supper*, so the discourse there happening was no sermon properly but *an occasional dispute*." Heylin, ibid.; who quotes as authorities Lyra, Calvin (ad Act. ii. 46), and S. Chrysostom, in their respective Commentaries, and the marginal reference (in the then authorized Version) to Acts ii. 46. The first alone is to his point: Calvin (ad Act. xx. 7) mentions the interpretation in order to reject it: S. Chrysostom simply speaks of "παρ' αὐτὸν τοῦ δείπνου τὸν καιρὸν" as a circumstance marking the zeal of the hearers, and says expressly that the day was "the Lord's Day"—"Κυριακὴ" (Hom. xliii. in Act. Apost., Op. tom. iv. p. 849. ll. 10, 13); while, for the marginal reference, although Acts ii. 46. is the only parallel passage marked in the Bibles of 1611 and earlier, yet (curiously enough) that reference is given in a still earlier edition, that of 1583, with an express explanation of the meaning of the clause questioned, viz. "*to celebrate the Lord's Supper.*"]

PART IV.

tion of the Holy Sacrament, and the context will not bear any other sense: as 1 Cor. x. 16,—"The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the Body of Christ?"—and Acts ii. 42,—"They continued stedfastly in the Apostles' doctrine and fellowship and breaking of bread and prayers." Where prayer and doctrine are joined with "breaking of bread," what can be understood but the Holy Eucharist? It had been a very mean commendation of the primitive Christians, to have said that they persevered stedfastly in eating and drinking, or at their temporal refections. And so in this place, not only the authority of the Church of England and the consent of antiquity, but even evidence of reason, doth evince, that it must be so understood. When was this meeting? Upon a Sunday; a day confessedly dedicated to the public service of God in the days of the Apostles. Who were they that did meet? A selected company of particular friends? No, but the disciples in general. How was this "breaking of bread" accompanied? With a long sermon; a fitter companion for a Sacrament than for a feast. The case is so plain, that it requireth no long debate. They may as well tell us, that when Eutychus fell from the window, he did but drop down from the table, as that this "breaking of bread" was no more than an "ordinary" repast. To sit in a window might be a convenient posture for a hearer at a long sermon, but no convenient posture for a guest, or for a waiter at a feast. Yet still I deny not, that there might be a civil refection; but I would not have the civil refection to exclude both sermon and Sacrament, which did accord well together in those days.

[Acts xx. 9.]

Lastly, some would persuade us, that St. Paul's sermon was nothing else but some "occasional discourse[q]" as they sat at meat: wherein they do once more desert our authorized translation, which styleth it "preaching;" and in the contents of the chapter, "breaking of bread" is expounded to be "the celebration of the Lord's Supper." If the pulpit be an essential of a sermon, it may be it was no sermon; but certainly it was a theological discourse, fit for so great a pastor upon a holy day to such an assembly, of which number St. Luke maketh himself to have been one. If it had not

["Διελέγετο" in orig.]

924

Verses 5, 6, 13.

[q] [Heylin, as quoted in the last note.]

been a matter of importance, St. Paul would not have continued his discourse until midnight. St. Paul's departure the next morning was a good reason of the prolonging of his discourse, but was no reason at all of the choice of the first day. That proceeded solely from the custom of the Church to assemble upon that day.

To draw nearer yet to the spring's head, or the source of the Lord's Day. In the second chapter of the Acts of the Apostles the descent of the Holy Ghost is described. "And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place." That the day of Pentecost fell that year upon a Sunday, is undeniable; because the Resurrection of Christ was upon a Sunday, and Pentecost was the fiftieth day from the Resurrection. "*Occiditur Agnus, celebratur Pascha,*" &c.—the Paschal Lamb was slain, the Passover was celebrated; and fifty days after, the Law was given, written by the Finger of God. The true Paschal Lamb was slain, the true Passover was celebrated; and fifty days after, the Holy Ghost was given, which was the Finger of God[r]. "They were all;"—what "all?" all the Apostles? no, all the disciples, all those hundred and twenty, whereof we read Acts i. 15. So much the apology of St. Peter, as the speaker for the Apostolical college, doth testify, Acts ii. 14; distinguishing the persons inspired from the Apostles,—"These are not drunken, as ye suppose." So much the prophecy of Joel doth insinuate, under the notion of "sons and daughters," and "servants and handmaids." So much St. Chrysostom saith expressly upon the same text[s]. "In one place;"—what place? even "*cœnaculum Sionis*"—that "upper room upon the top of mount Sion," where Christ kept His last Passover, instituted the Lord's Supper, appeared to His disciples the door being shut, ordained His Apostles; wherein Matthias was chosen; wherein the Holy Ghost descended in the likeness of cloven tongues of fire,—cloven, to note discretion, of

[Acts ii. 1.]

[Acts ii. 15.]

[Joel ii. 28, 29.—Acts ii. 17, 18.]

[Mark xiv. 15: Luke xxii. 12.—John xxi. 19, 26.—Acts i. 13: ii. 1.]

[r] [Bede, Libell. de Offic., Op. tom. vii. p. 646. Compare August., Contra Faustam, lib. xxxii. c. 12. (Op. tom. viii. p. 456. C, D); and the spurious Quæst. Ex Nov. Testam. attributed to St. Augustin, Quæst. xcv. (Op. tom. iii. Append. p. 85. B—E.).]

[s] [S. Chrys., Hom. iv. in Act. Apost., Op. tom. iv. pp. 629. l. 44, 630. ll. 1, 2.—"Τί δαί; ἆρα ἐπὶ τοὺς δώδεκα μόνους ἦλθεν, οὐχὶ δὲ καὶ ἐπὶ τοὺς λοιποὺς; οὐδαμῶς· ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐπὶ τοὺς ἑκατὸν εἴκοσιν. Οὐ γὰρ ἂν ἁπλῶς παρήγαγε τὴν μαρτυρίαν τοῦ προφήτου ὁ Πέτρος λέγων," κ. τ. λ. And so also Hieron., Epitaph. Paulæ Matris, Op. tom. iv. P. ii. p. 674.]

PART IV.

fire, to express devotion;—wherein the order of deacons was instituted; wherein the councils of the Apostles at Jerusalem were celebrated: that place, which was shaken miraculously upon the prayers of the Church, as an undoubted testimony of God's presence; that place, which was the first Christian Church upon earth[t]. So here we have another solemn assembly of Christians upon the Lord's Day, or the first day of the week, in a place consecrated by Christ Himself for holy actions, and that approved and authorized by the visible descent of the Holy Ghost: so as this day may truly be said to be sacred to the whole Trinity; to God the Father, as the first day of the Creation, wherein the most noble creatures, the heavens and the holy Angels were made, and which preserveth the memorial of the Creation as well as the seventh day; to God the Son, Whose resurrection upon this day was the new creation of the world; to God the Holy Ghost, Who on this day descended visibly upon the disciples, as if He should proclaim aloud, that He hallowed that day to Himself.

[Acts iv. 31.]

But it is objected, that all this honour given here to this day, was to the day of Pentecost, which fell accidentally that year upon the first day of the week[u]. First, if it were so, that doth but prove it to have been a double festival, wherein a weekly and an annual festival did meet together; in which case neither of them ought to be robbed of their just honour. Secondly, the law of the Jewish Pentecost was then utterly abrogated by the death of Christ, and could challenge no farther right but an honourable interment. If the Christian festival of Easter ought from thenceforward to have been generally kept upon Sunday, in memory of Christ's Resurrection, according to the custom of the Catholic Church, except only in case of Apostolical dispensation for prudential

[t] [For the tradition respecting the identity of "the upper-chamber" ("τὸ ὑπερῷον"—Acts i. 13), wherein all these events happened, see Pearson, Lectt. in Act. Apost., I. vi, vii, inter Op. Posthuma, pp. 30, 31. Lond. 1688; and Mede (Disc. concerning Churches, Introd., Works bk. ii. pp. 408—410. fol. 1664), from Bede (De Sanctis Locis, c. iii; Op. tom. iii. p. 489) and Nicephor. (H. E. viii. 30). Mede interprets also the "κατ' οἶκον" of Acts iii. 46; v. 42, of this same "upper-chamber," as distinguished from the Temple.]

[u] [Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. i. § 5. That the day of Pentecost did fall upon a Sunday in the year of our Lord's Crucifixion, would appear to be obvious from the Gospels; and see Baron., in an. 34. num. 239, and the authorities there quoted. A question however has been raised upon the subject, from the difficulty of fixing the right day of the Passover in that year to the Thursday or the Friday;—for which see Bellarmine, De Cultu Sanctor., lib. iii. c. 13 (Op. tom. i. pp. 2181—2186).]

reasons, then the feast of Pentecost ought also thenceforward to be observed upon Sunday. And then all this honour will fall, not accidentally but originally, upon Sunday, as the day of Christ's Resurrection. Thirdly, no contingence can derogate from the prescience and disposition of Almighty God, Who acteth all that is good, permitteth all that is evil, and disposeth all things, both good and evil. Nothing could
925 be more contingent than the sale of Joseph into Egypt, and the means of his advancement there; yet the whole success and series of it was ordered by the providence of God. [Gen. xlv. 5, 7; l. 20.]

That the true Paschal Lamb should be slain that very day, and that very hour, when the Jews kept their Passover, and that both Easter and Pentecost should fall out that year upon a Sunday, the day of Christ's Resurrection, might have much of contingency in it; yet the whole affair might be so ordered by the providence of God for the honour of Christ. The rarer that it was for Pentecost to fall upon a Sunday, the more honour it was to the Lord's Day, that it should fall out so just then, and three thousand souls be converted by the first Christian sermon upon that day. It is as easy to imagine, that a printer's box of letters should drop one by one into their distinct places, or that a ship at sea should steer itself against wind and tide in the midst of rocks and sands into the harbour without a pilot, as that all those intestine discords between Augustus, Antony, and young Pompey, of the East against the West, the sea against the land, should all be hushed up so on a sudden just before the birth of "the Prince of Peace;" and that all the machinations of the Jews, [Isai. ix. 6.] and the malice of the Scribes and Pharisees, and the treason of Judas, like so many poisons tempered together by a skilful physician, should produce such a saving remedy for mankind, even the Sacrifice of the true Paschal Lamb, in such an admirable order just at the time of the Jewish Passover; and that the descent of the Holy Ghost should fall out upon the day of Pentecost, when the Law was given; and that the new creation of the world by the Resurrection of Christ, and the new illumination of the world by the Holy Ghost, should fall out both upon the Lord's peculiar day, which from that very time forward was destinated to be the weekly festival of the Church; and so that day, which without doubt was the be-

PART IV.

ginning of days, and, if the old tradition[v] said true, shall be the ending of days, should be consecrated to Him, Who is
Rev. i. 8. "the beginning and the ending, the first and the last;"—I say, it is not imaginable, how all this should come to pass in such a Divine order, but by the sovereign overruling providence of God: Who can determine the event without necessitating the agents; Who hath predetermined many things to be done without predetermining the doers of them, where the thing done is good, and yet the doing of it sinful; Whose Divine power and wisdom hath infinite ways to accomplish His purpose without doing violence to the nature of His creatures; Whose prescience is infallible, yet importeth no antecedent but a hypothetical necessity. Things are not therefore, because they are foreknown; but therefore they are foreknown, because they shall be[w]; yea, shall be infallibly in God's disposition, yet preserving the natures of free and contingent agents.

These are the most remarkable instances which we find in Holy Scripture of hallowing the Lord's Day. And these shew plainly, that our Church had good ground to say, that "immediately after the Ascension of Christ, Christian people began to choose them a standing day of the week to come together in[x]." It was "immediately" indeed after the Ascension, for we find a precedent within ten complete days. Neither is the word "choosing" inconsistent with that I say.
Deut. xxx. 19. A man may "choose" that which is commanded. "I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing, therefore

[v] [Compare the Sermon, in Pascha, formerly attributed to St. Augustine (Serm. clxvii. § 2. in Append. Op. tom. v. p. 292. D, E.) from which Bramhall (below p. 60. text to note n) has largely borrowed.—"Bene quoque Dominicus sermo ac Resurrectio Domini conjunguntur. Venerabilis est hic dies, qui Dominicus dies et dies primus atque perfectus est; et dies clarus, in quo visa est prima lux; in quo transgressi sunt filii Israel Mare Rubrum siccis pedibus; et in quo pluit manna filiis Israel in deserto; et quo Dominus Baptizatus est in Jordane: quo vinum de aquâ in Cana Galilææ factum est; quo benedixit Dominus quinque panes, quibus satiavit quinque millia hominum; in quo Resurrexit Dominus a morte; quo intravit Dominus in domos clausas, ubi erant discipuli congregati propter metum Judæorum; in quo Spiritus Sanctus descendit in Apostolos; et *in quo speramus Dominum nostrum Jesum Christum ad Judicium venturum: in quo die omnis creatura reformabitur in melius, ut sol et luna septuplum lumen accipiant, et sancti homines vitam æternam propter merita bonæ obedientiæ recipiant a Deo.*"]

[w] ["Non enim ex eo quod Deus scit futurum aliquid, idcirco futurum est; sed quia futurum est, Deus novit." Hieron., Comment. ad Hierem. c. xxvi; Op. tom. iii. p. 653. And see above in the Castig. of Mr. Hobbes' Animadv., Answ. to Fount of Arg. (vol. iv. p. 236), Disc. ii. Pt. iii.]

[x] Homily of Place and Time of Prayer, [Pt. i. p. 304. 8vo. Oxf. 1840.]

choose life." And, "*Choose* this day whom you will serve," &c.; "but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord." Josh. xxiv. 15.

But yet we do not want some conspicuous marks to guide us higher, or at least to intimate thus much unto us, even before the Ascension of Christ: as, His Rising again from the dead upon this day, and His vouchsafing as upon this day to make His principal apparitions to His Apostles in their oratory or house of prayer, whilst they were secretly "assembled for fear of the Jews;" as, John xx. 19, when He ordained His Apostles, and John xx. 26, when He rooted infidelity out of the hearts of His disciples; both times upon the Lord's Day, both times in their house of prayer, both times when they were secretly assembled. There is something in all this. It deserveth to be observed, how all the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John, do punctually and emphatically name "the first day of the week;" as if the Holy Ghost seemed to be delighted with this circumstance of the time or day which was designed for His own service. We do not find the like mention of any other day of the week, except the Sabbath, whilst it continued the Lord's holy day.

926 St. Matthew telleth us, that upon the very "dawning of the first day of the week" the two Maries had the early news of Christ's Resurrection, first from an Angel, then from Himself. St. Mark telleth us, both of His Resurrection "early the first day of the week," and of His early apparition to the women, particularly to Mary Magdalene, upon the same "first day of the week," and after to the two disciples travelling to Emmaus, and lastly to the eleven Apostles upon the self-same day. The very same is related by St. Luke with the same circumstance of "the first day of the week." St. John baulketh this circumstance no more than the rest; —"The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene;" and, "The same day at evening, being the first day of the week," &c. And yet in the same chapter he proceedeth yet to another apparition to the Apostles, "after eight days." As "after three days" signifieth the third day, so "after eight days" signifieth the eighth day inclusively, in the language of the Scripture. The Evangelist might as well have said 'the next Lord's Day,' or, 'the next first day of the week.' If any man shall think, that all these emphatical expressions of "the

[Passages in the Gospels.]

[Matt. xxviii. 1.—Mark xvi. 2,9.—Luke xxiv. 1.—John xx. 1, 19.]

Matt. xxviii. 1.

Mark xvi.9.

[Mark xvi. 2, 12, 14.]

[Luke xxiv.1,&c.]

John xx. 1, 19.

Verse 26.

Mark viii. 31.

PART IV. [Rev.i.10.]

first day of the week," and of no other day of the week, until they end finally in a downright "Lord's Day," were altogether without design and signify nothing, I must crave leave to dissent from him.

That which some object[y] concerning the two disciples travelling to Emmaus, maketh nothing against what I say, because it was the day of the Resurrection, or "first day of the week;" but much for it. Neither are Christians obliged to such a strict rest upon the Lord's Day as the Jews were upon their Sabbath, much less to such a rest as the Pharisees had introduced, who would not allow a man to roast an apple or peel an onion or kill a flea upon the Sabbath[z], for fear of profaning it. Works of necessity, piety, and charity, even upon the Sabbath, did always carry with them a dispensation from Heaven; and upon the Lord's Day, in a greater latitude, with less cause of scruple. It might be those two disciples were employed by the Church in that doubtful time to the house of Cleophas which was in Emmaus; and so all these three favourable requisites, piety, necessity, and charity, might concur in that voyage. This we are sure of, their discourse was such as might well become those who were then sanctifying the Lord's Day; although they were not yet fully satisfied that Christ was risen again, until they received final satisfaction from Christ Himself. How should they be satisfied then more than the rest of the Apostles, who esteemed the words of the women that related it to be but "idle tales, and believed them not?"

Luke xxiv. 11.

Luke xxiv. 30, [35.]

Moreover we read in the same place, that "Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave unto them," and that "He was known of" those two disciples "in breaking of bread." I should be loth to conclude from hence for a half communion, with the Papist, because there is no mention in that text of the cup[a]; whereas they themselves do hold the wine as necessary to be offered as the bread, though not so necessary to be distributed as the bread[b] (though at other times they change their note, witness that of Bellarmine,—"The bread may be taken away if the cup be given[c]"). Yet

[y] [Heylin, Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. i. § 4.]

[z] [See Buxtorf, Syn. Jud., c. xi. pp. 301, 305. 12mo. Hanov. 1604.]

[a] [Bellarm., De Sacram. Euchar., lib. iv. c. 24: Op. tom. ii. pp. 894. D, 895. A, B.]

[b] [Id., ibid., c. 25; ibid. p. 911. C.]

[c] [Id., ibid., c. 27; ibid. p. 925. C.—See above in the Answ. to La Millet. vol. i. p. 20), Disc. i. Pt. i.]

this doth not convince me, that it was not the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, synecdochically expressed; especially seeing I find the words to be exactly the same with those of St. Matthew, xxvi. 26, and of St. Mark, xiv. 22, and of St. Luke, xxii. 19, at the institution of the Sacrament; and find the same words repeated by St. Paul upon the same occasion, 1 Cor. xi. 23. Neither is this my private opinion; many Fathers and other ecclesiastical writers both ancient and modern have held the same[d]. For the present I will content myself with the testimonies of two Fathers. The one is St. Hierome, in his Epitaph of Paula:—"And renewing her journey she came to Nicopolis, which was formerly called Emmaus, where the Lord, being known by breaking of bread, did dedicate the house of Cleophas to be a church[e]." The other is St. Austin; who, having shewed that the impediment which hindered the two disciples from knowing of Christ, was from Satan, proceedeth thus,—"Christ gave leave until the Sacrament of Bread, that the unity of His body being partaken, the impediment of the enemy might be understood to be removed[f]." The "Sacrament of Bread," and the "participation" of "the unity of His body," can have no other reference but to the Holy Eucharist. I know some others assert, that this was not the Holy Eucharist itself, but a
927 figure of it[g]; which, to my purpose,—to shew that this was a holy action, proper for the Lord's Day,—is enough. So, in-

[d] [Bede, in loc. (lib. vi. c. 96; Op. tom. v. pp. 508, 509), who quotes the passage of S. Augustin given below in note f;—Theophylact, in loc. (Op. tom. i. p. 495. A. Venet. 1754);—Opus Imperf. in Matth., Hom. xvii. (in fin. tom. vi. Op. S. Chrysost. ed. Montfauc., p. lxxxviii. 1. E.);—Isychius, In Leviticum, lib. ii. c. 9. (Biblioth. PP. tom. xii. p. 87. H. ed. De la Bigne):—who are cited (with Jerome and S. Augustin as quoted in notes e, f, below) by Maldonati (in loc.), who adopts their interpretation; and by Bellarm., de Sacram. Euchar., lib. iv. c. 24; Op. tom. ii. p. 894. D, who gives this and the interpretation of Jansenius (see below in note g) without preferring either.—Hammond (in loc.) interprets the passage of the ordinary blessing of an ordinary meal; and Whitby refers to such passages as Matt. xiv. 19, Mark vi. 41; viii. 6, as instances of a similar expression where the Eucharist is not referred to.]

[e] [Hieron., Epitaph. Paulæ Matris, Op. tom. iv. P. ii. p. 673.—"Repetitoque itinere Nicopolim, quæ prius Emmaus vocabatur, apud quam in fractione panis cognitus Dominus, Cleophæ domum in ecclesiam dedicavit."]

[f] [S. August.,] De Consensu Evangel., lib. iii. c. 25. [§ 72; Op. tom. iii. P. ii. p. 142. A.—"Non autem incongruenter accipimus hoc impedimentum in oculis eorum a Satana fuisse, ne agnosceretur Jesus; sed tamen a Christo est facta permissio usque ad Sacramentum panis, ut unitate Corporis Ejus participatâ, removeri intelligatur impedimentum inimici, ut Christus possit agnosci."]

[g] [So Cornel. Jansenius (Comment. in Concord. Evang., p. 1070. b.), quoted by Bellarm. in the same place.]

PART IV.

stead of an affront to the Lord's Day, we meet with a great honour to it;—[that[h]] Christ Himself did celebrate either the Holy Eucharist, or at least a figure of it, upon this day, being the very day of His Resurrection, the first Christian Sunday, or Lord's Day, that ever was, when "the Sun of Righteousness" did "arise" to enlighten the children of this world.

[Mal. iv. 2.]

[Conclusion.]

Out of what hath been said, it doth appear, that the Lord's Day was celebrated from the beginning, that is, from the Resurrection of Christ, in pursuance of His direction or example; and that without all doubt there was either an Apostolical precept for it, written or unwritten, or Apostolical practice, equivalent to a precept. What concerneth the Apostles, is altogether undoubted; what concerneth Christ, is piously presumed,—that when He appeared to His Apostles after His Resurrection, among His other instructions which He gave them, "in things pertaining to the Kingdom of God," He did give them a particular direction for the observation of this day, according to the testimony of St. Clement, a contemporary of the Apostles, formerly cited[i]. Howsoever, here is enough out of the Scripture itself, to prove the Divine right and the antiquity of the Lord's Day. And thus much may serve for the answer to the second question,—when the Lord's Day began to be observed as a weekly holyday.

Acts i. 3.

SECTION THE TWELFTH.

III. Why the weekly festival changed from Saturday.

The third question is, what were the grounds of the change of the Sabbath to the Lord's Day. Although the law of nature doth not prescribe the sanctifying of the seventh day, or first day, or any other day of the week in particular, yet the sanctifying of them was very agreeable to what the law of nature doth prescribe; and yet farther, hath a certain majesty and conformity in it, fit for the service of God; as if we should say, our God is one and the same God, therefore we worship Him at one and the same time, with one and the same worship. Those heathens who said, that as variety of instruments doth make the best music, so variety of worship is most

[h] ["But" in the folio edition, by an obvious misprint.]

[i] [Above p. 41. note r.]

acceptable to God, did not rightly understand or consider, either the all-sufficiency of God,—that our devotion can add nothing to Him,—or the manifold indigence of the human nature, which being daily variously exhausted, must daily be variously supplied. The Jewish Sabbath having continued so many ages in the Church, from the time of Moses until Christ, now both it, and all other their typical and ceremonial laws, were taken away by Christ, and declared to be utterly abrogated by His "*Consummatum est*"—"it is finished," upon the Cross: in sign whereof "the veil of the Temple [was[k]] rent from the top to the bottom," to shew, that the express image of those heavenly truths, which before had been but drawn in dark obscure colours and figures, was now perfectly exposed to the light. Thus much is expressly affirmed by St. Paul;—"Let no man judge you in meat or drink, or in respect of a holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days, which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ:" which manifest declaration of himself against the Jewish Sabbath, with some other places, did render the Ebionites so offended with St. Paul, that they did not only refuse to admit his writings, but also fathered manifest lies upon him; as, that "he was a Gentile both by father and mother;" that "being at Hierusalem, he turned a Jewish proselyte, in hope to have gained the High Priest's daughter to wife, but missing of his aim, he grew discontented, and writ passionately against circumcision, and the Sabbath, and the Law of Moses[l]." So then the legal observation of Saturday was ceased, according to St. Paul; although the first observation of it, as a day of gratitude to God, was permitted long after in the Church, for divers weighty reasons. The law of the Sabbath being abrogated, and the obligation thereof being ceased, after it had continued so many ages in the Church, it had been some disparagement to the Christian Church, either to have come short of the Jews in the performance of moral duties to God, or that every particular person or congregation should be left to his or their own election of the time of God's solemn worship, without either order or uniformity. And therefore the first day was presently, I had almost said immediately, upon

[John xix. 30.] [Matt. xxvii. 51.]

Col. ii. 16.

[k] ["Did" in the folio edition.]

[l] [Epiphan., Adv. Hær., lib. I. tom. ii. Hær. xxx. § 16; Op. tom. i. p. 140. D. ed. Petav.]

PART IV.

or after the Resurrection of Christ, set apart for the public service of God. But why the first day, rather than any other day of the week? This day was the beginning of time, wherein the world began. What day more fit to be dedicated to God, than that which was the first fruits of time? [Exod. xiii. 2, 12, &c.] The first-born were designed as holy to the Lord. When [Luke i. 64.] Zachary's tongue was loosed, the first use he made of it, was to praise the Lord. "*A Jove principium*[m]." Upon this day 928 [Gen. i. 1—5.] the most noble creatures were made, the heaven, and the earth, and the immortal Angels, and the light; which God created as a mean between corporeal and incorporeal substances, that the atheist might see every day before his face a resemblance of the union between his soul and his body, in the union of the light with the air. The first day of the Creation doth preserve the memory of the Creation, as well as the day after the Creation. This was the day, which God adorned more than any other with the manifold dispensations of His grace. Upon this day the Israelites were supposed to have gained their liberty from their Egyptian bondage. Upon [Exod. xvi. 1, 22.] this day certainly manna was first rained down from heaven. Upon this day, Christ is said to have been born for us, and to have been baptized in Jordan; and the Star to have appeared [Matt. xxviii. 1.—Mark xvi. 2, 9.—Luke xxiv. 1, 13, 33, 34.—John xx. 1, 19, 26.—Acts ii. 1.] to the wise men. Upon this day, Christ arose again from the dead, and made His most frequent apparitions to His Apostles until His Ascension. Upon this day, He sent the Holy Ghost. And the primitive Christians had a tradition, that upon this day His second coming to judge both the quick and the dead should be[n]. So, both in gratitude and discretion, that the

[m] [Virg., Buc., iii. 60.]

[n] [See the passage quoted above in note v. p. 54; which was evidently Bramhall's authority for the text. And compare Pseudo-August., Serm. cclxxx; Op. tom. v. Append. p. 467;—Leon. Epist. ad Dioscorum, Epist. xi. c. 1; tom. i. p. 436. ed. Quesn.;—and Bp. Cosin, Serm. xii; Works vol. i. pp. 174, 175. Anglo-Cathol. ed. That the Israelites crossed the Red Sea on the first day of the week, seems proved by comparing Exod. xvi. 1, 13, 33 (whence it appears that the sixteenth day of the second month of the year of the Exode was the first day of the week), with Exod. xii. 17, 37, 51; xiii. 20; xiv. 2, 9, 22. and Numb. xxxiii. 3, 5—8 (which mark the day on which the passage of the Red Sea took place, as the eighteenth day of the first month of that year, and consequently—since the month Abib contained thirty days—also the first day of the week). See also the Quæstiones ex Nov. Test. as quoted above p. 51, note r; where the fourteenth day of the first month and the third day of the third month in the same year, being the first Passover and the first day of Pentecost, are calculated on the same data to have happened upon the fourth day of the week. For the day on which the manna first fell, which is more plainly marked, see above p. 42. note z. That the Nativity and Baptism of our Lord took place on the first day of the

Lord at His coming might find them employed about His service, no day could be fitter for the public worship of God than this. "Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord, when He cometh, shall find so doing." But all authors do agree, that the special ground of the translation of the day was the Resurrection of Christ, which was the new creation of the world. If the memory of the old creation, and God's resting upon the seventh day, had such an influence upon the first patriarchs, that it is piously believed by some, that they did freely without any commandment observe that day of rest, according to the example of God[o], why should not Christians hallow the day of Christ's Resurrection, in memory of man's Redemption, or the new creation, completed upon that day by Christ? And so much for the grounds of the translation.

Discourse I.

Matt. xxiv. 46.

SECTION THE THIRTEENTH.

The fourth question is, whether the Lord's Day may be changed by the authority of the Church from the first day to another day of the week. It is generally admitted, that one day hath no natural or inherent holiness in it more than another. Likewise, that it was never yet changed from Christ's time until this day by any Church, is generally confessed. Thirdly, that it may be changed *de facto*—in fact, without right, no man can doubt. They who did not stick to change their Bible into an Alcoran, would not stick at changing the Lord's Day. The Lord's Day is not more precious than the Lord Himself, Whose day it is; and they who allow no distinction of days as to relative holiness[p], will make

IV. Whether the Lord's Day may be changed.

week, rests upon the (not very strong) authority quoted at the beginning of this note, and upon a calculation founded apparently on the assumption that those events happened respectively upon Dec. 25. B. C. 1, and Jan. 6. A.D. 31, of the common Era (see Baron., in an. 31. numm. 17, 18;—Bellarm., De Cultu Sanctor., lib. iii. c. 11; Op. tom. i. p. 2173. D;—Tillemont, Mém. tom. i. Vie de N. Seigneur, art vi. and notes—besides Ussher, and the other Chronologists). It would be consistent with this supposition that Sunday should also be the day of the Resurrection (which is of course obvious from the Gospels), if that day were fixed to March 27. A.D. 34; but the whole subject, as a matter of calculation, is beset with difficulties. The appearance of the Star to the wise men would of course coincide with the day of our Lord's Nativity; and the Day of Pentecost would be a Sunday, if the day of the Resurrection were so.

Compare also, for the first sentence of the above, Bellarmine as just quoted p. 2174. A.—"Et præterea Dies Dominica representat etiam memoriam creationis mundi non minus quam Sabbathum. Nam die Dominico cœpit mundus fieri, immo eo die sunt factæ omnes partes mundi principales, cœlum, terra, Angeli, lux, &c."]

[o] [See above p. 25. note g.]

[p] [Viz. the Anabaptists. See above p. 9. note c.]

PART IV.

no scruple at abrogating this holyday. But the question is, whether the Lord's Day, being taken *in sensu composito*—as it is the Lord's Day, with reference to the precept, or authoritative example, of Christ, or of His Apostles, or either of them, may yet be lawfully changed.

[Such a change unlawful.]

They who maintain the affirmative part—that it may be changed,—do it so coldly and so faintly, that they even teach their readers to doubt of the truth of their assertion[q]. "*Qui timidè rogat, docet negare*[r]." For they acknowledge, that it were a "temerarious," or an "uncomely" or "unhandsome," act, to make such a change[s]; which implieth, that there must be something in such a change inconsistent with, or dissentaneous from, the principles of reason or religion. As for myself, besides the odious brand of desultorious levity, I hold, upon my former grounds, that such a change were not only "unhandsome" and "temerarious," but altogether unlawful.

[1. No sufficient authority.]

My reasons are three. The first is taken from the defect of sufficient authority, to abrogate that which hath been instituted either by Christ or by His Apostles, whether it were by express precept or by authoritative example. Every thing ought to be loosed by the same authority by which it was bound, or by a superior authority. Apostolical authority at least did bind the Church to observe this day, and less than Apostolical authority cannot loose the Church from the obligation to observe this day. I readily acknowledge, that the Apostles made some local and temporary ordinances[t]; but those did never bind without that place for which they were made, nor beyond that time for which they were designed. Moreover, sometimes the reason or ground of a temporary ordinance doth cease. In such case, it is not the authority of the present Church, which abrogateth an Apostolical ordinance; but the law expireth of itself, when it is become impeditive of 929
greater good. But the ordinance of the Lord's Day is quite of another nature. First, it is an universal ordinance; as appear-

[q] [This is true of several among those whom Heylin (Hist. of Sabb., Pt. ii. c. vi.) mentions. But it certainly is not the case with Calvin (see above p. 10. note e), or Tindal (above p. 10. note d); nor indeed was it the general tone of the doctrine held upon the subject, whether among Reformers or Schoolmen, during the 16th century. See the quotations in Heylin, ibid.]

[r] [Senec., Hippol., 591, 592.]

[s] ["Nimis indecorum esset," according to Covarruvias, Variar. Resolut., lib. IV. c. xix. § 7 (Op. tom. i. p. 450. b. Lugd. 1606); quoted by Dr. Bound.]

[t] [See for instance Ironside, Seven Questions of the Sabbath, c. xix. p. 179.]

eth by the universal tradition of the whole Christian world. Secondly, it is a perpetual ordinance; as appeareth by the perpetual observation of it in all ages without exception. DISCOURSE I.

A second reason is taken from the ground of this ordinance; that is, the Resurrection of Christ, and all those other graces which He dispensed to us upon this day. Put all the considerations which this world can possibly afford into the other scale, and they are not sufficient to counterbalance these. The creation of the world was a very sufficient ground for the observation of the seventh-day's festival by all mankind, if God had been pleased to enjoin it. So the redemption or new creation of the world [by] the Resurrection of Christ, is a sufficient ground to Christians for celebrating the Lord's Day as a memorial thereof. And as the Jewish Sabbath was to endure as long as the Jewish polity and religion did endure, so the Lord's Day ought to endure as long as Christian religion, that is, until the second coming of Christ. Until then we are to expect no new laws, no new revelations, no new grounds. And then all temporary Sabbaths and Lord's Days shall cease, and the Saints shall celebrate one perpetual Lord's Day with Christ in Heaven. [2. The ground of the ordinance prohibits a change.]

The third reason may be taken from the perpetuity of the duty of the Lord's Day; which shall never cease whilst this world continueth. As the celebrating of the Sabbath was to the Jews a sign between God and them, testifying, that God, Who made heaven and earth, was their God, so the celebration of the Lord's Day to Christians is a profession, that the Lord, Who rose again upon that day, and triumphed over Hell and death and the grave, is their Lord. When the duty of Christians to this Lord doth cease, when they may lawfully change Him for another Lord, then the Lord's Day may cease; until then it is immutable. I will conclude this point with the words of Athanasius;—"He commanded not the observation of the Sabbath" (or Saturday) "to the new creature" (that is, to a Christian); "that he might acknowledge a beginning in the Lord's Day, but nevertheless interminable, and that he might hold for certain that the grace of it should never cease[u]." 3. [The perpetuity of the duty prohibits a change.] [Ezek. xx. 12.]

[u] De Sabb. et Circumcis., [tom. ii. p. 55. C. ed. Bened.—"Διὰ γὰρ τοῦτο ἐδόθη τὸ Σάββατον τῷ προτέρῳ λαῷ, ἵνα γινώσκῃ καὶ τὸ τέλος καὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν τῆς

PART IV.

SECTION THE FOURTEENTH.

V. Of the manner of sanctifying the Lord's Day.

The last question is, what is the right manner of sanctifying the Lord's Day: in discussing whereof,—that we may not be like blunderers, who do commonly confound respective truths with absolute and necessary truths, and if they find something in the Lord's Day which is of Divine right, they conclude presently that all things pertaining to the celebration of that day are of Divine right, and if they find something in it which is of human right, they conclude that the day itself hath no right but human,—it is necessary to distinguish the rights of the Lord's Day by the law of nature, by the evangelical law, by the positive law of God, and by human law, either ecclesiastical or civil; for every one of these laws have some influence upon the Lord's Day.

[1. According to the law of nature.]

First, for the law of nature. That which the evangelical law determineth for the first day, the law of nature prescribeth indeterminately for some time to be hallowed or set apart for the service of God. So he who profaneth this day, doth transgress both the law of the Gospel and the law of nature.

Secondly, the law of nature requireth, that the time set apart for the service of God be sufficient for the solemn performance thereof, without hasting and huddling [it] up; like a dog upon the banks of Nilus which laps and runs at the same time[x]: as if God Almighty would be content with any thing, "either with a grape or with a bean[y]," which was Cain's error. "*Ante focum, si frigus erit; si messis, in umbrâ*[z]." But that the same proportion of time is always necessary, or always sufficient, or ought always to be employed equally in the same office, I find nothing in the law of nature. One time and one condition may require more devotion than another; and different kinds of devotion as well as different degrees, as more prayer, or more thanksgiving, or more

[Gen. iv. 3. —Jude 11.]

κτίσεως. Τῇ δὲ καινῇ κτίσει οὐκ ἐνετείλατο φυλάττειν Σάββατον· ἵνα τὴν μὲν ἀρχὴν ἐν τῇ Κυριακῇ γινώσκῃ, ἀτελεύτητον δὲ ἐπίσταται τὴν ταύτης χάριν." Bramhall's translation is from the Latin, which in its rendering of the last clause is not quite literal; and the original (as it is given here from the Benedictine edition) seems either defective or corrupt. However the sense is obviously that given above.]

[x] [Scil. for fear of the crocodiles, according to Pliny, Nat. Hist., viii. 61.]

[y] ["Vel uvâ vel fabâ."]

[z] [Virg., Buc., v. 70.]

humiliation, or more instruction, or more adoration, or more sacraments, according to the various exigencies of times and places and persons. DISCOURSE I.

Thirdly, the law of nature doth dictate, that the duties of
930 the Lord's Day ought to be performed with such gravity, decency, majesty, and solemnity, as is fit for the great God of Heaven and earth. "The house which I build is great, for great is our God above all Gods." And agreeably to the condition of the times and quality of the persons. Those ornaments which are necessary for the service of God in a great Cathedral in times of peace and plenty, are not convenient for a rural oratory, or in times of want and indigence. "Wisdom is justified of her children." Upon this consideration the most of our ceremonies do depend. 2 Chron. ii. 5. [Luke vii. 35.]

Fourthly, the law of nature doth dictate, that at some times, when we are more sensible of God's blessings, we ought to offer up part of that which He hath given us, to His own service, or to supply the necessities of our brethren for His sake; as we see in the practice of Cain and Abel from the beginning. I know not how this custom of free oblations came to be almost lost in our Church in point of practice, since I do not remember any thing material that hath been observed against it. So likewise the law of nature doth teach us, that God is to be adored,—"Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve:"—and to me it seemeth very strange, that a man may frequent some churches that boast of the name of Reformed, and yet hardly find any one act of adoration in the public service of God; as if either the erroneous adoration of the creatures had frighted us from the necessary adoration of the true God, or as if God did not require corporeal adoration as well as spiritual. [Gen. iv. 3, 4.] [Matt. iv. 10.—Luke iv. 8.]

So, from the law of nature, I pass over to the evangelical law, grounded upon the precept or authoritative example, either of Christ our Saviour, or of His Apostles, or one or both of them, and so received and believed by the Catholic Church. Now the main influence which the evangelical law hath upon the Lord's Day, is double. First, to appoint this day for a weekly festival throughout the Church of Christ; which honour Saturday or the seventh day had obtained for- [2. According to the evangelical law.]

PART IV.

merly in the Jewish Church. Secondly, to point out the proper offices and duties of this day, being generally and indefinitely considered, according to the example or practice of Christ or His Apostles upon the first day of the week recorded in Holy Scripture; that is, prayers and thanksgivings and sermons and Sacraments and works of piety and charity. Thus far as to the appointment of the day, and the duties of it in general. The first day of the week, or the Lord's Day, is of evangelical, that is, Divine right. But for the circumstances of the time and place and ceremonies and forms, the Gospel hath ordered little or nothing. These depend upon the law of nature (which implieth Divine right as well as the ecclesiastical law, so far as the dictates thereof do go), and the ecclesiastical laws of the Church, and the civil laws of the commonwealth: which two last sort of laws, being capable of enlargement and contradiction, of dispensation and abrogation, may make that act upon the Lord's Day to be necessary, or lawful, or unlawful respectively, in one time, or at one place, which is not so necessary, or lawful, or unlawful respectively, in another time, or at another place. The best ground that a devout Christian can go upon, to know what the law of nature and the evangelical law do prescribe as necessary for the right observation of the Lord's Day, is the practice of the primitive uncorrupted Church, and the examples of devout and discreet Christians. Now after what manner the primitive Christians did celebrate the Lord's Day, we cannot have a better witness than Justin Martyr[a]: namely, in assembling, and reading the Holy Scriptures, and preaching, and hearing, and meditating, and praying, and thanksgiving, &c., and charitable collections for the poor according to every man's ability, which the Bishop distributed to orphans and widows, &c.: which place of Justin Martyr may serve as an authentic exposition of St. Paul's collection for the Saints.

1 Cor. xvi. 1, [2.]

[3. According to the positive law of God.]

So, from the law of nature and the evangelical law, I pass to the positive laws of God, comprehended in the Old Testament, concerning the Sabbath. But for these I have declared myself sufficiently, that they bind no Christians farther than there is a natural equity in them (which is not their binding

[a] [See above p. 10, note o.]

but the law of nature's); or farther than they are authorized
931 by the Gospel; or, at most, beyond the exemplarity of them,
—that we who are Christians, should not come short of Jews, or any other religion, in performing those moral duties which we owe to God[b]. As for typical and ceremonial duties, they oblige not Christians at all, being neither imposed, nor intended ever to be imposed, upon them. Thus the great question of the Sabbath, which some have made the same use of that the ivy doth of the oak, to climb up by it themselves, falleth to the ground.

[4. According to human laws.]

Lastly, for human laws, either civil or ecclesiastical, which concern the Lord's Day, so far as they do not disagree with the evangelical law or the law of nature, they have power to bind the consciences of Christians, not from themselves, that is, from human authority, which hath no power over the conscience, but in themselves[c], that is, by virtue of the law of God, which commandeth "every soul" to "be subject to the higher powers." And howsoever the case is mistaken, the most of those controversies which we have about the Lord's Day, for the lawfulness or unlawfulness of this or that labour, or this or that recreation, do depend upon human law, which doth vary according to the divers exigencies of times and places. There is little to be found, either in the law of nature, or in the evangelical law, whereupon to ground the decision of such questions. But this is the humour of the times, to serve up every petty controversy to a fundamental point of religion, whereupon salvation and damnation doth depend.

[Rom. xiii. 1.]

[Conclusion.]

Thus we have seen this great controversy reduced to a very narrow compass:—that as the right of the day is Divine and unchangeable, so the manner of sanctifying it (excepting some uncontroverted generalities) is human and changeable; so as no change be made but by such as are rightly qualified to make it, and so as in the change nothing be taken away, which is commanded by the law of nature or the evangelical law, and on the other side, nothing be introduced, which is forbidden by the law of nature or the evangelical law.

[b] [See above in sect. vii. pp. 28, 29.]

[c] [See above in the Answer to La Millet. (vol. i. p. 62, note c), Disc. i. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

SECTION THE FIFTEENTH.

Objections out of the Homilies considered.

And so you have my judgment of the Sabbath and the Lord's Day, clearly and distinctly, without either affection or animosity. Neither have I seen any thing objected against it, with any colour of reason, out of the doctrine or practice of the Church of England, but only that which is alleged out of our Homily of the Time and Place of Prayer: to which authority I for my part do readily submit, so far as I am bound by the thirty-fifth Article of our Church,—"The second tome of Homilies doth contain godly and healthful doctrine, and necessary for these times;" although I cannot see how this attestation, or indefinite assertion, doth either authorize or oblige me, or any genuine son of the Church of England, to defend every individual expression, or mistaken deduction, which may be contained in that whole tome. Yet I have no need to make use of that advantage; for, in very deed, the whole homily, being duly weighed, doth agree wholly and throughout with those conclusions, which I have laid down in this discourse.

[The Homily of the Place and Time of Prayer.]

The ends, why the words of this homily are urged, are two; first, to shew, that the Fourth Commandment of the Decalogue doth oblige all Christians to the observation and sanctification of the Lord's Day, not only equitably or exemplarily —because Christians ought not to come short of Jews in the performance of moral duties, which sense I have already admitted—but legally and preceptively. The right words of the homily (for they are variously cited[d]) are these;—"As concerning the time in which Almighty God hath appointed His people to assemble together solemnly, it doth appear by the Fourth Commandment of God; 'Remember,' saith God, 'that thou keep holy the Sabbath Day[e].'" And a little after, in the same homily;—"We must be careful to keep the Christian Sabbath Day, that is, the Sunday, not only for that it is God's express commandment, but also to declare our-

[d] [Bramhall is arguing principally against L'Estrange; who cites the Homily of the Place and Time of Prayer in three passages (pp. 107, 114, 130) and for the "ends" specified above, but except omissions, of no consequence (see e. g. note h. p. 71 below), with perfect accuracy. So also has Heylin (Hist. of Sabb., Pt. II. c. viii. § 5), quoting it with opposite views.]

[e] [Hom. of Place and Time of Prayer, p. 302 (8vo. Oxf. 1840).]

selves to be loving children," &c.; "thus it may plainly appear, that God's will and commandment was to have a solemn time and standing day in the week, wherein the people shall come together[f]." These phrases—"God's will, God's appointment, God's commandment, God's express commandment"—do seem to imply, not only an equitable, but a legal obligation.

I answer, let the words imply what they can, and let all be admitted which can possibly be inferred from them, yet they come as much short of that which ought to be proved, as there is distance between them and us in this controversy. The words of the Fourth Commandment may be considered
932 two ways: either as they are a part of the Mosaical Law and Jewish Decalogue, and in this sense it is undeniably true that they are abrogated,—at the Passion of Christ, when He cried, "It is finished." And accordingly that Apostolical College [John xxi. 30.] did acquit the Christian Gentiles for ever from all necessary obligation, not only to the words of the Fourth Commandment, but to the whole Mosaical Law. And in this sense Acts xv. 24. they are now no commandment of God to Christians. Or the words of the Fourth Commandment may be considered according to the moral and substantial part of them, that is, so far as, and no further than, they comprehend within them the express dictate of the law of nature, that some time is to be set apart as a time of rest for the solemn service of God; and in this sense, and so far and no further, the words of the Fourth Commandment are a law to Christians. The law of nature comprehended in the Fourth Commandment saith, thou shalt set apart a time of solemn rest for the public service of God. The evangelical law saith, this time shall be upon the first day of the week, and shall be spent in such and such holy exercise. The just laws of our lawful superiors, civil and ecclesiastical, do go yet further, as to the place and duration of time and manner of sanctification. He who shall neglect this duty at this time, in this place, after this manner, is not only a transgressor of human law, but of Divine law, of the evangelical law, and of the law of nature comprehended in the Fourth Commandment.

[f] [Ibid., p. 303; partly quoted by L'Estrange, p. 107. For "that is, the Sunday," the Homily reads, "which is the Sunday;" and for "shall come together." "should come together."]

PART IV.

This clear and manifest sense of the words of the homily is set down expressly in the homily itself:—"Albeit this" (fourth) "Commandment of God doth not bind Christian people so straitly to observe and keep the utter" (external) "ceremonies of the Sabbath-day, as it was given to the Jews, as touching the forbearing of work and labour in time of great necessity, and as touching the precise keeping of the seventh day after the manner of the Jews; for we keep now the first day, which is the Sunday, and make that our Sabbath, that is, our day of rest, in honour of our Saviour Christ, Who as upon that day rose from death, conquering the same most triumphantly; yet, notwithstanding, whatsoever is found in the commandment appertaining to the law of nature, as a thing most godly, most just, and needful for the setting forth of God's glory, it ought to be retained and kept of all good Christian people[z]." Here needeth no gloss. Nothing can be more express than the homily itself;—[1.] that the Fourth Commandment "doth not bind Christians" over "straitly;" 2. not "to the external ceremonies of the Sabbath;" 3. not "as it was given to the Jews;" 4. not as to the rigorous part of it, to forbear all work; 5. not as to the time, the first day of the week being justly substituted by Christians for the seventh; 6. not as to the end, our end is to honour the resurrection of Christ; 7. and lastly, to speak once for all, the Fourth Commandment obligeth Christians no farther than that part of it which "appertaineth to the law of nature." Who ever yet denied, that it obligeth so far? All men acknowledge, that the law of nature is immutable, indispensable, inabrogable; except a few paradoxical innovators, who understand not what the law of nature is. Thus, in the place of an objection out of the homily, we have found a most singular firmament of our cause.

The second reason why this homily is cited, is to shew, that the whole Sabbath day of the twenty-four hours ought to be employed by Christians in the actual service of God, without any liberty of working, or recreating themselves, by virtue of this commandment. The very words alleged are these;—"Even so God hath given express charge to all men, that

[z] [Hom. of Place and Time of Prayer, Pt. i. pp. 302, 303. For "which is *the* Sunday," the homily reads "which is *our* Sunday."]

upon the Sabbath-day, which is now our Sunday, they should cease from all weekly and work-day labour, to the intent that like as God Himself wrought six days and rested the seventh and blessed and sanctified it, and consecrated it to quietness and rest from labour, even so" we, as "obedient people, should use the Sunday holily, and rest from common and daily business, and also, give" ourselves "wholly to heavenly exercises of God's true religion and service[h]." DISCOURSE I.

I answer, first, that still they halt upon the same sore. Christians are not obliged at all by the Fourth Commandment to any duty, as it is a Mosaical law, but as it comprehendeth a branch of the law of nature in it. Secondly, that this law of nature doth not extend itself expressly to any day, either natural or artificial, but only to a sufficient time. Whatsoever is more than this, proceedeth either from the evangelical law, or from human law. Thirdly, I answer, that this assertion which they would ground upon the homily, is diametrically opposite to the main scope of the homily: which declareth expressly, that the seventh day, or Sabbath-day of the Fourth Commandment, is quite taken away, and another day (that is, the first day) put in the place thereof; that the strict obligation to the external ceremonies of the Sabbath is quite ceased; and that the rigorous exaction of a corporal rest from all necessary works during the whole Lord's Day, especially after the solemn offices of the day are performed, is likewise ceased. And if from all works, much more the exaction of a rigorous rest from lawful recreations, which were ever esteemed an inferior part of the Sabbath's rest, and are no way incompatible with it, but when they become immoderate, and hinder the duties of the day. Fourthly, waving all these advantages, I answer, that it is one thing to "give ourselves wholly" to the service of God, which the homily requireth, or rather, which the law of nature requires —(that when we come to "draw water with joy out of the wells of salvation," we should leave all sordid thoughts, all vindictive and vagrant desires, behind us, as the serpent leaves her poison in her den, when she goes to the fountain);—and

933

Isa xii. 3.

[h] [Ibid. p. 303. L'Estrange, p. 114, quotes the greater part of the passage, omitting the clauses from "to the intent that" to "daily business;" of which however he cites the last clause with the same object, in pp. 130, 131.]

PART IV.

it is another thing, to oblige all Christians to spend the whole natural day in the solemn and actual worship of God, which no law of nature or nations[i], Divine or human, did ever require, and that by virtue of a Jewish law, which was long since abrogated. The homily saith nothing to this purpose; but describing the uttermost obligation of the law of nature, it concludeth thus,—"And therefore by this Commandment" (that is, by the moral part of this Commandment, which is a branch of the law of nature) "we ought to have a time, as one day in the week, wherein we ought to rest, yea, from our lawful and needful works[k]." The express dictate of the law of nature is a *sufficient* time, no more. "As one day in the week, is the author's instance; as consentaneous to the law of nature, not dictated expressly by the law of nature. If the law of nature had limited us expressly to one day in the week, it had been improperly said,—"as one day in the week,"—by way of single and voluntary instance. If the law of nature had prescribed one whole natural day, he should have said, 'during which,' or, 'throughout which we ought to rest,' not "*wherein* we ought to rest." It is needless to insist longer upon this subject, seeing the greatest champions of the adverse party do acknowledge[l], that the law of nature prescribeth no such thing as one whole day in the week.

Let us suppose, what we may never admit, that this Jewish law,—"Remember thou keep holy the Sabbath-day,"—had been an universal law given to all mankind, and that it had not been abrogated by the death of Christ; yet, being an affirmative precept, it binds *semper* but not *ad semper*[m]—always, but not to the actual exercise of our devotions at all times. If a man join devoutly with the Church in the public service of God, and tune and prepare himself beforehand for that one necessary work; and watch over himself the rest of

[i] ["Quod naturalis ratio inter omnes homines constituit, id apud omnes peræque custoditur, vocaturque JUS GENTIUM, quasi quo jure omnes gentes utuntur." Justin., Instit., lib. I. tit. ii. § 1. And see Grotius, De Jure Belli et Pacis, lib. I. c. i. § 11: and Puffendorf, de Jure Nat. et Gentium, lib. II. c. iii. § 23.]

[k] [Hom. of Place and Time of Prayer, Pt. i. p. 303.]

[l] [The Sabbatarians generally (e. g. Bound, Of the Sabbath, bk. ii. pp. 366-376; L'Estrange, God's Sabbath, &c., pp. 119, 120; and see Bp. White, Of the Sabbath, pp. 233-235) argued for a *literal* twenty-four hours' Sabbath, including the night as well as the day; but they rested their argument upon the Fourth Commandment, not upon the law of nature.]

[m] [Thom. Aquin., Summ. Theol., P. II. Qu. lxxi. art. 5.]

the day, that he do nothing unworthy of God's servant; and, lastly, if he have an implicit desire upon all opportunities to advance the glory of God, if he eat and drink and sleep and recreate himself moderately to this end, to enable himself to serve God the better, and so do incorporate and interweave such religious thoughts and ejaculations, amongst his natural, moral, and even secular employments (so they be lawful and needful, not servile, mercenary, or sordid); he makes his common actions to become works of piety, and fit exercises even for holy-days.

So the homily and I agree throughout. The homily denieth not the Lord's Day the name of Sabbath; no more do I. The homily finds no law of the Sabbath in Gen. ii. 3; no more do I. The homily finds no seventh day's Sabbath before Moses his time; neither do I. The homily gives no power to the Fourth Commandment, as it was given to the Jews, to oblige Christians, but only as it was, and so far as it was, a law of nature; the same do I. The homily makes the first day of the week to signify the Lord's Day; so do I. The homily makes the end of changing the weekly festival of the Church to have been in honour of Christ's Resurrection; the like do I. Lastly, the homily derives the Lord's Day down from the Ascension of Christ immediately; the same do I.

To conclude, he who halloweth the Lord's Day as the weekly festival of Christians, doing such duties upon it as Christ
934 and His Apostles did, which are recorded for our imitation, and imitating the example of devout and discreet Christians in the observation of it, such as lived in all ages, before these controversies were raised, and swerving not from the just laws of the Church and commonwealth where he liveth, hath done whatsoever is requisite to be done by a good Christian upon this day. But if any man will fly higher, above this pattern and this rule, out of free devotion, without either Jewish or superstitious fancies, or seeking to obtrude his own principles or practice upon others as necessary to be followed, I do not blame him; he inclineth to the safer extreme.

SECTION THE SIXTEENTH.

The conclusion concerning

Christian reader, when I first handled this controversy, I knew nothing at all of the present occasion of it, neither did

PART IV.

I dream that any of my friends were engaged in it. Since, I find, that my learned and most reverend Metropolitan is concerned indirectly in it, I mean the late Lord Primate of Armagh; under whose pious and moderate government I lived sundry years a Bishop in the Province of Ulster, whilst the political part of the care of that Church did lie heavy upon my shoulders. I praise God, we were like the candles in the Levitical Temple, looking one towards another, and all towards the stem. We had no contention among us, but who should hate contention most, and pursue the peace of the Church with swiftest paces. And if the high-soaring counsels of some short-winged Christians, whose eyes regarded nothing but the present prey, with the rebellious practices of the Irish enemy, tied together like Sampson's foxes with firebrands at their tails, had not thrust us away from the stern, and chased us from our sees with Bellona's bloody whip, we might before this time, without either persecution or noise, have given a more welcome and comfortable account of the Irish Church, than I fear one age is likely to produce. And if that pious prelate were now living, I verily believe he would allow all, or at least not disapprove any thing, which I say in this treatise.

my Lord Primate.

[Judg. xv. 4.]

Very lately, since it was finished, I received a book out of England, called "The Judgment of the late Archbishop of Armagh," among other things, about "the Sabbath and the observation of the Lord's Day," published out of the Primate's own papers by my ancient friend Dean Bernard, out of a pious intention (according to the dictates of his own reason) to have suppressed some spreading controversies by the interposition of my Lord Primate's authority[n]. If I had been present, I should have dissuaded him from it, out of these prudential considerations.

[n] ["The Judgment of the Late Archbishop of Armagh, and Primate of Ireland, 1. Of the Extent of Christ's death, and satisfaction, &c. 2. Of the Sabbath, and observation of the Lord's day. 3. Of the Ordination in other reformed Churches. With a Vindication of him from a pretended Change of Opinion in the first; some Advertisements upon the latter; And, in prevention of further injuries, a Declaration of his judgement in several other subjects. By N. Bernard, D.D. and Preacher to the Honourable Society of Grayes Inne, London." 8vo. Lond. 1657, and a second edition in 1658.—published with the view of "moderating the heat which" had "lately broken out about some of" the points therein handled, by the authority of Ussher's judgment (Advertisement to the Reader, in fin.).]

First, my Lord Primate is dead[o], in the honourable esteem of all honest men both for his learning and piety. And, on the one side, as it is an uncomely thing for any man, who rests unsatisfied with what is urged as his judgment, to contend with a person of his eminency after his death (which should make friends wary in publishing posthumous works—he who is secured from taking blows, ought not to give blows); so, on the other side, it is an exposing of his justly-acquired honour to the hazard of a diminution. We see the Church of Rome are "wiser in their generation;" who do [Luke xvi. 8.] not bring forth the relics of their most esteemed Saints in a public procession, to obtain rain, or fair weather, or peace, or the like blessing, until they see a great probability of it, and some evident propension in the heavens or in the counsels of men to the granting of their desires. If there had been a moral certainty, that my Lord Primate's authority thus delivered would have proved like the dictates of Pythagoras among his scholars, an infallible means to procure an universal submission, I should have approved this act as prudential; but I find no such certainty, nor so much as any probability of it.

For, in the second place, who will give any great regard to pieces of letters[p], where they cannot view the coherence, nor compare that which is alleged with the antecedents and consequents? I have known an objection urged for a conclusion, and that which was spoken in the person of another mistaken for the author's own judgment. But suppose here were no fragments, but entire letters or discourses (as I do not doubt but they are, where they are published for such), yet men do not use to weigh their words so exactly in private

[o] [Ussher died March 20, 1655-6.]

[p] [The part of Dean Bernard's book relating to the Sabbath question consists of, 1. "A Learned Letter of the late Archbishop of Armagh to Dr. Twisse, concerning the Sabbath, and Observation of the Lord's Day," written in April or May 1640 (pp. 73-99); —also among Ussher's Letters published by Dr. Parr (fol. Lond. 1686), num. ccv;—2. Dr. Twisse's Answer (pp. 100-104); 3. "A Clause in a Letter of the Primate's, to Mr. Ley, of the Sabbath" (pp. 105-107); 4. "Part of a Letter of the Primate's, to an Honourable Person, not long after the coming forth of Dr. Heylin's book, of the History of the Sabbath, which I found wrote in the same Paper with the former," respecting the Irish Articles (pp. 108-112); 5. "A Confirmation of the latter clause in this Letter of the Primate's, &c., that the Articles of Ireland (determining the observation of the Lord's Day) were not called in An. 1634, as Dr. Heylin hath affirmed," written by Bernard himself (pp. 113-122).]

PART IV.

letters as in those treatises which they design for the press; and yet further, in private letters, which are not intended for public view, men take a great liberty to comply with those to whom they write; especially they whose natures are averse from personal altercations, as my Lord Primate was, 935
where he did not apprehend himself to have been much provoked. There is neither obligation nor discretion, for a man always to publish his mind in a private letter.

Thirdly, here are divers things published, which I am confident my Lord Primate would not have had published; as (to omit those needless exasperations of Dr. Heylin[q]), that twitch, which is given to the learned and judicious Bishop of Winchester, Dr. Andrewes[r], second to no man, if he had an equal in this last age, without any great reason; and that affront done to Dr. White the reverend Bishop of Ely[s]; and that undeserved check given to Mr. Mede[t]. That the immediate seventh day before the Sabbath appointed by God upon the fall of manna, was not observed as a Sabbath (as it ought to have been, if they observed any Sabbaths before that time), is very demonstrable out of the Holy Scripture.

Fourthly and lastly, I find several glances in this book in sundry places against late "innovations[u]," as if the Bishops and their parties had brought in some great innovations. In the Name of God, what are they? Is "bowing at the name of Jesus" an "innovation?" because my Lord Primate,

[q] [Judgm. of Abp. of Armagh, Letter to Dr. Twisse, p. 79 &c.: and see § 4, 5. of the last note.]

[r] [Ibid.] p. 135. [respecting the question between Abp. Bancroft and Bp. Andrewes, whether those who were to be consecrated to Scotch Bishoprics in 1609, must not "first be ordained Presbyters, as having received no ordination from a Bishop." The allusion is not Ussher's, but Bernard's, in his "Animadvertisements" upon Ussher's letter to himself respecting "the ordination of the ministry in France and Holland."]

[s] [Ibid.] p. 98. [Letter to Dr. Twisse, in fin. Ussher cavils, very needlessly, at a translation by Bp. White (Of the Sabbath, p. 219) of a passage in S. Gregory the Great.]

[t] [Ibid.] p. 78. [Letter to Dr. Twisse. —"For that then," viz. at the Exode, "the observation began, or that the Israelites were brought out of Egypt or the Egyptians drowned on the Sabbath, I suppose our good friend Mr. Meade will not be able to evince, either out of Deut. v. 15, or out of any other Scripture whatsoever:" with a reference in the margin to Deut. xvi. 12. 7. See above p. 60. note n. The reference is to Mede's Sermon on Ezek. xx. 20 (Works, Bk. I. Disc. xv. p. 75); which had been published in 1642 with other sermons and tracts under the title of Diatribæ, or Discourses on Divers Texts of Scripture, p. 241.]

[u] [Ibid., p. 146, in "The Primate's Judgment of Several Subjects,"—a kind of miscellaneous chapter at the end of the volume, and in The Character of Bp. Bedell (see below p. 81. note o), p. 351.]

"though he did not censure it," yet "withstood the putting of it into the canons" of Ireland[x]. A strange innovation indeed, which is as ancient as the Gospel; and so universal, that all the Churches of the world, East, West, North, and South, do practise it, except three or four petty Churches of late days[y]. Neither do those few oppose it, but acknowledge it to be "a pious civility[z]." The eighteenth canon of our Church doth prove it to be no innovation; which establisheth it upon two great grounds, reason and custom[a]. Or is the innocent name of an Altar, which all the primitive Church used without any scruple, or the placing it at the east end of the quire, or the bowing towards the East when we enter into the quire[b], an "innovation?" It is just such another innovation, for antiquity and universality[c]: such an innovation, as my Lord Primate himself was bound to observe by the ancient statute of that Cathedral Church in Ireland[d], whereof he was a member before he was either Archbishop or Bishop; and, I believe, by his solemn oath also. They who accuse us of innovations, may do well to be sparing for their own sakes: lest they get such an account as is not answerable but by the sword; as Alexander undid the Gordian knot. We are no innovators; but they who accuse us of innovations, are both innovators and veterators.

DISCOURSE 1.

But supposing every thing contained in this book had been the certain and deliberate judgment of my Lord Pri- [1. Respecting the Sabbath and Lord's Day.]

[x] [Ibid.] p. [147. The 7th of the Irish, which corresponds to the 18th of the English, canons, directs merely the use of "all such reverent gestures and actions as by the Book of Common Prayer are prescribed" in Divine service, and as "the commendable use of the Church hath received"; omitting the direction in the English canon respecting "bowing at the name of Jesus."]

[y] [See Mede's Discourses upon Ps. cxxxii. 7; Works, pp. 504-506; and Durell's View of the Reformed Churches, pp. 34, 267. Lond. 1662.]

[z] [See the quotations from Peter Martyr, and Zanchy, in Bingham, French Church's Apology, bk. IV. c. viii.]

[a] ["Likewise, when in time of Divine Service the Lord Jesus shall be mentioned, due and lowly reverence shall be done by all persons present, *as it hath been accustomed;* testifying by these outward ceremonies and gestures, *their inward humility, Christian resolution, and due acknowledgment that the Lord Jesus Christ, the true eternal Son of God, is the only Saviour of the world.*" Can. 1603, can. xviii. The same direction is given in Queen Elizabeth's Injunctions in 1559; and see Hooker, E. P., V. xxx. 3.]

[b] [See The Character of Bp. Bedell as quoted below (p. 81. note o), p. 351.]

[c] [See Mede's Discourse of the name Altar or Θυσιαστήριον, anciently given to the Holy Table (Works, pp. 486-499), and his Discourse on Ps. cxxxii. 7, before quoted; and Bingham, Orig. Eccl., bk. VIII. c. vi. § 12, c. x. § 7.]

[d] [Ussher was Chancellor of St. Patrick's, Dublin, from 1607 until his consecration to the see of Meath in 1621: see Mason's Account of St. Patrick's Cathedral, Append., p. lxxii.]

PART IV.

mate, I see but three things throughout it which have any shew of a material difference between him and me in this question.

The first is contained in a letter to Dr. Twisse[e]:—"And the text, Gen. ii. 3. (as you well note) is so clear for the ancient institution of the Sabbath, and so fully vindicated by Dr. Rivet from the exceptions of Gomarus[f], that I see no reason in the earth why any man should make doubt thereof." First, I apprehend these words to be at first none of my Lord Primate's, but Dr. Twisse's words in a former letter, only repeated by my Lord Primate and allowed. This appeareth evidently by the parenthesis—"(as you well note),"—which *may be* referred to the whole sentence, but must be referred to some part of it. Howsoever, if these words were all my Lord Primate's, yet here is no contradiction between him and me. He seeth no reason to doubt on the one side, and others "see no reason in the earth" to doubt on the other side. Neither part define any thing, neither part deliver their own votes. There is but a dumb shew of a contradiction at the most. And though we did both declare ourselves positively and contradictorily, yet it is nothing to the present controversy about the Lord's Day. If Gen. ii. 3. were a law for the seventh day then, I am certain it is no law for the first day now. Whether there be cause of doubting, let the reader judge by what I have said formerly in this treatise upon this subject[g]; to which much more might be added, if it were needful.

The second and third appearances of difference between my Lord Primate and me are contained in the clause of a letter to Mr. Ley[h], in these words,—"For my own part, I never yet doubted, but took it for granted, that as the setting of some whole day apart for God's solemn worship was *juris Divini naturalis*, so, that this solemn day should be one in seven, was *juris Divini positivi*, recorded in the Fourth Commandment; and such a *jus Divinum positivum* here I mean,

[e] [Judgm. of Abp. of Armagh,] p. 78.

[f] [In his Prælect. in cap. xx. Exodi, pp. 172, 173 (4to. Lugd. Bat. 1362), and in a special "Dissertatio de Origine Sabbati (8vo. Lugd. Bat. 1633), in answer to Gomarus, Investigatio Sententiæ et Originis Sabbati, c. iv. (§ 4-7, pp. 101-104. 8vo. Groning. 1361), and Defensio Investig. Orig. Sabb. (8vo. Groning. 1632).]

[g] [Above, sect. vi. pp. 19-21.]

[h] [Judgm. of Abp. of Armagh,] p. 105.

936 as Baptism and the Lord's Supper are established by; both which lie not in the power of any man or Angel to change or alter." When the commission for knighting many[i] came forth, a friend of mine, a commissioner, shewed me a clause in the statute which brought me within the compass of the law, but at the same time he held his thumb over another clause, which acquitted me. No man is obliged to answer to single clauses, when there may be another clause concealed, which would explain or answer that which is alleged. It is not material whether we doubt or doubt not, but certainly there is great cause to doubt, of the truth of this proposition,—that the law of nature doth dictate the setting out of a whole day to God's solemn service. Change a whole day into a sufficient time, and there is no doubt at all. Neither is it material at all, what a disputant taketh for granted, but what he can prove, or the defendant will grant. I dare say no learned adversary will grant any such thing. But grant or not grant it, if we distinguish the law of nature as we ought, and as it is already done in this treatise[k], there is no difference at all between my Lord Primate and me in this point. The law of nature is sometimes taken properly and strictly, for the principles of moral honesty dictated expressly to all intellectual creatures by natural reason; and in this sense, the setting out a sufficient time for God's solemn worship is '*juris Divini naturalis*,' a principle of [the] law of nature, but so is not the setting out a whole day for God's solemn worship. At other times the law of nature is taken more largely, so as to comprehend not only such express principles of moral honesty as nature dictateth to all intellectual creatures, but also such conclusions as are consentaneous and agreeable to those principles; and in this sense it is true, that the setting apart a whole day for God's worship is '*juris Divini naturalis*,' or dictated by reason to all intellectual creatures to be agreeable and consentaneous to the principles of moral honesty. The law of nature doth prescribe, that a sufficient time be set apart for God's service;

[i] [By a statute of Edward II. all persons worth £20. a-year were bound to be made knights; and in 1630, as a means of raising money, Charles I. issued a commission to compound with such as had neglected to comply with this (long obsolete) statute, substituting however £40. for £20. The statute was repealed in 1641. See Rushw., vol. ii. p. 70;—Rapin, vol. ii. bk. xix. p. 286.]

[k] [Above, p. 14.]

PART IV.

and whatsoever time be set apart, more or less, so it be sufficient, it is agreeable to this law, and made in pursuance of it. So this contradiction is vanished.

The third difference hath less ground than the second: for I myself do readily acknowledge, that the setting apart one day in seven for the solemn worship of God was '*juris Divini positivi*,' a branch of Divine law, and that this law was not changeable by "man or Angel;" which is all that my Lord Primate saith. But it was both changeable and actually changed by the same Divine authority that first gave it. And though it was changed from one seventh day to another, yet this was not by virtue of the Fourth Commandment, an old Mosaical law, which (so far as it was Mosaical) is abrogated, but by virtue of a new evangelical law; as hath been declared.

[2. Respecting the Irish Articles.]

It is true[1], that in the first Convocation after the Earl of Strafford's coming to the Sword in Ireland, the question was calmly debated in the House of the Bishops concerning the English and Irish Articles, whether of them were fitter in point of uncontroverted truth, and unity, and uniformity, and prudential compliance with tender consciences, to be imposed upon the Irish clergy. This was done before it was once moved in the House of the Clerks[m]. All which, being acted in another assembly, might well be unknown to the Dean. Neither was it first proposed by my Lord Primate, but in truth opposed by him; and with him joined Dr. Martin,

[1] [A tolerably complete account of the Irish Convocation of 1634 may be found in Mant's Hist. of the Irish Church, Pt. I. c. vii. § 5; but a truer idea of the real history of the proceedings will be gathered from Mant's authorities, viz. Strafford's Letters, i. 298, 342-344, and Vesey's Life of Bramhall. See also above in vol. i. pp. vii, xix, xxxvi. Heylin, in his Hist. of the Sabbath, Pt. II. c. viii. § 9. (published in 1636), and repeatedly in his later publications (see e. g. his detailed account of the Irish Convocation of 1634 in his Life of Laud, Pt. ii. pp. 271-274), asserted that the Irish Articles were actually "called in" in 1634; an assertion angrily but ineffectually impugned by Bernard. No doubt, both Laud, and Strafford, and Bramhall, intended this to be *the result* of the act of Convocation, although the thing actually proposed (as we learn from Strafford himself—Straff. Letters, i. 329.) was simply that they should neither be "affirmed nor denied," that so they might be in time quietly suspended: as by the aid of the Rebellion of 1641 was actually the case.]

[m] [The 1st. of the Irish Canons, declaring the adoption by the Irish Church of the English Articles, was framed in the first instance by Ussher, but rewritten by Strafford himself, and carried in the Upper House of Convocation by an exertion of the full weight of his authority. It was afterwards carried in the Lower House with but one dissentient, Strafford's vigorous proceedings having stifled the obnoxious discussions which had opened the session. See Mant and Strafford's Letters before quoted.]

Bishop of Meath[n], not out of any disaffection in either of them to the English Articles, as I judge, but out of love to the Irish: the truth or untruth whereof were not so much as questioned then, but the authority,—whether of them should be acknowledged for the future to be the Articles of the Church of Ireland, and the public standard and seal of our Irish doctrine. There were no thoughts of two distinct standards at that time. And if any Bishop had been known to have required any man to subscribe to the Irish Articles, after the English were received and authorized under the great seal of Ireland, he would have been called to an account for it[o]. I do not remember any more but two, that spake in favour of the Irish Articles at that time. If there were any, they were very few, and did it very faintly. As for Dr. Bedell, Bishop of Kilmore[p], I did not take him to be so much a friend to the Irish Articles: though he did use
937 them, and must have used them, at that time when the Dean saith he examined Mr. Price in the Irish Articles[q]; for then

Discourse I.

[n] [Anthony Martin was Bishop of Meath from 1625 until his death (by the plague in Dublin) in 1650; and was appointed also to the Provostship of Trin. Coll. Dublin in 1641 (Ware, and Harris). Strafford writes, upon another subject in 1635, that he feared "the Primate was in fault, actuated too much by the heat of the Bishop of Meath" (Straff. Lett., ii. 15: and so again ii. 26).]

[o] ["The Primate, with most of the rest of the Bishops at that time, according to Bernard in his Life of Ussher," (this is an obvious exaggeration), "some few of the Bishops, according to Bp. Vesey in his Life of Bramhall, required of their clergy for some time" (after 1634) "subscription to both sets of Articles: the others seem to have been contented with the subscription to the English only" (Mant, as before quoted.) Those however who adhered to the Irish Articles, felt themselves to be in the difficulty; as they petitioned Strafford, through Ussher, for a ratification by Parliament of those Articles, a petition which was of course indignantly refused (Heylin, Life of Laud. Pt. ii. p. 273): and they thenceforward confined themselves to *asserting* (as e. g. Bernard and Parr), that those Articles had not been repealed.]

[p] ["Whereas Doctor Heylin hath censured the late Primate of Ireland very liberally for his approbation of the Articles of Ireland, he must take Bishop Bedell into the number also, who was so much for them, that I was present when, at the examination of an able minister, then to be ordained" (marg. "Mr. Thomas Price, then Fellow of the College of Dublin"), "he did in the Church examin him in each, or most of the Articles," &c. Character of Bp. Bedell, p. 352, at the end of Certain Discourses, &c., Each being the Judgment of the late Abp. of Armagh, published and enlarged by Nicholas Bernard, D.D. and Preacher to the Honourable Society of Grayes Inne, London. 8vo. 1659.]

[q] [Bedell was consecrated to the see of Kilmore Sept. 13, 1629, and held it (unless so far as he was expelled by the rebels) until his death Feb. 7, 1641 (Harris's Ware). Thomas Price, who was made Bp. of Kildare at the Restoration and afterwards Abp. of Cashel (Harris's Ware), received Priest's orders from Bp. Bedell (id.), and before 1634, as he was already Archdeacon of Kilmore when the Convocation of that year was held (Vesey's Life of Bramhall).]

PART IV.

they were in force and authority; then the English Articles were not yet introduced into Ireland. And after a full and free discussion, it was resolved by the very much greater part of the votes for the Articles of England. It is mere mockery, to cry up liberty of conscience, and leave no liberty for opinions. To rest in general truths (which no party can deny to be sufficient to salvation), doth commonly produce unity: but the particular determination of unnecessary controverted points is for the most part inconsistent with it; and if it be over suddenly pressed, like strong medicines to a body unprepared, it often increaseth the malady. As men have more power over their own actions than over their own judgments, by so much their practices are the more proper objects of laws than their opinions.

No man can imagine, that this change could be made without some sort of reluctation, on the part of some (very few) Bishops, who perhaps had had an hand in framing the Irish Articles; rather out of a tender resentment of the honour of their Church, lest another Church should seem to give laws to them, than out of an opinion of the necessity of those Articles[r]. But concluded it was; and a precedent found of an ancient Synod at Cashel[s], which decreed the conformity of the Irish Church to the customs of the Church of England: and my Lord Primate himself, being president of the Convocation, did send for the prolocutor of the House of the Clerks, and the rest of the clergy, and declare to them the votes of the Bishops, and move them to assent thereunto, which they did accordingly: all which the Acts and Records of that Convocation do sufficiently testify.

I was the man who acquainted the Earl of Strafford with what the Convocation had done; which he thankfully accepted, and readily ratified. Neither do I remember, that his Lordship had any further hand in the change of the

[r] [The question about the English *Canons* was rested solely on the "point of honour" (Straff. Lett., vol. i. p. 381), although even there doctrinal considerations must have lain at the bottom of the opposition. As regarded the Articles, it was of course merely a way of putting the case convenient to both sides.]

[s] [A.D. 1172, when Henry II. visited Ireland in person to receive its submission. The object of the synod was expressly to "bring the Irish Church into an exact conformity with the English" (Girald. Cambr., Expugn. Hibern., lib. i. c. 33, ap. Camden. Anglica Scripta, p. 776. Francof. 1603). See an account of it in Wilkins, Concil., tom. i. pp. 471-473; and Cox, Hib. Angl., vol. i. pp. 22-24.]

Articles. Yet was I the only man employed from him to the Convocation, and from the Convocation to him[t].

[3. Respecting the Earl of Strafford.]

Here was no ground for an "aching [tooth[u]]" in my Lord Primate, against the Earl of Strafford, upon this occasion. Whosoever vented that malicious slander out of Ireland, deserved a whetstone for his labour; unless he knew more than either the Earl of Strafford himself, or any of his friends, ever suspected. But neither was the noble earl so dull-sighted, as not to see light through a mill-stone, as well as that informer, if there had been an hole in the midst of it; neither was the good Primate of such a vindictive disposition (vindictive is too low an expression, I might more aptly call it diabolical), as to write discontents in marble, and like another Haman, to give bloody counsel upon private disgusts. I dare say, if the reverend doctor[v], to whom this information was given, had known the Lord Primate, and his dove-like simplicity, how slow he was to take offence, and how ready to forgive and forget, as well as I did, he would himself throw the first stone at that informer; who, if he lived in Ireland, could not choose but see what mutual and cordial respects passed daily between those two great persons, from the first day of their acquaintance to the last. On the one side, witness all those constant and continual offices, which my Lord Primate did perform with cheerfulness to the state of Ireland during the Earl of Strafford's government, and to the earl himself in order to the King's service,

[t] [Bramhall was probably not aware of the private scenes between Strafford and Ussher, so forcibly narrated by the former in his letter to Laud (Straff. Lett., i. 343, 344). It appears from thence how completely the Archbishop was forced into subserviency to Strafford, and acted simply as his mouthpiece and instrument, although with no small reluctance.]

[u] [Judgm. of Abp. of Armagh, Bernard's Confirmation, &c. of the Primate's Letter (see above, p. 75, note q), p. 114:—misprinted "truth" in the folio edition of Bramhall. Ussher was accused of having advised Charles to pass the bill for Strafford's death out of a private grudge against him for "abrogating" the Irish Articles. See his own denial of the charge in 1643 or 4, and Charles's confirmation of his innocence, in Parr's Life of Ussher, pp. 46, 61 (Lond. 1686), and Bernard's Life of Ussher, pp. 96-98 (Lond. 1656); and in Sanderson's Hist. of the Reign of Charles I. (Lond. 1658), between pp. 408 and 409, where is given also a letter from Bp. (then Dr.) Cosin, to the same effect. Heylin, in his (anonymous) Observations on L'Estrange's Hist. of the Reign of Charles I., pp. 240, 241 (8vo. Lond. 1656), revived the charge, by speaking of Ussher as "carrying a sharp tooth" against Strafford for the reason above given, insinuating that he had at least not aided Strafford's cause with the king, when consulted by him upon the subject after Strafford's condemnation: and to him Bernard is here replying.]

[v] [Viz. Dr. Heylin: see the last note.]

PART IV.

in the pulpit, in the Parliament, in the Convocation, at the Council-Table, in the Star-chamber, in the High Commission[x]. And, on the other side, witness the Regal Visitation committed to my Lord Primate's judge of the faculties[y]; the preferment of his brother-in-law, Mr. Hilton, without any suit made, for his sake, to be a Baron of the Exchequer[y]; the naming of himself, before all the peers of the kingdom, to be godfather to his child (no such small obligation in Ireland); the procuring of the king's warrant for him and his successors, Archbishops of Armagh, to take place of the Lord Chancellor of Ireland for the time being[z], in conformity to the custom of England; and, lastly, which weigheth more with me than all the rest, the choosing him to be his ghostly father and spiritual adviser at his death, and his receiving Absolution and the Holy Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ from his hands, when he had chaplains of his own in the city, doth convince me, and all ingenuous persons, that there was no dissatisfaction of either party against the other.

If the honour of a third person was not concerned in it deeply, I could add something more of what passed between them two at that time, whilst my Lord Primate was fitting him for eternity, and, like a light in a watch-tower, shewing him the dangers which were in the mouth of the harbour, and pointing him out the ready way into the arms of his Saviour; to evidence to the world the great care of the one, and the great observance of the other, and the mutual love of them both: for it passed not under the seal of confession, and I had it from my Lord Primate himself. 938

Yet, although I durst upon the hazard of my own life acquit my Lord Primate from any such vindictive design as hath been imputed to him, yet, knowing the sweetness and facility of his nature, how irksome all downright contradiction was unto him, and what influence the very name of "thy friend Benhadad" had upon some of his less deliberate actions,

[1 Kings xx. 33. "Thy brother Benhadad."]

[x] [That Strafford entertained a most sincere respect and affection for Ussher, is plain from many passages of his letters. See e. g. Straff. Lett., vol. i. p. 156. It is equally plain, that they differed very considerably in their views of Church government and of doctrine, and that Ussher's acquiescence in Strafford's policy arose merely from the latter's power and character, and not from any active agreement between them.]

[y] [See above in vol. i. p. vi.]

[z] [Bernard's Life of Ussher, p. 92; — Parr's Life of Ussher, p. 41.]

I cannot exempt him from all surprise at all times, nor concurring unwittingly to accomplish the more politic devices of such persons as wanted his sincerity. God had given him more of the innocence of the dove, than of the prudence of the serpent. And from this source his severe censure of Dr. Heylin, if he was not otherwise provoked, seemeth to me to have proceeded, in a matter, if I judge aright, not altogether so pertinent to the true controversy about the Lord's Day. But that was private, and without doubt he meant it no further. Men do often take liberty to whisper an expression in the ear of a private friend, which they would not have cried publicly at the market-cross.

How his letter[a] came to be published to the world, in private I have heard; and if my intelligence be right, as I firmly believe it is, the printing of that passage happened more by the adviser's fault than the publisher's. Howsoever it be, the plaintiff hath carved out his own reparation over severely, and intimated to the world a more crying crime against the innocent Primate than any error in judgment can possibly amount unto; and (which is no small aggravation of a misinformation) after the decease of the party accused, whom, I dare say, all men that know well, will readily acquit, without any long time to deliberate upon it, not only from the crime, but from all suspicion of it. I have a request to both the antagonists—that they will give over this controversy, and seek for honour by more noble achievments; or, at least, that whatsoever scope or liberty they take to themselves one against another about their other controverted points, they will suffer the ashes of this reverend prelate to rest in ease, who was an honour to his native country, an ornament to the Reformed Church, a conscionable preacher, and an exemplary pattern of piety.

[a] [Viz. the letter of Ussher to "an Honourable Person," (see above p. 75. note p); the "passage" specified being the severe language used towards Dr. Heylin, who is intended by "the plaintiff." That Heylin however did not "intimate the crying crime," of advising the king to consent to Strafford's execution, after Ussher's death (so far as he intimated it at all), appears from Sanderson, p. 406, quoted above p. 83. note t, Heylin's Observations upon L'Estrange's History (as it should seem) having been published sufficiently early in 1656 for Ussher to see them.]

DISCOURSE II.

A SERMON,

PREACHED IN YORK MINSTER,

BEFORE

HIS EXCELLENCY THE MARQUIS OF NEWCASTLE;

BEING THEN READY TO MEET

THE SCOTCH ARMY,

JAN. 28, 1643.

PUBLISHED THEN BY SPECIAL COMMAND.

BY

JOHN BRAMHALL, D.D.

LORD BISHOP OF DERRY.

[TO THE READER.]

940 Among the public prayers of the Church of Scotland, in the time of their persecution by the Frenchmen, printed by Thomas Bassandine 1575[a], having acknowledged their perjury and breach of faith to England, and that God did justly punish them by that nation for whose cause they offended, and afterwards being delivered from that bondage by the help of the English, they give thanks in these words:—

"O Lord, . . . seeing, when we by our own power were altogether unable to have freed ourselves from the tyranny of strangers, and from the bondage and thraldom pretended against us, Thou of Thine especial goodness didst move the hearts of our neighbours (of whom we had deserved no such favour) to take upon them the common burden with us, and for our deliverance, not only to spend the lives of many, but also to hazard the state and tranquillity of their land[b] and commonwealth, grant unto us, O Lord, that with such reverence we may remember Thy benefits received, that after this, in our default, we never enter into hostility against the realm and nation of England. Suffer us never, O Lord, to fall to that ingratitude and detestable unthankfulness, that we shall seek the death and destruction of those, whom

[a] ["The CL Psalmes of David in English Metre; with the Forme of Prayers and Ministration of the Sacraments, &c., used in the Churche of Scotland;" &c. &c.; "printed at Edinburgh by Thomas Bassandine dwelling at the Nether Bow. 1575. Cum Privilegio." 8vo.] pp. 68—[70: from a prayer headed, "A Thanksgiving vnto God after our deliuerance fro: the tyranny of the Frenchemen, with prayers made for the continuance of the peace betwixt the Realmes of England and Scotland."—The "deliverance" referred to, is the expulsion of the French from Scotland, and the treaty of Edinburgh, in 1560, brought about, as it was, in great part, by the fleet and troops of Queen Elizabeth. See Buchanan, Rer. Scot. Hist., lib. xvi. pp. 324, 325, and lib. xvii. p. 326 (tom. i. fol. 1715);—Spottiswood, pp. 151, 152;—Robertson, Hist. of Scotl., bk. iii. pp. 190-202. 4to. edit.).]

[b] ["*Realm*," in the original.]

Thou hast made instruments to deliver us from the tyranny of merciless strangers."

This solemn confession is now forgotten. Without any provocation on our parts, or the least alteration in religion, they invade the children of their deliverers. 'Shall not God see it and require it?'

2 Chron. xxiv. 22.

DISCOURSE II.

SERMON BEFORE THE MARQUIS OF NEWCASTLE[a].

2 Sam. x. 12.

"Be of good courage, and let us play the men, for our people, and for the cities of our God; and the Lord do that which seemeth Him good."

First Printed at York, A.D. 1643.

This chapter containeth three parts, David's ambassage, Hanun's discourtesy, and David's revenge. "Then said David, I will shew kindness unto Hanun the son of Nahash, as his father shewed kindness unto me." Verse [2.] It was truly said by Solomon, "Love is strong as death." Cant. viii. 6. Gratitude is a branch that springs from this root. It is not buried in the grave, but descends from the parents upon their posterity. "*Non dissecanda sed dissuenda est amicitia*[b]"—"Friendship ought not to be slashed in sunder, but to be unstitched by degrees." But now what is become of this forgotten virtue? which, like the Phœnix, is much talked of, but seldom seen. Nothing grows aged sooner than a good turn. Now the

[a] [Jan. 28, 1643-4, upon the second invasion of England by the Scotch; whose army crossed the Tweed Jan. 15, summoned Newcastle (then garrisoned by Sir Thomas Glemham) in vain, crossed the Tyne Feb. 22, and encountered the Marquis of Newcastle at Durham (Rushw., vol. vi. pp. 498. 613-615). The Marquis, however, was compelled to retreat without a battle, owing to the rout of Col. Bellasis by Fairfax at Selby (id., ibid. p. 618). Bramhall's sermon was preached upon occasion of his marching from York. It was sent with Serpent Salve (then just published) to Ussher (Letter from Ussher to Bramhall in Vesey's Life of the latter, p. 27) and to Sir G. Radcliffe (Rawd. Papers, p. 93), both then at Oxford; the latter of whom, in his reply to Bramhall (dated March 20, 1643-4, —Rawd. Papers, ibid. No. xxxvii.), speaks of his having "shewed the king" (then also at Oxford) "that piece of the Scottish Liturgy, which concerns their ingratitude to this nation, printed in the front of" the "sermon." See also above in vol. iii. Pref. p. 3, notes i, j.]

[b] ["Amicitiæ dissuendæ magis quam discindendæ." Cic., De Amic., c. 21. See also the De Offic., i. 33.]

PART IV.

world hath taken out a new lesson,—by cancelling the obligation to avoid the debt, and by picking some feigned quarrel to rob good deserts of their due reward. This is now held the more compendious way for degenerous spirits to disengage themselves. The king of Ammon did find no such measure from David; but the king of Albion finds it from too many treacherous Zibas, to whom both he and his father have shewed other manners of kindnesses, than Nahash did to David.

[2 Sam. ix. 9-12; xii. 1-4; xix. 24-30.]

Hanun was an idolater, and more than that, an Ammonite, of whom the law saith, "Thou shalt not seek their peace nor their prosperity all thy days for ever." Differences in religion disoblige no man from civil duties. Faith is to be kept with a heretic, and offices of humanity are due from a Jew to an Ammonite.

Deut. xxiii. 6.

But things well intended are not always rightly construed. '*Mala mens, malus animus.*' The spider will extract poison out of the sweetest flowers. 'A sore eye will be offended with the light of the sun[c].' Notwithstanding all Hezekiah's piety, Rabshakeh will not stick to say, that he hath pulled down the Altars of God. So here David's courtesy is traduced. The princes of Ammon say to their lord, "Thinkest thou that David doth honour thy father? . . hath not David rather sent his servants to search the city, and to spy it out." They spake not altogether without reason; ambassadors are often honourable spies: but in this case their suspicion was groundless. You see we are not the first nation, whom needless jealousies have undone, or imaginary fears have plunged into real dangers. Evil counsellors, who infuse malignant notions into the ears of princes, are like those who poison a common fountain, whereof all the city doth drink. On the other side, blessed is that kingdom, where the king's friends are Alexander's friends[d], where the favourers of the commonwealth are the favourites of the prince; such may be truly called, "the horsemen and chariots of Israel." But such were not these princes of Ammon. Evil counsel in the end proves worst for them that give it. By seeking to prevent David, they invite him to their own

Isai. xxxvi. 7.

Verse 3.

2 Kings xiii. 14.

[c] [See Plut., De Adul. et Amici Discrim., c. 28; Op. Moral., tom. i. p. 181.]

[d] [Id., Apophthegm. Regum, in Alexand. num. 29; ibid. p. 505.]

ruin. Thus the will of God is fulfilled, even whilst it is shunned. Yet these evil counsellors were not '*in nubibus*'—'in the clouds;' the fact was evident. If it were sufficient to accuse, who should be innocent? The wolves, in the treaty with the sheep, desired that the dogs might be destroyed, as incendiaries and evil counsellors (can you blame them?), that they might range and worry at their pleasure[e].

The evil counsellors suffered justly; but Hanun was not innocent, to "take David's servants, and shave off half their beards, and cut off their garments in the middle;" that is, to strip them of the two principal outward ornaments of a man, [the one] natural, hair; the other artificial, clothes. I find four gross errors in this passage:—first, against the light of nature, to punish upon a bare suggestion, without proof or discussion, whereas in criminal causes the proofs ought to be clearer than the noon-day light:—secondly, against the law of nations, to use ambassadors in that barbarous manner, whose office is sacred, and ought always to protect their persons; yet we see how God's ambassadors have often met with the same entertainment:—thirdly, against the rule of policy, first to disgrace and provoke men of parts and power, and then to dismiss them; which error cost the Samnites dear, when they had the Roman consuls and legions in their mercy, cooped up at Caudium; they did neither dismiss them honourably, to oblige the Romans, as they were first advised, nor cut them off every mother's son, to disable the Romans to revenge, as they were advised in the second place, but caused them, after they had disarmed them, to pass disgracefully under the yoke, and so dismissed them with reproach, which they revenged soon after with the ruin of the Samnites[f]:—fourthly, against piety: by the Law, torn garments were proper to lepers; they were forbidden to "round" their "heads," or to "mar the corners of their beards;" but the Ammonites thought to put a jeer upon the Jewish religion, even as some of late have ludibriously abused those holy garments and books and vessels, which we use in the service of God. The Ammonites found, that it was not good to jest with edge tools: profane Lucian was

[Verse 4.]

942

Levit. xxi. 5: xix. 27.

[e] [Id., in V. Demosthen., tom. iv. p. 1[illegible]. ed. Bryant.]

[f] [Liv., ix. 3.]

PART IV.

torn in pieces with dogs[g]: and the other will find, that God is a severe avenger of such impious scoffs.

Verse 5. David's care of his servants shews, how governors ought to protect their inferior and subordinate ministers in the execution of their commands, and to preserve them from contempt.

Verse 6. The Ammonites see their error when it was too late. There is no doubt, but even then upon submission David would have remitted the injury; but their consciences told them, the abuse was too gross and public to be forgotten. We see by daily experience, that conscience of guilt, and desperation of forgiveness, drive men into courses pernicious both to themselves and others.

Therefore, to secure themselves, the Ammonites wage thirty-three thousand Syrians; but in the disposing of their
Verse 6. men, this is worthy of observation, that they kept themselves
Verse 8. near the gates, for a sure retreat, but the Syrians they placed in the open field. It was never held to be discretion in any nation, to bring armies of foreigners, whom they could not regulate, into their chief strengths and holds: witness the Mamertines in Messana[h], the Saxons in Britain.

But here they met with Joab, an overmatch for them in the art of war, as he shews by the ordering of his men, verse 9,—by his provident forecast, verse 11 (fear the worst, and the best will always save itself),—and, lastly, by his gallantry, in my text,—"Be of good courage, and let us play the men, for our people, and for the cities of our God, and the Lord do that which seemeth Him good."

In which words I observe four parts: first, a brave exhortation,—"Be of good courage;"—secondly, a magnanimous resolution,—"And let us play the men;"—thirdly, a just reason,—"For our people, and for the cities of our God;"—fourthly, a pious submission,—"And the Lord do that which seemeth Him good."

It hath been ever the custom of generals, before hazardous battle, to cheer up the hearts of their soldiers in a pathetical oration, with arguments drawn from the approved

[g] [Suidas, Art. upon "Λουκιανὸς ὁ Σαμοσατεὺς, ὁ ἐπικληθεὶς βλάσφημος;" but the story is of doubtful authority. See the Life of Lucian prefixed to the edition of his works by Hemsterhuis and Reitz.]

[h] [See Arnold, Hist. of Rome, vol. ii. pp. 422, 423; and Liv., xxviii. 29.]

valour and virtue of themselves or their ancestors, from the assured hope of rich spoils, from the justice and piety of their cause. So God commands, Deut. xx; so Joab practiseth, in my text,—"Be of good courage," &c. [Deut. xx. 1-9.]

I cannot pass in silence by the brotherly love of Joab and Abishai, verse 11:—"If the Syrians be too strong for me, thou shalt help me; and if the Ammonites be too strong for thee, I will help thee." As, when one foot trips, the other is ready presently to sustain it. And here in my text, by encouraging one another to "play the men;" or rather to play the man, as it is said of the children of Israel, that they went out "as one man;" that is, with one heart, and one soul, animated with the same desire of the public good. The left hand doth not stand more in need of the right, than an army doth of the concord of its commanders. Where I see this blessed sympathy, I cannot but echo out that of the Psalmist;—"Behold how good and joyful a thing it is, brethren, to dwell together in unity; for there the Lord hath promised His blessing, and life for evermore." But where men are drawn into action (as a bear to the stake) by force or fear, where a little base plunder is preferred before honour and victory, where there is faction, envy, and emulation amongst great officers, it portends destruction and dissipation; the God of Heaven and earth ever bless this army from it. And if there be any persons within the sound of my voice, who are conscious to themselves of such sinister respects, or of any other impediment, which may retard our hopes of a happy victory, either by offending God, or disabling them to do the duties of their places, I do here beseech them, by that service which they owe to God, by that allegiance which they owe to his Majesty, by that love which they owe to their native country, to sacrifice them this day to the common cause, or at least with the serpent to deposit them so long, till this army return again in peace.

1 Sam. xi. 7.

Ps. cxxxiii. [1-3.]

943

And the only way to peace is "courage," which yields to no chances, is terrified with no dangers;—

"Et ab ipso
"Ducit opes animumque ferro[i]."

There cannot be a worse counsellor than fear, in time of

[i] [Horat., Carm., IV. iv. 59, 60.]

PART IV.

danger. "*Pessimus in dubiis augur timor.*" Fear caused Moses to stagger at God's commandment. Fear caused Elias to fly from the womanish threatenings of Jezebel. Fear caused Peter to deny his Master. Fear will metamorphose a field of thistles into an army of men. Fear will cause a man to tremble at "the sound of a shaken leaf." As a man standing upon the edge of some lofty turret, or precipitous crag, without any to push him forward, even by looking down, is in danger to tumble down headlong through fear, so degenerous 'fear betrays the succours of the soul.' Therefore, when Gideon's army was to give the charge upon the enemy, he caused proclamation to be made in the camp, "Whoso is timorous, let him depart." The reason is given, Deut. xx. 8,—lest his example make his fellow soldiers to "faint." But nothing is difficult to courage. In the land of Canaan there were giants, to whom the Israelites being compared did seem but grasshoppers; yet, said Caleb and Joshua, "Fear them not, they are bread for us:"—bread, which is eaten without any labour or difficulty. When Saul was to be inaugurated king by Samuel, he set nothing before him but a "shoulder;" a mean dish for a royal entertainment: some have found out a mystery in it (they might better call it an allegory),—that as the shoulder doth bear up the beast, so the "courage" and fortitude of a king doth sustain the body politic, so to teach governors how they ought to bear the burden of the commonwealth[j]. The ancient law of governing the Roman army was reduced to two heads; first, "*Non sequi*;" secondly, "*Non fugere*[k]:"—first, not to make a rash hazard without good ground (he that loveth danger shall perish in it); secondly, not to decline danger timorously, when it offers itself, and cowardly to betray a good cause. Therefore, as one said, that pronunciation was the first, and second, and third part of a good orator[l]; so may I say, that "courage" is the first, and second, and third part of a good commander. It is a slander cast upon religion, that it makes men cowards. The fear of God is the best armour against the fear of man.

Exod. iii. 11. 1 Kings, xix. 3. [Matt. xxvi. 69-75.—&c.] Lev. xxvi. 36. [Wisd. xvii. 12.] Judg. vii. 3. Numb. xiv. 9. 1 Sam. ix. [24.]

[j] [See Poole, Synops. in loc., citing (among other commentators) Cornelius a Lapide and Peter Martyr.]

[k] [Veget., De Re Militari, lib. ii. c. 7.]

[l] [Demosthenes: see Cic., De Oratore, iii. 56; Quintil., De Instit. Orat., xi. 3.]

Religion is the root of "courage." "By faith" our fathers "subdued kingdoms," &c., "waxed valiant in fight, and turned to flight the armies of aliens." Let the heathens brag of their Decii[m] and Curtii[n], that devoted their lives to death for the love of their country;— Discourse II. Heb. xi. 33, [34.]

"Vicit amor patriæ, laudumque immensa cupido[o];"—

we have our Moses and Paul, that desired to be made anathemas for their brethren. Their Socrates drunk his poison cheerfully[p]: our Cyprian said Amen to the sentence of his own condemnation[q]. Their Scævola burned his hand for mistaking Porsenna[r]: we are able to name a catalogue of martyrs, who have kissed the stake, sung hymns in the midst of the fire; who have accounted their sufferings, palms; their punishments, triumphs; their infamy, glory; their exile, their country; their bonds, their crown; their prison, their paradise; their deathday, their birthday. So, in "courage" we equal them, in the cause we far excel them; this is "good courage" indeed. Some think to express their courage by roaring and blaspheming over their cups, by unseasonable duels and quarrels, by mutining against their commanders, by tyrannizing over their inferiors, by trampling under foot all laws both of God and man: this is so far from "good courage," that it is rather an argument of cowardice. True "courage" is fearful to offend God, hath a reverend regard of the laws, is obedient to superiors, courteous to equals, indulgent to inferiors, and
944 evermore grounded upon a good cause, and accompanied with cheerfulness and resolution; that's my next point,— "And let us play the men." [Exod. xxxii. 32.—Rom. ix. 3.]

A strange kind of "play;" but the terrible face of war is sport to a martial and experienced mind: as Job saith of Leviathan, that "he esteemeth iron as straw," accounts "darts as stubble," and "laugheth at the shaking of the spear."—"Let the young men arise and play before us;" a [Job xli. 27-29.] 2 Sam. ii. 14.

[m] [Liv. viii. 9, 10.]
[n] [Id., vii. 6.]
[o] [Virg., Æn., vi. 823.]
[p] [See Platon. Phædon. c. lxvi.; Op. tom. i. p. 117. C.]
[q] ["Et his dictis" (Galerius Maximus Proconsul) "decretum ex tabellâ recitavit,—Thascium Cyprianum gladio animadverti placet. Cyprianus Episcopus dixit, Deo gratias." S. Cyprian. Passio, ap. Vit. Cypr. p. 13. Op. ed. Fell.]
[r] [Liv., ii. 12, 13.]

PART IV.

fatal skirmish, where not one survived. Virtue is derived "*a viro*"—from "a man." So the phrase is used 1 Sam. iv. 9,—"O ye Philistines, be strong, and quit yourselves like men." In the same dialect David speaketh to Solomon, 1 Kings ii. 2. "Be thou strong, and shew thyself a man;" that is, of a masculine virtue and spirit; a man, not a child ("*Væ terræ cujus rex est puer*"—"woe is that province where the governor is a child," uncertain, mutable, without resolution.—Eph. iv. 14,—"That we henceforth be no more as children tossed to and fro," &c.;—fluctuating men without resolution are compared to children, who may be drawn any way with a fair word or an apple; or to ships lying at hull[s], "tossed to and fro," still changing postures):—secondly, a man, not a woman, without courage and resolution; God provides strictly, Deut. xxii. 5. that "a man shall not wear a woman's garment;" much less put on womanish manners. There could be nothing more opprobriously objected than this;—

> "Vos etenim juvenes animos geritis muliebres,
> "Illaque virgo viri[t]:"—

whence was that brag of a Lacedæmonian woman, that they only brought forth men[u]. "Let us play the men." But the chief emphasis lies in this word "us,"—"let *us* play." It was Cæsar's honour, that his commands to his soldiers were not "*Ite*"—"Go *ye*," but "*Venite*"—"Come," let us Judg. ix. 48. go[v]. It was Abimelech's charge to his army, "What ye see me do, do quickly." "*Digna Gideonitarum genere sententia*"—"a saying worthy of the son of Gideon." The example of a leader hath a strong influence upon his followers. Observe the words of Uriah, 2 Sam. xi. 11,—"The ark, and Israel, and Judah, abide in tents, and my lord Joab is encamped in the open fields, and shall I go into mine house to eat and drink?"—"My lord Joab," there is his pattern. It was debated among the philosophers, whether an army of lions having a hart to be their captain, or an army of harts having a lion to be their captain, were the more considerable army;

[s] [i. e. riding to and fro upon the water. See, both for the expression and for the passage itself, Bramhall's Catch. of Leviath., c. iii. (above in vol. iv. p. 592) Disc. iii. Pt. iii.]

[t] [Ennius, ap. Cic., De Offic., i. 18. Ernesti reads in the second line—"illa *virago* viri."]

[u] [A saying attributed to Gorgo by Plutarch, in V. Lycurgi, tom. i. p. 103. ed. Bryant.]

[v] ["Ignave, venire Te Cæsar, non ire, jubet." Lucan., Pharsal., v. 487, 488.]

and it was determined for the army of harts, having a lion to their governor[x]. The great wheel of a clock sets all the little wheels on going. In Alexander's time all the Macedonians were soldiers. In Augustus his reign all the good wits in Rome were poets. The example of a leader draws his followers, as the loadstone draws iron, or the jet draws chaff. In a word, a vigilant and a resolute commander is like a light in a watch-tower, to direct his company to the safe harbour of victory; but a negligent and cowardly leader is like fires made among the rocks, brings his followers the ready way to ruin and destruction. Therefore saith Joab, "Let us play the men." Discourse II.

But what is resolution without a good cause? Joab wanted not that,—"For our people, and for the cities of our God." "For our people," that is, our wives, our children, our parents, our neighbours, our friends, our native country; and "for the cities of our God," that is, our Churches, our religion: so, "for our people and for the cities of our God," is "*pro aris et focis*"—"for our altars and for our fires," for our Church and commonwealth. The very heathens could teach us by the light of nature, that we are not born only for ourselves, but partly for our parents, partly for our country. Ulysses preferred the smoke of Ithaca his native soil before all those pleasant regions that he had seen[y].—

"Nescio quâ natale solum dulcedine cunctos
"Ducit[z];"—

whether it be by the instinct of nature, as beasts love their dens, birds their nests; or by civil institution, as having the same laws, the same ceremonies, the same temples, the same markets, the same tribunals. It was the prayer of the Elders for Boaz, that he might "do worthily in Ephratah, and be famous in Bethlehem," that is, in his native country. It was Esther's resolution for her countrymen, "If I perish, I perish." And Nehemiah, though for his own particular he was cup-bearer to a great king, yet his affections are still the same to his country:—"Why should not my countenance be sad, when the city, the place of my fathers' sepul- Ruth iv. 11. [Esther iv. 16.] Nehem. ii. 3.

[x] [A saying of Chabrias, ap. Plutarch., Apophthegm. Reg., Op. Moral. tom. i. p. 522.]

[y] ["Αὐτὰρ Ὀδυσσεὺς, Ἱέμενος καὶ καπνὸν ἀποθρώσκοντα νοῆσαι Ἧς γαίης, θανέειν ἱμείρεται." Odyss., i. 57-59.]

[z] [Ovid., Epist. in Pont., I. iii. 35, 36.]

PART IV.

chres, lieth waste, and the gates thereof are burned with fire." Abraham, that was so ready to sacrifice his only son upon a mere command, yet, when God requireth him to leave his native country, He presseth it home to him with many reasons and promises. Brutus commanded his own sons to be slain before his eyes, for conspiring against their country[a]. When Sampson, without any weapon in his hand, set upon a lion as though it had been a kid, the reason is intimated in the verse precedent,—for the safeguard of his "father and his mother." There cannot be a juster war than for defence of our country. It was Tully's wish, that every one in Rome had it written upon his forehead, how he stood affected to the commonwealth[b]. I think it were a good wish for England at this present; that we might know who are truly zealous "for their people." 915

Gen. xii. 1, &c.

Judg. xiv. 6.

The other reason is altogether as strong,—"And for the cities of our God." The Italians give sundry additions to their chiefest cities; as, Florence the Fair, Venice the Rich, Genoa the Stately, Milan the Great, Rome the Holy. This is certain, no city in the universe can have a more glorious title than this in my text, to be one of "the cities of our God." But why are the cities of Israel called "the cities of God?" For two reasons:—first, because the Lord had a peculiar interest in this land above all other lands. "The land shall not be sold for ever, for the land is Mine, . . ye are strangers and sojourners with Me;" so the Lord was the true owner, the Israelites were but the usufructuaries. Secondly, because they were the Church of God, "Judah was His Sanctuary, Israel His dominion," in them He had "put His Name." Solomon knew the true mother from the feigned by her love to the child; so a genuine son of the Church may be distinguished from a counterfeit, by his affection to the Church. "By the rivers of Babylon we sat down and wept, when we remembered thee, O Sion." And, "Arise, O Lord, and have mercy upon Sion, . . for why? thy servants think upon her stones, and it pitieth them to see her in the dust." But the Church requires not only our affections and supplications, but our best endeavours. It is recorded of Theodosius, that good emperor, to his eternal

Lev. xxv. 23.

[Ps. cxiv. 2.] [Deut. xii. 5, 21, &c.] [2 Kings iii. 24-28.]

[Psalm cxxxvii. 1; —cii. 13, 14. Prayer-bk. version.]

[a] [Liv., ii. 5.]

[b] [Cic., In Catil., i. 13.]

honour, that upon his death-bed he was more solicitous "for the cities of God," that is, the Churches, than for himself, or his posterity[c]. And when ordinary endeavours will not serve, the sword is never more justly drawn than to defend religion. As we read of those builders of Jerusalem, who laboured with their trowels in the one hand and their swords in the other hand. But these were builders up, not pullers down: whatsoever they did, was by the licence, and upon the special warrant, of the great king Artaxerxes; not rebelliously, upon their own heads. What a pitiful complaint did Laban make for his images,—"*tulerunt deos*"—"they have taken away my gods;" and Mary, for the dead Body of our Saviour,—"*tulerunt Dominum*"—"they have taken away my Lord." Much more have we cause to be moved, when men go about by force to rob us of our religion. A private man may lawfully keep the possession of his house or land against all acts of violence; much more may a whole Church hold the possession of their religion. Three sorts of losses principally concern a man; first, in his estate, that is but chaff; next, in his body, that is but bran; lastly, in his soul, that is the flour, and there is the greatest loss. "What shall it profit a man to win the whole world, and lose his soul?" We do not read of any wars among the heathen for religion, except to punish sacrilege. The reason was partly in their Gods, which were sociable to admit fellows;—(when Tiberius made a motion in the senate to have Christ admitted into the number of their Gods, it was answered, that He was "*impatiens consortis*," not like their Gods, He would admit no companions[d]:)—and partly in themselves; many of them were of opinion, that as variety of instruments makes the sweetest concert, so variety of religions makes the best harmony in the ears of God. But now see how the world is turned! Sacrilege is grown a principal part of God's service (or else some have but a little share of religion, who yet despise all others as profane). Now "*uva vel faba*"—"a grape or a bean," is too much for God's service: though David was of a more generous disposition,—"Nay, but I will surely buy it of thee at a price, neither will I offer burnt-

Neh. iv. 17.

[Neh. ii. 7, 8.]

[Gen. xxxi. 30.]

[John xx. 13. Vulg.]

[Matt. xvi. 26.—Mark viii. 36.]

2 Sam xxiv. 24.

[c] [Ambros., Orat. de Obitu Theodos., c. 25; Op. tom. ii. p. 1207. B. And compare Socrat., H. E., v. 26.]

[d] [Euseb., H. E., ii. 2]

PART IV.

offerings unto the Lord my God of that which doth cost me nothing." Now the duties which many men pay to the Deity, are nothing but opinions and crotchets; and for these they think it lawful for private men to mingle heaven and earth together, for subjects to invade their sovereign's dominions. They who lately cried for nothing but liberty of conscience, now will obtrude their own conceits upon strangers 946
by the sword. In this case, he is no good Christian, no good commonwealth's man, no true Englishman, that will not say cheerfully with Joab in my text, "Be of good courage, and let us play the men, for our people, and for the cities of our God,"—'*Deo duce, ferro comitante*'—'with a good sword to attend them, and God Almighty to lead them.'

That brings me to my last part,—"And let the Lord do that which seemeth Him good." This shews Joab's dependence upon God, and his submission to the will of the Lord. If He see it be good for us to be conquerors, we shall be conquerors; if not, we shall die gloriously: however, "Blessed be the name of the Lord." Men never prosper, who deal too majestically, and will needs be their own carvers with God. When the husbandman hath tilled and sown his ground, he may not challenge a good crop at the hands of
[1 Cor. iii. 6.] God, but expect it of His bounty. Paul may "plant," and "Apollos water," but still it is "God" that "gives the increase." We are blind, and know not what is truly good for ourselves. "*Perieramus nisi periissemus*[e]," said Themistocles to his children;—"We had perished, if we had not
[Gen. xxx. 1; xxxv. 18.] perished;" that is, in our own opinions. Rachel longs and cries for children, and she dies in child-bed. Therefore the heathen prayed, O Jupiter, if I beg of thee those things which will prove hurtful to me, withhold them from me. But that which "seemeth good" to God, is always truly good; Who disposeth all things sweetly, and out of poison can extract a good cordial. Then let us do our duties, and submit the success to God. Carking and macerating cares dry up the bones, plow up deep furrows in the forehead, make the
[Eccl. xii. 5.] white "almond tree" to "flourish" before the time, shorten
[Matt. vi. 25.] the life. Our Saviour bids, "Take no thought;" yet St.
[1 Tim. v. 8.] Paul tells us, that he that taketh no care, "is worse than

[e] [Plut., in V. Themistocl., tom. i. p. 280, ed. Bryant.]

an infidel." How are these reconciled? Take care for the means; that is good: take no care for the event; that is bad. "*Tolle quod tuum est*"—"Take up thy part," and leave God's part to Himself. "Play thou the man, and let God do that which seemeth Him good." [Matt. xx. 14. Vulg.]

But besides the dependence, it shews also Joab's confidence. Let not us be wanting to ourselves, and God will not be wanting to His own cause. The known justice of the cause is a great encouragement to a soldier in the day of battle. This was the reason of that Roman policy:—before they began any wars, the herald or Fecial went to the confines of the enemy's country, and made a solemn prayer,—"*Audi Jupiter*, and thou Juno, Quirinus thou, and all ye Gods celestial, terrestrial, and infernal, I call you to witness that this people is unjust," &c.;—and having so said, he threw his javelin into the enemy's country[f]. But leaving them to their superstitions: it is a happy conflict which is undertaken for a good cause; where they neither fear sin from the slaughter of their enemies, nor danger from their own deaths; where they kill securely, and are killed more securely, being defended with armour without, and with a good conscience within. Now I have done with my text.

The application is short. The princes of Ammon conspire against David. They were kinsmen as descended from Lot, but no subjects; the less was their crime. These find themselves too weak, and therefore hire an army of mercenary Syrians, strangers to them both, to invade Israel. This forceth Joab, King David's general, to divide his army, part against the Syrians, part against the Ammonites. Church and commonwealth are both at stake: but by the valour and providence of Joab, the Syrians are first beaten; and presently thereupon the hearts of the Ammonites fail them, they never look into the field again. Rabbah, the royal city of Ammon, is taken by King David; and upon this occasion Syria is absolutely subjected to the crown of Israel. Let the success prove answerably to all that hate his Majesty, and let the application be to his "enemies; but let those that love him, be as the sun when he goeth forth in his might." So and never but so shall this "land have rest." [Gen. xix. 38.] [2 Sam. x. 6-14.] [2 Sam. xi. I; xii. 26-31.] [2 Sam. x. 15-19.] [Judg. v. 31.]

[f] [Liv., i. 32.]

PART IV.

The exhortation will be somewhat longer. It was wisely said, "*Externus hostis unitatis vinculum*"—"A foreign enemy is or ought to be a composer of domestic differences." Nature doth teach us to unite ourselves for our own preservation. Cast water into a dusty place, and it will contract itself into round globes to save itself, an emblem of association; yet this is contrary to its own disposition. Humid bodies are easily contained in other bounds, difficultly in their own. "*Vomitio vomitionem sedat,*" *&c.* If a vein be broken within the body, the ready way (say the physicians) to stay the 947
bleeding, is to open another without. If a foreign enemy do not cure our rancorous dispositions one towards another, I can say no more, but "*Quos perdere vult Jupiter, hos priùs dementat*"—"Whom God will have destroyed, He first infatuateth." Simple and prepossessed people may be seduced by Declarations and Protestations, to believe that their coming is really for the good of this kingdom. I deny not but it may so accidentally fall out. But I desire to know, when did ever any nation that intended war, want such pre-
Isai. xxxvi. 10. tences? "Am I now come up without the Lord against this land? The Lord hath said unto me, go up against this land," saith Sennacherib. Can the vast charge and the bitter fruits of the last voyage[g] be so soon forgotten of us? When the Lacedæmonians once made a reasonable suit to the Athenians, even in their own judgment, yet they rejected it in this respect, lest they should teach their neighbours of Lacedæmon the way in like cases to Athens, or give them a haunt to make such suits. What I pray you would they have done, if the suit had been unjust and unlawful, if their neighbours had made such a motion in a chargeable, commanding, hostile manner?

I have seen their latest and shortest Declaration[h], sent from Berwick [by] the Commissioners[i] in a letter to Sir Thomas

[g] [Scil. the Scotch invasion of England in 1639.]

[h] [Issued shortly before the Scotch army crossed the Tweed on their march into England, which was on January 15, 1643. old style:—Rushw., vol. vi. pp. 487-489. It was a small 4to. pamphlet of six pages, entitled "A Short Declaration of the Kingdom of Scotland, for Information and Satisfaction to their brethren of England concerning the present Expedition into England;" and was followed by another and longer Declaration;—Rushw., ibid. pp. 490-493.]

[i] ["Certain Commissioners" were sent into Scotland, in August 1643, by the English Parliament, "to negociate a treaty of assistance" with the Scotch; viz. the Earl of Rutland, Sir W. Ar-

Glemham[k], to satisfy their brethren of England in these three things concerning their present expedition: 1. Of "the justness of their cause;" 2. Of "the lawfulness of their calling thereto;" 3. Of "the faithfulness of their carriages therein[l]." If they fail in any one of these, their expedition is unjust, and cannot be approved in the judgment of a brother; for '*bonum ex singulis circumstantiis, malum ex quolibet defectu.*' But if they fail in every one of these (as they do), what good shall we expect from such a voyage? "Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?" Matt. vii. 16.

First, for "the justness of their cause." Hearing them so often tell of their "clear demonstrations," who would not have expected some downright authorities, and precedents from the Word of God, or at least some authentic proofs from the national laws of one or both kingdoms? These are the standard and measure of justice to us. Who would not have expected, that they should at least have endeavoured to have answered the late Acts of Pacification[m], so solemnly passed in both kingdoms? But for all these, behold a deep silence. If silence be not a plenary consent, yet in this case it implies strongly, that they know in their own consciences, that the laws of God and man are both against them. But instead of these, they "profess before God and the world, that their hearts are clear from" all sinister "intentions," that "the love of Christ requireth Christians to bear one another's burdens," that "the law of nature doth challenge their care and endeavour to prevent their own danger," which is "wrapped up in their neighbour's[n]." Alas! what poor bulrushes are these, to bear the weight of so much Christian blood as is like to be shed in this cause! That plea taken from "their own danger," shews us plainly, that howsoever they pretend "the love of Christ," yet their charity begins

myne, Sir H. Vane the younger, Mr. Hatcher, Mr. Darley, and two ministers, Mr. Marshal and Mr. Nye. Rushw., ibid. pp. 466, 467. The folio edition has here "*to* the commissioners," by an evident misprint.]

[k] [Then in command of the advanced guard of the King's troops, at Alnwick. The letter is dated Jan. 20. 1644 (i. e. N. S.), and signed by the Duke of Argyle in the name of the Scotch and Sir W. Armyne in that of the English. It is in Rushw., ibid. pp. 606, 607, with Sir Thomas's answer; who had fallen back upon Newcastle at the time Bramhall's sermon was preached, eight days subsequently.]

[l] [Rushw., vol. vi. p. 488.]

[m] [Passed in 1641.—Rushw., vol. v. pp. 375, 384.]

[n] [Short Declar. quoted in note i, in Rushw. vol. vi. p. 488.]

PART IV.

at home. Indeed there is no fence for fear; but what cause have we given them to fear? "*Nihil timendum video, sed timeo tamen*[o]." Unless it be that of the wise man;—

Wisd. xvii. 11.

"Wickedness, condemned by her own witness, is very timorous; and being pressed with conscience, always forecasteth grievous things." But let us take their words for once, seeing we can have no other assurance of their "intentions." It is not a good "intention," nor a pretended "love of Christ," nor a supposed 'necessity,' nor any one of these, nor all of these together, that can justify an unlawful action.

[Rom. iii. 8.]

It is not lawful to "do evil, that good may come" of it. Charity and justice go always hand in hand together. This is, for fear of an uncertain danger, to run into a certain sin. But they tell us, that they come to "rescue the king's" person out of the hands of evil councillors, "who are enemies to religion[p]." In serious causes, it is dishonourable to trifle with pretences. Do they think, or can they think, that the king is kept in durance against his will? or necessitated to do any act contrary to the dictate of his own reason? I appeal to their own consciences. It were greatly to be wished, that they would once speak out and name the 'evil councillors.' The history of this kingdom doth shew, that treason hath often put itself into this dress, seeking to hide its deformity from the world under this painted mask of removing 'evil councillors.' God be blessed, his Majesty hath now the flower of both Houses of Parliament about him (I hope these are not the 'evil councillors'); and daily more and more are repairing to him, so many for number, so venerable for their condition, that all your committees put together do not deserve to be named upon the same day. If we look back to former Parliaments, we shall find the most of these, great 948
confessors, and (in will) martyrs, for this commonwealth: some of them clapt up into the Tower, others into the Fleet, others disjusticed in the country, and disabled to have all offices, for their love to their country: and shall we now be frighted from them with the name of 'evil councillors?' But yet perhaps they are "enemies to religion." It may be so: to

[o] [Senec., Thyestes, 436.]
[p] [Short Declar. quoted in note i, in Rushw., ibid.]

that religion, which innovators[q] would introduce by force of arms; but not to that religion, which is established by the laws of this kingdom, and which God hath so long blessed to us and our fathers with peace and happiness.

In the next place they go about, with the same success, to "justify the lawfulness of their calling." A hard task, seeing England is quite without the sphere of their activity. Here I expected, that they should have cited some fundamental league of both nations to this purpose, or something that might have satisfied conscience. But all they say in defence of their calling (except the iterated pleas of their own necessity, and mischievous counsels, which they insert here again), may be reduced to this brief sum,—that this expedition is desired by our Parliament, and concluded by the consent of their Committee[r]. We will for the present suppose,—that which we know to be otherwise, and they are never able to prove,—that the two Houses were full, and free both from force and fear. Yet there are three main imperfections in their calling. First, nothing can give what it hath not; but it is clear by our laws, that the two Houses never had, nor have, any power of arms, but his Majesty alone. Secondly, if the Parliament had power to call, yet they, being subjects, have no power to entertain such a motion without the consent of their sovereign; notwithstanding all their vows and covenants, which never bind a subject contrary to his allegiance, nor a child contrary to his filial duty. Thirdly, it is as clear, that the Parliament can give no such conclusive power to a "Committee." They themselves are but proctor for our shires, cities, and boroughs; and by the law, "a deputy cannot make a deputy." Then let all men judge, what a calling this is like to be, where the cause is without all efficacy, the object without capacity, and the means without idoneity.

Their last labour is, to clear "the faithfulness of their carriages herein;" and that is by their promises[s]. A weak tenure; any man may be rich in promises. "The pipe plays sweetly whilst the fowler is about his prey[t]." But

[q] ["Innovat*ions*" in the folio edition, by an obvious misprint.]

[r] [Short Declar. quoted in note i, in Rushw., ibid.—"The Parliament of England . . have thought fit by their Commissioners," &c. And see above p. 104, note j.]

[s] [Ibid., p. 489.]

[t] ["Fistula dulce canit volucrem dum decipit auceps." Dionys. Caton., Distich., lib. i. dist. 27.]

PART IV.

they go further,—to give "the public faith of the kingdom of Scotland[u]." It seems they think, that Englishmen are to be catched with chaff. What is "the public faith" of a "kingdom" worth without the concurrence of the king? especially being given by a committee. There was a time, when such a thing called "the public faith," would have passed currently, though not with a scrivener, yet with some credulous citizens[x]; but now they will as soon trust a knight of the post. They know not how to implead "the public faith," or to arrest "the public faith," or to imprison "the public faith." The Declarers appeal to their former voyage,—"how little damage was occasioned by" their "means, how little disorder was committed by" them[y]. But (to pass by many things that might be justly alleged, in respect there is an Act of Oblivion[z]), then they were well paid, with a large overplus (I hope it was not for a come-again), now they can expect no payment in money; and in such a case, how is it possible that the soldiers should be kept from disorder? Lastly, they engage themselves, that this expedition "shall be made no use of to any other ends, than are expressed in the covenant, and in the treaty subscribed by the" English "commissioners[a]." What? not accidentally by particular persons? What "committee" can undertake that? We have not seen any "covenant" of theirs to invade England. If they have made any such, it binds them neither more nor less than Herod's oath did bind him to cut off John Baptist's head; or that desperate vow did bind the Jews to murder Paul. But we have seen a copy of "the treaty." If it be true, it is the highest burden that ever was imposed upon a kingdom. The English "Commissioners" know how to cut large swatches of other men's cloth. But who shall tie the bell about the cat's neck? It gives them all the "lands and estates of all popish prelatical persons, and of all malignants who have assisted or contributed to the king" (that is, of all men) "between Trent and Tweed, until all the arrerages

Matt. xiv. 7. Acts xxiii. 12.

[u] [Short Declar. quoted in note i, in Rushw., vol. vi. p. 489.]

[x] [A loan was raised in London by the Parliament twice or thrice in the year 1640, upon no better security than "the public faith;" Clarend., bk. iii. vol. i. p. 279, 4to. edit.]

[y] [Declar. before quoted, in Rushw., vol. vi. p. 489. The reference is to the Scotch expedition of 1639.]

[z] [Rushw., vol. v. pp. 370-372:—passed in 1641.]

[a] [Declar. before quoted, in Rushw., vol. vi. p. 489.]

for England and Ireland, and the charge of this war, be satisfied," with caution, "that the army shall not depart till then out of England[b];" that is, until the Day of Judgment. But all the craft is in catching. This is like one
919 of the Pope's donations; it wants the consent of the right owners. Men will fight hard before they be stripped of their livelihoods. Who ever heard, that a conquering sword was capable of any distinction between persons? "*Luculenta fortuna*[c]," a good estate, will be found more dangerous than a different opinion, either in religion or policy. All the favours their English friends can expect, is Polyphemus' courtesy to Ulysses—to be last eaten up[d].

The case being thus, give me leave for one word to your Excellency. "Be of good courage, and let us play the men, for our people, and for the cities of our God." Repel the Syrians, and the Ammonites will soon turn their backs. We may conjecture safely now, where the strength of this Sampson, this great rebellion, hath laid all this while. If the Lord return you again with victory, you shall bring back both a laurel-garland to deck your own temples, and an olive-branch of peace in your hand for our happiness.

I have another word to the auditory. "Be of good courage, and let us play the men, for our people, and for the cities of our God." In this case, I wish to every true Englishman the spirit and affection of that soldier, who having his legs cut off in fight for his country, yet desired to be cast into the breach, that he might dull the edge of one sword more. It is better to die, than survive the honour of our nation; and to suffer these things which are worse than death, schism, slavery, beggary, and whatsoever an insulting enemy can inflict upon a degenerous people. "*Dulce et decorum est pro patriâ mori*"—"It is a sweet and comely thing for a man to die for his country[e]," and for his religion. "*Quàm gloriosi revertuntur victores de prœlio, quàm beati moriuntur martyres in prœlio*"—"How gloriously they return conquerors from

[b] [This treaty was concluded Nov. 29, 1643. According to the (probably more authentic) copy of it in Rushworth (vol. vi. p. 486), the Scotch were to be paid "out of such lands and estates of the Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their adherents, as the two Houses of Parliament shall think fit;" and the last clause mentioned in the text does not occur.]

[c] ["Papæ, *divitias* tu quidem habes *luculentas*." Plaut., Rud., V. ii. 33.]

[d] [Odyss., ix. 369, 370.]

[e] [Horat., Carm., III. ii. 13.]

PART IV.

the battle, or how blessedly they die martyrs in the battle!" if they overcome, they are crowned with a laurel-garland; if they die, with a crown of martyrdom, saith St. Bernard[f].

If we compare our present condition, though heavy through assessments, and some disorders of a necessitous unpaid army, with what it was within the circumvolution of the last year, or little more, when we were blocked up almost on every side, and this city[g], now a pattern of loyalty to the whole kingdom, was even ready to have been made a nest of rebellion, we shall find that we have cause to bless God and the instruments of our safety. Indeed the burdens of the country have been great; but how collected, how distributed, how ordered, all men are not satisfied. This is evident, that those that "have borne the greatest heat and burden of the day," those that have "jeoparded their lives unto death in the high places of the field" for our protection, have had the least share. I say no more, nor would have this construed to the disrepute of any well-deserving patriot.

[Matt. xx. 12.]
[Judg. v. 18.]

"Qui monet ut facias quod jam facis, ipse monendo
"Laudat[h]." . . . . .

A noble Frenchman, in his description of the several interests of these European kingdoms, saith of England, that it is "*magnum animal*"—"a great creature, that cannot be destroyed, but by its own strength." Let us yet hold together, and every one in his own element contribute his uttermost endeavours to the advancement of the public welfare, without all sinister respects; and then I doubt not but we shall both survive this storm, and see sunshine and halcyonian days again in England. Therefore, "Be of good courage, and let us play the men, for our people, and for the cities of our God; and the Lord do that which seemeth Him good."

[f] [S. Bernard., De Laude Nov. Milit. ad Milites Templi, c. i; Op. tom. i. p. 1081. C.]

[g] [Viz. York, where the Marquis of Newcastle had been almost shut up by Fairfax, prior to the great victory upon Atherton Moor, June 30, 1643; subsequently to which Hull alone held out for the Parliament in the North. Rushw., vol. vi. pp. 269, 279.]

[h] [Ovid., Trist., V. xiv. 45, 46.]

DISCOURSE III.

A SERMON,

PREACHED AT DUBLIN, UPON THE 23RD OF APRIL, 1661,

BEING

THE DAY APPOINTED FOR HIS MAJESTY'S CORONATION.

WITH

TWO SPEECHES

MADE IN THE HOUSE OF PEERS THE 11TH OF MAY, 1661,

WHEN

THE HOUSE OF COMMONS

PRESENTED THEIR SPEAKER.

BY THE MOST REVEREND FATHER IN GOD,

JOHN LORD ARCHBISHOP OF ARMAGH,

PRIMATE AND METROPOLITAN OF ALL IRELAND.

DISCOURSE III.

A SERMON UPON HIS MAJESTY'S RESTORATION.

PSALM cxxvi. 7. [Prayer-book version.]

"*He that now goeth on his way weeping, and beareth* [*forth*] *good seed, shall doubtless come again with joy, and bring his sheaves with him.*"

FIRST PUBLISHED AT DUBLIN, A.D. 1661.

IN the saddest afflictions and blackest storms that can befal a man in this world, give me leave to make this thankful acknowledgment, there is no companion or comforter like the Psalms of David. He that speaketh experimentally, is the best physician both for soul and body.

Being to speak unto this auditory upon his Majesty's happy restitution, I fitted and fixed my thoughts to the first verse of this Psalm:—"When the Lord turned again the captivity of Sion, then were we like to them that dreamed."

"When the Lord;"—not the Lord Cyrus, in relation to the Jews, though the edict for their restitution came out from him, but the Lord of Cyrus; nor the Lords of Parliament, in relation to us, though they helped to lay the foundation of our present happiness, but the Lord Paramount of Heaven and earth.

"When the Lord turned;"—In God there is "no shadow of turning by change;" but with us there is nothing but "turning," and returning; we are all "turning" shadows upon the old exchange of this world. [James i. 17.]

"When the Lord turned the captivity;"—that is, the

PART IV. [Ps. lxviii. 18.]

Babylonish captives, by an ordinary Hebraism. So it is said of Christ; He "led captivity captive;" that is, those who were captives to sin and Satan, He reconquered, and made them to become His own servants. And what were we better than Babylonish captives, while we sojourned in idolatrous and superstitious countries? There are two sorts of captivity, corporal and spiritual; both are bad, but the latter ten times worse. In a corporal captivity, the tyrants are external; but in spiritual captivity, they are internal, in our bosoms and bowels. There the stings are sharp; but nothing so sharp as the stings of a guilty conscience. Corporal tyrants may dispossess us of our wealth, our life, our liberty; but spiritual deprive us of our souls, of God's image, of eternal blessedness. There, one or two members do sinful and slavish offices; but here, all our members are weapons of unrighteousness. Corporal captives have but one master; but spiritual captives have many masters. Pride commands to spend, and covetousness to spare. Nay, the same vice distracts them with contrary commands; as vain-glory forceth them at the same time to soar aloft in the air, and yet to creep beneath upon the earth; to swell inwardly with pride, [and yet] to crouch to the meanest persons to obtain popular applause. Corporal slaves have hope to escape by flight; but in spiritual captivity no flight can help us, unless we could fly away from ourselves. Lastly, corporal captivity doth end with life; death is a perfect cure of all human miseries: but in spiritual captivity, death is but a beginning of slavery, and a shutting of the door of liberty with the key of eternity.

[Rom. vi. 19.]

But can mountains be led away captives? Otherwise, what signifieth "captivity of Sion?" I answer, that as we say, 'there is more of Mont Martre at Paris than there is of Mont Martre at Mont Martre,' so it might be truly said, there was more of Sion carried to Babylon than was left at Sion. First, the Temple, which was the glory of Sion, was demolished. Then, the ceremonies, and sacrifices, and ordinances of Sion were abolished. Thirdly, the holy vessels and garments and other utensils and sacred ornaments were exported. Lastly, the Priests, and Levites, and people of God were all carried away captive. These were the living Sion; without these, Sion was but a dead carcase, of itself. Justly

therefore is the captivity of the people of God called "the captivity of Sion."

"Then were we;"—that is, by way of historical narration;
954 or, "then we shall be," by way of prophetical prediction. Either sense may be admitted.

"Like them that dream;"—that is, like those who are between sleeping and waking. The events were so strange, so unexpected, [so] incredible, that we doubted whether they were real events, or vain fancies and drowsy imaginations. Others translate it, "like those that are comforted[a];" or, "like those that are recovered[b]," from some languishing sickness, and restored to their former strength and vigour.

But whilst I was making a parallel between the Jewish captivity and our English captivity, and of our deliverance and restitution with theirs, I see the flower which I had designed for the subject of my discourse, cropt away before my face. This necessitated me to alter my meditations from the first verse to the last verse of this Psalm. The former was more emphatical for the Jewish captivity; but the latter suits altogether as well with our present condition:—"He that now goeth on his way weeping, and beareth forth good seed, shall doubtless come again with joy, and bring his sheaves with him."

It is not my manner to amuse my hearers much with various lections or translations. Every language hath its proper idiotisms, or peculiar forms of expression, which differ more in sound than in sense. The worst reading or translation is commonly not so ill, as those clashings and uncharitable alter[c]ations which are about them. Various lections may sometimes bring some light to the understanding, but they shake that Christian faith which is radicated in the heart. 'Break ice in one place, and it will crack in more;' suffer the truth of Sacred Writ to be questioned in a word or a syllable, and you weaken the authority, and lessen the venerable estimation, of the whole text. That which satisfieth me, and may satisfy any good Christian, is this,—that God, Who hath given the Holy Scriptures to His Church, to be the key of His revealed counsels, the anchor of their hope, the evidence

[a] ['Ωσεὶ παρακεκλημένοι. LXX. "Sicut consolati." Vulg.]

[b] [So Hammond, in loc.]

PART IV.

of their blessedness, will not suffer those Scriptures to be so far corrupted in any thing that is fundamental and necessary, that it can hinder the salvation of His servants. Take this text for an instance, that there is no such danger in various lections or translations, if they be expounded according to the analogy of faith, and that sense of the Scriptures which the Holy Ghost did give to the Church together with the Scriptures.

"He that going goeth[c]," saith the original; "He that goeth on his way[d]," saith our translation; or, "He that goeth forth[e];" —that is, forth of his house to sow, or forth of his country into exile;—"weeping,"—or pensive or sorrowing;—"and beareth forth good seed;"—whether we read "beareth" or "draweth," "good" seed or "precious" seed, or the "sowing" seed, or the "hopper" or "seed basket[f]," is not material;—"shall doubtless come again with joy;"—the original is, "in coming shall come[g]," that is, shall come without fail, shall doubtless come again;—"with joy;"—this word only seemeth to me to be translated over flat, and might be rendered more aptly "with a shout of joy," or, "with joyful acclamations[h]," by allusion to those harvest dances, which they use in many places, when they bring in the last load of their harvest with great pomp, shouts, and acclamations of joy;—"and bring his sheaves with him;"—that is, the increase of his seed, the fruit of his labour, the reward of his patience.

In the words we may observe a double qualification; the former, "he that now goeth on his way weeping," the latter, "and beareth forth good seed:" and a double prognostic; the former, "shall doubtless come again with joy," the latter, "and bring his sheaves with him." We may observe, how 'going forth' and 'coming again,' "weeping" and shouting for "joy," "seed" and "sheaves," do answer one another.

And now that we have seen the sense, let us see how fitly

[c] ["הָלוֹךְ וְלָךְ"]

[d] [Prayer-book version.]

[e] [Bible version.]

[f] ["מֶשֶׁךְ־הַזָּרַע"—The marginal rendering of our Version is "seed-basket." And see Poli Synops. and Hammond in loc. "Tractio seminis" is Gesenius' rendering; i. e. the scattering a line of seed along a furrow.]

[g] ["בֹּאיָבֹא"]

[h] [רנה—It is the word that is rendered in our version "joy," in Ps. xxx. 5; xlii. 4; and elsewhere: and properly signifies "a shrill and tremulous cry." See Gesen. in voce.]

these words do agree to the exile and happy restitution of our sovereign King Charles the Second. First, he 'went on his way;' more like indeed some bode[i], or ordinary messenger, than a great prince. He went forth of England into France, from France to Holland, from Holland after some lesser excursion into Scotland[k] (fishes and guests gain little by long keeping); where, to speak modestly, he was not entertained like the hundred and tenth prince of that family[l]. To give a civil honour to God's vicegerent, was to idolize the creature; but no honour could be too much at the same time for a consistory of their own commissioners. There was nothing to be heard but "the commissioners of Christ," the "tribunal of Christ," the "sceptre of Christ," the "eternal Gospel." Oh partiality, how dost thou blind men's eyes!

955 Before this adventure for Scotland, he had thoughts for Ireland[m]; where the greatest and best part of the kingdom did either profess to hold for him, or desire to return to him. Only two cities did hold out against him, Dublin and Londonderry; and, if my intelligence do not fail me, those expected only his own presence to have submitted with more honour and advantage.

However it was, I did wish, if it had been God's will, that he had come over; that Ireland might have had a signal honour in his restitution then, as it contributed largely afterwards. But God disposeth all things sweetly.

From Scotland he 'went on his way' for England. But "the iniquity of the Amorites" was "not yet full." God had something to do with His rod before He cast it into the fire; something in Jamaica[n], something in Ireland[o], something in Scotland[p], something in England itself[q]: to bring [Gen. xv. 16.]

[i] [BODE (*Dutch*)=messenger.]

[k] [Viz. in June 1650.]

[l] [See above in the Answ. to La Millet. (vol. i. pp. 74-76); Disc. i. Pt. i.]

[m] [Owing to Ormond's success there in the spring of 1649 (Carte, Life of Ormond, bk. v. vol. ii. pp. 62-64).]

[n] [Conquered by Cromwell's fleet under Pen and Venables in 1655.]

[o] [The storm and massacre of Tredagh or Drogheda in September 1649 (see Cromwell's despatch in Whitelocke's Memor., p. 412), and the conquest of Ireland by Cromwell which followed, completed by Ireton's siege and capture of Limerick in Oct. 1651, and that of Galway by Sir C. Coote in May 1652 (Carte, Life of Ormond, bk. v. pp. 154, 156).]

[p] [The battle of Dunbar Sept. 3, 1650, and the general reduction of that kingdom under the government of Cromwell, which followed.]

[q] [The expedition into England which ended with the battle of Worcester, Sept. 3, 1651.]

PART IV.

the first contrivers of our miseries to shame and condign punishment by their own power, to prepare and facilitate a way for his Majesty's restitution without effusion of blood. God hath more noble means and fitter opportunities to effect His own designs, than man can comprehend. "We praise Thee, O God, we acknowledge Thee to be the Lord." That English voyage, though otherwise unsuccessful, was a happy presage of this great blessing, which we now enjoy;—that God, Who preserved his Majesty so miraculously then, had some great work to do with him. From England he returned to France, from France to Germany, from Germany to Flanders, and from Flanders to France back again, thence to Spain, thence to Flanders, thence to Holland, and so for England; where so long, and long, and long may his crown flourish. Was ever sovereign prince so tossed to and fro, and bandied hither and thither by the rackets of a contrary fortune? changing his stations as often as the old Patriarchs did, whilst they dwelt in tents. This was no comfortable life, to be always rolling up and down: which the next word in my text implies, that is, "weeping;"—"He that goeth on his way weeping."

[Te Deum.]

I may say of "weeping," as our learned countryman the Lord Verulam said of hope, that it was "a good breakfast but an ill supper[r]." Early tears, like the mist descending, prognosticate a fair serene day; as April showers bring forth May flowers. They who prove Benjamins, "sons of the right hand," are commonly first Benonies, "sons of sorrow." Christ Himself did wear a crown of thorns, before He obtained a crown of glory. Joseph was first clapt up close in a dungeon, where he saw neither sun nor moon nor stars for a season, before the sun, moon, and stars did fall down and worship him. No man can rationally doubt, whether our dread sovereign did "sow in tears," before he "reaped in joy;" who considers sadly, what a misery it is for a great king, to be banished from all his relations, to be thrust out of his native country and hereditary kingdoms into the merciless world, to live in want. A French author of good note relates with pity and commiseration the deplorable condition of the Lancastrian family, being of the blood royal of Eng-

[Gen. xxxv. 18.] [Matt. xxvii. 29, &c.] [Gen. xxxvii. 9; xxxix. 20; xlii. 6; xliii. 26.]

[r] [Apophthegms, num. 95; Works, vol. iii. p. 272. fol. 1740.]

land, in the court of Charles Duke of Burgundy[s];—that whereas God and nature had provided so bountifully for all other creatures, the fowls of the air and the beasts of the field, that they never feared the want of food, only men the best of creatures, and princes the best of men, should sometimes not know where to find sustenance for to-morrow. A man may justly fear want of money, or want of means, or want of friends; but want of sorrows and tears he need not fear. Foreign kindred and allies do seldom contribute much to the wiping away of these tears. Like winter-brooks, they swell with kindness when one hath no need of them, but when they should be useful, they are dried up. And he that trusts unto them, may expect St. Peter's lot; when his nets were full, he needed but to beckon to his fellows, and presently they were all at his elbow; but when he did sing his "*lachrymæ*," he had not one of them to comfort him. Every one is a kinsman to him that is prosperous, but a friend in need is a friend indeed. DISCOURSE III. [Job vi. 15-20.] [Luke v. 4-7.]

And truly, when I compare our necessary expenses in the long time of our banishment abroad with our comings in, I cannot attribute our preservation so long to any thing but to a secret blessing of Almighty God. He that fed the Israelites with manna in a barren wilderness, and preserved their shoes and their raiment from wearing and waxing old; He that fed Elijah by ravens; He that blessed the poor widow's handful of meal, and her cruise of oil; will not suffer His servants to die for hunger. [Exod. xvi. 14-16.] [Deut. viii. 4.] [1 Kings xvii. 4, 6.] [1 Kings xvii. 10-16.]

But the cares and troubles of princes are incomparably
956 greater, and their wants more pinching, than those of private persons. Their motto may be the candle burning with four letters, A. S. M. C., "*Aliis serviens meipsum contero*"—"In serving others I waste away myself." Their cares extend to all their followers, to provide for their necessities as well as for their own. The sufferings of all their subjects and relations do touch them more nearly than others. Thoughts "troubled" Nebuchadnezzar's head, whilst his subjects slept securely upon either ear. When the preacher hath but fallen upon the martyrdom of our late sovereign, or those instruc- [Dan. iv. 5.]

[s] [Philip de Comines, Mémoires, liv. iii. c. 4.]

PART IV.

tions which he left behind him[t], how have I seen his Majesty dissolve into tears; that brought to my mind that of St. Austin, "*Proruperunt flumina oculorum meorum acceptabile tuum sacrificium*"—"The floods of mine eyes did break forth an acceptable sacrifice unto Thee, O God[u]." This is the first qualification, "He that goeth on his way weeping."

The second follows, "And bringeth forth good seed." It [Gal. vi. 7.] is a metaphor taken from sowers. "What a man sows, that he" may certainly expect to "reap." But what is the good seed which our sovereign did bear forth with him?

I answer, first, a good title; "*Dieu et son droit*"—"God and his right." There is a mushroom error lately crept into the world, and almost thrust out again; that dominion is founded in grace, not in nature; that the wicked have no interest in their possessions or estates, but are like moths, which make their houses in other men's garments; that all things [1 Cor. iii. 21-23.] belong properly to the elect; "Paul, Apollos, Cephas, . . things present, things to come, all are" theirs, if they be "Christ's." "*Ex his præmissis necessariò sequitur collusio.*" [Exod. xii. 35, 36.] Admit this once; and then they who take themselves to be true Israelites, may with a good conscience rob and plunder the profane Egyptians of this world. Nothing is more hidden than true grace. We know it not in another, hardly in ourselves. Therefore, if grace should give an interest to possessions, no man's title should be certain; from whence of necessity must follow an incredible confusion. But our [1 Cor. xiv. 33.] God is a God of order. Religion neither alters, nor takes away, any man's right. Ananias was no saint: yet St. [Acts v. 4.] Peter told him, that he had a good interest in his estate;—"was it not thine own?" The truth is, dominion is founded in nature, not in grace. It was said to our first parents, [Gen. i. 28.] immediately upon the Creation, "Replenish the earth" and "have dominion," &c. Every son of Adam may challenge an interest in his own estate by virtue of this concession. [1 Cor. iii. 21.] "All is yours," saith the Scripture; that is, not every individual creature, but every species or kind of creatures. "All is yours;" that is, not by way of civil possession, but by Divine ordination. All things, by God's disposition, serve

[t] [Scil. in the Εἰκὼν βασιλική.] § 28; Op. tom. i. p. 156. A.]
[u] [S. Aug., Confess., lib. viii. c. 12,

for the good of the Church, and help forward the salvation of God's servants. Or, "All is yours, and you are Christ's;" that is, you only who are Christ's, have the sanctified use of the creatures. This is far enough from a civil possession, far enough from a just title; such as King Charles had, not grounded upon a fanatic exposition of a text of Holy Scripture, nor upon the fickle humours of a giddy multitude, nor upon the traitorous dictates of a seditious orator, but upon the evident laws of God, of nature, of nations, and the municipal laws of these kingdoms, upon a radicated succession from royal progenitors, he himself being the hundred and tenth person of one family, who hath swayed the sceptre[x]. I do not know any prince in Europe, or in these parts of the world, that can say the same. A title so clear, as if it were "written with a beam of the sun[y];" which no true Englishman in his right wits did ever yet oppose, but one or two foreign pensioners[z], maintained on purpose abroad to kindle scathfires at home, who gained nothing by the question but to render themselves ridiculous. This was the "good seed," which King Charles did "bear forth" with him, a good title; which though it seemed for a time to perish under the clods, yet we see it sprouts up again. A tempest brings Achilles his arms to Ajax's tomb, to reverse an unjust sentence: and Aaron's rod devoured the rods of the enchanters, to the comfort of all loyal subjects, and the confusion of all Egyptian jugglers, for ever. This is the first "good seed," which King Charles did "bear forth" with him;—a good title.

[1 Cor. iii. 22, 23.]

[Exod. vii. 12.]

A second sort of "good seed," which King Charles did "bear forth" with him, was the testimony of a good "conscience, void of offence towards God and towards man." A good conscience is a better proof of innocence than a thousand witnesses, and will make itself a garland of the lying reports of sycophants. When King Charles was first chased out of England, his age was not capable of much guilt; and his only crime was (that which in truth was his chiefest

[Acts xxiv. 16.]

[x] [According to Buchanan, Rer. Scot. Hist., lib. xviii. in fin. See above in vol. i. p. 74. note z.]

[y] ["Solis radio scriptum." Tertullian, De Resurr. Carnis, c. 47; Op. p. 416. A.]

[z] [The allusion appears to be to Parsons the Jesuit, who under the name of Doleman published a book in 1594 to prove the Infanta of Spain right heir to the throne of England, entitled "A Conference about the Next Succession to the Crown of England, printed at N."]

PART IV.

glory), he was the son of such a father. Those accursed 957
jealousies and fears, which the first devisers and spreaders of them did know assuredly to be damnable lies, are now vanished. Truth, the daughter of time, hath discovered them to all the world to have been counterfeit shows. They feared an apostacy to Popery; yet King Charles the father died a glorious martyr[a], and King Charles [the] son lives a noble confessor[b], of the true faith professed in the Church of England, having shewed evidently by a thousand proofs, that he is no such "reed shaken with the wind." They complained of tyranny against him, whose only defect was overmuch goodness and lenity. Let their High Courts of Injustice speak, let their black roll of sequestrators and committee men speak, let all the great towns in England (which they made shambles of good Christians, and loyal subjects) speak, let Tredagh[c] speak, and that torrent of loyal blood, which was poured out there barbarously upon cold and deliberate thoughts like water upon the face of the earth,—who were the tyrants. Caius the Emperor, out of a ridiculous affectation to make himself like the Gods, did assume Mercury's rod, Apollo's bow and arrows, Mars his sword and shield[d]. But King Charles hath ever better ensigns of the Deity, justice, mercy, piety, and temperance. These make up the image of God. Where these abound, the bird in the breast sings sweetly. He who hath these, may with comfort expect a happy deliverance from all his troubles. "He that goeth on his way weeping, and beareth forth" this "seed with him, shall doubtless come again with joy."

[Matt. xi. 7. —Luke vii. 24.]

The third sort of "good seed," which King Charles did

[a] [See above in the Answ. to La Millet. (vol. i. p. 78); and in the Vindic. of Episcopal. against Baxter, c. iii. (vol. iii. pp. 525-528): Disc. i. Pt. i. and iii. Pt. ii.]

[b] [The papers published by James II. in 1685 ("A True Relation of the Late King's Death; to which are added Copies of Two Papers written by the late King Charles II. of Blessed Memory, Found in the Strong-box"), which prove Charles's change of belief, may be found in the Phœnix, vol. i. pp. 566-570; and in part, in vol. v. pp. 42-44. of the Harleian Miscellany. The date of the change it is of course, from the nature of the case, impossible to fix. In the Phœnix (ibid. pp. 554-565) are also published "Certain Letters evidencing K. Charles II.'s Stedfastness in the Protestant Religion, sent from the Princess of Turenne and the Ministers of Charenton to Some Persons of Quality in London," in 1660, and first published in the same year; which prove nothing more than Bramhall's assertions in the text, and in his Answer to La Milletiére, unless indeed that the King's "stedfastness" was even then suspected.]

[c] [i. e. Drogheda.]

[d] [Sueton., in Caio, c. 52.—Dio Cass., lib. lix. p. 660. ed. Leunclav.]

"bear forth" with him, was a good religion. A religion, not reformed tumultuously, according to the brain-sick fancies of a half-witted multitude, dancing after the pipe of some seducing charmer, but soberly, according to the rule of God's Word, as it hath been evermore and every where interpreted by the Catholic Church, and according to the purest pattern of the primitive times. A religion, against which the greatest adversaries thereof have no exception, but that it preferreth grace before nature, the written Word before uncertain traditions, and the all-sufficient Blood of Jesus Christ before the stained works of mortal men. A religion, which is neither garish with superfluous ceremonies, nor yet sluttish and void of all order, decency, and majesty in the service of God. A religion, which is as careful to retain old articles of faith, as it is averse from new articles;—the essences of all things do consist '*in indivisibili*;' faith is adulterated, as well by the addition of new articles, as by the substraction of old. [A] religion, which is not like to perish for want of fit organs, like those imperfect creatures produced by the sun upon the banks of Nilus[e], but shaped for continuance. The terror of Rome:—they fear our moderation more than the violent opposition of others. The watch tower of the Evangelical Churches:—I have seen many Churches of all sorts of communions, but never any, that could diminish that venerable estimation, which I had for my mother, the Church of England. From her breasts I received my first nourishment, in her arms I desire to end my days. "Blessed be he that blesseth" her. This "good seed," that is, the religion of the Church of England, King Charles did "bear forth" with him. This he brought home with him, without turning either to the right hand or to the left. And like the laurel tree (the tree of conquerors), he gathered strength and vigour even from opposition. "*Crescit sub pondere virtus.*"

[Gen. xxvii. 29.—Numb. xxiv. 9.]

I cannot deny but that some of us have "started aside like broken bows:" out of despair in this their bitter trial, wherein they have had their goods plundered, their estates sequestered, their persons imprisoned, their churches aliened; wherein they have been divorced from their nearest relation, and disabled to discharge the duties of their callings to God;

[Ps. lxxviii. 58. Prayer-book Vers.]

[e] [Pompon. Mela, lib. i. c. 10.]

PART IV.

wherein some of them have been slaughtered, others forced to maintain themselves by mechanic labours, others thrust out of their native countries, to wander like vagabonds and exiled beggars up and down the merciless world. But, God be praised, they are not many. If we compare this with any the like persecution in Europe, you shall never find that so few apostated. As if they had been inspired with the free spirit of St. Chrysostom;—"Will they banish me? 'the earth is the Lord's and the fulness thereof': if they cast me into the sea, I will remember Jonas; if into a fiery furnace, the three children; if among the wild beasts, Daniel; if they stone me, I have St. Stephen for my companion; if they behead me, John Baptist; if they plunder me, 'naked I 958 came out of my mother's womb, and naked must I return again[f].'" Or with the heroical mind of St. Ambrose,—"*Vultisne ad vincula me abripere? voluptas est mihi,*" &c.—"Will ye hale me to prison? it is a delight unto me; to death? I will not incircle myself with a guard of trusty followers, nor lay hold on the altars as a suppliant to save my life, but will be freely offered up for the altars" of my God[g]. Spices being brayed in a mortar smell more sweetly; so these servants of Christ, being beaten and bruised by persecutors, do yield a more fragrant odour in the nostrils of God and man. The ground of their constancy, next to the goodness of God, was the example of our dread sovereign his courage and perseverance. The example of a great prince is like the great wheel of a clock, which sets all the lesser wheels a going. This shall one day crown his temples with a diadem, more bright than the beams of the sun, as far excelling that crown which he is to receive this day, as the radiant splendour of the sun doth exceed the dim shining of a glow-worm. Then if Tully, a heathen, could say, that the Romans did owe their victories and good successes more to their religious piety than either to their number or strength or policy[h], why should Christians despair, or doubt, that King Charles, who "went on his way weeping, and did bear forth" such "pre-

[Ps. xxiv. 1; l. 12.—1 Cor. x. 26, 28.] [Jon. i. 15.—Dan. iii. 8-27; vi. 16-24.—Acts vii. 59, 60.—Matt. xiv. 10, &c.—Job i. 21.]

[f] [S. Chrys., Epist. 143, Op. tom. vii. p. 169. ll. 17-25. ed. Savil.;—Epist. 125, tom. iii. p. 668. C, D. ed. Montfauc.—written by St. Chrysostom when in exile, to a Bishop Cyriac, also in exile.]

[g] [S. Ambros., Epist. xx. § 8, Ad Soror.; Op. tom. ii. p. 854. C.]

[h] [De Harusp. Respons., c. 9.]

cious seed" with him, should "come again with joy, and bring his sheaves with him?"

The last sort of "good seed," which King Charles did "bear forth" with him, was the prayers and good affections of his subjects. Tyrants might deprive him of his other contributions, this they could not deprive him of. If St. Austin[i] did attribute so much to the prayers and tears of his mother Monica, what might not be hoped from the prayers and tears of so many thousands, poured out to God in private, for their king and country, Church and commonwealth, liberty and religion? At a German Diet the princes fell upon a controversy, which of them had the best country. The Palatine commended his, for the fruitful soil; the Saxon his, for the silver mines; the Bavarian his, for stately cities; the Duke of Wittenberg, in praise of his country, said only this, that he durst lay his head in the lap of any subject throughout his dominions, either by day or by night[k]. *"Fortunati ambo"*—a happy prince of a happy people, where that "evil spirit" had not walked, which set dissension between Abimelech and the men of Sichem. [Judg. ix. 23.] England was not always so happy; whom some counterfeit physicians (like the wolf in the fable) persuaded against her own sense, that she was sick to death, without all kind of recovery, unless she would put herself into their hands to be cured. She did so. And what the issue had been, if God Almighty had not looked down upon us from Heaven with an eye of pity, we have seen. Yet this was but a green-sickness fit. When that fit was over, she threw away her chalk and coals, which she had eaten in corners, and returned to eat more healthful food at her father's table[l]. Or it was a short fit of madness;—"O Phocion" (said Demades), "look to thyself, when the Athenians fall into their mad fits. And thou Demades" (replied Phocion), "look to thyself, when they return to their right wits[m]." But, God be praised, even whilst this epidemical distemper did rage the most, there were not only seven [1 Kings xix. 18.]

[i] [Aug., Confess., lib. iii. c. 12; Op. tom. i. p. 96. F.]

[k] [The story is told of Eberhard I. Duke of Wirtemberg, in Crusius, Annal. Suev., P. III. lib. vii. c. 14; tom. ii. p. 411. fol. Francof. 1596.]

[l] [Plut., Polit. Præcept., c. iv.; Op. Moral. tom. iv. p. 148. ed. Wyttenb.]

[m] [Id., in Vitâ Phocion., tom. iv. p. 184. ed. Bryant: and Apophth. Reg. &c., Phoc. num. vi.; Op. Moral. tom. i. p. 523. ed. Wyttenb. "Demades" in the text is a mistake for Demosthenes.]

PART IV.

thousand in England, but seventy times seven thousand, who never bowed their knees to Baal Berith, the God of the Covenant, but continued loyal subjects and orthodox Christians, and were not afraid (with the serpent) to expose their bodies to the blows, and their estates to be a prey to their persecutors, that they might save their Head; first, their spiritual Head, that is, Christ; secondly, their political Head, that is, their sovereign prince; and, lastly, their ecclesiastical Head, or lawful superiors in the Church. These were the true Israelites, who wrestled with God by their prayers, and prevailed.

[Gen. xxxii. 24-28.—Rom. ix. 6.—&c.]

I have done with the second qualification—"and beareth forth good seed." I come now to the catastrophe;—"Shall doubtless come again with joy."

Every word in my text proclaims, that there is an interchangeable vicissitude of all human affairs. Here we have "going forth" and "coming again," "weeping" and "acclamations of joy," sowing and reaping, "seed" and "sheaves." "He that goeth on his way weeping, and beareth forth good seed, shall doubtless come again with joy, and bring his sheaves with him." That of Solomon,—"There is a time for every thing, . . a time to plant, and a time to pluck up, . . a time to build, and a time to pull down,"—holds in cities and public societies, as well as private families; and they may set the moon upon their gates, as well as the old Romans did upon their shoes, to put them in mind of the unstability of this world. One is, another was, and a third shall be; even as it pleaseth God, in Whose hand there is a chain to lift them up or let them down at His pleasure. The greatest monarchs and monarchies in the world, in comparison of Him, are but "*guttæ roris antelucani*"—"drops of morning dew," quickly dried up with the heat of the sun, or easily dispersed with the least puff of wind. All places have their days and nights, their summers and winters, their sun-shine and storms. No sublunary thing is stable. The sun hath its eclipses, the moon hath its waxings and wanings, the sea hath its ebbings and flowings, the elements their successive changes. Peace and war, sickness and health, plenty and dearth, do succeed one another. The whole world is a restless whirligig, running violently, sometimes this way, some-

[Eccl. iii. 1-3.]

959

times that way; a reed, shaken hither and thither with every puff of wind; a tottering quagmire, whereupon it is impossible to lay a sure foundation; like a sick man, that can take no rest in his bed, but is continually tossing and turning from side to side.

St. Paul doth describe our right image, in two metaphors; —"that we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine." The former metaphor is taken from little children. You may draw a child any whither, from his duty, from his interest, from his engagements, with a fair word, or an apple, or some new-fangled toy, or fear of some bugbear, or promises of golden mountains. So we, like children, are easily led into a fool's paradise, not with apples of Eden, but with apples of Sodom[n], which turn to dust when they come to be enjoyed. The other metaphor is taken from a ship lying at hull[o], "tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind;" even so do we fluctuate between the broken waves and contrary billows of different opinions and desires. Eph. iv. 14.

Thus we are changeable in our minds, but we are as changeable in our estates. Now we abound with wealth. God knows, how soon the best of us may be necessitated to beg a halfpenny of passengers, with great Belisarius[p]. Now every man's tongue is a silver trumpet to sound out our praises, which perhaps deserve not to be piped upon an oaten reed. God knows, how soon this "*Hosanna*" may be changed to "*Crucifige,*" and we be loaden with more unjust calumnies, than ever was blessed Athanasius[q]. Now we enjoy the sweet sauce of all temporal blessings, that is, health. God knows, how soon sickness may cast us upon our restless beds, and change our sweet repose into wearisome tossings. God knows, how soon we may be choaked with the fumes of a vitious stomach, or drowned with hydropical humours, or burnt up with choleric distempers, or buried alive in the grave of melancholic imaginations. Now we sit in the beauty [Matt. xxi. 9; xxvii. 22, 23. &c.]

[n] [Tacit., Hist., v. 7:—Joseph., De Bell. Jud., lib. iv. c. 8. § 4; tom. ii. p. 1195. ed. Hudson. See Milton, Parad. Lost, x. 560-570.]

[o] [See above in vol. iv. p. 506. note d; and p. 592.]

[p] [See Gibbon, c. xliii. note 69: vol. iv. pp. 318, 319. 4to. edition. The story is given up as a fable.]

[q] [See Tillemont, Mémoires, tom. viii.: Vie de S. Athanase, articles 8, 11, 18, 20. &c.]

PART IV.

of peace, every man under his own vine and his own fig-tree. We know not, how soon our ringing of bells may be changed to roaring of cannons. It is the mercy of the Lord, that these mischiefs do not overwhelm us.

This vicissitude of human affairs is necessary to the being of the world. Beasts would multiply without number, if none were brought to the shambles. Fishes would fill the sea, and fowls the air, if the greater did not devour the less, and both serve for the use of man. By nature we are born thicker into the world, than we die out of the world; every age builds cities, towns, villages: so as, if God did not sometimes thrust in the sickle of His justice into the overrank field of this world, and sweep away whole multitudes by war or famine or pestilence, two worlds could not contain us, ten worlds could not nourish us.

If any place would have pleaded a privilege to exempt itself from this changeable vicissitude, what rather than [Matt.xxiv. 2.—Mark xiii. 2.—Luke xix. 44; xxi. 6.] Hierusalem? Yet it had not one stone left upon another. Or Capernaum, whose magnificent buildings were lifted up to Heaven? Yet it was cast down to Hell. Pliny and Strabo [Matt. xi. 23.] write wonders of the walls of Babylon[r]; yet now it is be- [Isai. xiii. 21.] come a place for "owls to screech" in, and for "satyrs to dance" in. And now grass grows where once Troy stood. Alas! wherein can any city or society place their confidence, to protect them from this common vicissitude? In navies or armadoes? How easily may they be cast away, or dashed in [1 Kings xxii. 48.] pieces against the rocks: as the ships of Jehoshaphat were at Ezion-geber. Or in walls and fortifications? When the walls [Josh. vii. 4, 5, 20.] of Hiericho fell down at the sound of rams' horns, and the shout of an enemy. Or in prudent politicians? When God can infatuate the wisdom of the wise, and turn all their [2 Sam. xvii. 1-24.] counsels into folly, as He did the counsels of Achitophel. Or in numerous armies of experienced soldiers? When He can 960 [Lev. xxvi. 8.—Josh. xxiii. 10.] fill their hearts with panical fears, so that ten shall chase a hundred. Or in leagues and confederacies? When He [Isai. ix. 21.] can set "Ephraim against Manasses, and Manasses against Ephraim, and both against Judah." Navies, armies, garrisons, counsellors, confederates, are no more able to prevent

[r] [Plin., Nat. Hist., vi. 30.—Strabo, Rer. Geogr., lib. xvi. tom. ii. pp. 1048, 1049. Oxon. 1807.]

this common vicissitude of all human affairs, than a shield of paper to resist the shot of a cannon.

First then, seeing that by the ordinance of God there is such a necessary vicissitude of all things, let us not think vainly to translate this valley of tears into a paradise of perpetual bliss, or to clip the wings of prosperity, that it should never fly away. Eve called her eldest son Cain—a "possession," and he proved a vagabond. Then, as skilful pilots, whilst the season is calmest, do provide for a storm, and as good soldiers do keep a vigilant centry in the time of truce; so, when we "have enough," let us "remember the time of hunger, and when" we are "rich, think upon poverty and need." When we are at home in peace, let us think upon those times, when "we hanged our harps upon the willows by the rivers of Babylon." Fear the worst, and the best will save itself. Darts that are foreseen, seldom do any great hurt. Above all, take heed that thou never "boast of to-morrow, for thou knowest not what a day may bring forth."

Eccles. xviii. 25.

[Psalm cxxxviii. 1.]

[Prov. xxvii. 1.]

Secondly, since there is such a vicissitude of all human affairs, why should any man murmur or repine at his present condition? The murmuring speeches of men are like arrows shot up in defiance against Heaven, which always fall down again upon their own heads. "Should we receive good at the hand of God, and not evil?" Who can say, that his sufferings are equal to his sins? God rewardeth many beyond desert, but He never punisheth any beyond desert. I know, that the Saints themselves are involved in national judgments, as well as others; as Jeremy, Ezekiel, Daniel, in the captivity: but it was a blessing to them, not a punishment. As it were madness for a boatman to think, that by the strength of his arm and cable he was able to draw the main rock to his little boat, and not to pull himself and his little boat to the main rock; so it were a mere folly for any man to think, that by his struggling against the stream of human affairs, he should be able to change the course of the world, and to make it pliant to his desires. It is both pious and prudent to think that to be evermore best for us, which God sends.

[Job ii. 10.]

Thirdly, since human affairs are so mutable, no extremity should make us despair. When the bricks are doubled, when

PART IV.

our miseries are at the highest, when all the help of man doth seem to fail us, then comes Moses to deliver us. When Pharaoh's butler had forgotten Joseph, then God remembered him. A usurer will trust a bankrupt upon a pawn; and shall not we trust God Almighty with our deliverance, unless He give us a pawn for performance of His word? Remember that judgment which fell upon the Samaritan lord for his infidelity;—"Though the Lord" (said he) "should make windows in heaven, could this thing be?" The Lord did not make windows in heaven, yet that thing was, and came to pass at the time prefixed, but he lived not to enjoy the benefit of it. God hath unimaginable ways to bring His own designs to effect, as we see with wonder and admiration this day. Thus, as the woman of Canaan did pick comfort out of the name of "dog," so we may gather hope out of the vanity and vicissitude of all sublunary things. After darkness we may hope for light, after a tempest for a calm, after wearisome tossings for sweet repose. When the storm is weathered, and the black clouds overblown, which darkened the face of the sky, and seemed to take possession of the whole region of the air, and to pierce the very heavens, suddenly behold a vicissitude. As no prosperity is permanent, so no adversity is perpetual. After exile comes a country, after seed-time comes harvest, and after weeping comes joy. "He that now goeth on his way weeping, and beareth forth good seed, shall doubtless come again with joy."

[Exod. v.] [Gen. xl. 23.] [2 Kings vii. 2, 17-20.] [Matt. xv. 26, 27.—Mark vii. 27, 28.]

I told you before, that our translation, which renders it only "joy," seems to me over flat, and short of the original, which signifies a "shout," or "acclamation of joy;" such as harvest-men do use when they bring home their harvest-dame, or the last load of their summer's crop, with music, and feasting, and shouting. If ever this was verified in any exiled prince, who had gone forth "weeping," and "came again with joy" to his kingdom and native country, it was verified in King Charles at his happy restitution, and entrance into his royal city. I have seen high expressions of joy in foreign parts upon the like occasion. I see when the King of France that now is, returned to his city of Paris, after he had been thrust out of it by his own subjects[s]. But 961

[s] [Louis XIV. returned to Paris in triumph, accompanied by Charles II.,

such loud acclamations, such universal expressions of joy, I did never see or hear, as were then made to welcome in King Charles: that, as a Father said hyperbolically of the sin of Adam, that it was "a happy fault which obtained such a Redeemer[t]," so we may say in the same sense (and no other), that it was a happy exclusion which produced such a restitution.

There remains only one word yet untouched in this part of my text, that is, "doubtless;"—"shall *doubtless* come again with joy." What then? Is it so undoubted a truth, that every one who is thrust out of his right here, shall be restored with such joyful acclamations? O no. God's judgments in this life are imperfect, and the dispensations of them are inscrutable. "*In rebus Divinis magna est caligo*"—"there is a great mist in the ways of God." God's temporal promises ought to be understood with an exception of the cross;—unless He see it to be otherwise expedient for the advancement of His own glory, and the eternal good of His servants. God punisheth some sinners here, to shew there is a just Judge; and leaves others unpunished, to shew there is a Judgment to come. This truth is affirmed expressly by Solomon;—"All things have I seen in the days of [my] vanity; there is a just man that perisheth in his righteousness, and a wicked man that prolongeth his life in his wickedness." And if we had not plain Scripture for it, the example of our late dread sovereign King Charles the First, was proof sufficient; who was murdered by his own subjects (that had sworn allegiance to him), in his capital city, before the gates of his own palace, in the sight of his own people, in the face of the sun, under a formality of justice. God did see all this then, and doth now require it[u]; require it here in part,

Eccl. vii. 15.

October 21, 1651, after his expulsion thence by the Prince of Condé and the Fronde. That Bramhall was that year in Paris, see above in vol. i. p. xi. note u.]

[t] ["O felix culpa quæ tantum et talem meruit Redemptorem."—From the hymn sung at the Benediction of the Wax Tapers upon Easter Eve in the Roman Church (Missal., p. 169), which is said to have been written by Gregory the Great. See Ussher, Answ. to a Jesuit, p. 553. ed. 1631; and the tract of Jodocus Clicthoveus, De Necessitate Peccati Adæ et Fœlicitate Peccati Ejusdem Apologetica Disceptatio (Paris, 4to. 1519), quoted by Ussher, which is an explanatory defence of this and the clause immediately preceding it in the same hymn.]

[u] [The trial and execution of the regicides took place in October 1660 (White Kennet's Register, pp. 272, sq.). This sermon was preached April 23, 1661.]

PART IV.

but will require it hereafter to "the uttermost farthing;" from all those who had an hand in that crying parricide, and have not, or shall not, wash away the guilt with unfeigned tears. That happy Martyr is now following the Lamb in his whites, and "reaps in joy" what he did "sow in tears;" and his son is this day crowned with his royal diadem, with the shouts and acclamations of his subjects. So true is that of my text, that either here, or hereafter, or both, "he that goeth on his way weeping, and beareth forth good seed with him, shall doubtless come again with acclamations of joy, and bring his sheaves with him."

[Matt. v. 26.]

[Rev. vii. 9; xix. 8.]

This brings me to the last clause of my text,—"And bring his sheaves with him." This life is a seed time. Whatsoever we sow here, we are sure to reap hereafter, even to a glass of cold water: as surely as when thou seest a man casting seed out of a hopper, thou mayest foretell what shall be the crop. The seed and the sheaves cannot choose but be the same grain. Only the sheaves are seed multiplied, it may be thirty-fold, it may be sixty-fold, it may be a hundred-fold. So sheaves do signify all those advantages which we reap by his Majesty's restitution.

[Matt. x. 42.]

[Matt. xiii. 8.]

The first sheaf is peace. The nearer that societies approach to unity, the further they are from fear of dissolution. When the Romans did find themselves in any great peril, they ever submitted themselves to one dictator, as a sacred anchor, and sure remedy to take away their divisions. His Majesty hath not only stopped up the spring of all our divisions by his just title, but hath purchased our peace by parting with his own just rights, to satisfy the interests of all parties[v]. Let his example be our pattern,—to do whatsoever we can with justice for the public peace, although it be to our own private prejudice. The Pythagoreans had a rule, to leave no print of the bottom of the cup in the ashes[x]; that is, in reconciliation to retain no resentment of former quarrels. The divided sides of a wound do meet together in a scar.

[v] [Charles II., after a variety of expedients suggested and abandoned, parted with all forfeitures to the Crown in Ireland, by his Declaration of Nov. 30, 1660, in order to reinstate the Royalists in their property without injury to the Adventurers, or to such other possessors as had by various circumstances acquired a fair right to compensation. See Carte, Life of Ormond, bk. vi. vol. ii. pp. 215-217.]

[x] [Plut., Symposiac., lib. viii. Qu. 7. c. 4; Op. Moral., tom. ii. p. 692.]

And strange plants, by inoculation, do become one tree. It were hard, that quarrels should be immortal, or more durable than nature; or that the passions of the mind should be more malignant and difficult to be closed, than the wounds or ulcers of the body; and that no way should be left to unite the divided members of Christ. Doth God delight as much in the observation or not observation of indifferent ceremonies, as He doth in the love and unity of brethren, and just obedience to lawful superiors[y]? Or is it His will, that for a few innocent rites established by law, kingdoms should swim with blood, monarchies be turned upside down, and innocent Christians be brought to utter beggary? It is a
962 folly to dote so upon the body, as to cherish the sores and ulcers thereof; or, out of hatred to the ulcers, to destroy the body. The not distinguishing between the essences and abuse[s] of particular Churches, hath been the cause of all our miseries. This is the first sheaf which King Charles brings with him, that is, peace.

The second sheaf is the opening of our Courts, the restoring of our laws to their vigour, and the establishment of justice among us. What a wretched condition was this poor kingdom in, which neither had Court open, nor Sheriff legally appointed, nor so much as a Justice of Peace for so long time together. It was the mercy of God, that the policy and frame of this kingdom was not utterly destroyed, and brought to confusion. The law is like the wrest of a musical instrument, which puts the jarring string in tune. It is the balance of the commonwealth, which gives the same weight to gold and lead; the rule and square of justice, the standard and measure of the kingdom, the foundation of liberty, the fountain of equity, the life and soul of policy. Parents may leave a patrimony to their children, but the law preserves it. Arms may conquer kingdoms, but laws establish them. A city may be safe without walls, but never without laws. That we eat and sleep in quiet, that our houses are not fired over our heads, nor our daughters deflowered before our eyes, it is the benefit of the laws; without which we should bite and devour one another, "as the greater fishes do the less[z]." This

[y] [Compare the account given of Bramhall's conduct at this period in his Life, vol. i. of the present edition, p. xii.; and note R. ibid., p. xxiv.]

[z] ["Pisces ut sæpe minutos Magnu' comest; ut aves enecat accipiter."

PART IV.

is the second sheaf which King Charles brought with him, that is, the laws.

Eccl. x. 16. A third sheaf is experience. "Wo be to thee, O land, when thy king is a child;" that is, a child in understanding [1 Kings xii. 6-19.] and experience. The inexperience of Rehoboam and his young counsellors quickly destroyed the kingdom. We use to say, a new physician must have a new churchyard. A new physician is not more dangerous to the body, than a new politician to the state. It is written of Darius, that in opening a fair pomegranate, one demanded of him, of what thing he desired so many as there were kernels in that pomegranate. He replied, so many Zopyrus's, that is, prudent and experienced counsellors[a]. God be praised, our Darius may be a Zopyrus to himself; having had that advantage which none of his predecessors ever had, to have viewed with his own eyes the chiefest of his neighbours' courts, kingdoms, and commonwealths, their interests, their laws, and forms of government, their strength and weakness, their advantages and disadvantages, both in war and peace; things of excellent use to a prince. And this may well pass for a third sheaf:—"And shall bring his sheaves with him."

A fourth sheaf, and the last which I shall mention at this time, is security. Usurpers are always full of jealousies and Wisd. vii. 11. fears. The reason is evident:—"Wickedness, condemned by her own testimony, is very timorous; and being pressed with conscience, always forecasteth grievous things." It was observed of Richard the Third, that after he had murdered his nephews, and usurped the crown, he wore his hand continually upon his dagger[b]: a plain sign of inward guilt. [Matt. ii. 2, 3.] When the wise men made this demand, "Where is He that is born King of the Jews[c]," Herod "was troubled and all Hierusalem with him."

> "Successor instat, pellimur;
> "Satelles i, ferrum rape,
> "Perfunde cunas sanguine[c]."—

"A successor is come, we are chased away; go, soldiers,

Varro, ap. Non. Marcell., De Honestis et Nove Veterum Dictis, sub voce "Comest."]

[a] [Plut., Apophth. Reg., Op. Moral., tom. i. p. 481.]

[b] [Holinshead, Chron., vol. iii. p. 735.]

[c] [Prudent., Cathemer., Hymn. xii. De Epiphaniâ, 98-100.]

catch your swords, and make the cradles swim with blood." These inward fears render them cruel and vindictive, and make them multiply their soldiers and their guards, wherein their only hope of safety doth consist. These grow chargeable to a commonwealth, and easily from servants turn masters. From all these burdens and suspicions we are freed by the restitution of the right heir. So, every way, King Charles "brings his sheaves with him."

A prince, as supereminent above others in goodness, as Saul was in stature, and more adorned with virtues than with his purple. To whose happy Coronation this day is dedicated. Much may he give, long may he live, a "nursing father" to the Church, a patron to the commonwealth, a protector to his friends, a terror to his enemies, an honour and a darling to his country. Let the hopes of all who envy this day's happiness, melt away as winter ice, and flow away as unprofitable waters. And long, long may his crown flourish, which this day first adorns his temples, until he change that "corruptible crown" with an "immarcessible crown of glory."

[1 Sam. x. 23.]

[Isai. xlix. 23.]

[1 Pet. v. 4.]

963 When I consider with myself the condition of the most flourishing commonwealths, as Athens, how fatal they have for the most part been to persons of eminent virtues, whereof few escaped both banishment and poison, I cannot but admire our happiness under the best of monarchies: when I compare those arts and exactions which are used in our neighbour countries, where the whole estate of the commonwealth goes through the magistrate's hands in the short compass of a very few years. Much good may the mock-liberty of their tongues do them, which their purses pay for. I cannot but proclaim, 'O happy England, if thou knewest thine own happiness!' But neither the time permits me, nor my desires invite me, to fall upon this subject. I will turn my discourse into prayers, that the great God of Heaven and earth will give his Majesty a long life, a secure empire, a prudent and faithful council, a loyal and obedient people, expert and valiant armies. "Blessed be he that blesseth him," and let every loyal subject say 'Amen.'

[Gen. xxvii. 29.—Numb. xxiv. 9.]

THE FIRST SPEECH BY MY LORD PRIMATE TO THE SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS[d].

SIR,

The Lords Justices[e] of this kingdom have graciously heard that relation which you made unto them from the Honourable House of Commons, touching their election of you to be their Speaker, together with your modest desire to decline the place as too heavy for you. They know right well the great importance of the place; but they know as well your great ability to discharge it. Neither do they look upon you as a child, that hath the reins put seemingly and for a show into his hands; but as upon an experienced charioteer, who knows how to discharge all the duties that belong unto his office dexterously, and without ostentation, and to dispose and direct the hand of that little one by the occult motions of his own, to seem to do that which in truth is his own proper work. They know, that the Honourable House of Commons is no little fly-boat, but a ship royal of the second magnitude; and the cargazoon as rich as the ship is great. Therefore they have committed the charge of it to you, as to a skilful pilot. In sum, the Lords Justices do exhort you to add courage and resolution to your modesty and other great parts, that you may adorn that province, which by the suffrages of that House is committed to your care. For as the House of Commons have advisedly chosen you their Speaker, so the

[d] [The Irish Parliament was summoned for May 8, 1661 (Carte, Life of Ormond, bk. vi. vol. ii. p. 221); and commenced its sittings upon that day, after hearing a sermon in St. Patrick's Cathedral from Jeremy Taylor (in Taylor's Works, and see White Kennet's Register, p. 440). Sir W. Domvile, the Irish Attorney-General, was intended at first for Speaker of the House of Commons; but upon Sir Audley Mervyn's urgent entreaty, the King receded from his designed recommendation; whereupon, Bramhall (as Speaker of the House of Lords) having informed the Commons of this in directing them according to custom to choose their Speaker, Sir A. Mervyn himself, Bramhall's old enemy, who was at the time his Majesty's Prime Serjeant-at-Law, and in great favour with the Adventurers (who had great power in the House), was elected (Carte, ibid., pp. 221, 222). The speeches here printed, were delivered upon his being presented for confirmation in his office, on May 11, 1661.]

[e] [Sir Maurice Eustace, Chancellor (Oct. 24, 1660), and Sir Charles Coote, made Earl of Mountrath, were sworn in Lords Justices Dec. 31, 1660; and Lord Broghill, made Earl of Orrery, on the following 17th of January. Carte, Life of Ormond, bk. vi. vol. ii. p. 212.]

Lords Justices, by his Majesty's authority, do as advisedly confirm you their Speaker.

And now, Mr. Speaker, I have one thing more to add, which I am required by the Lords Justices to impart unto you; that is, that you being by your place an assistant to the House of Peers, and summoned by writ to the discharge of that trust, yet the House of the Lords taking into their serious consideration the possibility, or rather the probability, that some of their assistants might perhaps be chosen Speaker, to let all the world see that they are equally careful of the privileges of both Houses in order to the common good of the kingdom, they passed a vote this morning, that if any of their assistants should be chosen Speaker of the House of Commons, they would dispense with him '*pro hâc vice*,' saving always to the House of the Peers all their just rights and privileges for the future. So that there remains nothing, but that you gird yourself to your office, which is cast upon you from all hands.

THE SECOND SPEECH BY MY LORD PRIMATE TO THE SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS.

MR. SPEAKER,

You style this place aptly, a "mount of transfiguration[f];" and truly so it is. We behold the greatest "transfiguration" here that ever was seen in this kingdom, on such a sudden, either in our days or in the days of our forefathers; a conversion from the greatest anarchy and confusion to order and a settled form of government. If nothing else did evince it, this change and transfiguration alone were able to make good the truth of that old maxim, "*Res facile redeunt ad pristinum*

[f] [Bramhall's trope in the Speech which follows, seems borrowed from the harangue of Sir A. Mervyn, to whom he was replying; and whose style, even for that age, was noted for affectation. E. g. his Speech to the Irish House of Lords upon bringing up the bill of impeachment against Bramhall himself, and his companions in adversity, in 1641, begins thus,—"I am commanded by the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses, of the Commons House, to present unto you Ireland's tragedy, the gray-headed common-law's funeral, and the active statutes' death and obsequies; this dejected spectacle answers but the prefiguring type of Cæsar's murder," &c. &c. (Rushw., vol. v. p. 214). And see another choice specimen of his eloquence upon a later occasion, Nov. 8, 1661, in White Kennet's Register, p. 557.]

PART IV.

statum"—"Things do easily return to their former condition." Otherwise it were impossible, that so much confusion should be attended with so much order; or the worst of anarchies, with the best of monarchies. It is better to live 964
under the Sicilian tyrants, or the Roman Decemviri, or the thirty Athenian usurpers, than to live in an anarchy, where there is no government. It is better to live where nothing is lawful, than where all things are lawful. Better one tyrant than a thousand. I shall not need to press this further. Cast but your eyes back to the by-passed years; and you will see this better demonstrated by experience, than it is possible to do it by reason. But behold a sudden "transfiguration." "Neither the morning nor the evening star in the heavens is more beautiful, than justice" and good government upon earth[g]. To it we owe our prosperity, our liberty, our security, all we are, all we have, all we can be in this world: without which we should be like fishes in the sea, or fowls in the air,—the greater devour the less.

". . . . . Pisces sic sæpe minutos
"Magnus comest; sic aves enecat accipiter[h]."

Those innovators and incendiaries who labour to pull down a settled form of government, are like a phrenetic person, who takes pains to hew down the bough whereon he himself doth stand. As those two signs, or rather meteors, Castor and Pollux, when they appear double to sea-faring persons, promise serenity and a prosperous voyage, but when they appear single or divided, they threaten a storm[i]; whether it be by reason of the density or rarity of the matter, or what other natural causes, I leave to the philosophers to determine: so, where power and justice do meet together, it promiseth prosperity and peace; but where they are divided, power without justice, or justice without power, it prognosticates a tempest to a state.

From your "mount of transfiguration" you shew us a king. "You, House of Commons, behold a king[k]." As anarchy is

[g] ["Διὰ τοῦτο πολλάκις κρατίστη τῶν ἀρετῶν δοκεῖ εἶναι ἡ δικαιοσύνη, καὶ οὔθ' ἕσπερος οὔθ' ἕφος οὕτω θαυμαστός." Aristot., Eth., V. i. 15.]

[h] ["Pisces *ut* sæpe minutos Magnu' comest; *ut* aves enecat accipiter." Varro, ap. Non. Marcell., De Honestis et Nove Veterum Dictis, sub voce "Comest."]

[i] [Plin., Hist. Nat., ii. 37.]

[k] [A quotation apparently from Sir A. Mervyn's speech. See above in note f.]

the worst of misgovernments, so monarchy is the best of governments; the most ancient, the most universal, the most natural, the most noble, the most advantageous form of government. I do not deny the lawfulness of other forms; but I do altogether deny, that any other form is so noble, so natural, or so much from God. There is one God in the world, a monarchy; one soul in the body, a monarchy; one sun in the heavens, a monarchy; one master in each family, and one monarch in each society. It was good counsel, which Lycurgus gave a mutinous citizen, that would have had him bring a democracy into the state;—that he should try it first how he liked it in his own house, and suffer his servants to be his quartermasters[l]. The silly bees do teach us thus much, who know no law but the law of nature; yet they have their king. And that which is much more strange, which I have seen by ocular experience; take their king prisoner in a cane, as it is usual to do, and they will feed him with honey through the nicks and crevices of the cane. So long as you detain him there, they will never swarm, nor seek for new habitations for themselves. Remove him and his prison into another hive; and they will all flock after him, and travail for him. Put a strange king into his cane or prison; and they will be so far from feeding him, that they will stop up all the holes of the cane with wax, and starve him for a usurper. How much more are the silly bees more observant of the laws of nature, than degenerated men! In sum, the soul of sovereign power, which is infused by God into democracy and aristocracy, is the same that it is in monarchy; but the organ is not the same, nor so apt to attain the end; but God and nature do always intend that which is best, that is, monarchy. And in some cases, the existence of kingly government is from God, as well as the essence; but God never instituted any other form than monarchical. He Himself vouchsafed to be King of His people; and gave them first Moses as a viceroy,—"Moses was king in Jesurun;" [Deut. xxxiii. 5.] —and afterwards He gave them a radicated succession of kings[m]. No commonwealth hath the like plea for itself.

[l] [Plut., in Vitâ Lycurgi, tom. i. p. 111. ed. Bryant.]

[m] [Compare, for this argument respecting monarchy, Serpent-Salve, Sect. ii. (above in vol. iii. pp. 319, 320); Disc. ii. Pt. ii.]

PART IV.

And as monarchical government is the best form of governments, so our English monarchy is the best form of monarchy. By the blessing of God, we live in the most temperate part of the temperate zone; and enjoy a government as temperate as the climate itself. We cannot complain either of too much sun or too little sun. The beams of sovereignty are neither so perpendicular over our heads that they can scorch us, nor yet so oblique, but that they are able to warm us. Should we go about in a madding humour to dissolve a frame of government, which made our forefathers happy at home, and famous abroad, or loath our own manna, and long after the fleshpots and onions of Egypt? If we dote upon foreign polities, it is only because we do not know them. Consult but with those that do know them, and we will quickly say, our "lot is fallen in a fair ground."

[Exod. xvi. 3.—Numb. xi. 4, 6.]

96.

[Ps. xvi. 7. Prayer-bk. Vers.]

And so from kings you come to Parliaments, which have evermore had a venerable esteem in the world, if not under the name of Parliaments, yet under a more ancient name of Councils, or Conventions. As the inferior orbs do by their transverse and opposite, yet vincible motions, stay and moderate the rapid force of the *primum mobile*, or first sphere; so Parliaments by their Fabian counsels do temper and moderate the quick motion of sovereign power. I speak not this of any danger that hangs over us. God be praised, we have no such young Phaeton; but one that hath been as much and as long acquainted with Fabius as with Marcellus, and knows how to use the buckler as well as the sword. But Parliaments have a further advantage than that of counsel only; namely, in republics, to aggregate and unite, and to render the whole society one political body; and in monarchies, to supply, and second, and execute. Then the affairs of a kingdom go prosperously on, when they join one and all in advancing public designs[n].

From Parliaments in general, I come to the reasons of summoning this Parliament in particular. But that is so evident, that he that runs, may read it. Yet, though it be so obvious, that no man can miss it, or mistake it, and that it may seem superfluous to do that over again, which hath been done so excellently already by my Lord Chancellor, as

[n] [Compare Serpent-Salve, Sect. xviii.; ibid. p. 404.]

one of his Majesty's representatives, yet, for order and method' sake, I shall assign three reasons for convocating this present Parliament.

The first is, discrimination of persons, and distinction of possessions. Methinks I am now in one of the fields of Egypt, upon the banks of Nilus, presently after the inundation of that river, when it is just returning into the old channel. And all you, that hear me, look like so many measurers, that are here on purpose to give every proprietor his right possession, and set them out their true bounds. Never did an inundation of Nilus make a greater confusion of distinct possessions and interests, than the late rebellion hath made in Ireland, blending all estates in one confused mass. Kings, dukes, Bishops, knights, and pawns, are all confusedly mixed together in one bag. It were folly, noble Peers and patriots, to ask what you do here: as great, as if one should enquire, upon the banks of Nilus, what the measurers do there presently after an inundation. It is to fix every man in his proper station, wherein he is to serve his king and country. This is the first end of this Parliament,—the distinction of possessions.

A second reason is that, which is commonly the reason of summoning all Parliaments; that is, to satisfy the just debts of the kingdom, and disengage the public faith. We could not do it. It was impossible. And necessity must yield to impossibility. But his Majesty hath done it for us, and satisfied the public debts out of his own rights[o]. The time hath been, that the public faith of the kingdom hath been slighted. No man had a public trust, and so no man could be sued upon a public faith. But King Charles hath redeemed the public credit again, by satisfying the public debt. But he satisfies them in a Parliamentary way. St. Paul saith, that "an oath is the end of all strife;" so is a Parliament. For as there lieth no appeal from God in the interior court, so there lieth no appeal from Parliament in the exterior court. I mean, a complete Parliament, of King, Lords, and Commons, whose act is the act of each individual subject. This is the second reason of calling this Parliament;—to satisfy the public debts of the kingdom.

[Heb. vi. 16.]

[o] [See above p. 132, note v.]

PART IV.

A third reason of convocating this Parliament, is the providing for the army for the future, without imposing too great a burden either upon the English or Irish subject. Two things make a prince grateful to his people; easy ears to hear grievances, and light hands in imposing subsidies. And to speak the truth, a great part of the dissensions in England have sprung from this source. The king could not live upon the revenues of his crown without running into debt, nor those debts be paid without raising new monopolies, or imposing new taxes, as ship-money, or the like, or parting with some branches of his prerogative royal. Hitherto England hath been necessitated to supply the defects of Ireland; it is 966
to be feared, not over willingly. Now it hath pleased God to put into his Majesty's hands an opportunity of advancing his revenue to a competency, that Ireland may be able for the future to bear its own burden, without charging either the English or Irish subject in ordinary cases. And this opportunity he puts wholly into the hands of his Parliament, as the proper judge, both to supply the necessities of the kingdom, and to prevent them.

These are the three reasons of calling this Parliament:— 1. the distinguishing of possessions; 2. the satisfaction of just debts; 3. and the raising the revenues of the crown to a just competency.

Lastly, Mr. Speaker, you descend to the unity of both Houses. His Majesty hath done whatsoever hath been desired of him, and is yet ready to do whatsoever can be desired of a gracious prince. It is our own faults, our own frowardness and unseasonable opposition to one another, if we be not happy. All things preserve themselves by unity; and the nearer they approach to unity, the further they are from fear of dissolution. This lesson old Scillurus taught his sons by a bundle of rods. Whilst they were tied together, all their conjoined strength could not so much as bend them; but when the bundle was divided, and every son had his single rod, they did easily snap them in sunder: so, said he, you my sons are invincible whilst you preserve unity, but if you suffer yourselves to be divided, you are lost[p]. This lesson Menenius Agrippa taught his hearers by the well known

[p] [Plut., De Garrulitate, § 17; Op. Moral., tom. iii. p. 41.]

apologue of the belly and the other members. Whilst they did nourish unity, and all acted for the public advantage of the whole body, each member had his share and dividend in this happiness: but when they began to mutiny and divide interests, and to weigh their own particular merits too narrowly, and all to grumble at the belly as an idle, gluttonous, and unprofitable member, they found by costly experience, that their well and ill fare were inseparably interwoven together, and that they wounded that member which they maligned through their own sides[q]. On the other part, disunion is the ready way to destruction. "*Si collidimur, frangimur*"—"if we be beaten one against another, we are both broken in pieces." It was not the power of Rome, but the divisions and subdivisions of the Britons, which rendered them an easy prey to their conquerors. It was not Philip, but the dissensions of Athens, Thebes, and Sparta, that ruined Greece. It was not Scipio, but the factions of Hanno and Hannibal, that destroyed Carthage. Our own eyes have seen a small handful of confederated provinces able to oppose the greatest monarch in Europe, and were so far from sinking under the weight of such a war, which had been able to break a back of steel, that like palm trees, they did grow up under the weight, from "Distressed Orders" to "High and Mighty States;" or like Moses his bush, not only not consumed, but sprouting and blossoming in the midst of the flames. [Exod. iii. 2.] This virtue of unanimity is that, whereupon our riches, our honour, our religion, our laws, our liberties, our king and country, our fires and altars, and all our hopes, do depend.

"Hoc opus, hoc studium, parvi properemus et ampli,
"Si patriæ volumus, si nobis vivere chari[r]." . . . .

THE ANSWER OF THE LORDS JUSTICES TO MR. SPEAKER'S LAST PROPOSITIONS.

That they will be very careful and ready to maintain the House in all the just liberties and privileges belonging to it. 1. A freedom from arrests for themselves and their servants in all cases whereunto the privilege of the House doth ex-

[q] [Liv., ii. 32.]

[r] [Hor., Epist., I. iii. 28, 29.]

PART IV.

tend: 2. modest and moderate liberty of speech, void of all licentiousness; which their Lordships are confident that the House is so far from desiring to have it tolerated, that themselves would be the first and severest censurers of it: 3. seasonable and free access to their Lordships upon all occasions.

DISCOURSE IV.

THE RIGHT WAY TO SAFETY AFTER SHIPWRECK:

IN

A SERMON,

PREACHED TO THE HONOURABLE THE HOUSE OF COMMONS,

IN ST. PATRICK'S CHURCH, DUBLIN,

JUNE 16, 1661,

AT THEIR SOLEMN RECEIVING

OF

THE BLESSED SACRAMENT.

BY THE MOST REVEREND FATHER IN GOD,

JOHN LORD ARCHBISHOP OF ARMAGH,

PRIMATE AND METROPOLITAN OF ALL IRELAND.

17 June, 1661.

Ordered, that the under-named persons, or any three or more of them, do repair unto his Grace the Lord Primate of all Ireland, and in the name of this House return thanks unto his Grace for his great pains taken yesterday in preaching and administering the Holy Sacrament of the Lord's Supper unto the members of this House, and to desire his Grace that he would cause the same to be printed.

Sir Henry Tichburne,
Sir Theophilus Jones, Mr. of the Wards,
Sir Francis Hamilton,
Sir Robert Forth,
Sir Richard Kirle.

Copia Vera
Ex. per Philip Ferneley,
Cler. Parl.

DISCOURSE IV.

THE RIGHT WAY TO SAFETY AFTER SHIPWRECK.

PROV. xxviii. 13.

"He that covereth his sins, shall not prosper; but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy."

FIRST PRINTED AT DUBLIN, A.D. 1661[a].

IN these words, two different ways, which sinners take to attain to happiness, are represented to us: the one short and broad, but impassable, by reason of thieves and precipices;—"He that covereth his sins, shall not prosper:" the other long and strait, but certain and secure;—"Whoso confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy." Or, if you will, a common shipwreck, wherein two planks are presented to us, to save us from drowning: the one painted but rotten, which will undoubtedly deceive us, that is, the plank of dissimulation;—"He that covereth his sins, shall not prosper:" the other rugged but sound, which will infallibly bring us safe to land, that is, the plank of repentance;—"He that confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy." Or, lastly,

[a] [This sermon, as appears by the title-page, and by the prefixed order of the Irish House of Commons, was preached on June 16, 1661, being the first Sunday after Trinity, in St. Patrick's Cathedral. Two of the members named in the order of the House (upon p. 146), were persons of some note; Sir H. Tichburne, who had been governor of Drogheda from 1641 through the Rebellion; and Sir Theophilus Jones, who was the eldest son of Lewis Bishop of Killaloe (1633-1646) and the eldest brother of Henry Bishop of Meath (1661-1681), and was at this time a leader among the party of the Adventurers (as they were called), in the Irish House of Commons. See Harris' Ware, and Carte, Life of Duke of Ormond, vol. ii.]

PART IV.

we may consider herein the sore, the chyrurgery, and the success. The sore is sin. The course of chyrurgery is double and different: the one by healing over or binding up, the other by incision or cleansing out; the one with supple oil, the other with sharp vinegar; the one by bathing, the other by lancing; the one by 'covering,' the other by 'confessing.' The success is likewise double and different, proportionable to the two ways of cure: the one unprosperous,—"shall not prosper;" the other prosperous,—"shall have mercy."—"He that covereth his sins, shall not prosper; but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy."

[2 Chron. vi. 29.]

The sore is spiritual and epidemical, that's sin. 2 Chron. vi. "When every one shall know his own sore." And more emphatically, Isai. i. 6, it is styled a "putrifying sore." So long as our first parents continued in the state of innocency, roses grew without thorns, as St. Ambrose observed[b]. As there was no sin, so there was no sickness; no sores in the world, either of soul or body. Indeed it was not impossible for them to sin; so they should have been Gods, not men: but it was possible for them not to have sinned, which is as much as the Angels in Heaven can challenge to themselves: for many of them fell irrecoverably, because they found not a Redeemer; and those which stood, owe their conservation, as we do our redemption, to the Cross of Christ. But by the fall of Adam the Image of God became defaced in man, the rays of Heavenly light eclipsed, the sparkles of Divine grace cooled, the understanding infatuated, the will confounded, the affections disordered; and in place of these perfections, sin entered into the world as an hereditary contagion, a spiritual leprosy, with the consequents of it, all manner of sores and diseases, both of soul and body; which cannot be cured with all the balm in Gilead, nor cleansed with all the water in the ocean, but only by the Blood of Christ, and in order to that, by repentance; which is the cure commended in my text.

Col. i. 20.

[Jerem. viii. 22; xlvi. 11.]

Hence all those swarms of fevers, catarrhs, gouts, palsies, apoplexies, and the like, which do infest the body of man more than any other living creatures. We may be burned

[b] [Ambros., Hexaem., lib. iii. c. 11; Op. tom. i. p. 51. C-E.]

up with choleric distempers, drowned with hydropic humours, choaked with the fumes of a vitious stomach, and buried quick in the grave of melancholic imaginations. But the chiefest defects are those of the soul. As 1. Ignorance,—that in so thick a mist of errors and sects, we know not how to find out the truth; and that which tops up our folly, is, that we are grown too wise in our own conceits. 2. Concupiscence; that pestilence of the soul, whose cankered blossoms are still sprouting up in the most regenerate hearts. This weakened the power of Samson, infatuated the wisdom [Judg. xvi. 4.—1 Kings xi. 1-4.—2 Sam. xi.] of Solomon, defiled the holiness of David. 3. Self-love; a hidden poison, the rust of the mind, the moth of holiness, the parent of envy, the original of all vices. 4. Discontent: which makes us prize what we want, slight what we enjoy, more sensible of sufferings than of blessings; like little children, which, for want of some toy which they affect, throw away all they have, and fall a crying. We follow contentment hard, but as fools do an *ignis fatuus*, always at a distance. 5. Preposterous fear. If we do ill, we fear magistrates; if we do well, we fear detractors: if we be rich, we fear thieves; if poor, creditors: if we hate, we fear enemies; if we love, corrivals. 6. Distrust. We all say, we trust God, but for the most part sooner with our souls than with our estates, and hardly without a pawn, as usurers would trust a bankrupt. Lastly, hypocrisy. If there be a mote in the eye, [Matt. vii. 3-5.] there is a beam in the heart; if there be a beam in the eye, there is a stack of mischief in the heart: we look one way, and row another way; blow hot and cold with the same mouth; and have our hearts more double than our breath: we flatter for advantage, and we slander for advantage; we serve God for advantage, and if need be, we serve the Devil for advantage. Then, since we have all made shipwreck of Baptismal grace by sin, since all without exception do stand in need of "a second plank" to save them from drowning, it remains that we make choice of one of the two presented to us in my text; dissimulation, or conversion; 'covering,' or 'confessing:' that's the next part:—"He that covereth his sins, shall not prosper; but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy."

There are three good 'covers' of sin in Holy Scripture:

PART IV. 1. Charity; 2. Conversion; 3. Pardon. The two first are men's 'covers;' the third is God's 'cover.'

Prov. x. 12. 1. Charity.—"Hatred stirreth up strife, but love covereth
1 Pet. iv. 8. all sins;" and, "Charity shall cover the multitude of sins."
[1 Cor. xiii. 5.] Charity "thinketh no evil," charity suspecteth no hurt, charity interprets all things in the best sense; charity doth not aggravate or exaggerate the faults of men, but seeks to extenuate them, imputing them to a good intention, or to ignorance, or to surprise, or to the violence of temptation; charity delights not in carrying about fardles of tales and calumnies, as pedlars do their packs, from house to house,
[Gen. ix. 22.] nor to divulge the faults of men, as cursed Ham did the nakedness of his father, but to conceal them, and to suppress
[Matt. i. 19.] them, as Joseph was "not willing to make" Mary "a public example;" charity is not vindictive, to write injuries in marble, but buries them in oblivion. He that wants this 'cover,' is an unclean vessel. He that hath not this wedding gar-
[Matt. xxii. 11-13.] ment, is sure to be "cast into outer darkness." But he that
[Luke vi. 37.] hath it, is blessed; he shall prosper. "Judge not, and you shall not be judged."

Jam. v. 20. The second good 'cover' is Conversion.—"He that converteth a sinner, . . shall save a soul, . . and hide a multitude of sins." Just as he "converts a sinner," and "saves a soul," so he "hides sins;" not primitively, but derivatively; not principally, but subordinately; not sovereignly, but ministerially. He converts morally, but grace physically; he by persuading, but grace by renewing. Now [1.], conversion being an infallible way to remission, he that helps to convert, helps to 'cover' sin; that's one way. 2. He that converts a man, helps to amend him; and after amendment, the shame of former sins is 'covered.' The memory of them is rather a badge of honour, than a note of ignominy; like the scar of a soldier's wound, after it is healed. Thus he "hides the sins" of his convert. But he "hides" his own "sin" likewise; that is, dispositively: he renders himself more capable of
[Matt. v. 7.] God's pardon. "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall find mercy." But those busy bodies, whose affections are stronger than their judgments, who labour with tooth and nail to spread [a]broad their erroneous dreams, must expect no share
[Matt. xxiii. 15.] in this blessing. "Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharisees,

hypocrites; for you compass sea and land to make a proselyte, and make him two-fold more a child of Hell than yourselves."

The third kind of 'covering' of sin is the forgiving of it.—"Thou hast forgiven their iniquity, and covered all their sins:" that is, "covered" them from the eye of Thy Justice; as a wound is covered with a plaster, to cure it; as a dead body is covered in the grave, to avoid the stench of it; as the doors of the Israelites were covered with the Blood of the Paschal Lamb, to cause the destroying Angel to pass by them. In the same regard, elsewhere, the remission of sins is called a "forgetting" of them, a "casting of them behind the back," a "burying them in the bottom of the sea." Of all 'covers,' this is the best;—"Blessed is the man whose transgression is forgiven, and whose sin is covered."

971 But these are not the 'covers' intended in my text: the first of which is downright denial; as Gehazi thought to have outfaced his master, and Ananias and Sapphira, St. Peter. The harlot "eateth, and wipeth her mouth, and saith," What 'have I done?' Men are too apt to forget the all-seeing eye of God: like woodcocks, which thrust their heads in a bush, and think no man sees them, because they see no man. Let the leprosy of Gehazi, let the sudden death of Ananias and Sapphira, warn us to take heed, how we seek to cover our faults with lies. Well may it advantage a man a little for the present, as a lie got St. Peter his admission into the High Priest's hall; but it hath ever a foul ending, and within a while forfeits the whole stock of a man's credit and reputation. Therefore the Scripture saith, that "a lying tongue is but for a moment," and to God it is a very "abomination." Then tell the truth, and shame the Devil. When a fault is ingenuously discovered, the amends is half made.

The second 'cover' is mincing or extenuating of our sins: as the sluggard,—"Yet a little sleep, a little slumber;" and Jonathan "did but taste a little honey upon his rod's end:" but "a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump," a few "dead flies cause the ointment of the apothecary to stink." He that clippeth a little of the king's coin, is guilty of treason. Every little sand hath his weight: and it is all one, whether a man be pressed to death with a heap of sand or a mass of

Psal. lxxxv. 2.

[Exod. xii. 13, 22, 23.] [Amos viii. 7.—Isai. xxxviii. 17.—Micah vii. 19.]

Psal. xxxii. 1.

[2 Kings v. 25.—Acts v. 1-10.]

Prov. xxx. [20.]

[John xviii. 17.]

Prov. xii. [19,] 22.

[Prov. vi. 10; xxiv. 33.] [1 Sam. xiv 43.] [1 Cor. v. 6.]—Eccl. x. 1.

PART IV.

lead; whether a ship be overwhelmed with one great wave, or drowned with many small leaks. More perish by the daily habitual presumptuous practice of lesser sins, than by one foul act of some greater sin. We detest that horrid paradox, that all sins are equal; that he is as great a transgressor that kills a cock-chicken without a cause, as he that murders a prince. But he that makes light of any sin, when he comes to make up his account with God, destroys himself. Yet this is often our condition. "A mote in our neighbour's eye" shews greater than "a beam in our own."

[Matt. vii. 2-5.]

The third 'cover' is that of excuses. Saul pleads for a sacrifice to the Lord, to excuse his own disobedience. Gehazi pleads the necessity of "the sons of the prophets" for his bribery. Judas allegeth the poor to palliate his covetousness. When the King of Heaven invites men to His great Supper, one hath "married a wife," another purchased a farm, the third must "go to prove" some oxen. Many frame excuses to themselves with as much ease as the spider weaves her webs. Every sin hath its cloak. Malice and revenge pretends zeal of justice. Wilful murder, I mean in our duellists, which cries to Heaven for revenge, muffles itself up in the cloak of honour and reputation. These fig-tree leaves may serve to cover our sins well enough, whilst it is vacation; but take heed of the term-time when it comes. When conscience begins to spit fire and brimstone in our face, when the Devil pulls off the hood wherewith he hath blinded us, then all these painted excuses vanish away; we hear nothing but hues and cries, we see nothing but evident destruction.

[1 Sam. xiii. 12.] [2 Kings v. 22.] [John xii. 4-6.] [Luke xiv. 18-20.] [Gen. iii. 7.]

The fourth 'cover' is transferring of our sins upon others: as Adam upon the woman, the Israelites upon their fathers —"The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge." As if the multitude of delinquents did lessen the offence. Nay, rather, the more the transgressors, the nearer are the judgments of God. Others accuse the times, and evil company, of their faults;—how should one stick say, it remained unscorched, in the midst of a flaming bundle? 'Tis true, as fire begets fire, so doth sin; "evil manners corrupt good[c]:" though the operation be not always

[Gen. iii. 12.] [Jer. xxxi. 29.—Ezek. xviii. 2.]

[c] ["φθείρουσιν ἤθη χρῆσθ' ὁμιλίαι κακαί." Menand., in Thaide, ap. Epist. 1. S. Paul. ad Cor. xv. 33. See Grotius in loc.]

present. Poison must have a time of working. The more our familiarity grows with sin, the less the deformity thereof appears. After the music is ended, the tune still remains in our ears. He that makes conscience of his ways, must avoid evil company as he would do poison, or a house infected with the plague; and write, "Lord have mercy upon us," on the one door as well as on the other. Others make Satan their cover, and cast their sins upon his score. The Devil may solicit us, but he cannot necessitate us. He could not thrust the apple by force down Eve's throat, nor push Christ by violence down from the pinnacle. He hath a slight of persuading, not a power of compelling. He "blows the coals, but the fire is our own[d]." He bites, but it is those which thrust themselves into his jaws[e]. "Resist the Devil, and he will fly from you." Lastly, some make God Himself the cover for their sins. Of all covers this is the worst. So
972 Adam;—"The woman which Thou gavest me." Such are they, which make all things in the world, even sin itself, to come to pass fatally, inevitably, by virtue of a necessitating decree of God. Such are they, which make their Redeemer their packhorse (be it spoken with reverence), to bear their presumptuous sins: as if He had shed His precious Blood to purchase our liberty, that we might turn libertines. Deceive not yourselves. To whom Christ "is made Redemption," to them He "is made Righteousness and Sanctification." This is the fourth 'cover,' the transferring of our sins upon others.

[Gen. iii. 4-6.] [Matt. iv. 5-7.—Luke iv. 9-12.] [James iv. 7.] [Gen. iii. 12.] [1 Cor. i. 30.]

The fifth 'cover' is hypocrisy. This was Absalom's cloak for his rebellion. Such covers were Cain's sacrifice, Esau's tears, Jezebel's fast, the Pharisee's alms, the harlot's vow, the traitor's kiss. The world is full of such jugglers and mountebanks in religion, of all sects; who cry, "Great is Diana," and magnify "the image that fell down from Jupiter," meaning nothing but their profit: who cry aloud,

[2 Sam. xv. 1-6.] [Gen. iv. 3.—xxvii. 34;—Heb. xii. 17.—1 Kings xxi. 9.—Matt. vi. 2, &c.—Prov. vii. 14.—Matt. xxvi. 47, 48, &c.] [Acts xix. 28, 35.]

[d] ["Τὸ πῦρ παρ' ἡμῶν, ἡ δὲ φλὸξ τοῦ Πνεύματος." Greg. Naz., Carm. xxxiii., Γνωμολ. Τετράστιχος, v. 208; Op. tom. ii. p. 608. ed. Bened.]

[e] ["Neminem potest mordere" (Diabolus) "nisi eum qui se ad illum ultro mortiferâ securitate conjunxerit;. . latrare potest, sollicitare potest, mordere non potest, nisi volentem." Pseudo-August., Serm. xxxvii. § 6; in Append. Op. tom. v. p. 74. F. ed. Bened. But see above, Vindic. of True Liberty against Hobbes, Numb. xiv. (vol. iv. p. 91. note n); Disc. i. Pt. iii.]

PART IV.

"Lord, Lord," and mutter to themselves, "*Da mihi fallere, da justum sanctumque videri*[f]"—"Give me grace to cheat and to delude the eyes of the world:" "painted sepulchres," very glow worms, which have a counterfeit light without any heat; pictures with double prospectives, that to the light presents an Angel, the other from the light, a devil: we have pulled down other pictures to set these up in our churches. Nothing is more odious unto God than to make a stalking-horse of religion. Christ throws out seven woes against hypocrites. Other sinners may be converted, the hypocrite hardly; because he hath converted conversion itself into sin. Such as "devour widows' houses" under a colour of "long prayers," shall "receive the greater damnation."

[Matt. vii. 21.] [Matt. xxiii. 27.] [Matt. xxiii. 13-15, 23, 25, 27, 29.] [Matt. xxiii. 14.]

The sixth and last 'cover' is impudence,—to defend our sins, and glory in them; which is used by none but those who have already gotten one foot within the gates of Hell. "*Periisse puto cui pudor periit*[g];"—past shame, past grace. St. Austin bewails his youth, led in "the streets of Babylon;" where, when he heard his companions boasting of their lewdness, he was forced to "feign those things he never did, lest he should appear so much more vile, by how much he was more innocent[h]." That which was his detestation, is now the only garb for a gallant. Such a gallant was Ham, that gloried in the nakedness of his own father, whilst his more modest brethren covered it with their faces backward. Such another gallant was Caligula, who said, "He liked nothing better in his own disposition than his impudence[i]:" a voice fitter for a hangman than an emperor. It was the height of Israel's sin, that she had "a whore's forehead, and refused to be ashamed." Shamefacedness is the praise of nature, the harbinger of grace, the ensign of honesty, the seat of virtue, the witness of innocency. But glorying in sin is the next link to damnation. They that use such vain covers as these, shall one day wish for another cover; even "the mountains" to

[Gen. ix. 22, 23.] ["ἀδιατρεψίαν."] [Jer. iii. 3.] [Hos. x. 8. —Rev. vi. 16.]

[f] ["Jane Pater, clare, clare cum dixit Apollo;
"Labra movet, metuens audiri; Pulchra Laverna,
"Da mihi fallere, da justo sanctoque videri;
"Noctem peccatis, et fraudibus objice nubem."
Hor., Epist., I. xvi. 59-62.]

[g] ["Nam ego illum periisse puto cui pudor quidem periit." Plaut., Bacch., III. iii. 81.]

[h] [Aug., Confess., lib. ii. c. 3. § 7; Op. tom. i. p. 84. A.]

[i] [Sueton., in V. C. Cæs. Calig., c. xxix. p. 423. ed. Græv.]

fall upon them, and the hills to cover them from the presence of the Lamb. So unprosperous is this course of concealing: that's the next part,—"Shall not prosper."

First, he shall not prosper in his sin; he shall not find that happiness and content in it, which he expects. Amnon was sick of love, until he enjoyed Thamar; that moment passed, his love was dogged with hatred and repentance. What a deal of convenience and heart's ease did Ahab promise to himself in Naboth's vineyard; and the very first time he goes to take possession of it, he meets there with the tidings of the utter ruin of himself and [his] family. Herod violated all laws of God and man, burdened his conscience, waded through a sea of blood, all to settle the kingdom upon his son, and he proves an unthrift; offers half of it to a wanton minion for a dance. So goods ill gotten are like a coal of fire in a thatched house. Remember Herod. Before Judas had fingered that beggarly sum of thirty pieces of silver, his desires were upon the rack; he forgot his duty to God, his fidelity to his Master, his care of his own soul: but when he once had it, he could not endure to look upon it, as being the cause of his bane; he casts it away as an infectious rag; he disgorgeth it in the very Temple; his detestation of that poisonous morsel was greater than his reverence to that holy place. When Pharaoh's lean kine had devoured the fat, they were still no better favoured themselves. Let us all but look back to our former excesses, and unlawful pleasures, and see if we may not sighing say with the Apostle, "What profit had" we "of those things whereof" we "are now ashamed." So he "shall not prosper" in his sin.

[2 Sam. xiii. 2, 15.]

[1 Kings xxi. 16-24.]

[Matt. ii. 16.—Mark vi. 23.]

[Matt. xxvi. 14, 15.—xxvii. 3-5, —&c.]

[Gen. xli. 21.]

[Rom. vi. 21.]

973 Secondly, he shall not prosper in his affairs. Not in his temporal undertakings. "Write this man childless, a man that shall not prosper in his days." Israel could not prosper, so long as the accursed thing remained hidden in Achan's tent. The eleven tribes prospered not against Benjamin, until they had humbled themselves by fasting. Jonas prospered not in a ship, until he had reconciled himself to God; then he found safety in the belly of a whale. Neither shall he thrive or prosper in spiritual graces. No man can serve both God and Belial. These hidden sins do choak the seed of the Word; they hinder the efficacy of our prayers, they

Jer. xxii. 30.

[Josh. vii. 10-15.]

[Judg. xx. 26.]

[Jon. i. 12, 17.]

[Matt. vi. 24.—Luke vi. 13.—2 Cor. vi. 15.]

[Matt. xiii. 7.]

PART IV.

make the blessed Sacrament to become poison, and our fasts and humiliations to be mere mockeries. The grace of God will not suffer such mates to be chamber-fellows and fellow-commoners with her in the same heart. To ask for which of our sins things have succeeded unprosperously with us, were to seek a man in Athens at noon-day with a candle and a lanthorn[k]. The Lord sanctify our sufferings to us! Until then, we cannot prosper in our affairs.

Thirdly, he shall not prosper in his concealment. God will bring it to light. "Thou didst it secretly, but I will do this thing before all Israel, and before the sun."—"For nothing is covered, which shall not be revealed." Almost incredible are the ways which God useth for the discovery of crying sins; especially of murder. Whilst the earth is covered with snow, the ditches, and dunghills, and deformities thereof are hid; but by the melting of the snow they are discovered: so the villainous projects of dissemblers are so covered with a show of snow-white innocence and candour, that they are able (like Zeuxis his counterfeit grapes[l]) to deceive a piercing eye. But when time shall bring truth to light, their horrid ugliness will appear to the eye of the world. We may this day observe the footsteps of God's justice; how He brings the same troubles home to their doors, who have been underhand the contrivers and fomenters of them among their neighbours[m]. And now Bellona begins to shake her bloody whip among them[n]; as if God should say, "Thou didst it secretly, but I will do this thing" before all Europe, and "before the sun." "Just art Thou, O Lord, and right are Thy judgments." So he "shall not prosper" in his concealment.

Sam. xii. 12. Luke xii. 2. [Ps. cxix. 137.]

Fourthly, he shall not prosper in obtaining pardon for his sin; and then all his other advantages are too much to his

[k] [A story of Diogenes the Cynic, in Diog. Laert., vi. 41;—"Λύχνον μεθ' ἡμέραν ἅψας, ἄνθρωπον, φήσι, ζητῶ."]

[l] ["Fertur Zeuxis pinxisse puerum uvas ferentem, ad quas cum advolasset avis," &c. Plin., Nat. Hist., xxxv. 4.]

[m] [The allusion is to France and Cardinal Richelieu. See above in the Answ. to La Millet., vol. i. p. 35. note s, Disc. i. Pt. i.: and for Richelieu's intrigues in Ireland (as well as in England and Scotland), Ld. Macguire's Confession, in Nalson, vol. ii. p. 553.]

[n] [The reference apparently is to the civil wars which desolated France during the minority of Louis XIV.; which however were pretty nearly at an end in 1661. And the treaty of the Pyrenees in 1660 had also put an end to the war between France and Spain.]

cost. "What shall it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?" A damned spirit in Hell may as soon hope for forgiveness at the hands of God, as that person who hides and cherisheth his sins privately in his heart. This is to make God confederate with us in our wickedness and dissimulation. 'Tis in vain to skin over a sore, whilst dead flesh remains within. The weapon must first be pulled out, before the wound can be cured. The medicines of salvation profit not a wounded soul, until the fiery darts of Satan be drawn out by repentance. So he "shall not prosper" in his recovery. [Matt. xvi. 26.—Mark viii. 36.]

Lastly, these words, "He shall not prosper," are a μείωσις, and signify as much as 'he shall suffer smart' for it.

1. He shall suffer in his conscience, those "*cæca vulnera*[o]," those "blind blows," which no man knows but he, which feels worse than all the plagues of Egypt and botches of Job. This made Cain a runagate upon the face of the earth. [Job ii. 7.] [Gen. iv. 13, 14.]

2. The judgments of God shall pursue him, both in this life, and the life to come. Herod did not only not prosper in his aim, to entail the crown to his posterity, but the day came that paid for all; such a conglomeration of unmeasurable torments, as they are described by Josephus[p], did hardly ever meet together in one man, and (which is worse) these were but the forerunners of greater. Judas did not only miss his contentment in the thirty pieces of silver, but he got thirty curses; you may find them Psalm cix. Money perished, but the curses stuck by until they brought him to a halter. Envy not a murderer, that braves it upon the stage for the first or second act of a tragedy; nor an ox, that is fatting for the slaughter; nor a thief, that is riding in state to his execution. Have patience and expect the catastrophe. "Though a sinner doth evil a hundred times, and the Lord still prolongeth his days, yet I know it will be well with them that fear the Lord, . . but it shall not be well with the wicked." Thus every way he "shall not prosper." [Ps. cix. 6-16.] [Eccl. viii. 12, 13.]

And so I leave him lurking under a net, "treasuring up to himself wrath against the day of wrath," to come to the true [Rom. ii. 5.]

74

[o] ["Quos diri conscia facti Mens habet attonitos et *surdo verbere* cædit." Juv., xiii. 193, 194.—"Haud est dignatus Oroden Sternere, nec jactâ *cæcum* dare cuspide *volnus*." Virg., Æn., x. 732, 733.]

[p] [Joseph., Antiq. Jud., lib. xvii. cc. 6, 7; vol. ii. pp. 765, 769. ed. Hudson.]

PART IV.

convert in the next words:—"But he that confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy."

Confession, with its requisites, contrition and amendment of life, which is here called "forsaking," do make a complete repentance: which some Fathers style a "second table after shipwreck[q]," others a "Baptism of pains and tears[r];" yea, some of them doubted not to say, that confession did loose the bands of sin, and "extinguish the fire of Hell[s];" that is, not by way of merit, but by way of impetration; not by paying, but by pacifying, the wrath of God, and so averting His judgments. No, those blessed Saints did never dream, that the covenant of Grace, whereunto we are admitted by Baptism, was evacuated by a lapse into sin; or that any new and different covenant was established by repentance, grounded partly upon the merits of Christ and partly upon ourselves. Let confession and repentance have their due; but let them not thrust Christ out of the chair, from Whose grace they flow, from Whose acceptation they have their efficacy. Thrice happy are they, which use this plank aright, to bring them through the raging billows of this sinful world to the haven of eternal bliss.

[Gen. iii. 11-13.] Confession is as ancient as our first parents, whom God Himself did call to the performance of this duty. It was

Numb. v. 7. practised among the Israelites, by Divine precept; by those

Matt. iii. [6.]—Acts xix. [18.] Jam. v. [16.] Jews that repaired to the Baptism of John; by those Ephesian converts: prescribed by St. James,—"Confess one to another, and pray one for another:"—endowed with such

[q] [Hieron., In Isai. c. iii. (Op. tom. iii. p. 38. b), "*Secunda post naufragium tabula* est et consolatio miseriarum, impietatem suam abscondere;" where the reading before the Bened. edition was, "tabula *pœnitentiæ* est," &c.; and so also elsewhere in St. Jerome; and in Pacianus (Epist. I. ad Sympronianum, in Biblioth. PP., tom. iv. p. 236. D); and in St. Ambrose, De Lapsu Virg., c. viii. § 37 (Op. tom. ii. p. 315. C), "Sed tu quæ jam ingressa es agonem pœnitentiæ, insiste misera; fortiter inhære *tamquam in naufragiis tabulæ*;"—and in Tertull., De Pœnitentiâ, c. iv. (Op. pp. 122. D, 123. A):—quoted by Bellarm., De Pœnit., lib. i. c. 13 (Op. tom. ii. p. 1223. D).]

[r] [S. Greg. Naz., Orat. xxxix, In Sancta Lumina (Op. tom. i. p. 634. D), "Οἶδα καὶ πέμπτον" (βάπτισμα) "ἔτι τῶν δακρύων, ἀλλ' ἐπιπονώτερον," speaking of Repentance; quoted by Bellarmine, ibid. So also Joh. Damascen., De Fide Orthod., lib. iv. c. 9, Op. tom. i. p. 262. B. ed. Lequien.]

[s] [Origen, Hom. xvii. in Lucam (Op. tom. iii. p. 933. A), "Si . . revelaverimus peccata nostra non solum Deo sed et his qui possunt mederi vulneribus nostris atque peccatis, *delebuntur peccata nostra* ab Eo, Qui ait, Ecce delebo ut nubem iniquitates tuas," &c.;—Tertull., De Pœnitentiâ (c. xi. Op. p. 128. C), "Si de exomologesi retractas, Gehennam in corde considera, *quam tibi exomologesis extinguet*:"—quoted by Bellarm., ibid. lib. iii. cc. 6, 7; ibid. pp. 1371. D, 1374. C.]

ample privileges, as in the first Epistle of St. John;—"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and cleanse us from all unrighteousness;"—and here in my text,—"He that covereth his sins shall not prosper, but he that confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy." There is no better physic for a full stomach, than a vomit; nor for a soul replete with sin, than confession. Bodily sores do oftentimes compel a man to put off natural shamefacedness, and to expose his less honourable parts to the view of the chirurgion. Ought not every one to be as solicitous for his soul? We offend God three ways; by the imaginations of our hearts, by the words of our mouths, by the actions of our lives. If we intend to please God, we must take a clean contrary course; for evil thoughts of the heart, bring contrition of the heart; for corrupt speeches of the mouth, bring confession of the mouth; for wicked actions of our life, "bring fruits worthy amendment of life." By this means we bring glory to God, and shame to ourselves; and prevent that great confusion of face, which otherwise must fall upon us at the Day of Judgment, before God and Angels and men. A contrite sinner stands not upon terms of reputation with God, or with His Church. Why should we be more afraid to confess, than we were to offend? to make those the witnesses of our tears, who have been the witnesses of our faults? to take away the scandal that we ourselves have given? Let the world take notice of our sin, so it may likewise take notice of our repentance. A great sickness often ushers in health, and a better habitude of the body. A broken bone, when it is well knit, grows the stronger. So "the first shall be last, and the last shall be first." Indeed innocence (if that herb of grace were to be found) is better than confession: but "there is more joy in Heaven over one sinner that repenteth, than ninety-nine just persons that need no repentance," among "the holy Angels." "*Da Pater semper eis gaudere de nobis,*" &c.—"Grant, O Father, that they may always rejoice over us, that Thou mayest always be glorified by them for us, that we and they together may praise Thy Holy Name; O Thou that art the creator of men and Angels!"

Discourse IV.

[1 John i. 9.]

[See Matt. iii. 8.]

[Matt. xix. 20.—&c.]

[Luke xv. 7, 10.]

No man can doubt, but the Romanists have grossly abused

PART IV.

confession; by tricking it up in the robes of a Sacrament; by obtruding a particular and plenary enumeration of all sins to man, as absolutely necessary to salvation by Divine institution; by making it (with their commutations) a remedy rather for the confessor's purse than the confitent's soul; by imposing ludibrious penances, as Chaucer observed, —"He knew how to impose an easy penance where he looked for a good pittance[t];"—by making it a pick-lock to know the secrets of states and families,—

"Scire volunt secreta domus atque inde timeri[u];"—

by absolving before they enjoin ecclesiastical satisfaction; by reducing it to a customary formality, as if it were but the concluding of an old score to begin a new. So, on the other side, it cannot be denied, that our Protestant confessions are for the most part too general;—we confess we are sinners, 975
and that's all; which signifies nothing:—and a little too presumptuous;—they that dare not trust their own judgment about their estates without the opinion of a lawyer, nor about their bodies without the advice of a physician, are wise enough for their souls without any other direction:—and a little too careless,—as if we were telling a story of a third person that concerned not us; we confess light errors willingly, which neither entrench upon our credit, nor threaten us with punishment; but greater crimes, where the discovery brings with it fear of ignominy and disgrace or suffering for them, we conceal and cover with as much art as may be:—lastly, even whilst we are confessing, we have too often a mind to return with "the dog to his vomit," and with "the sow to her wallowing in the mire." What is this but a plain mocking of God? Far from any hopes of mercy: for though 'covering' alone be a sufficient cause of punishment,—"He that covereth his sins shall not prosper,"—yet confession alone, without forsaking, is not a sufficient cause of mercy,—"But he that confesseth *and forsaketh*, shall have mercy."

[2 Pet. ii. 22.]

Not, forbears them in [general[x]], or only by an outward abstinence, but "forsaketh" them, as a man would cast a snake out of his bosom, with detestation. An outward abstinence is not the true change of a Christian: like a dog

[t] [Cant. Tales, Prologue, 223, 224.]
[u] [Juv., iii. 113.]
[x] ["Natural" in folio edition, by an obvious misprint.]

that is muzzled, or a thief that is manacled, which still retain their former dispositions. "When the unclean spirit" returns to his old habitation, and "finds it swept and garnished," not throughly but superficially cleansed, by an outward reformation without an inward renovation, he brings "with him seven other spirits, . . and the latter end of that man is worse than the beginning." He that abstains from an old sin, not for conscience towards God, but for fear of shame or punishment, is like that wolf whereof the Father speaks, which came unto the sheepfold to kill and to devour: the shepherd waking, the dogs barking, scared him away indeed, but altered not his wolvish nature: "*lupus venit fremens, lupus redit tremens, lupus est et fremens et tremens.*" So he "forsakes" them not, only forbears them. [Matt. xii. 43-45.—Luke xi. 24-26.]

Again, "forsakes" them, not conceals them. Penetration of bodies is a monster in philosophy. A heart inwardly replete with secret sins, hath no room for grace. A good lesson or a good motion, to it, is like a spark of fire falling into a vessel of water, presently extinguished; or like good seed falling among thorns, soon choaked. "What fellowship hath light with darkness," or "Christ with Belial?" In natural transelementation, there must be some affinity between the bodies; as fire and air, not fire and water, for the too great contrariety: but in spiritual conversion, no disparity can hinder the change. The greatest sins do often produce the most signal conversion; as it was in Saul, changed in the height of his fury from a persecutor to an Apostle, from a wolf to a shepherd, from a pirate to a governor. We cannot live as amphibians in two such contrary elements as a resolved course of sin and of godliness. Such half converts, who have nothing but a few idle yawning desires, can expect nothing at the hands of God, but to be "spewed out of His mouth" for their "lukewarmness." The mouth of Hell is full of such vain wishes and wishers, which use no serious means to gain them liberty, but only thrust their heads out of the grate, to look about them. A man may break all the commandments of God, and be guilty of none, if it be against his resolution, if he be heartily sorry for it. It is not so much sin, as impenitence, for which men are damned. And, on the other side, he that breaks but one [Matt. xiii. 7.] [2 Cor. vi. 14, 15.] [Rev. iii. 16.]

PART IV.

commandment habitually and reasonably, "is guilty of all." I fear this is many of our conditions. We rather cover our sins, or forbear them, than "forsake" them; we desire rather to make a truce with God, than a peace: we do with our sins, as servants do with their fires when they go to bed, put them not out, but rake them up; so, when we come to reckon with conscience, and to make up our accompts with God, we do not desire to take an everlasting farewell of our sins, "*ab hoc momento in æternum*," as St. Austin[y] saith, but only a couvrefeu, to hide them in a heap of devotions for the present, whilst we are doing some superficial duties to God, or whilst the blessed Sacrament doth strike a kind of reverence into our hearts, with a purpose to reassume them upon the first opportunity; as the serpent doth her poison, which she had left behind her in her den. Can any man think, that such a feigned show of forsaking our sins, can be acceptable to God? O no! it 976
is too hollow-hearted. That conversion which finds mercy, must be serious and sincere. God's forgiveness, and our "forsaking," go still hand in hand together. "Forgive us our trespasses," there's the one; "And lead us not into temptation," there's the other. "Turn Thy face from my sins, O Lord," there's the former; "And make me a clean heart," there's the latter. "Lord, have mercy upon us," there's forgiveness; "And incline our hearts to keep Thy law," there's forsaking. That brings me to the last part,—"Shall have mercy."

[James ii. 10.]

[Ps. li. 9, 10. Prayer-book Vers.]

One might ask, which of all God's mercies? The air we breathe, the light we behold, the ground we tread upon, the meat we eat, whatsoever we are, or have, or hope for, it is His mercy. "By it we live, and move, and have our being." "Thou hast crowned me with Thy mercy," said David: it is a metaphor taken from a garland, which is composed of many and different flowers. God's mercy was the only motive to our redemption; His merciful grace, preventing us and assisting us, is the only means to apply this redemption; the consideration of this mercy is that which encourageth us to repentance. As Christ prayed, "Father forgive them," the poor thief grew bold,—"Lord, remember me." Mercy is the end of our repentance,—that we may find forgiveness.

[Acts xvii. 28.]

[Ps. ciii. 4.]

[Luke xxiii. 34, 42.]

[y] [Compare Serm. cxvii. in Append. tom. v. Op. S. August., p. 213. C.]

Mercy is our supporter in all our sorrows for sin; that we roar not out with Cain, "My sin is greater than that it can be forgiven;" nor betake ourselves desperately, with Judas, to a halter. Mercy is our only plea, when we do repent. We cannot say we have done such and such good offices for the time past; we are too "unprofitable servants." We dare not promise of ourselves to be more serviceable for the time to come; we are too desultory creatures. Lord, forsake not us, lest we forsake Thee. Mercy is the object of our hopes, the total sum of our desires. Both grace and glory do depend upon mercy. So mercy is the beginning, the middle, the end of our happiness.

[Gen. iv. 13.] [Matt. xxvii. 5.] [Luke xvii. 10.]

But St. John will tell us, what "mercy" this is:—"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins." This "mercy" then is forgiveness of sin. That which is called "mercy" here, is called 'justice' there. It is "mercy" to make a gracious promise, but it is 'justice' to keep it. Without this mercy of forgiveness, all the other mercies of God are no mercies, but judgments. In this mercy true blessedness doth consist;—"Blessed is the man whose iniquities are forgiven." What comfort can a person, sure to be condemned, have, without hope of a pardon? The best music in the world is, "Son, thy sins are forgiven thee;" when God shall stretch forth the golden sceptre of mercy: that is, to all those, who for His love do mortify their earthly members, and forsake their own lusts. "For he that hideth his sins shall not prosper, but he that confesseth and forsaketh them, shall have mercy."

[1 John i. 9.] [Ps. xxii. 1.] [Matt. ix. 2. —Mark ii. 5.]

Now among all the means ordained by God for the obtaining this saving mercy mentioned in my text, after Baptismal grace, there is none more efficacious than the blessed Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ; the very conduit-pipe of grace to all worthy communicants, the manna of life and immortality, the precious antidote against the sting and infection of the Infernal Serpent[z]; that inestimable love-

[z] ["Τὰ σώματα ἡμῶν μεταλαμβάνοντα τῆς Εὐχαριστίας, μηκέτι εἶναι φθαρτὰ, τὴν ἐλπίδα τῆς εἰς αἰῶνας ἀναστάσεως ἔχοντα." Irenæus, Adv. Hær., iv. 34, p. 327. ed. Grabe.—"Ἕνα ἄρτον κλῶντες, ὅς ἐστι φάρμακον ἀθανασίας, ἀντίδοτος τοῦ μὴ ἀποθανεῖν ἀλλὰ ζῆν ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ διὰ παντός." Ignat., Epist. ad Ephes., § xx.; inter PP. Apostol. tom. ii. p. 294. ed. Jacobson.—"Πᾶσι φυλακτήριον εἰς ἀνάστασιν ζωῆς αἰωνίου." Athanas., Epist. iv. ad Serapion., § 19; Op. tom. i. P. ii. p. 710. C.—"Altaria Dei, .. unde a multis et

PART IV.

token, which Christ at His departure left to His Church, to keep in remembrance of Him; the true pool of Bethesda, wherein we may be cured of all our infirmities. Preparation of ourselves is necessary before the performance of all holy duties, but especially before the Holy Sacrament. We ought to repair to the participation of this with as great care and anxiety, as if we were immediately to depart out of the world. It was death for an uncircumcised person to eat of the Paschal Lamb. We must circumcise our eyes, our ears, our hands, and our hearts; and take heed, how we come to this wedding-feast without the wedding-garment. "O Lord, be merciful to all those, who prepare their whole hearts to seek Thee, though they be not purged according to the purification of the sanctuary!"

[John v. 2.]

[Exod. xii. 48.]

[Matt. xxii. 11-13.]

[2 Chron. xxx. 18, 19.]

pignus salutis æternæ et tutela fidei et spes resurrectionis accepta est." Optatus, De Schism. Donatist. adv. Parmenianum, lib. vi. c. 1. p. 90. ed. Dupin.—See also the Tract De Cœnâ Domini falsely ascribed to S. Cyprian, in Append. ad Cypr. Op. ed. Fell, pp. 39-44;—and the spurious treatise De Hierarchiâ Eccles. (c. iii. § 13. Op. S. Dion. Areop., tom. i. pp. 299, 300. ed. Corder. 1634), attributed to Dionysius the Areopagite. And compare the Homily concerning the Sacrament, Pt. i. p. 398. 8vo. 1840.]

DISCOURSES V. & VI.

SOME PAPERS,

CONTAINING

SHORT OCCASIONAL DISCOURSES,

OR

THEOLOGICAL LETTERS,

WRITTEN

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

WHILE IN EXILE.

DISCOURSE V.

A

SHORT DISCOURSE

TO

SIR HENRY DE VIC,

ABOUT

A PASSAGE AT HIS TABLE,

AFTER THE CHRISTENING OF HIS DAUGHTER,

ANNE CHARLOTTE,

OF

PERSONS DYING WITHOUT BAPTISM.

CONTENTS.

	Page
[Occasion of this Discourse.	171
1. Want of Baptism fatal, unless upon the plea of invincible necessity.	172
2. Baptismal grace absolutely, external Baptism only generally, necessary to salvation.	ib.
3. Baptismal grace more probably conferred upon unbaptized infants than upon unbaptized adults.	ib.
i. Analogy of martyrdom, wherein the grace of the Sacrament is communicated without the Sacrament itself. . .	173
ii. Desire of Baptism accepted for Baptism itself. . .	174
How this applies to infants.	ib.
iii. Doctrine of the Roman Schools respecting abortive infants. .	175
iv. Analogy of Circumcision, which was not absolutely necessary under the Law.	176
v. Opinion of the primitive Church as gathered from their practice of delaying Baptism.	177
St. Augustin's doctrine neither that of the Church of Rome nor that of Protestants.	18
Purgatory.	179
Limbus Infantum.	ib.
The author's doctrine submitted to the Church.] . . .	180

DISCOURSE V.

A

SHORT DISCOURSE

TO

SIR HENRY DE VIC[a],

OF PERSONS DYING WITHOUT BAPTISM.

[First published at Dublin, A.D. 1676, among the author's collected works.]

Sir,

The discourse which happened the other day about your little daughter, I had quite forgotten, till you were pleased to mention it again last night. If any thing did fall from me which gave offence to any there present, I am right sorrowful; but I hope there did not: as, on the other side, if any occasion of offence had been given to me, I should readily have sacrificed it to that reverend respect, which is due to the place, your table, anciently accounted a sacred thing, and to the lord of it, yourself. This morning, lying musing in my bed, it produced some trouble in me, to consider how passionately we are all wedded to our own parties, and how apt we are all to censure the opinions of others, before we understand them; while our want of charity is a greater error in ourselves, and more displeasing to Almighty God, than any of those supposed assertions which we condemn in others; especially when they come to be rightly understood. And to shew, that this particular breach is not

[Occasion of this Discourse.]

[a] [Sir Henry De Vic was ambassador for Charles I. to the States in 1644-1648, during which period Bramhall resided for the most part with him at Brussels after his flight from England with the Marquis of Newcastle. See Life, p. x. in vol. i. of the present edition.]

PART IV.

so wide, nor the more moderate of either party so disagreeing, as is imagined, I digested these sudden meditations, drawn wholly, in a manner, from the grounds of the Roman schools; and so soon as I was risen, I committed them to writing.

[1. Want of Baptism fatal, unless upon the plea of invincible necessity.]

1. First, there is a great difference to be made between the sole want of Baptism upon invincible necessity, and the contempt or wilful neglect of Baptism when it may be had. The latter we acknowledge to be a damnable sin; and without repentance and God's extraordinary mercy, to exclude a man from all hope of salvation. But yet, if such a person, before his death, shall repent and deplore his neglect of the means of grace from his heart, and desire with all his soul to be baptized, but is debarred from it invincibly, we do not, we dare not, pass sentence of condemnation upon him; nor yet the Roman Catholics themselves[b]. The question then is, whether the want of Baptism, upon invincible necessity, do evermore infallibly exclude from Heaven.

[2. Baptismal grace absolutely, external Baptism only generally, necessary to salvation.]

2. Secondly, we distinguish between the visible sign, and the invisible grace; between the exterior sacramental ablution, and the grace of the Sacrament[c], that is, interior regeneration. We believe, that whosoever hath the former, hath the latter also; so that he do not put a bar against the efficacy of the Sacrament by his infidelity or hypocrisy; of which a child is not capable. And therefore our very Liturgy doth teach, that "a child baptized, dying before the commission of actual sin, is undoubtedly saved[d]." Secondly, we believe, that without Baptismal grace, that is, regeneration, no man can enter into the kingdom of God. But whether God hath so tied and bound Himself to His ordinances and Sacraments, that He doth not or cannot confer the grace of the Sacraments extraordinarily, where it seemeth good in His eyes, without the outward element, this is the question between us. 980

[3. Baptismal grace more probably con-

3. Thirdly, we teach, that the case is not alike with little infants born of Christian parents, who die unbaptized with-

[b] [So Bellarm., De Sacram. Baptismi, lib. i. c. 6 (Op. tom. ii. p. 309. B, C.).]

[c] [See Peter Lombard, Sentent., lib. IV., dist. iv. lit. A, and the comments of Aquinas and the other Schoolmen upon it.]

[d] [Rubric subjoined to the Office for Public Baptism of Infants.]

out their own fault, and men of age and discretion; such as Nicodemus was, to whom Christ said, "Except ye be born again of water and of the Spirit, ye cannot enter into the kingdom of Heaven." These latter can have no hope of salvation in an ordinary way, except they be baptized either in deed or desire. But we dare not pass a definite sentence against the former, whose want of Baptism is not their own fault, but the fault of their parents; seeing that God hath said, that "as He lives," the "son shall not bear the iniquity of his father." Yet do we not believe, that the children of Christian parents do derive any inward or inherent sanctity by propagation (as is by some imputed to us[e], amiss). We know well, that a Christian begets not a Christian. But that holiness, which St. Paul ascribes to the children of believing parents,—"If the root be holy, so are the branches[f],"—we expound of an exterior or ecclesiastical sanctity, or a right to the Sacrament of Baptism by the privilege of their birth, being not born foreigners, but natives and freemen of the Church. And forasmuch as they have a right to the Sacrament, but are defrauded of it without their own defaults, we believe, that God, Who hath not limited His grace to His outward ordinances, may and doth many times according to His good pleasure supply the defect of others, and operate in them the grace of the Sacrament by His Holy Spirit.

[ferred upon unbaptized infants than upon unbaptized adults.]

[John iii. 5.]

[Ezek. xviii. 2, 20.]

[Rom. xi. 16.]

That this is truth, I prove by five arguments, drawn out of their own grounds[g].

First, if the grace of the Sacrament be communicable without the Sacrament, then there is a possibility of salvation

[1. Analogy of martyrdom, wherein the grace of the Sacrament is communicated without the Sacrament itself.]

[e] [Bellarmine (De Sacram. Baptismi, lib. i. c. 4, Op. tom. ii. pp. 292, 295) quotes Calvin, Antidot. Concil. Trident. Sess. vi. c. 5. (Op. tom. viii. p. 240. a.—and see his Antidot. ad Art. Theol. Paris., Ad Art. i., Op. tom. viii. p. 191. a), and Instit. lib. iv. c. xvi. § 24 (Op. tom. ix. p. 361. a),—Peter Martyr, In Epist. I. ad Corinth. c. vii. (fol. 92-94. Tig. 1579),—Bullinger, In Epist. I. ad Corinth. c. vii. (fol. 80. Tig. 8vo. 1534),—as affirming, "filios sanctorum nasci sanctos," or some equivalent proposition. None of the three however so affirm the proposition as to exclude the general necessity of Baptism in such cases.]

[f] [Bramhall apparently intended to quote 1 Cor. vii. 14;—"Else were your children unclean, but now are they holy." The passage in the text refers to the spiritual descent of the Christian Gentile, from the Jewish Church; not to any supposed or probable coincidence of spiritual with natural propagation.]

[g] [Compare, for a summary of the doctrines of Roman doctors, Vazquez, In III. Sentent., Qu. lxxxviii. Disp. 151; and Bp. Forbes's Instruct. Historico—Theolog., lib. X. cc. vi-xi. pp. 469-483. Amst. 1702. And see also Bp. Morton's Catholic Appeal, II. xiii. 3-8 (Lond. 1610), and White against Fisher, pp. 177, 178 (Lond. 1624); where most of the arguments in the text are urged at length.]

PART IV.

without actual baptization; but the grace of the Sacrament is communicable without the Sacrament, as appeareth in martyrdom, which is generally confessed to supply the defect of Baptism[h]. "Whosoever shall lose his life for My sake, shall save it;"—and,—"Blessed are they who suffer persecution for righteousness' sake, for theirs is the kingdom of Heaven." If it be observed, that martyrs are baptized in their own blood, I answer, that martyrdom indeed is sometimes called Baptism, improperly and analogically, because it supplies the want of Baptism; but it is no Sacrament, no proper or true Baptism, because wanting the essentials of the Sacrament; the matter, which is water, which element and no other Christ consecrated in Jordan to the mystical washing away of sin; as also the form,—"I baptize thee in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost." This is one exception without contradiction.

Luke ix. 24. Matt. v. 10. [Matt. iii. 13.-&c.] [Matt. xxviii. 19.]

Secondly, St. Paul saith, "If there be first a willing mind, it is accepted, according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not." God binds no man to impossibilities, which are not made impossible by himself. When actual Baptism cannot be had, the desire of Baptism is accepted for Baptism itself. As St. Ambrose saith of Valentinian, that he was 'baptized in his desire[i].' Thus much is acknowledged by all Roman Catholics, and may be collected out of the Council of Trent[j]. If it be objected, that the desire of Baptism can have no place in infants, for the defect of reason, I answer two ways. First, there may be the same invincible necessity for an infant, which is for a person of age and discretion. As suppose the mother should be delivered of child in a desert, where there is no water, and die before either the water can be brought to the infant or the infant to the water; the child wants the use of reason to desire Baptism; the parents do desire it for the child, but

[ii. Desire of Baptism accepted for Baptism itself.] 2 Cor. viii. 12.

[How this applies to infants]

[h] [See the passages from the Fathers collected, in Bingham, Orig. Eccles., X. ii. 20; and Bellarm., De Sacram. Baptism., lib. i. c. 6 (Op. tom. ii. pp. 304-308). Bellarmine's own propositions are, 1. that "martyrdom is rightly called and is a kind of Baptism," 2. that sins are remitted by it, 3. that "although a Baptism, it is not a Sacrament."]

[i] [Ambros., De Obitu Valentin. Consol., § 51-54; Op. tom. ii. p. 1188.]

[j] [Concil. Trident., Sess. vi. c. 4 (Labb., Concil., tom. xiv. p. 758. C), "Quæ quidem translatio" (scil. "ab eo statu in quo homo nascitur filius Adæ, in statum gratiæ" &c.), "post evangelium promulgatum, sine lavacro regenerationis, *aut ejus voto*, fieri non potest."]

want means to procure it: shall they christen it with sand, as it was sometimes done to a Jew in the like case[k], at the instant of death? This would be no celebration, but a bold presumption, and profanation of the Holy Sacrament. How much better were it to commit it to the secret and extra-
81 ordinary mercy of God; Who "hath not bound His power to the Sacraments[l]," as all divines do agree. What reason can be given, why necessity should dispense with the want of actual Baptism, and yet the same necessity should not dispense with the want of an actual desire of Baptism? especially seeing the want of desire in infants proceeds from an absolute and antecedent necessity, but the want of the Sacrament in persons of years might have been prevented, and is become invincibly necessary by their own fault, which deserves the less consideration. Secondly, I answer, that Gerson[m], and Gabriel[n], and Cardinal Cajetan[o], great doctors in the Roman Church, do maintain, that when Baptism cannot be actually applied to infants, the desire of their parents to have them baptized is sufficient for their salvation. Those doctors were more merciful to infants, to whom Christ gave so many expressions of His love, than the rigid controvertists of these times[p]. The best is, whether they be wheat or chaff, yet men's tongues or pens must not winnow them; "they must stand or fall to their own Master." This is called "*Baptismus Flaminis*"—"the Baptism of the Spirit[q]." [Rom. xiv. 4.]

Thirdly, the Roman schools do define, concerning such [iii. Doctrine of the Roman Schools respecting abortive infants.]

[k] [Niceph., H. E., iii. 37. And see the Centuriat. Magdeburg., Cent. II. c. vi. p. 117. ed. 1759; and Bingh., Orig. Eccl., XI. ii. 5. The story relates to the time of Marcus Antoninus, and the person was afterwards properly baptized.]

[l] ["Deus potentiam Suam Sacramentis non alligavit," from Pet. Lomb., Sentent. lib. IV. dist. iv. lit. E, became an axiom among the Schoolmen.]

[m] [Serm. in Nativit. B. Mariæ, Consid. ii.; Op. P. iii. fol. 313. R. These authorities with others are quoted at length by Cassander, De Bapt. Infant., pp. 762-771 (Op. fol. Paris. 1616), who agrees with them. And compare his Defens. Lib. de Offic. Pii Viri, ibid. p. 847; and the well-known Epistle of S. Bernard, Ad Hugonem de S. Victore, Epist. lxxvii. Op. tom. ii. pp. 631-642. ed. Bened. Paris. 1719.]

[n] [Gabriel Biel, In IV. Sentent., Dist. iv. Qu. 2. Dub. 2, et 5.]

[o] [Comment. in Thom. Aquin. Summ. Theol., P. III. Qu. lxviii. art. 1. fol. 274. a. Bonon. 1528. In some later editions the passage is omitted, by order of Pius V., e. g. in that of Antw. 1612.]

[p] [Viz. Bellarm., De Sacram. Baptismi, lib. i. c. 4 (Op. tom. ii. pp. 292 sq.);—Concil. Trident., Sess. vi. cap. 7 (Labb., Concil., tom. xiv. p. 759. D).—And see White against Fisher, p. 177.]

[q] ["Est Baptismus in aquâ, in sanguine, in pœnitentiâ." Gloss. super Epist. ad Heb. vi. a, as quoted by Pet. Lomb., Sentent. lib. IV. dist. iv. lit. E; —scil. ordinary Baptism, Martyrdom, and an inward change of heart unaccompanied by any outward Sacrament. Later Schoolmen invented the terms, "*Baptismus Fluminis—Sanguinis—Flaminis.*"]

PART IV.

abortive infants as perish in their mothers' womb, both under the law of nature, and of Moses, and of grace, that except they be slain for Christ's sake (as some have been, and so become martyrs in deed though not in will, because they are not capable of election), that '*ex æquo et lege communi*'—'in equity and by ordinary right, they cannot be saved[r];' but withal they add, that 'it is not to be denied, but that by some other means or remedies extraordinary they may be saved, if so it shall seem good to God in His extraordinary providence[r].' But abortives have no greater privileges than those, who live to behold the light. Therefore we ought not to censure them for want of the ordinary means, but to leave them also to the "extraordinary providence" of God.

[Matt. ii. 16.]

[iv. Analogy of Circumcision, which was not absolutely necessary under the law.]

Fourthly, if infants which die unbaptized, be excluded from all hope of salvation, then it is by reason of that original corruption, which they derive by propagation from their parents, because 'no polluted thing can enter into Heaven[s]:' (for we know, that infants are not capable of any actual sins): but this reason is not sufficient; for the Jewish infants were as subject to original sin, and had a remedy appointed for it by God, as well as Christians, that is, the Sacrament of Circumcision; which though it should be admitted that it did not causally produce grace, yet it is confessed by the Romanists, that it did certainly procure grace[t], and was as strictly enjoined to them as Baptism is to us. "The uncircumcised male child . . shall be cut off from his people." But this notwithstanding, the Jewish infants, dying without circumcision, might be saved; neither is God more propitious to the Jewish infants than to the Christian, for "He hath loved the tents of Sion above all the tabernacles of Jacob;" therefore Christian infants may be saved likewise without Baptism. That the Jewish children might be saved without circumcision, is thus proved by the institution of God. Circumcision was not celebrated till the eighth day after the nativity; but many thousand Jewish infants died before the

Gen. xvii. 14.

[Psalm lxxxvii. 2;—"The Lord loveth the *gates* of Sion more than all the *dwellings* of Jacob."]

[r] [So Buonavent., In IV. Sent., dist. vi. art. 1. qu. 1. Resp. ad Arg.: and Alex. Alens., Summ., P. IV. Qu. viii. memb. 7. art. 1: and compare Scotus, In IV. Sent., dist. iv. qu. 3. num. 2; and Richard de Mediâ Villâ, In IV. Sent., dist. iv. art. 2. qu. 3.]

[s] [Buonavent., and Alex. Alens., &c.]

[t] [See Thom. Aquin., in IV. Sentent., Dist. i. Qu. 2. Art. 4; and Bellarm., De Effectu Sacram., lib. ii. c. 13, Op. tom. ii. pp. 190. D, 191.]

eighth day, and consequently without circumcision; to exclude all those from hope of salvation for want of circumcision, which by God's own ordinance they might not have, intrencheth too much upon the goodness of God. More particularly, David's child died upon the seventh day, and yet David doubted not to say, "I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me." David could not go to him either in Hell or in *Limbus Infantum*[u]. And of this opinion St. Gregory seemeth to be, as he is cited by the Master of the Sentences; —"That which Baptism doth with us, that same the faith of the parents performed in the law of nature[x]." If "in the law of nature," why not as well in the law of Moses and of Christ? Most certainly, if infants might be saved in any one of these three states without some Sacrament or other, then in all the three without exception.

2 Sam. xii. 23.

Fifthly, it is confessed, that in the primitive times Baptism was administered ordinarily but twice in the year, that is, at Easter and at Whitsuntide[y]; and many did defer their baptization till the hour of death, that they might depart more undefiled out of this world[z]. But considering those infinite dangers which hang continually over the heads of mortal men, whilst they are in this vale of misery, and how many are swept away out of this life, even in an instant, by sudden death, by sickness, or other casualties, some sleeping, some eating, some walking; this practice had been the most unsafe and dangerous in the whole world, and the loss of millions of souls, if all persons dying unbaptized were infallibly excluded out of Heaven: especially little infants, who, being incapable of reason, cannot supply the want of actual Baptism by their hearty desires. I do not examine the grounds of this delay, neither do I justify the practice; but it argues strongly, that they did not esteem the only want of

[v. Opinion of the primitive Church as gathered from their practice of delaying Baptism.]

[u] [Compare S. Ambrose, De Obitu Valentin. Consol., § 47; Op. tom. ii. p. 1187.]

[x] [Pet. Lomb., Sentent.,] lib. iv. dist. 1. [lit. H.,—"Quod apud nos valet aqua Baptismi, hoc egit apud veteres vel pro parvulis sola fides, vel pro veteribus virtus sacrificii, vel pro his qui ex Abrahæ stirpe prodierunt, mysterium circumcisionis:" as from Greg. M., Moral., lib. iv. in c. iii. Beati Job. v. 4, Moral. xiv. The passage is from Moral. iv. Præf. iii.; Op. tom. i. p. 102. C, D. ed. Bened. Peter Lombard (as above quoted, dist. 2.) affirmed, that the infants of Jewish parents dying uncircumcised before the eighth day perished; but his opinion on this point was not followed, as e. g. not by Buonaventura, In IV. Sentent. dist. i. qu. 2.]

[y] [Bingh., Orig. Eccl. XI. vi. 7.]

[z] [Id., ibid., 4.]

PART IV.

Baptism, without contempt (or as they conceived, neglect), to deprive all sorts of persons from hope of salvation.

[St. Augustin's doctrine neither that of the Church of Rome nor that of Protestants.]

You may be pleased to remember, how it was urged, that St. Austin was of the same faith with the Church of Rome in this particular. And it was then answered, that he did neither agree with them nor us in this question. St. Austin is in this a hard father to little infants, and innocents from actual sins; in that he concludes all, who die unbaptized, in Hell. The Church of Rome teacheth contrarily—that they are not in Hell, but in a certain *Limbus Infantum*[a]. The Protestants leave them to the mercy of God; and doubt not, but that many of them are in Heaven. St. Austin saith, they are certainly damned. The Protestants say, they may be saved. The Romanists say, they cannot be saved, and yet they are not damned. The Romanists say, they suffer "*pœnam damni*," but not "*pœnam sensus*[b];" a privative, but not a positive punishment. St. Austin saith, they suffer, both privatively and positively, the very fire of Hell. The Protestants believe, that many of them do suffer neither.

Observe the words of St. Austin.—

Hypog. lib. v.—"The first place the faith of Catholics doth believe, by Divine authority, to be the kingdom of Heaven, from whence he that is not baptized, is excepted; the second, Hell, where every apostate or stranger from the faith of Christ, shall prove eternal torments; the third, we know not at all, yea, we do not find it to be in the Holy Scriptures[c]."

Lib. de Merit. et Remiss. Peccat.—"Neither is there any

[a] [Bellarm., De Purgatorio, lib. ii. c. 6. (Op. tom. ii. pp. 1865. D, 1866. A.): De Amiss. Grat. et Statu Peccati, lib. vi. c. 2. (Op. tom. iii. pp. 461. D, 462. A).]

[b] [I.e. most Romanists, following Peter Lombard, Sentent. lib. II. dist. xxxiii. lit. E. See Bellarm., De Amiss. Grat. et Statu Peccati, lib. vi. c. 1; Op. tom. iii. pp. 456. C, 457. A. By "pœna sensus" is intended actual and positive torment; by "pœna damni," that pain which would ensue from the loss of eternal happiness.]

[c] [Hypognost., lib. v. c. 5; Op. tom. x. Append. p. 40. B.—"Primum enim locum fides Catholicorum Divinâ auctoritate regnum credidit esse Cœlorum, unde non baptizatus excipitur; secundum, Gehennam, ubi omnis apostata vel a Christi fide alienus æterna supplicia experietur; tertium penitus ignoramus, immo nec esse in Scripturis Sanctis inveniemus." This tract is also known by the title of Hypomnesticon contra Pelagianos et Cælestianos, and is condemned as spurious by the Benedictine editors. It is attributed to either Marius Mercator (by Garnerius, ap. Marium Mercator. Paris. 1678), or Sixtus Bishop of Rome (by the Bened. editors). And see Cave.]

middle place to any person; that he can be any where but with the Devil, who is not with Christ[d]." Discourse V.

And in his eighteenth Sermon upon the Words of the Apostle:—"He that is such an one, let him choose now where he desires to dwell, when the time is that he may be changed; for there are two habitations, the one in the eternal kingdom, the other in eternal fire[e]."

And Serm. 232.—"Let no man deceive himself, brethren; for there are two places, and there is not any third: he that shall not merit to reign with Christ, without doubt shall perish with the Devil[f]."

The like he doth [urge] De Civit. Dei. lib. xxi. cap. 25[g].

When we urge these places against Purgatory, they answer, that St. Austin "speaks of eternal places against Pelagius, who had invented a third place besides Heaven and Hell, for children which died unbaptized[h]." And in the two first places, indeed, St. Austin speaketh expressly against Pelagius; but the other are general, neither distinguishing infants nor old men, temporal nor eternal mansions. [Purgatory.]

But leaving Purgatory for the present, as not concerning the question which is now in hand, this makes more strongly against the Romish *Limbus Infantum;* which they themselves do make to be eternal, and against which (by their own confession in this answer) St. Austin disputeth. St. Austin saith, he "knew no" such place, he did "not find it in Holy Scripture." He saith, "He that is not with Christ" (that is, in Heaven, where Christ is), "is with the Devil," that is, in Hell. He makes no mean between an "eternal kingdom" and "eternal fire," between "reigning with Christ" and "perishing with the Devil." [Limbus Infantum.]

[d] [Lib. de Merit. et Remiss. Peccator., lib. i. c. 28. § 55; Op. tom. x. p. 30. D, "Non est ullus ulli medius locus, ut possit esse nisi cum diabolo, qui non est cum Christo."]

[e] [Serm. clxi. cc. 3, 4, § 3, 4. (Op. tom. v. p. 776. B.—Serm. xviii. De Verbis Apostoli, in editt. before Bened.), "Eligat modo qui talis est, ubi desideret habitare, cum tempus est ut possit mutari; duæ quippe habitationes sunt, una in igne æterno, alia in regno æterno." And see also Serm. ccxciv. c. 3. § 3, aliter Serm. xiv. De Verb. Apost., Op. tom. v. p. 1184. A—D.]

[f] [Serm. ccxcv. § 5, in Append. Op. tom. v. p. 495. E. (Serm. ccxxxii. editt. before Bened.);—"Nemo se decipiat, Fratres; duo enim loca sunt et tertius non est ullus; qui cum Christo regnare non meruerit, cum diabolo absque dubitatione ullâ peribit."—not St. Augustin's according to the Bened. editors.]

[g] [§ 1 (Op. tom. vii. p. 645. F.), "Non est locus medius, ubi non sit in supplicio, qui illo non fuerit constitutus in regno."]

[h] [Bellarm., De Purgatorio, lib. i. c. 9. (Op. tom. i. p. 1832. C.).]

PART IV.

To conclude; infants unbaptized, according to St. Austin, must either be sheep or goats, either stand upon the right hand or upon the left, either hear, "Come ye blessed," or "Go ye cursed," either inherit a kingdom or be cast into "eternal fire prepared for the Devil and his angels." This is more than a mere loss of blessedness. But the Romanists do not, dare not say, that all infants unbaptized are "with the Devil," that they "perish with the Devil," that they are "in eternal fire[i]." And therefore we may conclude, on the other side, that they are "with Christ," that they enjoy an "eternal kingdom," where they reign with their Saviour; or at least, that some of them are crowned, some tormented, according to the good pleasure of God, Whose extraordinary help is then often found when the help of man doth fail.

[Matt. xxv. 34, 41.]

[The author's doctrine submitted to the Church.]

This is all which was then mentioned: which I have reduced to its heads; and which I take to be the doctrine of the soundest English divines, and which I believe to be the truth: saving always my canonical obedience to my spiritual Mother the Church of England, and in a higher degree to the Catholic Church, when it shall declare itself in a true and free œcumenical Council. But neither I, nor any Protestants, do believe, that the Church of Rome, including all other Churches of that Patriarchate or of its communion, is that Catholic Church. 983

[i] [See Bellarm., De Purgatorio, lib. ii. c. 6. (Op. p. 1867. A.),—"Est communis opinio Scholasticorum, limbum puerorum esse in loco Inferni altiore quam sit Purgatorium, *ita ut ad eum ignis non perveniat.*"]

DISCOURSE VI.

AN ANSWER

TO

TWO PAPERS,

BROUGHT BY CAPTAIN STEWARD,

JUNE 19, 1645;

BY

JOHN BRAMHALL, D.D.,

BISHOP OF DERRY.

AND

A LETTER TO MISS CHEUBIEN,

BY

THE SAME.

CONTENTS.

[Captain Steward's Papers.]

Page

I. [That the Protestants have no true Priests.] . . . 185

II. [That they have not the ministry of reconciliation.] . . 186

An Answer.

[The author of the papers an Englishman. . . . ib.

The questions started by him material. . . . . ib.

The first paper;—that our form of ordaining Priests is sufficient. . 187

The *essential* form of ordaining alone necessary, and retained by Protestants. . . . . ib.

The Protestant form lawful. . . . . ib.

The Romanist form not in use in all places at all times of the Church. . . . . ib.

The Protestant form gives power to offer evangelical Sacrifice. 188

The Protestant form does not give to Priests the power to ordain or confirm. 189

Roman orders more doubtful than English. . . . ib.

The second paper. 190

We acknowledge remission of sins in Baptism. . . ib.

And a ministerial power of remitting sins in Absolution. . ib.

What we dislike,—1. in their doctrine concerning Confession. ib.

————————2. in their practice. . . . 191

Letter to Miss Cheubien in the Nunnery.

[Concerning a personal conference, desired by Miss Cheubien and her friends, upon two questions selected by themselves, viz. Purgatory and Praying to the Saints.]. . . . . ib.

DISCOURSE VI.

AN ANSWER

TO

TWO PAPERS,

BROUGHT ME BY CAPTAIN STEWARD LAST NIGHT (I THINK FROM MR. ROBINSON), JUNE 19, 1645.

[First published at Dublin, A.D. 1676, among the author's collected works.]

[CAPTAIN STEWARD'S PAPERS.]

[I. That the Protestants have no true Priests.]

The Protestants have no true Priests, because they have not the form of ordaining Priests; which was and is in the Catholic Church, from whom they pretend to derive their Priesthood.

The form of their Ordination consists in these words, "Receive power of administering the Sacraments, and preaching the Word." But by these words is not given any power to sacrifice nor consecrate the Body of our Lord.

If you say, that by these words is given power to administer all the Sacraments, I disprove it: for then the simple Priests would have power to administer the Sacrament of Orders, and to make Priests; and to give the Sacrament of Confirmation. And so, to make them Priests, you prove them to be Bishops; which is contrary to the doctrine of the Pro-

PART IV.

testant Church, that holds a distinction between Bishops and Priests.

[II. That they have not the ministry of reconciliation.]

There is another part of "the ministry of reconciliation," consisting in the due administration of the Sacraments; which, being the proper Sacraments of the Gospel, must therefore necessarily have reference to the remission of sins. And so the ancient Fathers do hold, that the commission, John xx. 23, is executed by the ministers of Christ as well in Baptism as in Penitence: likewise, that the ministry only is man's, but the power is God's.

Aug., Quæst. in Levit., cap. 84[a], &c. (He cites ten places of the Fathers without the words).

AN ANSWER.

SIR,

[The author of the papers an Englishman.]

I cannot but take notice by the language, that the author is an Englishman: and surely our English Romish Priests do bestir themselves notably in these distracted times, to withdraw their countrymen from the communion of the Church of England; than which I believe the world hath no particular Church more orthodox, and in which sundry of their own learned writers do confess a possibility of salvation[b], that is, such as weigh the matter without prejudice. I know not how these distracted times may prepare some persons for 985
a change; but a generous nature, which would not easily leave a friend in distress, would be loth, upon such sublunary grounds, to bid farewell to their spiritual Mother.

[The questions started by him material.]

I commend the author thus far,—that he hath picked out two questions, which if they were as true as they are material (to wit, that we have not holy orders in our Church, nor the "ministry of the reconciliation"), he should not only gain those gentlewomen you mentioned, but all us, to fly over readily to his party. But if he fail, as I believe certainly that

[a] [Upon Levit. xxi. 15,—"Ego Dominus, Qui sanctifico eum," scil. "sacerdotem," — compared with Exod. xxix. 24, where it is said to Moses, "Et sanctificabis eum;"—"Quomodo ergo et Moyses sanctificat et Deus?"—Op. tom. iii. P. i. p. 524. B.]

[b] [See the Answ. to La Millet., vol. i. p. 79; and the Just Vindic., c. vi. ibid. pp. 198, 199: Discourses i, ii. Pt. i.]

he will, I expect no such matters from him, but only that he cease to trouble those whom he cannot better, and labour no more to draw them, or any others, out of God's blessing into the warm sun.

He argues thus.—

"They who have not the form of ordaining Priests, which was and is in the Catholic Church, have no true Priests; but the Protestants have not the form of ordaining Priests, which was and is in the Catholic Church; therefore they have no true Priests."

[The first paper:—That our form of ordaining Priests is sufficient.]

To his second proposition, I answer three ways.

1. By "the form of Ordination," he either understands the essential form, which gives a being to the thing done;—if he understand this form of Ordination, his proposition[c] is true, and the Protestants have the true form;—or else, by the form of ordaining, he understands all exterior and accessary rites; and thus it is not necessary, that the form or manner of ordaining be the same in all Churches, and so his proposition[c] is false. He cannot but know, that the form or manner of ordaining is not the same in the Eastern Churches and in the Western Churches; and yet he cannot deny, but that the Eastern Churches, as Grecia, Russia, &c., have true Priests, and a valid Ordination.

[The *essential* form of ordaining alone necessary, and retained by Protestants.]

2. Secondly, I distinguish between *the* form of ordaining, and *a* form of ordaining. "*The* form" implies, or seems to imply, that there is but one certain precise manner or ritual of Ordination in the whole Catholic Church. This I altogether deny. But "*a* form" only implies one lawful form, of sundry that have been used in the Catholic Church. This the Protestants have; and more warrantable by Scriptures, Fathers, and Councils, than their own.

[The Protestant form lawful.]

3. Thirdly, these words—"which is and was used"—would be more clearly expressed. First, "Which is used." How? Only in a part of the Catholic Church, or in the whole Catholic Church? And, "Which was used;" that is, either of late times, since innovations were crept into the Church

[The Romanist form not in use in all places at all times of the Church.]

[c] [I. e. the major of the two premisses in the syllogism above given, technically called "the proposition;" scil. that "they who have not the form of ordaining Priests which was and is in the Catholic Church, have no true Priests." Bramhall would have expressed his meaning more clearly, had he written "his *first* proposition."]

PART IV.

of Rome, or of ancient times, and since the days of the Apostles. If he understand only a part of the Catholic Church, and later ages, it will do him little good. If he understand the whole Catholic Church, and all ages including the primitive times, it would advantage his cause much. But he will never be able to prove, that their form is such a form.

[The Protestant form gives power to offer evangelical Sacrifice.]

In the next section, the author, waving his former argument, which was drawn from the practice of the Catholic Church, endeavours to prove, that the Protestant form of Ordination is not sufficient. His argument may be thus reduced.—

"That form which gives not power to sacrifice nor consecrate the Body of Christ, is not sufficient."

This proposition is granted.

"But," saith he, "the Protestants' form gives no power to sacrifice nor to consecrate the Body of Christ."

This proposition is denied; which he endeavours to prove thus.—

"This form, 'Receive power to administer the Sacraments, and to preach the Word,' doth give no power to sacrifice or consecrate the Body of the Lord: but this is the Protestants' form of Ordination, 'Receive power to administer the Sacraments, and to preach the Word:' therefore," &c.

I answer, first, to the minor; that these words do not contain the whole form of the Protestants' Ordination, for there is likewise imposition of hands, both of the Bishop and the Presbyters there present, to the end to admit the person ordained into the office of a Priest or Presbyter in the Church of God.

Secondly, I answer to the major; these words do give sufficient power to consecrate; for how should he administer, that cannot consecrate? and also to sacrifice, so far as an evangelical Priest doth or can sacrifice; that is, a commemorating sacrifice, or a representative sacrifice, or to apply the Sacrifice of Christ by such means as God hath appointed. But for any sacrifice that is meritorious or propitiatory by its own power or virtue, distinct from the Sacrifice of Christ, I hope the author will not say it. If he do, he will have few partners. 986

In the third section he varies from both the former. There he thinks the Protestant ordination gives too little, here he thinks it gives too much; to wit, a power of Ordination and Confirmation, which Priests are not capable of. The argument may be reduced thus.—

[The Protestant form does not give to Priests the power to ordain or confirm.]

"If these words, 'Receive power to administer the Sacraments,' do give power to administer all the Sacraments, then they give power to simple Priests to ordain and confirm. But they do not give power to simple Priests to ordain and confirm. Therefore they give not power to administer all the Sacraments."

The minor is proved, "Because to ordain and confirm are proper to Bishops;" therefore, &c.

To this I answer, that taking the word Sacrament in that large sense which the Church of Rome doth, I might grant all that is here said without any prejudice to the Church of England, which neither suffers simple Priests to ordain nor confirm. But I answer, secondly, that in a strict sense (as the word Sacrament is taken by the Protestant Churches) neither Confirmation nor yet Ordination are Sacraments. It is folly, for Ordination especially, to wrangle about the word, when we agree upon the thing. Thirdly, I answer, that the word "all" is added by the author more than is contained in the Protestant form; which can intend no more or other Sacraments than such as are in the power of a simple Priest to administer. Lastly, the author may meet with some, and I doubt not hath met with sundry, as well Protestants as of his own party, who distinguish between the power and the right to exercise power, between an original incapacity and an ecclesiastical restraint.

[Roman orders more doubtful than English.]

But in so clear a case I need not make use of doubtful speculations to justify the Church of England; which is more certain that she hath true orders than the Church of Rome itself, both for an uninterrupted succession of pastors and for a lawful form of ordaining; whereas the validity of their orders doth depend, according to their own doctrine, upon the intention of him that doth ordain, so as if any one or more Bishops, since the days of the Apostles to this day, had no intention to ordain, all the orders derived from thence are void. And the author himself hath no true certainty,

PART IV.

according to his own grounds, of his own Priesthood, or [that] that which he consecrates is the Body of Christ. But we are confident, not only that the Bishop's inanimadvertency of what he is about,—even his contrary intention being admitted, to confer no orders,—cannot deprive us of that love-token which Christ sends to His spouse by a bad messenger.

I commend the author's ingenuity, that he doth not revive those impudent fictions of the Nag's-Head, and our first reformers consecrating one another without a calling, so contrary to the known truth and to the records of the kingdom. When the author shall produce either Scripture or ancient Councils or Fathers for himself (as it were requisite he should do, who labours to draw one away from the communion of the Church which they have been baptized in), he shall receive a larger answer. Thus much (for the present) of the former paper.

[The second paper.]

The other paper is concerning a weighty point, that is, "the ministry of reconciliation." But I see not how it is intended against us. For, first, we acknowledge, that sins are remitted by Baptism; that thereby "we are made the children of God, the members of Christ, and inheritors of the kingdom of Heaven[d];" that God is not wanting to His own ordinances, when we do not set a bar against ourselves. [Secondly,] we do acknowledge, that in Penitence, pastors of the Church have a dependent ministerial power of loosing from sin; but that [the] primitive imperial original power is God's. God's power is absolute,—"*ad sententiandum simpliciter*,"—without *ifs;* man's power is only conditional,—"*ad sententiandum si*,"—to loose a man, *if* he be truly contrite and aptly disposed.

[We acknowledge remission of sins in Baptism.]

[And a ministerial power of remitting sins in Absolution.]

As for the Fathers cited, since I neither know the particular words nor the end why they are cited, it is not to be expected that any man should answer to he knows not what. 987
If the author will produce any thing to the purpose, I will shew him what we dislike.

[What we dislike,—1. in their doctrine concerning Confession.]

First in their doctrine.—1. That a private, particular, and plenary enumeration of all sins, is instituted by Christ, and absolutely necessary to salvation. 2. That it is satisfactory to God for lesser sins, not only by way of complacence, but

[d] [Catechism.]

by way of merit. 3. That it is made a colour for treasons to be committed, as Powder-treason.

[2. In their practice.]

Next for their practice.—1. That they first absolve a man, and then bind him to make satisfaction; quite contrary to reason and the practice of the ancient Church. 2. The imposing ludibrious penances, as a few *Pater-nosters* for the most enormous sins. As Chaucer saith of the Friar, that 'he [knew how] to impose an easy penance where he looked for [a] good pittance[e].' 3. In the confitents, that it is reduced to a customary formality, as if it were the ending of an old score to begin a new.

TO MISS CHEUBIEN, IN THE NUNNERY.

MADAM,

[Concerning a personal conference, desired by Miss Cheubien and her friends, upon two questions selected by themselves, viz. Purgatory and Praying to the Saints.]

That office which you are so thankful for, was no other than a branch of Christian duty, with a little mixture of civility; and now that my obligation is increased by my promise, I may not be wanting according to my power, either to the cause, to you, or to myself. Only be pleased to give me leave to represent two things, which passed at your grate: the one, my extraordinary affairs for a week; the other, the manner of conference; which I desired then, and do expect now, to be first in writing. Conferences in words do often engender heat, or produce extravagancies or mistakes; writing is a way more calm, more certain, and such as a man cannot depart from. But yet it was with this reservation, that after the business was driven to a head, if we did not agree concerning our authority, then to have a meeting, and the books present. Now, Madam, to these questions which you have singled out, after which you say you are most inquisitive; pardon me if I apprehend amiss;—it seemeth to me, that the discourse and invitation of that party have had a special influence upon your desires, to determine them to this subject, being not of so great concernment as sundry others, because they think they have more colour in antiquity for these than them. But, for your satisfaction, I accept

[e] [Chaucer, Canterb. Tales, Prologue, 223, 224.]

PART IV.

these; and do expect their proofs, first out of the Scriptures, then out of the Fathers. Let us hear, first, what the Law saith, and then, what St. Augustin or St. Hierome say; to which they shall receive my answers, with our principal proofs. Let us have a meeting, in God's name, before an equal number of either party. And that this manner of conference may neither prove tedious nor impertinent, I desire that ingenuity from them, which I shall endeavour to observe, that is, to cite no Father against his own sense; as, for instance, to cite them who held "secret receptacles[f]," which are directly incompatible either with purgatory or praying to the Saints; or to cite some authorities which concern the fire of conflagration instead of purgatory-fire[g] (yet that begins when purgatory ends, according to the doctrine of the Roman Church[h]); or to cite prayers with commemorations, or thanksgivings, or rhetorical apostrophes. Thus much I am bold to present beforehand, that we may avoid confused generalities on both sides; and not speak now, when controversies have been debated to the full, as our predecessors did a hundred years since, before they understood one another's sense. And, lastly, Madam, I beg this favour from you, that this business may be managed with all the privacy and all the courtesy that may be. I will trouble you no longer now, but pray to God to give us all a right understanding, first of His will, and then one of another. And, &c.

[f] ["Abdita receptacula." Aug., De Octo Dulcit. Quæst. iii. § 4; Enchirid., c. xix.: Op. tom. vi. pp. 95. D, 174. C.]

[g] [See above in the Answ. to La Millet., vol. i. p. 59. note o; Disc. i. Pt. i.]

[h] [Bellarm., De Purgatorio, lib. ii. c. 9. (Op. tom. i. p. 1875. B).]

DISCOURSE VII.

PROTESTANTS' ORDINATION DEFENDED;

OR

AN ANSWER

TO

THE TWENTIETH CHAPTER

OF THE

GUIDE OF FAITH,

OR

THE THIRD PART OF THE ANTIDOTE

OF

S. N., DOCTOR OF DIVINITY.

BY

JOHN BRAMHALL, D.D.,

BISHOP OF DERRY.

CONTENTS.

Page

[The question proposed;—whether the Church of England have holy Orders; i. e. whether it be a Church. 199

S. N.'s First Argument to the contrary;—from 1 Edw. VI. c. 2. . 200

That statute respects election, not ordination. . . . 201
Election by Deans and Chapters neither essential to Episcopacy nor evermore used in the Church. . . . . ib.
Either in England; . . . . . ib.
Or elsewhere. 203
Summary of the argument. . . . . ib.

S. N.'s] Second Argument [against our Orders;—because our consecrators, being revolters from the Catholic Church, heretics, and obstinate schismatics, were suspended from their Episcopal functions. . . 204

Retracted by himself in the next paragraph. . . . ib.
i. The Protestant Bishops not revolters from the Catholic Church. 205
ii ——————— not heretics, ... 206
iii. The English Protestants not obstinate schismatics. . . ib.
iv. The authority of the Protestant Bishops not suspended by the Catholic Church. 208
v. Their Episcopal character indeleble, even had they been lawfully suspended. 209

S. N.'s Third Argument against our Orders;—from the presumed want of a right intention in conferring them. 210

Dangerous consequences of the Romish doctrine of Intention. . ib.
i. As regards Holy Baptism. . . . . ib.
ii. As regards the Holy Eucharist. 211
iii. As regards Ordination. . . . . ib.
The nice distinctions by which it is explained away. . ib.
i. The interior intention of the consecrant not necessary. . 212

Page

ii. Protestants have an implicit intention to do what the Catholic Church doth. 212
iii. Protestants intend to confer power both of consecrating and of remitting sin. 213

S. N.'s Fourth Argument against our Orders;—from our alleged want of the true matter and form of Ordination. 214

The Romish doctrine of a double matter and form in Ordination. . 215
Contrary to the institution of it by Christ. . . . 216
———————- primitive Church. . . . . ib.
———————- practice of the Greek Church. . . . ib.
———————- doctrine of many among their own writers. . 217
S. N.'s argument for it from Holy Scripture. . . . ib.
———————————— Tradition. 218
———————————— the Council of Florence. . . 219
S. N.'s attack upon Mr. Mason. . . . . ib.
His triple mistake. 220
The Protestants have not "pared away" all manner of Sacrifice. 221
Nor all manner of Shrift, or Confession and Absolution. . 222
Corruptions in the Romish doctrine respecting Shrift. . ib.
Corruptions in the Romish practice respecting Shrift. . 223

S. N.'s Fifth Argument against our Orders;—that our Priests are neither of the order of Aaron nor of that of Melchisedek, and are therefore no Priests at all. 224

Rebuked. 225
Retorted. . . . . ib.
Answered. . . . . ib.

S. N.'s Sixth Argument against our Orders;—that they were devised and conferred in the first instance by secular persons. . . 226

An ordination otherwise valid, not rendered invalid by the acceptance or ratification of the temporal power. 227
S. N.'s proofs, that secular persons "primarily conferred" our Orders. 228
i. The statute of Edw. VI. (and commissions taken out under Hen. VIII.) attributing spiritual jurisdiction to the king as its fountain and source. . . . . ib.
The Parliament not a merely temporal court. . . 229
Jurisdiction a distinct thing from holy Orders. . . 230
What kind of jurisdiction in things ecclesiastical is attributed to the kings of England. . . . ib.
The meaning of their title of Head of the English Church. 231
ii. The royal letters patent conferring Bishoprics; i. e. the benefices. 232

Page

iii. Henry the Eighth's Commission to Cromwell. . . 232
iv. The Statute of the 1 Eliz. c. 1. 233
S. N.'s proofs, that secular persons "wholly devised" our holy Orders. 235
i, ii. The Statutes, 3 Edw. VI. c. 12, and 8 Eliz. c. 1. . . ib.
Answer. . . . . ib.
iii. The Queen's Dispensations in the case of Abp. Parker and the other Bishops consecrated at that time. . . 238
S. N.'s argument inconclusive. . . . . ib.
True grounds of these dispensations. . . . 239

S. N.'s] Seventh Argument [against our Orders;—from the alleged opinions of our lawyers against their validity. 242

S. N.'s] Eighth Argument [against our Orders;—from the fiction of the Nag's Head Consecration. 244

S. N.'s] Ninth Objection [to our Orders;—from the testimony of our own writers. 246

i. The pleas of particular doctors, and in behalf of foreign Churches, no argument against the Church of England. . 247
ii. The weak pleas of voluntary advocates no disproof of a just position. . . . . ib.
iii. Romish orders might be said to be lost, because they were corrupted or abused. 248
iv. Or to be lost in England relatively to English subjects. . 249
Dr. Fulke. . . . . ib.
Dr. Whitaker. 250
Dr. Sutcliffe. . . . . ib.
Dr. Sparke. . . . . ib.
Of Dr. Whitaker's assertion, that we do not derive our Orders from the Church of Rome. 251
S. N.'s groundless triumphing. 254
The evidence of our ecclesiastical registers indisputable. . 255
In what sense the English Church believes the Pope to be an Antichrist, in what sense not. 256

S. N.'s] Tenth Objection [to our Orders;—that we have no mission or vocation. 258

Mission extraordinary and ordinary. 259
Protestants do not deny, that mission is necessary for pastors. . ib.
Whether Protestants have due mission or vocation. . . 261
i. Christ the source of all authoritative mission. . . 262

Page

ii. The Church the channel, through which by succession that mission is derived from Him to us. 262
iii. Such mission cannot be revoked by the Bishop, who is but the ministerial agent in conferring it. . . . 263
iv. Certain requisites to the actual exercise of such mission are within the sphere of secular authority. . . . ib.
These conclusions applied to answer S. N.'s question. . . 264

S. N.'s Concluding Argument, against the mission of our clergy;—that they have only private interpretation of Scripture, and therefore no infallible or authoritative rule of Faith. 265

S. N. hath wandered from the question—*who* are to preach, to the question—*what* they are to preach. 267
Particular Churches liable to degeneracy. 268
The Scriptures a rule of supernatural truths. . . . 269
To whom the interpretation of the Scriptures doth belong. . . ib.
The authority of our Reformers to interpret them. . . . 270
The manner of our Reformation. . . . . ib.
The subject of our Reformation. 271
The extent of our Reformation. . . . . ib.
Promise of infallibility belongs to the Universal Church, not to particular Churches. 272
Articles of Faith to be distinguished from particular truths. . 273
Infallibility claimed by the Romanist for the Church of Rome, and denied by him to the Protestants. 274
His double error herein. 275
i. The Romanists divided as to who their infallible proponent is. ib.
ii. And far from infallibly certain, upon their own grounds, whether the Pope be truly Pope or no. . . . 276
iii. And far from agreed as to what the infallibility is, which they (part of them) ascribe to him.] 277

DISCOURSE VII.

AN ANSWER

TO THE TWENTIETH CHAPTER OF THE

GUIDE OF FAITH[a].

[FIRST PUBLISHED AT DUBLIN, A.D. 1676, IN THE AUTHOR'S COLLECTED WORKS[b].]

[The question proposed;—whether the Church of England have holy Orders; i.e. whether it be a Church.]

THIS Chapter, of all the book, is that which principally concerneth the Church of England, wherein the author endeavoureth to prove, that we have no holy Orders: which if he be able to perform, we will acknowledge that we are no Church; seeing that to the being of a Church, it is necessary these three things concur; first, a pastor; secondly, a flock; thirdly, a dependance of this flock upon that pastor. The five first sections, and part of the sixth, are wanting in my copy; which, as it seemeth to me, by the close of the sixth section, and by the whole discourse following, have been

[a] ["The Guide of Faith: or, A Third Part of the Antidote against the Pestiferous writings of all English Sectaries, and in particular, against D. Bilson, D. Fulke, D. Reynolds, D. Whitaker, D. Field, D. Sparke, D. White, and M. Mason, the chief upholders, some of Protestancie, and some of Puritanisme; wherein the Truth, and perpetual Visible Succession, of the Catholique Roman Church, is clearly Demonstrated—by S. N., Doctour of Divinity. 4to. n. p. 1621. permissu Superiorum." The first and second Parts of the book were published, with a trifling variation in the title, in 1615, and republished in 1622. S. N. are the initials of Dr. Sylvester Norris, an English Jesuit, who died about the year 1630 (Dodd, Ch. Hist., Pt. V. bk. ii. art. 5, vol. ii. p. 402). He was at Douay in 1606; but passed the latter part of his life, and wrote his books, in England.]

[b] [This Answer was written by Bramhall abroad and therefore after 1644 (see below p. 228. note j), but before 1654, as it is mentioned in his Just Vindication, c. ix. (vol. i. pp. 272, 273) Disc. ii. Pt. i. It is obviously (see p. 246. note o, below) of earlier composition than his other tract on the same subject, The Consecration and Succession of Protestant Bishops Vindicated, &c., Disc. v. Pt. i.; which was written and first published in 1658.]

PART IV.

spent in vapouring, and light velitations, rather than in the solid stating of the question, which is not the use of our modern controvertists. In the seventh section the author begins his proofs[c].

[S. N.'s First Argument to the contrary;—from 1 Edw. VI. c. 2.]

1. His first proof is taken from the Statute of 1 Edw. VI. cap. 2:—that "from thenceforth no *Congé d' Eslire* be granted, nor election of any Archbishop or Bishop made by the Dean and Chapter, but when any Archbishoprics or Bishoprics be void, the King may at all times confer the same to whom he shall think fit by his letters patent[d]." From whence S. N. infers, that "the Bishops of those days wanted their canonical election[e]."

I am not so well read in the laws of England, as to know whether there ever were any such repealed abrogated statute. But this I know right well, that the universal practice of England is to the contrary, and that *Congés d' Eslire* are duly granted upon all vacancies: so as there was no need for Mr. Mason to forge any records to that purpose, when every registry in the kingdom could afford him sufficient store of precedents. Howbeit, I will yield more than perhaps the author knows, that in Ireland there is such a law now in force, and that accordingly Bishops are nominated by the king by his letters patent. Admitting then, but not granting, that it was sometimes so in England, what will S. N. conclude from thence? that they "were not canonically elected."

I answer, first, the question is not whether they were

[c] [In the first six sections of chapter xx. (pp. 177-182), S. N. argues (after noticing such Protestants as disclaimed succession altogether), 1. that English Bishops wanted true succession, as being thrust into sees not vacant, viz. at the accession of Elizabeth, 2. that they wanted "conformity of doctrine; which is likewise necessary to true succession," and 3. that they wanted true "election;" which last point he proceeds to attempt to prove in sect. 7, by the argument answered above in the text]

[d] [This statute was passed in the beginning of Edward's reign, on the very natural inference, that election by Deans and Chapters had been rendered a mere cumbrous nullity by the 25 Hen. VIII. c. 20, which enforced the Royal nomination under pain of a premunire. It was repealed 1 Mary, Sess. 2. c. 2, and happily not restored by Elizabeth; but it had been acted upon from Sept. 1548 to Edward's death in 1553. See vol. iii. p. 66, note k, of the present edition of Bramhall's Works, and the Preface to the same volume (in fin.). It will be seen also from vol. i. p. cxvi. note o, that Bramhall had no objection to the provisions of the statute practically, any more than he had theoretically.]

[e] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 7. p. 183. S. N. affirms, that this statute was "re-established" by Queen Elizabeth, which was not the case.]

canonically elected, but whether they were validly ordained. All men know the difference between an office and a benefice, between an ordination and an election; between the ordination of a particular Bishop, and the nomination to a particular Bishopric. They themselves do often confer the Episcopal Order to suffragans, without any election at all, even whilst the Church is full; and in their censures, do many times suspend a man from his benefice, not from his office. Because a lay-patron doth bestow a rectory upon an incumbent, doth the incumbent therefore derive his holy Orders from his patron? Many Roman Catholic Bishops, yea, and Popes also, have not been canonically elected: will he give me leave to conclude thence, that there are no holy Orders in the Church of Rome? This is an argument from the staff to the corner, drawn from Tenterden Steeple to Goodwin Sands. Holy Orders may be valid and good, though the election were naught, or not at all. So he concludes clearly beside the question.

Discourse VII.

[That statute respects election, not ordination.]

989

Secondly, doth he think, that it is essential to Episcopacy, that Bishops be elected by Deans and Chapters, or that this form was used evermore in the Church? He must pardon us, if we dissent from him in this also. That election may be canonical in one place, which is not canonical in another. That election may be canonical to-day, which is not canonical to-morrow; if the laws and constitutions of a kingdom be altered in the interim. Bishops were sometimes elected by the people, sometimes by the clergy in general[e], not always by Chapters or conclaves. Yea, sometimes they were nominated by the Christian emperor[f]. And yet all these were ever accounted and received in the Church, without the least scruple, as lawful Bishops; not only for their Orders, which is the point now in question, but also for their titles, which is not in question. He who shall peruse the old laws and statutes of England, will find, that it is no new thing for the kings of England to nominate to Bishoprics, long before the statute of Edward the Sixth, or before England had

[Election by Deans and Chapters neither essential to Episcopacy nor evermore used in the Church.]

[Either in England;]

[e] [See Bingh., Orig. Eccles., IV. i. ii.; for a summary of authorities upon the much disputed question respecting the share of the people in the primitive times in the election of Bishops.]

[f] [Compare Bellarmine's admissions, De Clericis, lib. i. c. 9. (Op. tom. i. pp. 1401. C—1403. D).]

PART IV.

shaken hands with Rome[g]; and in their Parliaments to restrain the exorbitant usurpations of Roman Bishops, when they attempted to dispose of ecclesiastical dignities by way of Provision[h]. That was a violation of the canons indeed, whilst they were in force. So is not this, when the canons are legally abrogated by the consent and concurrence of the Bishops in their persons, and the whole body of the kingdom by their proctors. The very writ of *Congé d' Eslire*[i], or leave to choose, itself shews, that the Chapters could not choose a Bishop without the prince's license first obtained. And good reason. He is the founder and patron of the benefice. Those over whom they exercise jurisdiction, are his subjects. No man is so much concerned in the choice of good Bishops, as he who is virtually the whole commonwealth. If S. N. would deign to lift up his eyes beyond these present distractions, he should find, that the nomination and investiture of Bishops in England doth belong to the imperial Crown by law and custom immemorial; and that it hath been so practised, both before the Conquest, and since, as is recorded by all our historians every where[k]; as Willielmus Malmesburiensis[l], Matthæus Westmonasteriensis[m], Florentius Wigorniensis[n],

[g] [See above in Schism Guarded, Sect. i. c. 5; vol. ii. pp. 403-409; Disc. iv. Pt. i.]

[h] [See Schism Guarded, ibid. pp. 407, 408.]

[i] [For an account of the Congé d'Eslire, see the authorities referred to above in vol. iii. p. 66. note k.]

[k] [See Twysden's Histor. Vindic. of the Church of England, c. iii. § 58-71. pp. 53-64.]

[l] [Gul. Malmesb., De Gestis Reg. Angl., lib. ii. c. 8. p. 57, and elsewhere. See Schism Guarded, as before quoted p. 407; and Mason, De Minist. Angl., lib. iv. c. xii.; ed. 1625: and for the whole question, Thomassin, Vetus et Nova Eccl. Disciplina, P. II. lib. ii.]

[m] [Matthew of Westminster is far from being a willing witness on the regal side of the question. He very seldom mentions the subject at all, relating the appointments of Bishops in general terms which make neither way. In an. 1101 however (Flor. Hist., lib. ii. pp. 22, 23. fol. Lond. 1590), he narrates, that "Rex Henricus dedit Episcopatum Herefordensem Kemelino sine electione factâ contra novi Concilii decreta" (scil at Rome under Paschal II.); "ipsumque publice investivit, quod et contra juramentum suum fecit; juraverat enim solenniter se primo libertatem Ecclesiæ servare illibatam et bonas leges regni quæ statutæ erant et observatæ tempore Sancti Eadwardi:"—see the Just Vindic., c. iv. (vol. i. pp. 135, 136), Disc. ii. Pt. i.—And in an. 1107 (ibid. pp. 25, 26), he sets down the account of the compromise between Henry I. and Anselm, viz. that the king should surrender the right of investiture by ring and staff, but retain his claim to homage.]

[n] [Florence of Worcester affords unquestionable testimony to the points in question. E. g. in an. 1051. p. 420 (Chronicon, 4to. Lond. 1592), "Abbas Abbandoniensis Lundoniæ præsulatum suscepit; sed antequam esset consecratus, a rege Eadwardo" (Edw. the Confessor) "est ejectus."—In an. 1062, ibid. p. 422; "Fit unanimis consensus tam cleri quam etiam totius plebis in ejus electione" (viz. of Wulstan to the see of Worcester), "rege videlicet annuente ut quem sibi vellent præsulem eligerent."—In an. 1070, ibid. p. 435,

Gulielmus Neubrigensis[o]: all which is so evident, that foreign lawyers take notice of it, both *de jure*, that it may be so, and *de facto*, that it is so; joining in this privilege with the kings of England, the kings of Hungary, France, Apulia[p], to which number others join the kings of Spain and Scotland[q]. We may add the Emperors also, both Eastern and Western; who in ancient times have had the nomination and investiture, but always the confirmation, of the Pope himself[r]. I hope S. N. will not be so presumptuous, to censure Justinian, Charlemagne, and others; as he doth the English monarchs. Neither was this practice any usurpation in them, as the Pope's is now; but approved by the canons and constitutions of Councils, of Popes, and received into the body of the law. DISCOURSE VII. [Or elsewhere.]

To lay all this together.—Here is a law alleged, which (for any thing appearing to the contrary) was repealed, before ever it was executed; a law, which speaks only of the nomination of Bishops, which is not in question, and not a word of their Ordination, which is in question; a law, which restores to the imperial diadem that power, which the Christian emperors of the primitive times practised, both in the Eastern and Western Empire, which the most Christian King of France and other monarchs of the Roman communion do [Summary of the argument.]

repeatedly, "Rex" (William the Conq.) "dedit episcopatum,"—"dedit abbatias."—In an. 1070, ibid. p. 436; "Rex, accito de Normannia Lanfranco, . . Archiepiscopum constituit Cantuariensis ecclesiæ."—In an. 1092, ibid. p. 458; "Antistes Remigius qui licentiâ Regis Gulielmi Senioris Episcopatus sedem de Dorcaceastrâ mutaverat ad Lindicolinam," &c.—In an. 1092, ibid. p. 459; William Rufus "Anselmo.. Dorobernensem Archiepiscopatum et Cancellario suo Roberto Lincolnensem dedit præsulatum."—In an. 1099, ibid. p. 469; William Rufus "Randulfo Dunhelmensem Episcopatum dedit."—And in ann. 1103, 1107, ibid. pp. 475, 478, he narrates the compromise between Henry and Anselm as before stated. Nor is there a word in his Chronicle, or the semblance of one, tending in the other direction, unless this,—that certain Papal messengers are mentioned as accidentally present when Wulstan was elected to the see of Worcester, and as joining "auctoritate suâ" in overcoming his reluctance to accept the office.]

[o] [Gulielmus Neubrigensis supplies evidence a little more home to the question than Matt. Westminster; although even his testimony is very scanty, as he rarely mentions appointments to Bishoprics at all. In lib. i. c. 4. of his Hist. sive Chronicon Rer. Anglic. (tom. i. p. 29. ed. Hearne), he relates, that Henry II. "fratri ejus dedit abbatiam Glastoniensem ac postmodum Episcopatum adjecit Wintoniensem:" and in lib. i. c. 6. (ibid. p. 34), that the same King "Rogerum ad Salesbiriensem provexit Episcopatum."]

[p] [Car. Molinæus, Senatus-Consulta Franciæ cont. Abusus Paparum, § 35 (Op. in fin. tom. iii. p. 498. fol. Paris. 1612); and Stylus Antiquus Curiæ Parliamenti Parisiensis, P. iv. De Jur. et Privil. Regni Francorum, Priv. 2. (Op. tom. iii. p. 1915).]

[q] [See Pinsson, Hist. Pragm. Sanct. et Concordat., p. 743. a, in fin. Comment. Guimierii in Sanct. Pragm., fol. Paris. 1666.]

[r] [See above in Schism Guarded, sect. i. c. v. (vol. ii. pp. 402, 403), Disc. iv. Pt. i.; and authorities there quoted.]

PART IV.

in effect retain at this day; a law, agreeing with the canons and constitutions of Councils; a law, rather declarative than operative: yet, out of a confidence in this impertinent allegation, this author is bold to impute a vehement suspicion of "wilful forgery[s]" to all the registers of England, to style their records "secret partial unknown records[t]," though they 990
be kept by sworn notaries, in public offices, whither all persons have free access; though there be an exact harmony of all the notaries and records, of different places and ages[u]. O partiality! how dost thou blind man's eyes?

[S. N.'s] Second Argument [against our Orders: —because our consecrators being revolters from the Catholic Church, heretics, and obstinate schismatics, were suspended from their Episcopal functions.]

2. His second reason, set down in form of an answer, is contained in the 8th section:—that our "consecrators, after their revolt from the Catholic Church, and obstinate persisting in schism and heresy, were excommunicated and suspended from the due execution and practice of their functions; so that, although they had been before true and lawful Bishops" (as he confesseth truly that Cranmer was, but denieth unjustly that any others were), "yet then, their authority being taken away by the Catholic Church (which, as she had power to give, had power also to restrain and disannul their jurisdiction), they could not lawfully communicate unto others that which was suspended in themselves[x]." To which purpose he produceth two testimonies out of St. Athanasius, to prove that they are not to be "accounted in the number of true Bishops, who are consecrated by heretics[y]."

[Retracted by himself in the next paragraph.]

This specious argument deserves but a short answer, [seeing[z]] it is retracted by the author himself in the next paragraph. Thus he there;—"I grant, that the character is indeleble," that is, cannot be taken away by any sentence of

[s] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 7. p. 183;—because Congé d'Eslires were "graunted forth" according to the Registers, "when by the tenour of that law they could not be graunted:" an assertion, it need hardly be said, which is not true.]

[t] [Ibid., § 6. p. 183.]

[u] [See the Consecration and Succession of Protestant Bishops Defended, c. v, and Table I. in the Appendix, vol. iii. pp. 71-94, 216-231: Disc. v. Pt. i.]

[x] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 8. pp. 183, 184.]

[y] [S. Athanas..] in Concil. Arim. et Seleuc. [§ 13. (Op. tom. i. P. ii. p. 727. B, C. ed. Bened.)—"Πῶς ἔτι δύνανται αὐτοὶ εἶναι Ἐπίσκοποι, εἰ παρ' αἱρετικῶν, ὡς αὐτοὶ διαβάλλουσι, κατεστάθησαν;"—speaking of Eudoxius and Acacius and their party at the Council of Seleucia. The other passage quoted by S. N. is from a letter of Pope Julius, ap. Athanas. Apol. cont. Arianos, § 24 (Op. tom. i. P. i. p. 144. E),—"'Αδύνατον γὰρ τὴν κατάστασιν Σεκούνδου τοῦ 'Αρειανοῦ ἐν τῇ Καθολικῇ Ἐκκλησίᾳ ἰσχύσαι."]

[z] ["being" in the folio edition, which appears to be a misprint.]

suspension or excommunication, "and that alone is sufficient, if the consecrator's intention be also right and if he use the [true] matter and form [essentially] required thereunto[a]." If "the character alone be sufficient," to what purpose is this argument? or to what purpose doth he cite Athanasius, both contrary to [his[b]] meaning and contrary to his own conscience, to prove that which himself acknowledgeth to be false? But the father speaketh not of the validity, but of the lawful exercise, of holy Orders, as the canons of the Church then were. If no ordinations be valid which have been received immediately from Arian Bishops, it is much to be feared, that a great part of Christendom want personal succession, ever since "the world mourned, and admired to see itself turned Arian[c]." What is become of the author's Christian, or English, ingenuity, to cite an author contrary to his own knowledge?

But to give him yet a more particular answer.

[i. The Protestant Bishops not revolters from the Catholic Church.]

i. First, I deny, that the Protestant Bishops did "revolt from the Catholic Church." Nay, they are more Catholic in that, than the Roman Catholics themselves[d]; maintaining a communion, for the foundations and principles of Christian religion, both with the Western and Eastern Churches, whom the Church of Rome excommunicates from the society of the mystical Body of Christ, limiting the Church to Rome and such places as depend upon it, as the Donatists did of old to Afric[e]. It is true, the Protestants separated themselves from the communion of the Roman Church; yet not absolutely, nor in such fundamentals and other truths as she retains, but respectively, in her errors, superstructions, and innovations[f]. And they left it with the same mind, that one would leave his father's or his brother's house, when it is infected with the plague: with prayers for their recovery, and with desire to return again, so soon as it is free, and that may be done with safety[f]. This was not to forsake the Church of

[a] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 9. p. 184. Bramhall had omitted the word "essentially," and for "true" written "same," unless it was a misprint.]

[b] ["this" in the folio edition, by an obvious misprint.]

[c] ["Ingemuit totus orbis et Arianum se esse miratus est." Hieron., Adv. Lucifer., Op. tom. iv. P. ii. p. 300.]

[d] [See Just Vindic., c. ix.; vol. i. p. 257; Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

[e] [Cf. S. Aug., Cont. Litter. Petilian., lib. ii. c. 38. § 91; Op. tom. ix. p. 247. F: and Lib. de Unit., cc. 16, 17. § 42—44; ibid. pp. 367, 368.]

[f] [See Just Vindic., c. vi.; vol. i. p. 199; Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

Rome, but to provide for themselves. "Come out of her [, My] people, lest ye be partakers of her sins, and taste of her plagues." [Rev. xviii. 4.] It is truly called the grand imposture of the world, to obtrude upon us the Roman Church for the Catholic Church.

[ii. The Protestant Bishops not heretics.]

ii. Secondly, I deny, that the Protestant Bishops were "heretics." Wherein I am not alone, but have sundry of their great Rabbies to side with me:—"The Protestants are no heretics, neither are they excommunicate," saith the author of the Monarchomachia or Image of both Churches[g]. There are but three ways to make a heretic: first, to reject something which God hath evidently commanded to be believed under pain of damnation; or, secondly, to hold some such errors, which are directly contrary to the rule of faith, and virtually imply a negation of some article of the Creed; or, thirdly, to err with obstinacy, not willing to embrace the truth, though it were sufficiently proposed. But, on the contrary, if we make the Word of God to be the standard and seal of our religion, if we constantly maintain all things, which the Holy Apostles, or blessed Athanasius, or the Nicene Fathers, have delivered as necessary to salvation to be believed, if we swerve willingly in nothing from the analogy of faith, if we be ready to shed our blood for the least particular of saving truth; I see no cause, why I may not wish, if this be heresy, that we were all heretics.

[iii. The English Protestants not obstinate schismatics.]

iii. Thirdly, I deny, that the English Protestants did "obstinately persist in schism," or that they were at all 991
guilty of schism. There are two kinds of schismatical Churches[i]. The first those, which absolutely forsake the communion of other Churches, and deny them to be the Churches of Christ; as the Donatists did of old, and the Anabaptists do now. Secondly, those, which forsake their proper place in the mystical Body of Christ; for this also causeth a disturbance, [and a] schism in the body, as if

[g] ["It is a false surmise, that we hold all Protestantes generally for Heretikes and excommunicate persons." Jerusalem and Babel, or, The Image of Both Churches, being a Treatise Historically discussing, whether Catholikes or Protestants be the better Subjects, by P. D. M. (a physician of the name of Dr. Matthew Patenson), Part ii. tit. 3. § 20. p. 573. 2nd. edition Lond. 1653, and p. 410. 1st. edit. Tournay 1623. The title of Part i. in the first edition is "Babel or Monarchomachia."]

[i] [See above in the Just Vindic., c. ii. (vol. i. p. 108), c. viii. (ibid. p. 246); Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

an inferior member should assume to itself the place of the head. The Church of Rome is accused to be guilty of both these kinds of schism[k]: first, for separating herself from the communion of the Churches of Grecia, Russia, Armenia, Abyssinia, and all the Protestant Churches; secondly, and much more, for refusing to be a fellow member with other Churches in the body of the universal Church, and challenging to be the head, the root, the fountain of all other Churches. So a member will needs usurp the place of the head; the branch usurp the place of the root; the beam, of the sun; the stream, of the fountain[l]. What marvel, if this member decay, if this branch wither, this beam be obscure, this stream dried up? Let the Church of Rome be the sister of all Churches; let her be the Mother of many Churches; but 'the lady and mistress' of no Church[m]. On the other side, the Church of England is guilty of neither of these kinds of schism; neither arrogating to itself a dominion over other Churches, nor excluding them from a Christian communion. Notwithstanding the corruption of the Church of Rome, we believe that she may still bring forth children to God[n]; insomuch that this charity of ours is urged speciously against us by some,—that we confess possibility of salvation in the Church of Rome, but they deny it unto us, therefore theirs is the safer way. A strange construction,—to make the less charitable to be the more secure way to Heaven. But not to do them wrong, all of them are not of that mind. Many of their greatest scholars, and those who weigh the points most exactly, do afford, though unwillingly, the like favour to us, that we do to them. Take the Bishop of Chalcedon[o] for instance:—"If they" (that is, Protestants) "grant not salvation to such Papists as they account vincibly ignorant of Roman errors, but only to such as are invincibly ignorant of

[k] [Just Vindic., ibid.; and compare the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., Answ. to Pref. sect. 3. (vol. ii. p. 43), c. ii. sect. 6. (ibid. pp. 83, 84); Disc. iii. Pt. i.]

[l] [See St. Cyprian, De Unit. Eccles., Op. p. 108. ed. Fell; and below, p. 251. note g.]

[m] [S. Bernard., De Consider. Adv. Eugen. Pap., lib. iv. c. 7; ap. Goldast., S. Rom. Imp., tom. ii. p. 88.]

[n] [Compare the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalcedon, c. i. sect. 1. (vol. ii. pp. 54-58); Disc. iii. Pt. i.]

[o] Protest. Confess., p. 151. [See above in the Just Vindic., c. vi. vol. i. p. 198. note y; and in the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., c. vi. sect. 5. vol. ii. pp. 205, 206: Disc. ii. iii. Pt. i. The book itself is not to be met with. The other book of Dr. Smith's quoted in the same passages,—Distinct. of Fundamentals and Non-Fundamentals,—is correctly quoted.]

PART IV.

them, they have no more charity than we" (Romanists); "for we grant repentance, saving faith, and salvation, to such Protestants as are invincibly ignorant of their errors." That which he adds, that those who err invincibly are not "formal Protestants," but rather "*Protestantibus credentes*" —"such as give credit to Protestants[p]," may as well be applied by us of them;—that the salvation which we acknowledge in their Church is not to "formal Papists," but to "such as give credit to Papists," such as hold the truth implicitly in the preparation of their mind, though they want either sufficient proposal, or sufficient capacity, to overcome those prejudices, and dispel those mists, which custom or education or the like have cast upon them.

[iv. The authority of the Protestant Bishops not suspended by the Catholic Church.]

iv. Fourthly, I deny, that ever "the authority" of our first Protestant Bishops was "suspended," or "taken away," or their "jurisdiction restrained or disannulled," by "the Catholic Church." How should the Catholic Church censure them, which never met since in a General Council? As for that of Trent[q], the number of the Bishops was so small for many sessions together, sometimes not fifty, sometimes not thirty, that it merits not the name Oecumenical: to which the greater part of Christendom was never summoned, or could have any safe access;—the prelates were for the most part Italian Episcopelles, the Pope's professed vassals, guided by the Holy Ghost sent from Rome in a clokebag;—where the party accused was placed upon the bench as an infallible judge; I say, he who was the cause of all the distempers in Christendom, of the separation of the Eastern Churches from the Western, of the four Patriarchs from the first, of those tragical tumults between the Guelphs and Ghibellines, between the imperial diadem and the mitre, which set all Christendom in a combustion, and, lastly, the incentive of the present distractions of the West[r], to the

[p] [Ibid. The distinction is from Aug., De Utilit. Credendi, c. i.; Op. tom. viii. p. 45. A: drawing a difference between "hæretici" and "hæreticis credentes."]

[q] [See Just Vindic., c. ix. vol. i. pp. 257-259:—Replic. to Bp. of Chalced., c. ix. sect. 3; vol. ii. pp. 261-267:—Schism Guarded, sect. x.; vol. ii. pp. 636-640: Discourses ii, iii, iv. Pt. i.]

[r] [This was written when the war of independence between Portugal and Spain (1640-1665) was at its height. For the conduct of the Pope to the Portuguese Church during the struggle, see above in the Just Vindic., c. vii. (vol. i. pp. 224, 237-240), Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

great advantage of the Turk, and the only impediment of a reunion. Nor yet do I find any such sentence passed against them by the Church of Rome itself, as is here pretended. If there had, it was without the sphere of their activity and ancient jurisdiction. The Britannic Isles are partakers *de jure* of the Cyprian privilege, to be subject to no Patriarch but their own[s]; howsoever, in after ages, the Popes intruded themselves: which Doctor Barnes, a Roman Catholic, ingenuously confessing[t], was for his labour hurried privately into the Hospital of the Holy Ghost at Rome, and put there among the frantic persons, to try if either the usage or the
992 place would make him mad for company[u]. And, lastly, supposing, but not granting, that they had lawful jurisdiction, yet, the key erring, the sentence becomes invalid. "*Injusta vincula dirumpit justitia,*" saith St. Austin[x]; —"Justice breaks asunder unjust bonds." And St. Cyprian;—"God sometimes amends the sentence of His servants[y]."

Fifthly, admitting there was such a sentence or 'suspension,' that the judge was rightly qualified, and that the key did not err, none of all which S. N. is able to prove, yet the Romanists themselves do confess, that no sentence or decree whatsoever, or of whomsoever, or of what crime soever, can obliterate the Episcopal character, which is indeleble, nor disable a Bishop from ordaining, so far as to make the act invalid[z]. Their schools go so far in this question, that if a Bishop should

[v. Their Episcopal character indeleble, even had they been lawfully suspended.]

[s] [Just Vindic., c. v.; vol. i. pp. 157, 158:—Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., c. v. sect. 1; vol. ii. pp. 151, 152: and Reply to S. W.'s Refut., sect. iv.; ibid. pp. 300-304:—Discourses ii, iii. Pt. i.]

[t] [Catholico-Romanus Pacificus, sect. iii. pp. 49, 50, and note e, pp. 57-62. 8vo. Oxon. 1680: reprinted in the Append. ad Fascic. Rer. Expetend. et Fugiend., pp. 826-870. A part of this tract was translated by the Rev. R. Watson, and published by him at the end of his translation of Dr. Basier's Ancient Liberty of the British Church (8vo. Lond 1661); where, and in the Preface to the Oxford edition, will be found an account of the treatise and of its author.]

[u] [See Basier, p. 40 of Watson's translation, note i. Dr. Basier, the traveller, and biographer of Cosin, first published his tract in Latin at Bruges in 1656; and both he, and Watson (who was chaplain to Lord Hopton while in exile, and a protegé of Sir Rich. Brown), must have been in constant intercourse with Bramhall during their common banishment from England. See, for Watson, above in the Pref. to vol. iii. of this edition of Bramhall's works.]

[x] [Serm. lxxxii. § 7; Op. tom. v. p. 442. G.]

[y] [Epist. lv. Ad Antonianum, p. 108. ed. Fell.—"Si vero nos aliquis pœnitentiæ simulatione deluserit, Deus, Qui non deridetur et Qui cor hominis intuetur, de his quæ nos minus perspeximus, judicet, et *servorum sententiam Dominus emendet.*"]

[z] [Concil. Florent., Instruct. Armenor. (Labb., Concil., tom. xiii. p. 535. B.)—Concil. Trident., Sess. vii. can. 9. (Id., ibid., tom. xiv. p. 777. C), and Sess. xxiii. cap. 4. (ibid., p. 863. A).]

PART IV.

die actually and be raised again by the power of God, the character would remain, so as the party should need no new ordination[a]; yea, that it remains in Heaven, to their greater glory, and in Hell itself, to their greater ignominy[b]. Judge whether the author deal ingenuously in this,—to urge an argument directly contrary to their own grounds, out of an inveterate rancour against the poor Protestants.

[S. N.'s Third Argument against our Orders:—from the presumed want of a right intention in conferring them.]

3. His third argument is contained in the 6th section.—The "English superintendents, after their fall from the Roman Church, neither intended to give those holy Orders instituted by Christ, neither did the ordained intend to receive them. . . For . . the Priesthood instituted by Christ" comprehended "two" functions: "the one appertaining to the . . Real Body of Christ, to complete it and offer it to God; . . the other, over the Mystical Body of Christ, to remit sins." But with the Protestants, the consecrating Bishops "do not intend to give, nor the consecrated ministers to receive," either of these two functions; but on the contrary do "deny" them, and "[disclaim[c]]" them. Therefore, "notwithstanding their character," they "have not those sacred Orders which were instituted by Christ:" but "their ordination is a mere profanation of that Sacrament[d]."

[Dangerous consequences of the Romish doctrine of Intention.]

[i. As regards Holy Baptism.]

There is no opinion of the Roman Catholics of more desperate consequence, than this of the necessity of the minister's intention to the being of a Sacrament, especially according to the literal sense of the word. First, for Baptism, it leaves no man certain, whether he be a Christian or not. It puts it in the power of an atheistical Priest, or such an one as Judas was, to exclude out of the Church triumphant any or all those souls, which should be admitted by him into the communion of the militant Church. For if he intend not to baptize them at all, or intend to baptize them amiss, they perish irreparably, according to their doctrine; since Baptism cannot be iterated, and the nullity of this hypocritical action cannot be discovered by man, but is known to God alone,

[a] [See Vasquez, In III. Part. D. Thomæ, Disp. cxxxiv. c. 5. num. 92.]

[b] [Thom. Aquin., Summ., P. III. Qu. lxiii. art. 6. Ad Tertium: and the Schoolmen generally.]

[c] [Misprinted "disdain" in the folio edition.]

[d] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 9 (misprinted 6. in orig.) pp. 184, 185.]

Who is the searcher of hearts. Secondly, in the Holy Eucharist, it subjects every Roman Catholic to manifest peril of idolatry, to adore bread instead of Christ: that is, if the consecrater either maliciously or negligently intend not to consecrate (of which delinquency some Romish Priests have confessed themselves culpable, and have suffered for it); or if the consecrater be no Priest; which may easily happen, for want of the like intention in any one of those Bishops, from whom he derives his holy Orders, throughout a whole series or succession of sixteen hundred years' continuance. [ii. As regards the Holy Eucharist.] Thirdly, in their Ordination. It leaves no Church, not Rome itself, certain, whether they have holy Orders or not; that is as much as to say, whether they be a Church or not. For as the failing of any one link breaks a chain in sunder, so the want of this intention in any one Bishop, in a long row of seventy or eighty predecessors, breaks in sunder the chain of their succession, and leaves all those, who pretend to derive from thence downwards, without holy Orders. [iii. As regards Ordination.]

This is "the measure wherewith" they "mete out" to us; but forgetting that "a false balance is an abomination to the Lord," they have another measure to receive in for themselves. Here they mitigate and mollify the rigour of their tenet; and plane it so long with their distinctions, until they leave nothing of it remaining. First, they distinguish an intention into explicit, that is, particular or determinate, and implicit, that is, general—to do what the Church doth, or what Christ instituted. The Councils of Florence and Trent require only an implicit intention as necessary[e]. If they would allow the same favour to the Protestants which they assume to themselves, this argument were at an end; for the Protestants intend to do what Christ instituted. But their schools go yet further, and distinguish an implicit intention into actual and habitual; actual, that is, to consider really what they do, whilst they are celebrating the
993 Sacraments; habitual is that, which they have sometimes actually had, though they have it not in present then when they celebrate the Sacrament. They say, an actual intention is not necessary, neither do those distractions which [The nice distinctions by which it is explained away.] [Matt. vi.; 2.—Prov. ix. 1.]

[e] [Concil. Florent., Instruct. Armenor. (Labb., Concil., tom. xiii. p. 535. A);—Concil. Trident., Sess. vii. can. 11. (Id., ibid., tom. xiv. p. 777. D).]

PART IV.

creep upon us, whilst we are celebrating those holy Mysteries, render the act done invalid; but an habitual or virtual intention, that is, an impression left in the imagination, is sufficient[f]. Many of their authors rest not here, but distinguish an intention into internal, which they say is not absolutely necessary, and external, which is nothing else but an actual application of the due matter, with an actual expression of the words prescribed by the authority of Christ[g]. This intention the Protestants allow, and never want. If the one be acknowledged to be Catholics, why are the other censured as heretics?

To his argument then I answer.—

[i. The interior intention of the consecrant not necessary.]

i. First, that the interior intention of the consecrant is not necessary to make the ordination valid. If a prince send a present to a friend by an untrusty servant, who envieth his master's bounty, or wisheth that the gift might do his friend no good, yet this shall not deprive him of the fruit of the prince's bounty. God's grace is not annihilated by the malice, much less by the negligence, of a sinful man.

[ii. Protestants have an implicit intention to do what the Catholic Church doth.]

ii. Secondly, I answer, that the Protestants have an implicit intention in their ordinations, to do what the Catholic Church doth, and to do whatsoever Christ instituted; though they are far from believing, that the Roman Church is the Catholic Church: and this is sufficient, our adversaries being judges, to the validity of holy Orders. Differences in opinion about the manner or extent of believing, do not evacuate the grace of the Sacraments. One intends to produce the Body of Christ out of the bread; another intends to adduce it to the bread. The former cries out, that adduction implies only a trans*ubi*ation, not a trans*substanti*ation; the latter thunders it out aloud, that the Body which is produced of bread, is not the same Body Which was born of a Virgin[h]. Thus their greatest champions gore one another. Yet they do not believe, that this doth invalidate the Sacraments.

[f] [Bellarm., De Sacram. in Genere, lib. i. c. 27. (Op. tom. ii. pp. 126. D, 127. A, B).]

[g] [Catharinus, Opusc. de Intentione Minist. Sacram., as quoted by Bellarm., ibid. p. 126. A, B.—"Si quis, dum puerum baptizat, intendat fundere aquam super puerum, et dicere, ego te baptizo, secundum Catharinum erit verum Sacramentum, etiamsi ille intendat aquam fundere et illa verba dicere solum ad lavandum corpus pueri a sordibus vel ad ludendum eo modo."]

[h] [See above in the Answer to La Millet., vol. i. pp. 15-19; Disc. i. Pt. i.]

[iii. Protestants intend to confer power both of consecrating and of remitting sin.]

Thirdly, to his two functions, of consecrating, and remitting sin, Protestants do intend to confer them both, so far as either Christ did confer them, or the blessed Apostles execute them. Doubtless they know their own intentions better than S. N. He who saith, "Take thou authority to exercise the office of a Priest in the Church of God" (as the Protestant consecraters do), doth intend all things requisite to the Priestly function, and amongst the rest, to offer a representative Sacrifice, to commemorate and to apply the Sacrifice which Christ made upon the Cross. But for any other Sacrifice, distinct from that which is propitiatory, meritorious, and satisfactory by its proper virtue and power, the Scriptures do not authorize, the Fathers did not believe, the Protestants do not receive, any such. This is a certain truth, that the Passion of Christ is the only ransom and propitiation for sin. He who saith, "Whose sins thou dost remit they are remitted, whose sins thou dost retain are retained" (which are the very words used in the Protestants' Form of Ordination), surely intends to confer a power to remit sins. We acknowledge, that he who is ordained, is enabled by his office many ways to put away sins. [1.] By Baptism, —"I believe one Baptism for the remission of sins;" so saith the Creed. [Nicene Creed.] 2. By the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper;— "This is My blood, which is shed for you and for many, for remission of sins:" so said our Saviour. [Matt. xxvi. 28.—Luke xxii. 20.] 3. By prayer;— "Call for the presbyters of the Church; the prayer of faith shall save the sick; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him." James v. 14. 4. By preaching the word of reconciliation;—"God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation." 2 Cor. v. 19. 5. By special absolution;—"Whose sins ye remit, they are remitted." John xx. 23. To forgive sins is no more proper to God, than to work wonders above the course of nature. The one is communicable as the other. The Priest absolves; or, to say more properly, God absolves by the Priest. Therefore he saith, "I absolve thee in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost[i]." God remits sovereignly, imperially, primitively, absolutely; the Priest's power is de-

Matt. ix. 5. ["For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Arise and walk?"]

[i] [Form of Absolution in the Order for the Visitation of the Sick.]

PART IV.

rivative, delegate, dependent, ministerial, conditional. It is true, the Protestants differ amongst themselves, whether the absolution of the Priest be declarative or operative; that is, about the manner. And so do the Romanists likewise one with another. Yea, I dare say, that their schools do scarcely ever run more [into] division than about this; which they make the Sacrament of Reconciliation[k]. So his third argument is, I hope, abundantly satisfied. 99

[S. N.'s Fourth Argument against our Orders;—from our alleged want of the true matter and form of Ordination.]

4. His fourth objection is contained in the 9th and 10th sections:—that the Protestant Bishops in their ordinations "do not use the true matter and form prescribed by Christ." As, in Priesthood, the form is "partly this, 'Receive the Holy Ghost, whose sins you shall forgive, they are forgiven, whose sins you shall retain, they are retained,'" which is expressed John xx. 22; and "partly this other, mentioned in the Council of Florence, 'Receive power to offer sacrifice in the Church for the living and for the dead, in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost,' which words" (saith he), "although they be not set down in Holy Writ in plain terms, yet the substance of them is gathered out of St. Luke chap. xxii.; and that kind of form, as likewise the form of Baptism, is delivered by tradition proceeding from Christ. The matter necessarily accompanying this latter form is the reaching of the chalice with wine" and "the patin with the Host to the party consecrated, specified also in the foresaid Council of Florence[l]." And, "Protestants," confessing that they have "pared the Priesthood which Christ ordained from sacrificing and [shrift[m]]," which the Romanists had "added to the institution," do therein confess, that "they have rejected the whole substance and pared off the very pith of Christ's heavenly Priesthood[n]." Thus he.

This is a trenchant argument indeed, if S. N. can make it good; which chops off both our matter and form of ordination to Priesthood at one blow: but we shall see this author come as poorly off, as he chargeth desperately.

[k] [See above in Schism Guarded, sect. i. c. 9. (vol. ii. pp. 454, 455), Disc. iv. Pt. i.; and Ussher, Answer to a Jesuit's Challenge, pp. 169-173. ed. 1631.]

[l] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 9. pp. 184, 185.]

[m] [Misprinted "Christ" in the folio edition.]

[n] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 10. pp. 185, 186.]

They make two distinct ordinations to Priesthood; they call them the former and the latter: *"potestas in Corpus Christi Mysticum præsupponit potestatem in Corpus Christi Verum*[o]." And though the order be one and the same, yet there are two distinct matters and forms[p]. A bold presumption this is, if it be done without the warrant of the Instituter. I do not deny, but the Church may lawfully prescribe rites and ceremonies, even in the administration of the Holy Sacraments, and other Mysteries of Religion (as we use the delivery of [the Bible in] the celebration of holy Orders). So long as unlawful ceremonies are not obtruded, nor the substance of Divine worship placed in circumstances, nor the service of God be more respected for human ornaments than for the Divine ordinance, nor excessive superfluity become burdensome; but, on the other side, they are used as adjuments of decency, order, gravity, modesty, in the service of God, as expressions of these holy and heavenly desires and dispositions, which we ought to bring along with us to the House of God; so long as they are helps of attention or devotion, furtherances of edification, visible instructors, the books of ignorant men, helps of memory, exercises of faith, the leaves which preserve the tender fruit, and the shell which defends the kernel of religion from contempt: so long they are no clogs, but excellent props, to sustain Christian liberty. But when presumptuous men begin to tamper with the essentials of Divine institution, to chop and change the matter and form of Sacraments, and to obtrude their own inventions as necessary parts of Divine worship, then they do justly incur that censure, "In vain ye worship Me, teaching for doctrine the precepts of men." They teach, that Ordination is a Sacrament; and we do not much oppose it. It is either weakness or

[The Romish doctrine of a double matter and form in Ordination.]

Matt. xv. 9.

[o] [See Vasquez, In III. Part. D. Thomæ, Disp. ccxxxix.; and Bellarm., De Sacram. Ordinis, lib. i. c. 9. (Op. tom. ii. p. 1533. B—1537. B).]

[p] [Viz. for Priests' Orders, the imposition of hands, with the words, "Accipe Spiritum Sanctum, quorum remiseritis peccata," &c.; and the delivery of the patin and chalice, with the words, "Accipe potestatem offerre Sacrificium Deo, Missasque celebrare tam pro vivis quam pro defunctis, in Nomine Domini:"—for deacons' orders, imposition of hands, with the words "Accipe Spiritum Sanctum ad robur ad resistendum Diabolo et tentationibus ejus;" and the delivery of the book of the Gospels, with the words, "Accipe potestatem legendi Evangelium in Ecclesiâ Dei tam pro vivis quam pro defunctis, in Nomine Domini." See the Pontif. Roman., pp. 58, 59; 43, 45; fol. Rom. 1645.]

PART IV.

frowardness, to wrangle about the name, when men agree upon the thing. We do believe, that Ordination is a sacred rite or action instituted by Christ, wherein, by the imposition of hands, the holy Orders of Bishops, Priests or Presbyters, and Deacons, are conferred. This imposition of hands they make to be the latter ordination; this we say to be the only ordination: and that the other, of the delivery of the patin and chalice with the formal words by them used, is no part of the institution of Christ, but a 'purple patch,' or an invention of their own, first added as an indifferent ceremony, and lastly obtruded upon the Church as an essential. Neither do we say this only, but we prove it manifestly. First, by the institution itself; which was most solemnly performed by Christ, and is most punctually related by the Evangelist. There we have the very matter and the very form used by the Church of England; but of their patin or chalice, or the delivery of it, or of their formal words, "Receive power to offer sacrifice for the living and for the dead," of their new matter and new form, not one syllable. Secondly, we produce the belief and practice of the primitive Church, who knew no other matter than imposition of hands, nor other form than, "Receive the Holy Ghost, whose sins thou dost remit they are remitted." And therefore they usually call Ordination by this very name, "Imposition of hands[q]." Not a Father, not a Council, not one ancient 995 author at any time, mentions the delivery of the patin or chalice, or the formal words used by the Church of Rome; even then when they describe the ordination of their days, and where this could not have been omitted, if it had been an essential. Thirdly, we produce the practice of the Greek Church[r], and all other Churches which are not of the Roman communion, ever until this day; which would not have failed so universally, so constantly, ever since the beginning of Christianity, in an essential of Ordination. And although the Greeks do not receive this new matter and form, yet the Romanists did never deny them to have true Orders, nor did ever ordain any one again who had formerly been ordained in the Church

[Contrary to the institution of it by Christ.] John xx. 22, 23.

[Contrary to the primitive Church.]

[Contrary to the practice of the Greek Church.]

[q] [Scil. χειροτονία or χειροθεσία. See abundant authorities in Morinus, Comment. de Ordin., P. III. Exerc. vii. c. 3. § 6. p. 141. fol. Paris. 1655.]

[r] [See Goar, Ritual. Græcor., pp. 250, 292. fol. Paris. 1647; and Habert, as quoted above in the Just Vindic., c. ix. (vol. i. p. 271), Disc. i. Pt. i.]

of Greece[s]. How can they admit the Grecians, wanting their new matter and form, to have holy Orders, and yet for the want of these deny the holy Orders of the Protestants to be valid? Is not this to "have the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ with respect of persons?" Fourthly, we produce a great cloud of witnesses from among themselves, of their choicest scholars[t], and such as have been most conversant in this question, who deny the delivery of the patin and chalice to be essentials of Ordination. Lastly, supposing that ceremony to be essential to Ordination, but denying that it is so, yet we have words sufficient in our form to include it; as, "Receive power to exercise the office of a Priest." He that gives the foundation, gives all power pertaining to it. Again, "Receive power to administer the Holy Sacraments." For all the essentials of their Sacrifice are contained in our celebration of the Holy Eucharist; that is, according to their schools, the consecration, and consumption of the whole or part[u]. Both these we have as well as they: the former more purely than they, the latter more eminently than they; inasmuch as with us both Priest and people do receive, with them the Priest only. It was therefore truly said by the learned Bishop of Ely,—"Take away your Transubstantiation, and we shall have no difference about the Sacrifice[v]."

James ii. 1.

[Contrary to the doctrine of many among their own writers.]

Against this the author urgeth three things, of his own head; for he produceth no reason for them. First, that though their new matter and form "be not set down in Holy Writ in plain terms, yet the substance of them is gathered out of St. Luke, chap. xxii.[x]" How? "Gathered out of St. Luke?" I wonder how, or out of what words. If St. Luke have any thing that will advantage the author's cause, why doth he touch it so tenderly? why doth he not mention it at large? Indeed St. Luke saith, Christ "took bread and gave" it; but of the patin not a word. Moreover St. Luke saith, Christ "took the cup" and gave it; but both bread

[S. N.'s argument for it from Holy Scripture.]

[Luke xxii. 19.]

[Luke xxii. 17.]

[s] [See the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., c. ix. sect. 6. (vol. ii. pp. 275, 276); Disc. iii. Pt. i: and Morinus, P. I. cc. iii, iv. pp. 5-16.]

[t] [Morinus, Martene, Habert, Goar, &c. See Courayer's Def. of Angl. Ordin. cc. vi, xii. pp. 93, sq. 203, sq. new transl.; and Morinus, P. III. Exerc. vii. c. 1. pp. 129, sq.]

[u] [See below p. 221. note h.]

[v] ["At vos, tollite de Missâ Transubstantiationem vestram; nec diu nobiscum lis erit de Sacrificio." Andrewes, Ad Bellarm. Apol. Respons., p. 184. 4to. Lond. 1610.]

[x] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 9. p. 185.]

PART IV.

and cup were consecrated before, and given by Christ to be received, not to be used as an instrument of some new sacrifice. St. Luke saith further, "Do this in remembrance of Me." "Do this;" what "this?" this that you have seen Me do, this which is related before of Christ,—that "He took bread and gave thanks and brake it, and gave it to them, saying, This is My Body, Which is given for you." And likewise that "He took the cup, saying, This Cup is the New Testament in My Blood, Which is shed for you." All this the Protestants do more conformably to the institution than the Romanists. Here is plain celebration of the Eucharist, but nothing that makes for their new form of Ordination. If any sacrifice be intimated here, it is eucharistical,—"He gave thanks;"—and commemorative,—"in remembrance of Me." But not the least intimation of their patin and chalice in Ordination. And this the author knew well enough; therefore presently after flies to tradition,—that this "form" of ordaining, "as likewise the form of Baptism, is delivered by tradition as proceeding from Christ[y]." It is dangerous to ground the essentials of Sacraments upon "tradition" alone. Divine or Apostolical traditions are known by their universality of time and place; but this new rite wants both the one and the other. If it were universal in time, how comes it to pass, that all the primitive Councils and Fathers were ignorant of it? by whom it ought to have been derived to us. If it be universal in place, how comes it to pass, that the Eastern Churches never entertained it? Here is neither "*ubique, semper,*" nor "*ab omnibus.*" Yet I do easily believe, that the form of Ordination is as much delivered by tradition, as the form of Baptism; which is expressly set down,—"Baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost:"—unless he thinks the precise words "I" and "thee"—"I baptize thee,"—be of the essence of Baptism; wherein he is mistaken, for the Greeks observe another form—"Let the servant of Christ be baptized in the Name of the Father[z]," &c. And yet this form of baptizing in the Greek Church is allowed by the

[Luke xxii. 19.] [Luke xxii. 19.] [Luke xxii. 20.] [From Tradition.] Matt. xxviii. 19.

996

[y] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 9. p. 185.]

[z] ["Βαπτίζεται ὁ δοῦλος τοῦ Θεοῦ ὁ δεῖνα εἰς τὸ Ὄνομα," κ. τ. λ.—Goar, Ritual. Græc., p. 355. See Palmer's Orig. Liturg., c. v. sect. 6, for the form of words employed in the principal liturgies.]

Romanists themselves to be not only valid but also lawful. Therefore his third and last anchor-hold, and in truth his whole strength, is in the authority of the Council of Florence. [From the Council of Florence.] I answer, that the authority of the Council of Florence, held fourteen hundred and forty years after Christ[a], or of Eugenius Quartus, who was Pope then, is not so great, that for it the Protestants should desert the Holy Scripture, and all authority. Secondly, I answer, the Council of Florence, or Pope Eugenius, do not say, that the delivery of the patin and chalice, or the words cited by the author,—"Receive power to offer sacrifice," &c.,—were the matter and form instituted by Christ, but that they were the matter and form then used in the Church of Rome; or (to use the words of sundry Romanists[b] themselves in the very point) that they are necessary "*necessitate præcepti*" but not "*necessitate Sacramenti*," —because they are commanded by the Church of Rome, not because they were instituted by Christ. And that this is the true sense, it appears plainly from hence, that the same Council makes the matter of the Ordination of Deacons to consist in the delivery of the Book of the Gospel[c]; and yet all men know, that not any one of the Gospels were written until after the death of Christ.

In the next place he goes about to refute Mr. Mason, a [S. N.'s attack upon Mr. Mason.] "Protestant writer," who saith, that we have "purged that holy Priesthood, which Christ ordained, from the corruptions of sacrificing and shrift, which the Romanists had added[d]." So, saith he, "the whole question is brought to this issue, whether our Saviour instituted a sacrificing Priesthood, to which authority is [also] given to remit sins in the Sacrament of Penance;" and concludes, that "if the Protestants

[a] [Litteræ Eugen. IV. ad Armenos (in Act. Concil. Florent., ap. Labb., Concil., tom. xiii. p. 538. E), quoted by S. N.—"Sextum sacramentum est ordinis, cujus materia est illud per cujus traditionem confertur ordo; sicut Presbyteratus traditur per calicis cum vino et patenæ cum pane porrectionem, Diaconatus vero per libri Evangeliorum dationem. . . Forma Sacerdotii talis est; Accipe potestatem offerendi sacrificium in Ecclesiâ pro vivis et mortuis, in nomine Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti; et sic de aliorum ordinum formâ, *prout in Pontificali Romano late continetur.*"]

[b] [See the authorities referred to above, p. 215. note o.]

[c] [See above in note a.]

[d] [Mason, Vindic. of Eng. Orders, bk. i. c. 2, ii. c. 11, pp. 11, 94. Eng. ed. of 1613: as quoted by S. N., Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 10. p. 185. Mason is speaking of the Form of Ordination, from which he says the Reformers "pared away" certain ceremonies "partly superstitious, partly superfluous:" among the rest the added form and matter above described.]

PART IV.

have pared away these Priestly functions, they have rejected the whole substance, and pared off the pith of Christ's heavenly Priesthood[e]."

[S. N.'s triple mistake.]

In the name of God, what have we to do with Christ's heavenly Priesthood in this question?—which is to make intercession and atonement for us to His Father, in respect whereof He is called our Passover, our Propitiation, our Advocate, our Mediator; as St. Austin saith,—"The same is the Priest, and the Sacrifice, and the Temple; the Priest by Whom we are reconciled, the Sacrifice wherewith we are reconciled, the Temple wherein we are reconciled; and the God to Whom we are reconciled: but Priest, Sacrifice, Temple, and all, is God in the form of a servant[f]." They are not the Protestants then, but the Romanists, who "pare off the pith of Christ's heavenly Priesthood:" who daily make as many distinct propitiatory Sacrifices as there are Masses in the world; who mix the sufferings of the Saints with the Blood of Christ, to make up the treasury of the Church; who multiply their mediators, as the heathens did their tutelary Gods, begging at their hands to receive them at the hour of death, to reconcile them to God, to be their advocates, their mediators, their propitiation, and, briefly, to do all those offices, which belong to the heavenly Priesthood of Christ. This is not all. S. N. is mistaken yet twice more in this one paragraph. First, in reducing this present controversy to these two heads: 1. Whether Christ "instituted a sacrificing Priesthood;" and 2. Whether He hath "given authority to it to remit sins in the Sacrament of Penance." "*Non de terminis, sed de possessione, inter nos est contentio*"—"This controversy is about the possession, not about the limits." It concerns the right of Priestly succession, not the bounds of Priestly power. A man may be the rightful owner of a true jewel, not adulterate nor counterfeit; and yet not know each particular virtue and quality which it hath.

[e] [Guide of Faith, ibid. pp. 185, 186.]

[f] [Pseudo-August., Lib. de Fide ad Petrum, c. ii. § 22. (Op. tom. vi. Append. p. 23. D, E): "Idem scilicet Sacerdos et Sacrificium, idem Deus et Templum; Sacerdos, per Quem sumus reconciliati; Sacrificium, Quo reconciliati; Templum in Quo reconciliati; Deus, Cui reconciliati. Solus tamen Sacerdos, Sacrificium, et Templum; quia hæc omnia Deus secundum formam servi: non autem solus Deus; quia hoc cum Patre et Spiritu Sancto secundum formam servi."]

A bragging mountebank commonly pretendeth to more skill than a true artist. When S. N. hath any thing more to say of these two subjects, he shall not need to complain for want of an answer. Here they are named, and only named, quite beside the purpose. If he think, that all they destroy the essence of Priesthood, who make the power of the Priest to be only declarative and not operative in the remission of sins, he need not quarrel with the Protestants; he will find adversaries enough at home. Thus he mistakes Christ's heavenly Priesthood for man's earthly Priesthood; he mistakes the power or actions of the Presbyterate for the essence of it; and, lastly, he mistakes the tenet of his adversaries.

[The Protestants have not "pared away" all manner of Sacrifice.]

Mr. Mason doth not say, that the Protestants have "pared away" all manner of sacrifices. First, they acknowledge spiritual and eucharistical sacrifices, as prayers, praises, a contrite heart, alms, and the like. Secondly, they acknowledge a commemoration, or a representative Sacrifice, in the Holy Eucharist. Thirdly, they teach, that this is not "*nuda*
997 *commemoratio*"—"a bare commemoration" without efficacy, but that the blessed Sacrament is a means ordained by Christ to render us capable, and to apply unto us the virtue, of that all-sufficient Sacrifice of infinite value, which Christ made upon the Cross; which is as far as the moderate Romanists dare go in distinct and particular expressions. But the Protestants dare not say, that the Holy Eucharist is a Sacrifice propitiatory in itself, by its own proper virtue and expiatory efficacy. Whatsoever power it hath, is in relation to the Sacrifice of Christ, as a means ordained to apply that to true believers[g]. In sum, the essence of the Roman Sacrifice doth consist, according to the doctrine of their own schools, either in the consecration alone, or in the manducation alone, or both in the consecration and participation; but not at all either in the oblation before consecration, or in the oblation after consecration, or in the fraction or mixtion[h]. Seeing therefore the Protestants do retain both the consecration, and consumption or communication, without all contradiction, under the name of a Sacrament, they have the

[g] [See above in the Answ. to La Millet. (vol. i. pp. 54, 55), Disc. i. Pt. i.; and in the Consecr. and Success. of Protest. Bishops Vindic., c. xi. (vol. iii. p. 165), Disc. v. Pt. i.]

[h] [Bellarm., De Missâ, lib. i. c. 27; Op. tom. ii. pp. 1046-1051.]

PART IV.

very thing, which the Romanists call a Sacrifice. How is the world amused with a show of empty names to no purpose!

[Nor all manner of Shrift, or Confession and Absolution.]

Neither have the Protestants "pared away" all manner of shrift, or confession and absolution. I have shewed before in this answer five several ways, whereby the Protestants hold, that their Presbyters put away sins[i]. Nay, they condemn not private confession, and absolution itself, as an ecclesiastical policy, to make men more wary how they offend; so as it might be left free, without tyrannical imposition. No better physic for a full stomach than a vomit. Bodily sores do sometimes compel a man to put off natural shamefacedness, and to offer his less comely parts to the view of the chirurgeon. By a little shame, which we suffer before our fellow servant, we prevent that great confusion of face, which otherwise must fall upon impenitent sinners at the Day of Judgment[j].

[Corruptions in the Romish doctrine respecting Shrift.]

What are those corruptions then, which we have "pared away" from the Romish shrift? First, that they have tricked it up in the robes of a Sacrament, obtruding it upon the world as absolutely necessary to salvation, and that by Divine institution[k]; contrary to their own schools. Gratian concludes it with, "*Lectoris judicio reservatur*[l]"—"It is referred to the judgment of the reader;" and cites Theodore Archbishop of Canterbury[m] for his opinion. The Glosser[n] refers the original to an universal tradition; to whose opinion Scotus[o] inclines. Bonaventure[p] saith, that it was "insinuated by Christ, instituted by the Apostles, and promulged by

[i] [Above in sect. iii. p. 213.]

[j] [Compare Ussher's Answ. to a Jesuit's Challenge, pp. 84, 85.]

[k] [Concil. Lateran. (A.D. 1215) can. 21, ap. Labb., Concil., tom. xi. pp. 171. E, 174. A.—Concil. Trident. Sess. xiv. can. 6, ibid. tom. xiv. p. 824. C,—"Confessionem Sacramentalem . . ad salutem necessariam esse jure Divino."]

[l] [Decret. Pars II. De Pœnitent., Dist. i. c. 89. Quamvis.—"Quibus auctoritatibus vel quibus rationum firmamentis utraque sententia satisfactionis et confessionis" ("scil. an sit necessaria vel non," Gloss) "innitatur, in medium breviter exposuimus. Cui autem harum potius adhærendum sit, lectoris judicio reservatur."]

[m] ["In Pœnitentiali suo," as quoted by Gratian, ibid. See Ussher, Answ. to a Jesuit's Challenge, pp. 106-108, and Jeremy Taylor's Dissuasive from Popery, Pt. II. bk. i. sect. 11, vol. xi. pp. 42, 43. ed. Heber.]

[n] [In Decret. P. II. De Pœnitent., Dist. v. c. 1. "Melius dicitur eam institutam fuisse a quâdam universalis Ecclesiæ traditione potius quam ex Novi vel Veteris Testamenti auctoritate."]

[o] [In IV. Sent., Dist. xvii. Qu. 1. art. 1.]

[p] [In IV. Sent., Dist. xvii. art. 1. Qu. 3. Respond. ad Argum.—"Et ideo confessio fuit a Domino insinuata, ab Apostolis instituta, ab Episcopo Hierosolymitano, scilicet, Jacobo promulgata."]

St. James." Panormitane[q] makes the original of it human; with whom side Petrus Oxomensis[r], Erasmus[s], Rhenanus[t]. And Lyranus[u],—that in times past it was not so rigidly observed. Secondly, that they have restrained it to a particular and plenary enumeration of all sins. "Who can tell how oft he offendeth; cleanse Thou me, O Lord, from my secret faults." But without this, say they, the Priest cannot give true judgment[x]. No? Why? Christ said not, '*what* sins ye remit,' but "*whose* sins;" giving this caution to the Presbyters, to attend more to the contrition and capacity of their confitents, than to the number and nature of their sins. Thirdly, they make it to be meritorious at the hands of God, and satisfactory for sins, not by way of complacence only, but even in justice[y]. Thus in the doctrinal part. DISCOURSE VII. Ps. xix. 12.

In the practice there are corruptions also, which deserve to be "pared away;" though this author cannot see to distinguish between the body and the botches, between the institution and the corruptions. As, that they do first absolve a man from his sins, and then bid him to make satisfaction; contrary to the practice of the ancient Church. Then, that it hath been used as a picklock to open the secrets of states and princes. Most certain it is, that many have, and too many daily do, convert it to their own advantage. [Corruptions in the Romish practice respecting Shrift.]

"Scire volunt secreta domus atque inde timeri[z]."

[q] [Super Lib. V. Decretal., tit. xxxviii. De Pœnitent. et Remissione, c. xii. Omnis Utriusque, § 18.—"Non est aliqua aperta authoritas quæ innuat, Deum seu Christum aperte instituisse, confessionem fiendam" (sic in orig.) "Sacerdoti."]

[r] [According to Alphonsus a Castro, Adv. Hær., lib. iv. p. 302. E. fol. Paris. 1571; and Vasquez, in III. Sent., Qu. xc. Art. 1. dub. 1. num. 3:—the latter of whom cites also Cardinal Cajetan (in Joann. xx. 21), Gabriel Biel (in IV. Sent. Dist. xvii. Qu. 1. art. 1), Jansenius (Concord. Evangel., c. 147), and Waldensis (tom. ii. c. 40), for admissions of a very similar kind. Petrus Oxomensis or D'Osma, a Professor of Theology at Salamanca in the 15th century, was condemned for his doctrine upon this subject by Pope Sixtus IV. in 1479 (Moreri—Ussher, Answ. to a Jesuit's Challenge, p. 113).]

[s] [Erasm., Schol. in Hieron. Epist. ad Oceanum sive Epitaph. Fabiolæ (inter Op. Hieron. ed. Erasm. tom. i. fol. 89. b. Basil. 1516); et Annot. in Act. xix. 8. (Op. Erasmi, tom. vii. p. 508. D, E); et Lib. de Modo Confitendi (ibid. tom. vi. pp. 145. C, 146. A); and frequently elsewhere. See his Apol. adv. Monach. Quosdam Hispan., tit. v. cont. Confess., Op. tom. ix. pp. 1062. C—1064. B.]

[t] [In Tertull. de Pœnitent. Præfat., p. 10; in fin. Op. Tertull., fol. Franek. 1597.]

[u] [In Levit. c. xvi. v. 21.]

[x] [Concil. Trident., Sess. xiv. cap. 5. and can. 4, 7. (Labb., Concil., tom. xiv. pp. 818. B, 824. A, C, D).]

[y] [Ibid., cap. 9. and can. 13. (ibid., pp. 821. D, 825. D): and compare White's Answ. to Fisher, p. 544.]

[z] [Juv., iii. 113.]

PART IV.

Thirdly, the imposing of such ludibrious penances as bring confession itself into contempt; as a few Pater Nosters for murder, or adultery. Old Chaucer will tell you the reason; —He knew how to impose an easy penance, where he looked for a good pittance[a]. These are the corruptions we condemn in the confessors. There are others also in the confitents; who have many of them reduced confession to a customary formality, as if it were but to conclude an old score and begin a new.

Let them purge away these abuses of their shrift, which they have added, making it sacramental, plenary, particular, satisfactory, enforced under pain of damnation, by virtue of Christ's institution; let them cease to disorder it, to pros- 99
titute it, to profane it; and the Protestants and they will have less cause to differ about the bounds or limits of Priestly power[b].

[S. N.'s Fifth Argument against our Orders:—that our Priests are neither of the order of Aaron nor of that of Melchisedec, and are therefore no Priests at all.]

5. His fifth objection follows in the 11th and 12th sections, thus.—"If they will needs usurp the name of Priests, let them tell me . . in what order they rank themselves, in the order of Aaron, or of Melchisedec." They cannot reckon themselves in the order of Aaron, because they do not "offer bloody sacrifices;" . . "much less in the order of Melchisedec," because they do not "offer bread and wine[c]." Yet the Fathers testify, that "the priesthood of Melchisedec doth still flourish in the Church." Therefore, saith S. N., "I know not in what rank to place them, seeing they renounce both these orders: unless it be in the order of Asinius, 'the voluntary senator,'" who was "'made by himself[d];' or in the order of Don Quixote, knighted in an inn by the good fellow his host; . . or at the most they are but Parliament Priests, ordained by the new devised form of that temporal court, and authorised by the letters patent, first of a child, and then of a woman[e]."

[a] [Canterbury Tales, Prologue, 223, 224.]

[b] [See Ussher, Answ. to a Jesuit's Challenge, pp. 109, &c., for additional authorities upon this subject.]

[c] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 11. p. 186.]

[d] ["Est etiam" (in Senatu Antoniano) "Asinius quidam senator voluntarius lectus ipse a se. Apertam curiam vidit post Cæsaris mortem: mutavit calceos: pater conscriptus repente factus est." Cic., Philipp. xiii. 13.]

[e] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 12. pp. 187, 188.]

First, I answer to his scurrilous inference. "Blessed is the man which hath not sat down in the chair of the scorner;" so said David;—and the Son of David,—"Blessed are ye, when men revile you, and speak all manner of evil falsely against you for My sake; rejoice and be exceeding glad, for great is your reward in Heaven." Doth S. N. think he must not one day give account to Christ for these unsavoury scoffs, especially against whole Christian Churches, which desire to serve God according to the best of their understanding? Or doth he think, that this is the way to gain upon the Protestants? The mind of man is generous; which, as it cannot choose but give assent to evident demonstration,—"*necesse est, ut lancem in librâ ponderibus impositis deprimi, sic animum perspicuis cedere*[g],"—so it is the more alienated by such bitter and biting expressions.

[Rebuked.] Ps. i. 1. Matt. v. 11.

Secondly, I retort his dilemma upon himself, thus.—If the Romish Priests be true Priests, then they are either of the order of Aaron or of the order of Melchisedec. This is his own disjunction, which he may not deny. But I assume, they are not of the order of Aaron, because they do not "offer bloody sacrifice;" as is confessed. Neither are they of the order of Melchisedec: for Christ was of the order of Melchisedec; and if they be of the same order, they should be the successors of Christ in His Priesthood; but by the consent of all Roman schools, they are not the successors of Christ, but His ministers. Again, the law being translated, the Priesthood must of necessity be translated also; but the law is translated, from the law of nature, and from the law of Moses, to the law of grace; therefore the Priesthood is translated also. And, by necessary consequence, the Roman Priests are neither of the order of Aaron, nor of the order of Melchisedec. I leave the conclusion to S. N.; whether he will shake hands with Asinius, and Don Quixote; yea, or no.

[Retorted.]

[See Heb. vii. 12.]

Thirdly, to the matter of his argument I answer, that the two horns of his dilemma are neither so sharp, nor so close, but that the Protestants may find a ready and a safe passage between them: that is, there is a third kind of Priesthood,

[Answered.]

[g] [Cic., Tusc. Disp., v. 17.]

PART IV.

or Presbyterate, distinct from both these, which was first instituted by Jesus Christ, and had no being in the days either of Aaron or Melchisedec, having another matter and form, and all the essentials different. This is that order, which the Protestants do lay claim to; and so do the Romanists also, whatsoever S. N. discourse to the contrary. So little weight is there in his argument, that it scarce deserves an answer.

Fourthly, when the Fathers or any of them do say, that "the Priesthood of Melchisedec doth still flourish in the Church," either they speak of the heavenly Priesthood of [Ps. cx. 4.] Christ (Who is indeed a "Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec"), and not of the Priesthood of men; or else they speak according to a certain analogy and proportion between the one and the other, in respect of some things common to both, and not as if they were the same[h].

Lastly, S. N. might well have spared his sarcasms of "a child" and "a woman." By the law of England the king never dies, never is a minor; the regal diadem purgeth away [2 Chron. xxiv. 1.] all defects of sex and age. Let him carp at the acts of Jehoash also, because he was a child. As for his "Parliament Priests," and whether the Parliament be a "temporal court," will come more fitly to be answered in the next section.

[S. N.'s Sixth Argument against our Orders:—that they were devised and conferred in the first instance by secular persons.]

6. The author having spent all his store which he had out of the Scriptures, Councils, and Fathers, and right reason, 999 in the sixth place goes about to convince us by our own Acts of Parliament, by the letters patent of our princes, and by the testimony of our writers. His next argument is con-

[h] [S. N. quotes, among others, Theophylact., in Hebr. c. v. (v. 5; Op. tom. ii. pp. 677. E, 678. A. Venet. 1755);—Epiphan., Adv. Hær., (lib. ii. tom. 1.) Hær. 55. (Op. tom. i. pp. 471. D, 472. A);—August., De Civ. Dei, lib. xvi. c. (22. Op. tom. vii. p. 435. A.); Cont. Adversar. Leg. et Proph., lib. i. (c. 20. § 39; Op. tom. viii. p. 570. F);—Ambros., Enarrat. in Ps. xxxviii. (Op. tom. i. p. 853. B, C);—Leo. M., Serm. ii. in Anniv. Assumpt. Suæ ad Pontif. (c. 1; Op. tom. i. p. 104. ed. Quesnel);—Eucher., in Gen., lib. ii. c. 18. (ap. Biblioth. PP., tom. v. P. i. p. 805. F.—a spurious work);—Primas., in Hebr. c. v. (ibid., tom. vi. P. ii. p. 123. E).—Bramhall's explanations are applicable, one or both, to all these passages. Compare also the quotations and reasoning of Bellarm., De Missâ, lib. i. c. 6. (Op. tom. ii. pp. 960. B, 964. B). The citations prove, that the Fathers interpreted the eternity of Melchisedec's Priesthood, 1. by the eternal Priesthood of Christ in Heaven, and 2. also by the perpetual continuance of a Priesthood of men in the Church, and the Sacrifice in the Eucharist:—in both cases, as a type or figure.]

tained in the 13th, 14th, 15th, 16th, 17th, and 18th sections. —"No secular princes or temporal magistrates, . . either apart or assembled together in public Parliament, . . have authority to confer ecclesiastical Orders; but the order of ministry which our Gospellers challenge, was, both in King Edward's and Queen Elizabeth's days, wholly devised and primarily conferred by their secular and temporal authority[1]." His former proposition he proves, but to no end; for we readily admit it,—that no secular persons can confer ecclesiastical Orders. How he labours to prove his latter proposition, we shall see presently. In the mean time,—

[An ordination otherwise valid, not rendered invalid by the acceptance or ratification of the temporal power.]

Be it known unto S. N., that we do not ascribe unto our Parliament any authoritative or operative power, to make them Priests who want the essentials of Priesthood; but a declarative or receptive power, to receive such for true Priests who are ordained according to the institution of Christ. Neither yet is our Parliament a mere "temporal court;" wherein our Bishops had their votes, our clergy their proctors. But of this more anon. If the ordination be valid in itself, having a right minister, a due matter, and a true form, all the Parliaments and Councils in the world, all the edicts of princes, cannot render it absolutely invalid. On the other side, if the ordination be invalid in itself, and want any of the essentials of Ordination, all the canons and acts or edicts, of all the princes or Parliaments and Councils in the world, cannot make it valid. So as, whatsoever he shall allege in this kind, may perhaps have some pretence against the Acts or letters patent, but cannot impeach or prejudice the ordination. Our Form of Ordination is extant, and published to the view of the world in print. If he have any thing to say against it, let him speak out: we desire no favour: or otherwise, he doth but shew his teeth without hurting us. When that which he would impugn, is exposed to his view, why doth he not bend his forces against it, but inquire after it of others, to try if he can pick any advantage out of their words, to make the world believe it is that, which in truth it is not? Either our Form of Ordination agrees with the institution of Christ, or not: if it do not agree, let S. N. shew wherein it is repugnant or defective; if it do agree (as

[1] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 13. p. 188.]

PART IV.

most certainly it doth, otherwise the primitive Church and the Church of Greece to this day hath no right ordination), then all which he allegeth is vain; and all that he saith is reduced to this sum, that our synods have devised, our Parliaments have received, our kings have authorized within their realms, such a Form of Ordination as is agreeable to the institution of Christ.

[S. N.'s proofs, that secular persons "primarily conferred" our Orders.]

But that he may not complain that he is cut off too short, and to vindicate (not our holy Orders, which stand or fall according to Christ's institution, and are not concerned in these allegations, but) our kings, and Parliaments, from his aspersions; let us hear what he can say. And if we had the statutes, patents, and dispensations themselves, which in this strange place[k] we want, it would appear more manifestly, that they are wrested to a quite different sense to that which they intended. But taking them upon trust from S. N., they are so far from being, as he styleth them, unanswerable testimonies, that they are altogether impertinent to the question.

[i. The statute of Edw. VI. (and commissions taken out under Hen. VIII.) attributing spiritual jurisdiction to the king as its fountain and source.]

i. First, he produceth a statute made *primo Edwardi VI.*: —that "Archbishops and Bishops should send out their processes in the name of the king, and not in their own names;" giving this reason, "that all authority of jurisdiction, spiritual and temporal, is derived from the King's Majesty, as supreme Head of the Church of England[l]," &c.

Great palaces will never want their moths, nor great persons their parasites; who are ready to flatter greatness, to blow the coals of ambition, and to adorn their masters, like Æsop's daw[m], with stolen plumes[n]: such as the canonists were to the Popes. It would better become S. N. and me, to give unto Cæsar that which is Cæsar's, and unto God that which is God's. I have never seen any such statute: and if there were, this is most certain, it was either presently

[Luke xx. 25.]

[k] [Viz. Holland, most probably; this tract having apparently been written between 1644, when its author first quitted England, and 1654. See above p. 199. note b.]

[l] [1 Edw. VI. c. 2; as quoted by S. N. ibid.—It is the Act abolishing elections by Deans and Chapters, and substituting a simple nomination by the king: it provides also, that all ecclesiastical processes thenceforth should be in the king's name, but the teste in the Bishop's name: and was repealed 1 Mary, Sess. 2. c. 2. The commissions mentioned below, were required by an Act of Council.]

[m] [Horat., Epist., I. iii. 18-20.—&c.]

[n] [See above in the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., c. iv. sect. 1. (vol. ii. pp. 127-130); Disc. iii. Pt. i.]

abrogated, or never executed; for the universal practice of all the ecclesiastical courts in England is contrary, and did ever use to send out their citations in the Bishop's name[o]. But yet I will conceal nothing that may conduce to the finding out the truth. I confess, I have seen a commission, bearing date in the days of Henry the Eighth; wherein such a like clause was inserted, for the derivation of all the authority of ecclesiastical jurisdiction from him[p]. And therefore,
1000 supposing that there might be some such repealed statute, let us see what might be the sense of it, and how impertinent it is to this purpose.

[The Parliament not a merely temporal court.]

But, first, by his leave, I must admonish him again of his mistake, in reputing the Parliaments of England to be mere "temporal courts," and conventions only of secular men. Wherein our Bishops ever had their votes, even until these present distractions, in the House of Peers; and the inferior clergy, [by] their proctors, in the House of Commons: until Cardinal Wolsey, out of an overweening strain of wit, contrived and effected a distinction of that mixed body into two assemblies, the one secular, the other ecclesiastical[q]; which latter is called the Convocation or Synod, which sits always at the same time with the Parliament, where that is first concluded concerning religion, which after is received into the House of Commons, and ratified by the King, with the consent of the Lords. I add more,—that, by the fundamental constitution of the kingdom of England, the Parliament, which then was called the Great Council, the Mickle Synod, the Senate of Wise Men, did evermore consist both of secular and ecclesiastical persons, who conjointly did manage all the great affairs both of Church and commonwealth[r]. Let S. N. cast his eyes upon the old Britannic

[o] [Gibson, Codex, pp. 925, 926.]

[p] [Bramhall refers of course to the commission taken out by Bonner in 1539, which is in Burnet, Hist. of Ref., Pt. I. bk. iii. Rec. num. 14. But Collier (Ch. Hist., Pt. II. bk. iii. vol. ii. pp. 169, 170, in part from Wharton) has shewn, that Bonner's was neither the first nor a single instance. On the contrary, such commissions appear to have been generally taken out by the Bishops so early as 1535, and again in the first year of Edw. VI. See also Burnet, Pt. II. bk. i. Rec. num. 2.]

[q] [Bramhall's authority for this statement seems to have been the De Antiq. Brit. Eccl., in V. Warham., p. 313; but his account does not exactly tally either with that book or with the facts, although his doctrine is indisputable. See Wake's State of the Church, c. viii. pp. 391-394.]

[r] [See Spelman, Gloss. sub voce Parlamentum;—Brady, Introd. to Hist. of Engl., Tract. i. pp. 7-10;—Sharon Turner, Hist. of Anglo-Saxons, bk. x. c. 4.]

PART IV.

and Saxon Councils or Parliaments, published not long since by Sir Henry Spelman[s]; and he shall see this clearly verified. He shall find the nobles together with the Bishops, making laws and constitutions for the Church, and subscribing them; —"*Ego Dux subscripsi, Ego Comes subscripsi.*" He shall find these acts of theirs ratified by the king, and published in his name, by his authority, as his laws. The very like custom we find in France, and other kingdoms, in the days of Charles the Great[t]. It is true, that the succeeding Popes, upon pretence of some later canons, did watch all opportunities, when they found weak or embroiled princes, to crop the peculiar flowers of the crown, as patronage and investitures; which was the cause of much bloodshed in England, by inciting the subjects under the mask of religion against their sovereign[u]. But for the supreme judicature of Parliament in all causes, and the legislative power in all affairs, ecclesiastical as well as civil, which concerned the whole kingdom jointly with the king, it had been folly to attempt upon it.

[Jurisdiction a distinct thing from holy Orders.]

Secondly, for the matter of his allegation, I answer, that there is a double power ecclesiastical, of order and of jurisdiction; which two are so different the one from the other, as themselves both teach and practise, that there may be true Orders without any ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and an actual jurisdiction without holy Orders. Judge then, how much this author fails in his performance. He undertakes to prove, that our holy Orders were "devised" and "conferred" by laymen. But he leaves the Orders in the plain fields, to busy himself about the power of jurisdiction; which is nothing to his question. This is a second defect in his argument. He concludes not contradictorily.

[What kind of jurisdiction in things ecclesiastical is attributed to the kings of England.]

Thirdly, the Romanists themselves do also distinguish between an habitual jurisdiction, which is conferred at the time of ordination; and an actual jurisdiction, or a right to exercise this habit, by the application of the matter or subject. In the latter, the lay-patron, and much more the prince and the commonwealth, have their respective interests and con-

[s] [Fol. Lond. 1639. tom. i. See pp. 257, 301, 339, 347, 434, 442, 486, 489, 509, 533.]

[t] [See the Just Vindic., cc. vi. vii. (vol. i. pp. 172, 205), and Schism Guarded, sect. i. c. 5. (vol. ii. pp. 414, 415); Disc. ii. iv. Pt. i.]

[u] [See the Just Vindic., c. iv. (above in vol. i. pp. 148, 149); Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

currence. Dioceses and parishes were not of Divine institution. And the same persons were born subjects, before they were made Christians. Especially this reason hath place in England, where the jurisdiction ecclesiastical is enlarged and fortified by the king with a coercive power. It is not then habitual jurisdiction (which is conferred by Ordination), nor yet actual jurisdiction in the court of conscience, nor the power of the Keys, nor any part or branch thereof, which is derived from the crown; but it is a right to practise that power over the persons of the king's subjects, which is used in the exterior or contentious court, and that *sub modo*—as it is exercised in England, by the grace and indulgence of Christian princes, and by the laws of the realm; or, rather, it is the regiment and the government of that power, which is vindicated to the crown, to see that clergymen do their duties in their places, as well as all other the king's subjects, and administer right justice in such causes as the laws of the land have submitted to their censures; as, for instance, in causes testamentary, and the like[x]. This the Statute calls the "authority of jurisdiction;" that is, the coercive and compulsory power of summoning the king's subjects by processes in these cases, which is indeed from
1001 the crown, and the regiment of it, by applying or substracting the matter. Thus far then we allow, that the kings of England neither have any part of the power of the Keys, nor can derive the same to any others; and if any Parliament should declare the contrary, we might well express our obedience in submitting, but never yield our assent to believe it.

Fourthly, they, the kings of England, are indeed in our laws called "The supreme Heads of the Church within their dominions[y];" but how? Not spiritual Heads, nor yet ecclesiastical Heads; so as S. N. need not fear our deriving our Orders from them: but civil Heads, by an influence of coercive or corroboratory power, by applying or substracting the matter, by regulating the exercise, by punishing the delinquencies of ecclesiastical judges; that is as much as to

[The meaning of their title of Head of the English Church.]

[x] [See the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., c. iv. sect. i. (vol. ii. pp. 129, 130); Disc. iii. Pt. i.]

[y] [i. e. some of them *were* so called, for the title has been dropped ever since the reign of Philip and Mary. See above, in the answer to La Millet., vol. i. p. 29. note y; Disc. i. Pt. i.: and Just Vindic., c. iii.; vol. i. pp. 114-116; Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

say, as supreme governors: as Saul is called "the Head of the tribes of Israel," yea, of the tribe of Levi amongst the rest, the High-Priest himself not excepted; yet neither had the kings of Israel then, nor have ours now, any right to exercise themselves any part of the Priestly function.

[1 Sam. xv. 17.]

[ii. The royal letters patent conferring Bishoprics; i. e. the benefices.]

ii. S. N. proceeds thus,—"You have heard before, how by the king's letters patent Archbishop[ric]s and Bishoprics were conferred[z]."

True; and so they did, when Popery was at the highest, in its zenith; and not only "conferred" them, which they might do justly, but sometimes unjustly detained the Bishoprics in their hands for many years together, until the king was pleased to issue out his writ of "*Manum amoveas*" to the Sheriff[a]. What of all this? The benefices were conferred by the king's letters patent, but the offices were conferred by the ordination of Bishops. It is not the benefice, but the office, which is now in question.

[iii. Henry the Eighth's Commission to Cromwell.]

iii. In the third place, S. N. urgeth out of Mr. Foxe, "that Henry the Eighth imparted to the Lord Cromwell the exercise of this supreme spiritual regiment, making him his vicegerent for and concerning all [his] jurisdiction ecclesiastical[b]."

It appears then, that the supreme government of the crown in causes ecclesiastical was not first assumed by the Protestants; seeing this author proveth, that it was practised by Henry the Eighth, who persecuted the Protestants for their conscience, and continued a Roman Catholic unto his dying day. And what he did, was approved and maintained by the Roman Catholic Bishops of those days; yea, even by those who were the most bitter enemies to the Protestants, and the greatest zealots, I had almost said, bigots, of the Roman Church: as appeareth by their acts, their subscriptions, their books written in defence of this supremacy of princely regiment, as particularly that of Stephen Gardiner

[z] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 13. p. 189. See above in sect. i. pp. 200-204.]

[a] [William Rufus, for instance, held in his hands, at the time he was killed, the temporalties of three Bishoprics, Canterbury, Winchester, and Salisbury, and of nine abbeys (Flor. Wigorn., Chron., in an. 1100, p. 471;—Matt. Westmon., Flor. Hist., lib. ii. p. 21, in an. 1100); but it is to be feared, that Queen Elizabeth was quite as rapacious, to say nothing of Henry VIII.]

[b] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 13. p. 189: from Foxe, vol. ii. p. 421. ed. 1684. The commission itself is in the records to Collier, vol. ii. num. 30.]

Bishop of Winchester, *De Verâ Obedientiâ*[c]. It may well be, that the Lord Cromwell was made supreme delegate or commissioner by Henry the Eighth; or perhaps invested with a power to name delegates, as the Lord Chancellor now doth; and that the prince did confide principally in him for the prudential part, or the managery thereof[d]. But the kings of England never grant commissions of that nature to one single layman, how dear soever he be; but conjointly to him with others of maturity of judgment, of dexterity and skill in the laws, and also qualified by their callings to act by excommunication, or absolution, according to the exigence of the matter. In brief, Henry the Eighth did not "impart" holy Orders, nor habitual jurisdiction, but constituted delegates, by his commission, to hear appeals, to see justice administered; as all his predecessors had done before him. This neither concerns us nor the matter in hand.

iv. S.N. adds—"In the first of Queen Elizabeth's reign a statute was enacted, whereby all spiritual or ecclesiastical power or authority is united and annexed to the imperial crown of the realm," and "all foreign usurped power, jurisdiction, and preeminence, clearly extinguished, and by solemn oath renounced: . . in so much as doctor Whitgift placed in the Queen the fulness of all ecclesiastical government, from whom all ecclesiastical power . . is derived to Bishops;" and that she 'exerciseth her Church government by Archbishops, as she doth her temporal by the Lord Chancellor[e];' which "power," saith he, "was never heard of before in any Christian, heathen, or Turkish commonwealth[f]."

[iv. The Statute of the 1 Eliz. c. 1.]

If S. N. have cited his other testimonies with the same faith that he doth this, it is to be wished that his readers be not over credulous, but observe that old rule which Tully

[c] [See Just Vindic., c. iii.; vol. i. pp. 121, 122: and the corresponding passages in the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., and in Schism Guarded, in vol. ii.: Discourses i, ii, iii. Pt. i.]

[d] [See Collier, Ch. Hist., Pt. II. bk. ii. vol. ii. pp. 103, 104. Cromwell was appointed to be the King's "Vicemgerentem, Vicarium Generalem ac Commissarium specialem et principalem," in the entire ecclesiastical supremacy then arrogated by Henry, "cum potestate alium vel alios commissarium sive commissarios" (nominandi): as is set forth in the commission before quoted.]

[e] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 13. p. 189: from Whitgift (Defense of the Aunswere to the Admonition, against the Replie of T. C.), Tract. viii. c. 3. div. 33. (p. 381. fol. Lond. 1574), who affirms, that "the Archbishop doth exercise his jurisdiction under the prince, and by the prince's authority."]

[f] [Guide of Faith, ibid. § 14.]

PART IV.

calls the "nerves and sinews of wisdom,"—"Remember to distrust[g]:" for neither this statute, nor any other in England, doth invest the crown with any new power, but only re-establish that, which former kings enjoyed, and which of later times the Court of Rome had usurped; nor yet doth it meddle with the power of the Keys, or any branch thereof, nor with any subordinate jurisdiction at home or abroad. The king cannot consecrate, nor ordain, nor do any act of spiritual jurisdiction, properly so called. But that power which this and other statutes do vindicate to the crown, is a supremacy or sovereignty of regal power in the king of England, according to the example of his predecessors, by custom immemorial, to dispense with the transgression of the laws of the land, to dispose of the greater dignities of the Church, to prohibit the proceedings of ecclesiastical courts in case of encroachment, to receive appeals and to sentence them by fit delegates, to make laws ecclesiastical with the advice of his clergy and Great Council, and to do all things necessary for that great and architectonical end, the "safety of the commonwealth." That power of which it depriveth the Bishop of Rome, is an usurped power; to dispose of the dignities of the Church, to depose the king, or dispose of his dominions, to exercise a dominion in his Majesty's realms upon his subjects, contrary to his pleasure, by Roman legates. And whereas S. N. fancieth, that this is such a power as "never was heard of in any Christian, Turkish, [or] heathen commonwealth," he is much mistaken. Under the law of nature, the same persons were both kings and Priests; under the law of Moses, David, and Solomon, and other kings of Israel, did exercise the same power over their subjects. In the like manner did the primitive emperors. Yea, it is used to this day by Roman Catholic princes. The most Christian king of France gives ecclesiastical preferments without his leave obtained; the legates of the Roman Bishop may do nothing in France; and in his Parliaments he makes sanctions for the affairs of the Church; and this ever since the days of Charles the Great[h]. The Parliament Rolls, the

100

[g] ["Νῆφε καὶ μέμνασ' ἀπιστεῖν· ἄρθρα ταῦτα τῶν φρενῶν." Epicharmus, ap. Cic., Ad Attic., i. 19.]

[h] [See Schism Guarded, sect. i. c. 5. (vol. ii. pp. 403, sq.); Disc. iv. Pt. i.]

Bishops' registers, the records of the King's Bench and the Common Pleas, do all prove that this is no innovation in England;—for the king himself, for the judges in his name, to interpose in ecclesiastical affairs[i]. Lastly, what Doctor Whitgift saith, is no more than that which Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, a great persecutor of the Protestants, a great servant of the See of Rome, saith before him:—that the commonwealth is like a great family, wherein there are several offices; as, for instance, the divine, the physician, the schoolmaster; every one of which is principal or supreme in his own way: but yet that the master of the family, that is, the prince, hath an œconomical power paramount above them all, to see that they do not abuse their trust, and to dispose of their actions for the public good[k].

[S. N.'s proofs, that secular persons "wholly devised" our holy Orders.] [i, ii. The Statutes 3 Edw. VI. c. 12, and 8 Eliz. c. 1.]

In the next place, S. N. goes about to prove the other part of his former assumption,—that our holy Orders were "wholly devised by temporal authority:"—because there was an Act of Parliament made, 3 Edw. VI. chap. 12, "that such Form" of Ordination or Consecration of ecclesiastic persons, "as by six prelates, and six other persons learned in God's law" (that is, divines and civilians), "should be devised and published under the Great Seal of England," should "be lawfully exercised and no other, any statute, law, or usage, to the contrary notwithstanding;" and by another statute, 8 Elizabeth [c. 1.], they which which were so ordained, were "declared, confirmed, and enacted, to be Archbishops, Bishops, Priests, rightly made, ordered, and consecrated, any statute, law, canon, or other thing, to the contrary notwithstanding[l]."

[Answer.]

i. ii. I should not vouchsafe this argument an answer, it is so weak and disjoint; but that I would omit nothing[m]. Here is "devised" indeed, but where is "*wholly* devised?" "Devised" for the exterior manner or form, in language, ceremonies, circumstances, and accidentals; not devised for the essentials, or for the substance: devised according, not

[i] [See Schism Guarded, ibid. c. 6, pp. 430, sq.]

[k] [De Verâ Obedientiâ, in Append. ad Fasciculum Rer. Expetend. et Fugiend., pp. 814, 815.]

[l] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 14. pp. 189, 190.]

[m] [See the history of this Act of Elizabeth, in The Consecr. of Prot. Bps. Vindic., c. v. (vol. iii. pp. 79, 82, and note p), c. vi. (ibid. pp. 94-96), c. viii. (ibid. pp. 113, 114); Disc. v. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

contrary, to the institution of Christ, and the practice of the primitive Church: with a "*non obstante*," or "notwithstanding," the statutes, laws, canons, or customs of the realm, or any "other thing," that is, the Pope's Bulls, or the like; but here is no "*non obstante*" to the law of God, or to the institution of Jesus Christ. "Shall be lawfully exercised, and no other." It is the "exercise" of that form which is authorized, rather than the form itself; or the form only in relation to the use, to take away all doubts which might arise about it in the law of the land; not to determine any theological questions or disputes, or to alter the nature of it. It was to be done by "prelates," and "other persons learned in God's law." Here was no intention to deviate from God's law. If every form of Church-service or administration of the Sacraments, or Ordination, which receives any addition or alteration in prayers, or ritual accidents, or in the cir- 100
cumstances of time, place, persons, garments, according to the present exigence, may be called a Form "wholly devised" by men, or become therefore presently unlawful; it is most certain, that the Roman Liturgy, Missal, and Ordination, have been thus "devised" over and over again. In sum, the Form itself is extant, to confute these "devices;" agreeable to the institution of Christ, to the practice of the primitive Church. The corroboratory authority and confirmation of Parliament, doth not render that unlawful, which is lawful in itself.

But against this, the author hath sundry exceptions.—

One is, that the statute doth "not only 'declare'" them, "but 'enact' them, to be Archbishops," &c.; if they were validly ordained before, "this Act availed them nothing" at all[n]. The answer is easy. "*Redundans non vitiat*," as the law saith; "a redundant" or superfluous word may serve to take away a needless scruple, but "doth not vitiate" the Act. We do often find the word 'enacting' in a declarative statute; but never find the word 'declaring' in a statute, which is merely operative, and creates a new law. Statutes are not always so clearly penned at first, but that they need an explanation to prevent quirks and evasions. Concerning this statute, it is both declarative,—to shew that their ordination

[n] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 15. p. 190.]

was valid in itself;—and also operative,—to make it legal, or to render the legality more undoubted.

His second exception follows next:—'Suppose their installation and inauguration was invalid, either the Parliament had power to make it valid, or they had not power;' if they had, then there needed "no other ordination but the royal assent of the Queen and the approbation of her nobility;" if they had not "power to do it," then "it was an unjust act of usurpation, and a great want of wisdom in that honourable assembly, to make a law not appertaining to their office[o]."

I answer, first, that the author still forgetteth the right composition of the English Parliament; which, besides the king and the nobility, comprehends also the clergy and the commons. Secondly, he confounds "installation and inauguration," which pertain to the benefice, with "Ordination," which respects the office. Thirdly, he disputes "*ex non concessis*," supposing that as granted, which is by us absolutely denied; that is, that their Orders were invalid; and so he doth but beg the question. Fourthly, he concludes not contradictorily. We grant his conclusion;—that no other ordination was essentially requisite to the validity of their Orders, and that the authority of Parliament was sufficient to declare or render them legal. Lastly, admitting that the Parliament hath not power to make those Orders valid which were essentially invalid, yet, being essentially valid, to declare or make them valid in the eye of the law, and relatively to the English subject, was no usurpation in them, but a just and wise act pertaining to their office. Suppose the king and Parliament shall naturalize a stranger; they do not make him a man,—that he was before,—but they make him an Englishman, and give him a legal capacity to purchase and inherit, which formerly he had not. Or suppose the king, by his proclamation, shall make outlandish coin, as pistoles, crowns, ducats, current amongst his subjects, according to their true value; he were a weak arguer, who should conclude from thence, that before that proclamation they were counterfeit. The intrinsecal value was the same before and after the proclamation; but it gives them a legal value, and renders them

[o] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 15. p. 190.]

PART IV.

current; so as thenceforward no subject may refuse them, as formerly they might.

[iii. The Queen's dispensations in the case of Abp. Parker and the other Bishops consecrated at that time.]

iii. S. N.'s third reason to prove his former proposition,—that our orders were "devised and conferred wholly by temporal authority,"—is drawn from the Queen's "dispensations, to make good the consecrations of Dr. Parker and other intruders" (so he pleaseth to call them), "ordained in the second and third of her reign; whereby she dispensed with all causes or doubts of any imperfection or disability, that could or might be objected in any wise against the same:" but "no man can dispense with the disabilities of holy Orders," though they be but "accidental," save only "such as have authority to confer them;" so, "either her Majesty challenged to herself injuriously" a dispensative power "which no law of God or man would afford her," or otherwise, she "was the chief collater of [their] Orders[p]."

[S. N.'s argument inconclusive.]

First, admitting this allegation to be true, upon S. N.'s own credit, yet it follows not, because the Queen dispensed, that therefore there were real imperfections in their consecrations. "*Abundans cautela non nocet.*" Many persons, in uncertain times, do take out pardons, or dispensations, where there is no real defect, "*ad redimendam vexationem*"—to 1004
prevent future trouble. Secondly, there is a great difference between an "imperfection" and an invalidity. The former supposeth an incomplete being, the latter argues a mere nullity. So likewise there are accidental "disabilities" as well as essential; as bigamy, bastardy, or any notable deformity of the body. There are legal "disabilities," or canonical "disabilities;" which do not destroy the essence, but only hinder the exercise, of holy Orders. Thirdly, S. N. fails in his main ground also. Many persons may, and do ordinarily, dispense with the imperfections of holy Orders, which have no authority to confer holy Orders. Dispensation is an act of jurisdiction, not of order; whereof lay-persons are capable. But his fourth defect is yet greater. Neither they who have power to confer holy Orders, nor any person or society of men or Angels, neither prince, nor Pope, nor Parliament, nor Council, have power to dispense with the essentials of Christ's institution; or to give a "*non obstante*" to

[p] [Guide of Faith, § 16. pp. 191, 192.]

His prescription. As in the case of that Jew who was baptized with sand in the desert[q];—the question is not, whether his desire of Baptism might be accepted by God for Baptism, but whether any dispensation under heaven could make this a valid Sacrament. Assuredly it could not. That which is from the beginning invalid by Divine law, cannot be made valid by the dispensation of any creature in heaven or earth.

[True grounds of these dispensations.]

But to come home to the justification of these royal dispensations. It belongs originally to the same power, to dispense with a law, and to abrogate a law. A law is then abrogated, when the obligation thereof is universally taken away, by the authority of the law-giver, or by contrary custom, which implies a consent. A law is then dispensed with to any one, when, the law remaining in full force as to the community, he is exempted from the obligation, or pardoned the transgression thereof, by the immediate grace of the law-giver, or by power derived from him. From whence it appears evidently, that no man hath originally a dispensative power, but he or they who have also a legislative power. And therefore, as none but Christ Himself can abrogate His own institution, so none but Christ Himself can dispense with His own institution. It is confessed, that circumstantials and accidentals may be changed; as the time of the day for the celebration of the Eucharist; [that] is, upon good grounds: but it is likewise confessed, that these are no essential parts of the institution. Moreover, they who have power to make laws or canons, or to receive and authorize them being made (as it is in England, where the kingdom challengeth a receptive or negative power,—not to be ruled by any laws but such as themselves have consented unto,—and where ecclesiastical canons do bind only so far as they are received by law or lawful custom), they have also power to abrogate these laws, or to dispense with them respectively to their subjects. He who hath power to bind, hath also power to loose. He who hath power, with the advice of his Bishops, to make laws or canons for the ordering and regulating ecclesiastical affairs (as all the kings of England, Britons, Saxons, Normans, successively have had[r]), he hath

[q] [See above p. 175. note k.]

[r] [See the Just Vindic., c. iv. (vol. i. pp. 137-152), Disc. ii. Pt. i.; and the corresponding chapters in the Replic.

PART IV.

also power to dispense with the obligation which is induced by those laws. This is the true ground of dispensations royal. So, when the prince dispenseth with "imperfections or disabilities," it is to be understood of such legal imperfections and disabilities, as have relation to the law of the land; and in no wise of such as are repugnant to the institution of Christ[s]. As, when the king pardons a thief, or a manslayer, he makes him thereby legally just in the eye of the law, and dispenseth with all legal imperfections and disabilities; but his pardon extends not to the sin against God, nor to the guilt contracted thereby. Wherefore Mr. Mason's answer,—that the Queen dispensed with the trespasses against her own laws[t],—is no "daubing[u]," but a certain truth.

S. N. urgeth, that "the Queen in her first Parliament had repealed the laws of Queen Mary, which disannulled that new" Form of Ordination, and had not as then "enacted any new laws of her own, violable" or dispensable "in that kind[x]."

What will he conclude from hence? Perhaps Queen Mary's laws were not repealed so fully as they ought for want of some expression. Perhaps King Edward's Form was not sufficiently re-established, or not so clearly [as] to free it from all scruples[y]. Perhaps it was not so punctually penned as it might have been, to meet with all difficulties. In all these cases there was ground enough for a dispensation. But that which is without all peradventure, is, that besides those repealed laws of Queen Mary, there were the statute laws of all 1005
her predecessors, there was the common law or custom of the realm: all these were her Majesty's laws, as much as those which were enacted by herself; and her dispensative power did extend to these, as well as to her own. He that doubts of a truth so evident, ought to have the penal laws duly executed upon him until he recant his error.

Mr. Mason gives another answer also,—that the Queen

to the Bp. of Chalced. and Schism Guarded (vol. ii.), Discourses iii. and iv. Pt. i.]

[s] [See the Consecr. and Success. of Protestant Bishops Vindicated, c. v. (vol. iii. pp. 77-83, and notes); Disc. v. Pt. i.]

[t] [Mason, Vindic. of Engl. Orders, bk. iii. c. v. p. 133. ed. 1613; quoted by S. N.]

[u] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 16. p. 191.]

[x] [Ibid.]

[y] [See the Consecr. and Success. of Prot. Bps. Vindicated, c. v. (vol. iii. pp. 80-82), Disc. v. Pt. i.]

"dispensed not in essential points of ordination but in accidentals, not in substance but in circumstances[z]." This S. N. calls "dallying:" because "the words of the letters patent" are, "In all causes and doubts of any imperfection or disability that can or may be objected in any wise against the same;" and also because "the statute of 8 Elizabeth," and the "learned lawyers of the realm," do witness, that "the doubts were not about accidental ceremonies," but "about the very substance or validity of their ordination[a]."

Whether Mr. Mason's answer be a "dallying," or rather S. N.'s reply a trifling, let the unpartial reader judge. The letters patent say, "Of all imperfections or disabilities." True: but it is ever intended of all legal imperfections and disabilities, induced by the law of the land; or of all dispensable disabilities: but, as I have formerly shewed, essential disabilities do admit no dispensation. In like manner, neither "the statute of 8 Elizabeth," nor the "lawyers[b]" whom he mentions, do either intend, or so much as intimate, any essential invalidity in respect of Christ's institution, but only a legal invalidity, in relation to the English laws. What have the common lawyers to do with the essentials of Christ's institution? This is "beyond their last," and without the sphere of their learning. The common law is their profession, and the rule whereby they govern themselves.

But S. N. hangs on still at the end of this argument.— The Protestants "say, that the wisdom of their Church had discreetly pared away all . . superstitious ceremonies in Ordination;" therefore there needed no dispensation for these; and "it is not to be thought, that the Queen would dispense with those which the wisdom of their Church retaineth as good and lawful[c]."

I answer,— those superstitious ceremonies were more properly excesses than defects, rather over than short; but yet, where "the half is more than the whole[d]," as it is in all virtues, even excesses do become defects. But these imperfections with which her Majesty doth dispense, were legal

[z] [Mason, Vindic. of Engl. Orders, bk. iii. c. 5. p. 132. ed. 1613; quoted by S. N.]

[a] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 16. p. 191.]

[b] [Viz. those mentioned below in sect. vii. pp. 242-244.]

[c] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 16. p. 192.]

[d] [Hesiod., Op. et Dies, 40; "Πλέον ἥμισυ παντός."]

PART IV.

defects of another nature, either for want of clear establishment or authorization in law, or a due prosecution of the law established. So he shoots his bolts both from the question and from the right scope of the dispensation. "It is not to be thought," saith he, "that her Majesty would dispense with those ceremonies or circumstances which" the Protestant Church "retained." True, not with the due use of them. But what if some of them were omitted? what if the Form of Ordination was not duly prosecuted in all accidentals? He hath need to sue out a dispensation for this argument, if it would corroborate it.

[S. N.'s] Seventh Argument [against our Orders; —from the alleged opinions of our lawyers against their validity.]

7. His seventh argument follows, in the 17th and 18th sections, drawn from the opinions of our lawyers in the point.—"It appears by an article of Queen Mary's, made with the consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and recited by Mr. Foxe," that the Protestants "were 'not ordered in very deed.'"—(If it be only an article, what need the consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal? If it be an Act of Parliament, what need the testimony of Mr. Foxe?) —Also, "Doctor Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester," degraded Ridley of his Priesthood, which he had received after the Roman Form, but not of his Episcopacy, which he had received after the Protestants' Form; because he "did not take him to be a Bishop" in deed. Moreover, "the opinion of the judges" in Queen Mary's days was, that Edward the Sixth's "Bishops were not" duly "consecrated, and therefore were no Bishops;" and "for that cause their leases did not bind their successors (Brook's Novel Cases, placit. 463)[e]." And to corroborate these partial allegations, he produceth an impertinent trial without head or foot, between Doctor Horne Bishop of Winchester, and Bishop Bonner, whether Doctor Horne was Bishop at the time when he tendered an oath to Bonner. And "the trial was such, as Bonner was discharged, and never after questioned: but it was presently after ordained in Parliament, that all acts heretofore done by any

[e] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 17. p. 192. For Queen Mary's "Article," see above in the Consecr. and Success. of Protestant Bishops Vindicated, vol. iii. p. 114. note g. § 2. Disc. v. Pt. i.; for Dr. Brooks, ibid. p. 115. note g; and for Brook, ibid., c. iv.; ib. pp. 56. note g, 58. note d.]

person about the consecration, confirmation, or investing, of any person elected to the dignity of an Archbishop or Bishop by [virtue[f]] of the Queen's Letters Patent or Commissions since the beginning of her reign, should be adjudged good[g]; which laws had been superfluous and unbeseeming the dignity of that place, if the said Bishops had been sufficiently made before. Especially seeing it is provided also in the said Parliament, that all tenders and refusals of the said
1006 oath," made "before the last day of that present session," should be adjudged "void." If their former ordination had been good, "it had belonged to that High Court to have maintained them[h]."

What a deal of useless rubbish is here heaped together! But S. N. could not be silent, and he held it much easier to shoot at rovers than to level at the mark. First, for Queen Mary's "Article." Suppose it to have been an Act of Parliament, it might make their ordination illegal, or restrain their exercise of holy Orders, until it was repealed, and no longer; but it could never annul or invalidate them. Secondly, Bishop Brooks and Queen Mary's judges, a Popish Bishop and Popish judges, are no competent witnesses to give evidence concerning the Orders of Protestants. They who made no scruple to shed their blood, and sacrifice their bodies in the fire, would not be more tender of their Orders than of their persons. If one of us should urge my Lord Coke's Reports, or a late statute of the Parliament, or some sentence in the High Commission, or a determination in either of our Universities, against them, in a point of controversy agitated between us, for an authentic proof, how would S. N. make himself merry with it! Yet we might do the one, as well as he doth the other. It may be, Bishop Ridley was silent, when he knew his speech would neither avail him nor his cause; but if he had had your Bishop of Gloucester at a free disputation in the schools, he would have taught him another lesson. The truth is, the poor judges are wronged: for they neither meddled with any controversy in religion,

[f] [Misprinted "writ" in the folio edition.]

[g] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 17. p. 193.]

[h] [Ibid., § 18. pp. 193, 194. For an account of the trial between Bonner and Horne, see above in vol. iii. p. 79. note p; and Fuller, Ch. Hist., bk. ix. c. 4. § 1-8.]

PART IV.

nor had either intention or skill to determine any thing about the essentials of Ordination; they meddled only with law cases, and kept themselves within the bounds of their own profession. It were to be wished, S. N. would keep himself half as well to the question: then he would not thus waste his time, nor weary his reader, with processes in law to prove theological problems. It seems, he conceives not only the judges of the common law, but twelve honest jurors of Surrey, to be competent judges of Christ's institution; when all Englishmen know, that jurors are only judges of matter of fact, not of the law of the land, much less of the law of God. But it is his hap to fail in this also: for he neither specifies what their verdict was, whether for the plaintiff, or for the defendant, or special; nor upon what grounds it was, whether upon the principal issue, or upon some by-matter; nor yet whether there was a verdict given. Once, this is certain, that it did no way concern this question, nor the essentials of Ordination. Admit the former tenders of the oath were made void; perhaps a shorter and a surer way was provided in Parliament. Admit former acts concerning consecrations were made good: that was only in the eye of the law of England, not of God; to clear some inferior doubts, not to dispense with the original institution. Are human laws presently superfluous, so often as they do not irritate or abrogate Divine laws? It well became "that High Court" to be their own expositors, to explicate what was doubtful, to supply what was defective. But it neither beseemed them, nor was it in their power, to confirm those Orders which were essentially invalid. This had been to rebel against the Supreme Lawgiver. If these be S. N.'s clear "proofs," his "forcible" and "convincing arguments[1]," he had need to meet with very easy and implicit readers.

[S. N.'s] Eighth Argument [against our Orders; —from the fiction of the Nag's Head Consecration.]

8. His eighth argument is taken merely from matter of fact.—"If Protestant superintendents had undoubted ordination, . . why did their ministers . . seek to Anthony Kitchin, Bishop of Llandaff," who "pretended himself to be blind," and to "the Irish Bishop in the Tower," for consecration? and upon their "refusal to lay hands upon them," why did

[1] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 18. pp. 193, 194.]

they "ordain one another at the Nag's Head in Cheapside; in such ridiculous manner, as they are now ashamed of it[j]?"

Nay, rather, why did this author take that for a certain confessed ground, which all Protestants do both deny and detest as an impudent fiction? The first deviser whereof was a man of "a leaden heart and a brazen forehead[k]," better acquainted it seems in the "kitchen" than in the schools. This story was not acted at the sign of the Nag's Head in Cheapside; but this fable was forged at the sign of the Whetstone in Pope's Alley. Who would affirm such a brainless calumny upon his bare word, without so much as a drawer or a vintner's boy to avouch it? The Welsh and Irish Bishops are brought in, only to serve the scene, to give a little relish to this incredible relation, and not altogether to disgust the palate of the reader; otherwise, the Bishop of Llandaff, or the meanest Bishop in Ireland, have as much (67) power to ordain, as the great Bishop of Rome. If there had been any such canonical passage as this, acted at the Nag's Head, by some madmen, not ministers, what doth this concern us? But to dispel umbrages ("a deceitful man is conversant in generalities"):—let him name the persons; and if they were ministers of the Church of England, we will shew him the day, the place, the persons, when, and where, and by whom, and before what public notary or sworn officer, they were ordained; and this, not by uncertain rumours, but by the acts and instruments themselves. Let the reader choose, whether he will give credit to a sworn officer, or to a professed adversary; to eye-witnesses, or to malicious reporters upon hearsay; to that which is done publicly in the face of the Church, or to that which is said to have been acted privately in the back room or corner of a tavern[l]. The author saith, "the Protestants are now ashamed of it." If they be, they have the more modesty, to blush at an aspersion which is so palpably unjust; and S. N. hath the less, who is not ashamed to expose such counterfeit and adulterous ware to the view of the Christian world. "*Periisse puto,*

[j] [Guide of Faith, c. xx.] § 19. [p. 194.]

[k] ["Cui os ferreum, cor plumbeum esset." Licin. Crassus, ap. Sueton. in Neron. c. ii. p. 524. ed. Græv.]

[l] [See, for this subject, the Consecrat. and Success. of Protest. Bps. Vindicated, in vol. iii.; Disc. v. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

cui pudor periit[m]." But let me do his fellows that right, that since Sanders or Harding, there is scarce one of them, who hath made use of this prodigious fable in his polemic writings, which I have seen[n].

[S.N.'s] Ninth Objection [to our Orders;—from the testimony of our own writers.]

9. The ninth argument is taken from the testimony of our own writers: who do both affirm, that the Roman orders are no true orders, and that they have no ordinary calling; and do also deny, that the calling of the Protestant ministers did proceed from the Roman Catholic clergy, who were their predecessors. For proof of the former part, he cites Dr. Fulke, saying, "that we esteem" their "Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, no better than laymen," and that we do not "receive" their "ordaining to be lawful;"—and Dr. Whitaker,—that the Roman Catholic Bishops are "not lawful Bishops, either by Divine, ecclesiastical, or civil law;"—and Dr. Sutcliffe,—that "the Roman Church is not the true Church, having no Bishops and Priests at all, but only in name;"—and Dr. Sparke,—that the Roman "Bishops and Priests have no ordinary calling, but wholly unlawful." And S. N. adds "a nut," which this last doctor proposeth to the Church of Rome to crack,—that "during the time of the Papal schisms" many were ordained by false Popes, who "had no right" to give Orders, which cannot now be distinguished "from such as fetch their pedigree from right Popes[o]." This "nut" S. N. retorts upon us, because we derive our ordination from them[p].

I do not know Dr. Sparke, but if this "nut" be proposed so by him as it is presented to us by this author, it is empty, not worth the cracking. It is not the benefice but the office, not the Papacy but Episcopacy, which gives a right to ordain; and the ordination of an Antipope was altogether as valid

[m] ["Nam ego illum periisse puto, cui pudor quidem periit." Plaut., Bacch., III. iii. 81.]

[n] [Bramhall had evidently not looked into the subject when he penned this sentence: the truth being, that neither Sanders nor Harding ever mention or even allude to the Nag's Head fable (as indeed they could never have heard of it, its first inventor being one Holywood in 1605, several years subsequent to the death of both), while every Anglo-Romanist writer on the subject from 1605 to 1625 does mention it and at length. See above in vol. iii. p. 39. note f. The present tract was written before 1654 (see above p. 199. note b), in which year the fable was again revived after lying dormant for some 30 years.]

[o] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 19. pp. 194, 195.]

[p] [Ibid., § 20. p. 195.]

as that of a true Pope. Thus the Protestants do readily extricate themselves; but it sticks a little closer to the Romanists, who make the Pope to be the root and fountain of holy Orders, upon whom they do depend, and [from] whom they are virtually derived. But those who are derived from an Antipope, are not derived from the true successor of St. Peter.

But to his main argument.—

[i. The pleas of particular doctors, and in behalf of foreign Churches, no argument against the Church of England.]

i. First, it is necessary to consider, whose advocates these four doctors were, and for whom they pleaded after this manner. That may be truly spoken by a person in one capacity, which is false in another: as, when the Priest in the Eucharist saith, "This is My Body," it is false, if he speak of himself, but true, if he speak in the person of Christ. They could not plead thus for the Church of England, which all men know to have, and maintain, an ordinary vocation, and to claim no other. But they plead thus for some foreign Churches of Protestants, who pretend to an extraordinary calling; and either out of necessity, as some, or out of election, as others, do want a personal succession of Bishops to impose hands. We wish it were otherwise: but if they be to be blamed, yet the Romanists of all others are not meet to reprehend them; who shewed them the way, by teaching in their schools that a simple presbyter by delegation from the Pope may make presbyters[q]. 'If the Bishop,' say they, 'be the essential minister of Ordination, how can the Pope dispense with it? if he be not, then the Pope's dispensation is not necessary.' In the meantime, let the doctor remember, that it is the Church of England which he undertakes in his title page; and that neither the defects of other Churches[r], nor the pleas of particular doctors in their favour, ought to prejudice us, who maintain a personal and uninterrupted succession from the Apostles.

[ii. The weak pleas of voluntary advocates no

1008 ii. Secondly, supposing, but not granting, that those doctors made this plea for the Church of England; though it be a frequent, yet it is no fair way of reasoning, from the dif-

[q] [So Th. Aquin., Summ., P. III. c. lxxxii. art. 11. Ad primum: and see an ample list of authorities to the same purpose, in Morinus, Comment. de Ordin., P. III. Exerc. iv. c. 3. § 3-13. pp. 62-64.]

[r] [Compare the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., Answ. to Pref. sect. 3. (vol. ii. p. 42), c. i. sect. 2. (ibid. pp. 69-71); Disc. iii. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

disproof of a just position.]

ferent opinions and arguments and answers of writers of one and the same communion to impugn that conclusion, which both parties do maintain. As thus;—If the Sacraments do confer grace, it is either physically, or morally; but some say, not physically, others say, not morally; therefore they do not confer grace at all. Or thus;—If Christ instituted Baptism, it was either at His baptization in Jordan, or after His Resurrection, when He said, "Go teach all nations, baptizing them;" but some say, it was not in Jordan; others say, it was not after the Resurrection; therefore it was not at all. Or thus;—If Christ made the Apostles Priests, it was either at His last Supper, or when He breathed upon them, saying, "Receive the Holy Ghost;" but some doctors deny the one, others deny the other. Or,—If Christ's body be present in the Sacrament, it is either produced, or adduced; but some of the greatest clerks in the Roman Church say, it is not produced; others (as good as they) say, it is not adduced. If the Chair of St. Peter be annexed to the See of Rome, it is either by the ordination of Christ, or by the constitution of the Church; but some say, not by Christ's ordination; others say, not by the [Church's[s]] constitution. There is scarce that question controverted between them and us, wherein a man might not trifle with such arguments. Just thus S. N. argues here:—if the Protestant ministers have a calling, either it is ordinary or extraordinary; but the Church of England saith, it is not extraordinary; and some doctors say, it is not ordinary; therefore they have no calling:—whereas both parties do maintain, that they have a true calling. The weak plea of a voluntary advocate doth not annul or extinguish the just right of a true owner, who hath both a good title, and undeniable evidence. "If the foot or ear shall say, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?"

[Matt. xxviii. 19.]

[John xx. 22.]

1 Cor. xii. 15.

[iii. Romish orders might be said to be lost, because they were corrupted or abused.]

iii. Thirdly, a power or faculty, which is beneficial in its own nature, may be so abused by accident, that it becomes not only unprofitable to that good end for which it was ordained, but also pernicious; insomuch as it were much better, that he who hath it, wanted it: and by this abuse, he forfeits justly the denomination which it gave him, by his own default. Holy Orders are an excellent grace conferred by God

[s] [Misprinted "Councils," in the folio edition.]

for the conversion of men; but if those who have them, instead of preaching truth, shall teach errors and heresies to His people, they are no longer true pastors, but wolves who destroy the flock. As a man, by extinguishing reason, by defacing the remainders of God's Image, and habituating himself to brutish conditions, may deservedly forfeit the name of a man, and purchase to himself the title of a beast; or as Marcellus said to his soldiers, that he saw many faces of Romans, but few true Romans indeed[t]. "He is not a Jew," saith the Apostle, "who is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh; but he is a Jew, who is one inwardly; and true circumcision is that of the heart in the spirit." So these doctors, conceiving that the Romish Priests had, by corrupting the doctrine of saving truth, in a manner frustrated, at least much hindered, the end of holy Orders, do therefore, as I conceive, deny them the title, not '*in sensu diviso*,' as if they wanted the essentials of holy Orders, but '*in sensu composito*,' in respect of those superstitious errors and inventions of their own, which they had mixed with the truth.

Rom. ii. [28, 29.]

iv. Fourthly, I have shewed before the difference between the habitual power of Orders, which is conferred by Ordination, and that actual power, which springs from the application of the matter; between a valid, and a lawful, power, which is not contradicted by the law of the land. The Romish Priests may have holy Orders actually, where they have charges of their own; and legally, where they are not restrained by law from executing their functions: but not relatively to the subjects of England.

[iv. Or to be lost in England, relatively to English subjects.]

Now then to take a particular view of their testimonies.

Dr. Fulke saith,—"We esteem" the Romish "Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, no better than laymen[u]:"—that is, in regard of their not using, or abusing, of their functions, or in reference to the exercise thereof in England. He saith further,—"We receive not their ordering to be lawful[x]." True, so say we all; but there is a great difference between a valid and a "lawful" ordination. If the essentials be ob-

[Dr. Fulke.]

[t] [Plut., in Vitâ Marcelli, tom. ii. p. 275. ed. Bryant.]

[u] [Aunswere of a True Christian to a Counterfeit Catholike, art. 13. p. 50. (8vo. Lond. 1577); cited by S. N. See the Consecr. and Succession, &c., c. ix.; vol. iii. p. 135. note t; Disc. v. Pt. i.]

[x] [Fulke, ibid.]

PART IV.

served, it is valid: but to make it lawful, it must not only be approved by the laws of the land, but free from all superstitious excesses and corruptions that are crept into it; such 1009 as their new matter and form in the Ordination of Priests.

[Dr. Whitaker.] Dr. Whitaker saith, that "their Bishops are not lawful, either by Divine, civil, or ecclesiastical law[y]." The former answer satisfieth this also. To make an act lawful, all the points and circumstances of law must concur, no new essentials must be obtruded. Suppose a child, or an idiot, or a person notably deformed, should have hands imposed upon him, according to the Romish grounds he is validly ordained; yet he is not a lawful Priest, nor can make use of his function lawfully, or without sin.

[Dr. Sutcliffe.] Dr. Sutcliffe saith, "The Church of Rome is not the true Church[z]." So say we all: that is, not the universal Church, but a true particular Church; true metaphysically, that is, retaining yet the essence of a Church; but not morally true, that is, orthodox, and free from errors[a]. He saith,—They "have no Bishops, and Priests, but only in name[b]:"—that is, as Marcellus said to his soldiers, that they were no true Romans[c]; or as the emperor said, that St. Ambrose alone was worthy the name of a Bishop[d]: that is, they discharge not the duties of their calling, but abuse them, having reduced the whole Priestly function to a new propitiatory Sacrifice, and the hearing of clanculary confessions.

[Dr. Sparke.] Dr. Sparke saith,—The Roman "Bishops and Priests have no ordinary calling, but wholly unlawful[e]." He who saith they "have no calling but unlawful," acknowledgeth that they have a calling, though unlawful, and corrupted with superstitious inventions.

[y] [Whitaker, Controv. II. Qu. v. c. 6 (Op. tom. i. p. 511. col. b), quoted by S. N.]

[z] [Sutcliffe, Answer to Exceptions, p. 87 (as quoted by S. N.; but no work of his with that title is to be found.) He asserts elsewhere, that "we are not to looke for the true Church among the Papists," because they "want both Priests and Bishops:" scil. in his Abridgement or Survey of Popery as opposed unto Matthew Kellison's Survey of the New Religion, c. xli. p. 253. 4to. Lond. 1606.]

[a] [See above in the Replic. to the Bp. of Chalced., Answ. to Pref., sect. 1. (vol. ii. pp. 38, 39), c. i. sect. 1. (ibid. pp. 55-57); Disc. iii. Pt. i.:—and in the Vindic. of Episcop. against Baxter, c. iii. (vol. iii. pp. 518, 519), Disc. iii. Pt. ii.]

[b] [Sutcliffe, as quoted by S. N. See note z.]

[c] [Plut., in Vitâ Marcelli, tom. ii. p. 275. ed. Bryant.]

[d] [Theodoret, H. E., v. 18.]

[e] [Sparke, Answere to Master John de Albines' Notable Discourse against Heresies, c. i. pp. 20, 23, 24, 26 (4to. Oxf. 1591); quoted by S. N.]

Thus the authors cited by him, say nothing but what may admit of a true construction. As for me, I have not their books in present, to weigh the places exactly. I confess there are a generation of enthusiasts among us, who take away all subordination of causes, and jump over the backs of all secondary agents; who approve of nothing, but that which is immediately from Heaven; as if themselves (poor bulrushes) were, as it is feigned of the old heroes, the natural offspring of God. These men indeed fancy an extraordinary vocation. If any of these doctors were tainted with that error, it is more than I know, or believe. But this I am sure of, that the doctrine of the most able and orthodox divines in England, and the universal practice of the Church, is otherwise. The author must not think to wrangle the Church of England out of a good title by private speculations.

[Of Dr. Whitaker's assertion that we do not derive our Orders from the Church of Rome.]

In the next place he endeavoureth to prove, out of Doctor Whitaker, that we do not derive our holy Orders from the Church of Rome, nor from our Roman Catholic predecessors[f]. And in some sense it is true: for we do not derive our ordination from them, as from the fountain[g] whence holy Orders do spring, but as the channel or conduit pipe by which they are conveyed to us. They are not the root from whence[g], but a branch through which, this sap flows to us; they are not the body of the sun[g], from which this beam proceeds, but the air, through which it passeth; not the beneficiaries or lords of the see, but the seneschals or stewards of the court; not the owners, but the cash-keepers, to dispose this treasure according to the orders of our common Master. The poor were not to thank Judas for that alms which he conferred upon them by the appointment of Christ; neither were the alms the worse, because Judas who kept the bag "was a thief," and grudged at his Master's [John xii. 6.]

[f] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 20. p. 195; from Whitaker, Controv. II. Qu. v. c. 6 (Op. tom. i. p. 509. col. b).]

[g] ["Ecclesia quoque una est, quæ in multitudinem latius incremento fœcunditatis extenditur: quomodo *solis* multi *radii*, sed lumen unum; et *rami arboris multi*, sed robur unum tenaci *radice* fundatum; et cum *de fonte uno rivi plurimi* defluunt, numerositas licet diffusa videatur exundantis copiæ largitate, unitas tamen servatur in origine. Avelle radium solis a corpore, divisionem lucis unitas non capit; ab arbore frange ramum, fructus germinare non poterit; a fonte præcide rivum, præcisus arescet." Cypr., de Unit., p. 108. ed. Fell.]

PART IV.

liberty. And therefore S. N. might spare all his invective flourishes. Can we not "enter into the fold of Christ but by the back door of Antichrist, nor minister His Sacraments but by the ordination of Antichrist, nor feed His sheep but by commission from Antichrist, nor confer or receive holy Orders but by the authority of Antichrist[h]?" We enter into the fold by the foredoor, which is Jesus Christ; not "by the backdoor of Antichrist." We have our commission from Heaven, not from Rome. We retain Christ's ordinance in its purity, and abandon those corruptions which they had added. What we do, is by authority of that great Legislator, Who is able to save, and to destroy. Every Bishop hath as much authority to ordain as the Pope. So far are we from believing, that the Pope is the root of all hierarchy, and that all Bishops and Presbyters derive their authority from him.

John x. 7.

Secondly, we received not our holy Orders only from them. We had holy Orders in the isle of Britain even from the days of the Apostles[i], before we had any commerce with Rome; which have continued thence ever since by an uninterrupted succession. And when the Saxons, many ages after, were converted to the Christian faith in the days of Gregory the Great, and principally by his care, we had Orders from Rome, but not dependent upon Rome, nor from Rome lapsed. Gregory abhorred that tyrannical power which his successors 1010
in after ages usurped, and affirmeth confidently, that whosoever should call himself an universal Bishop (not an only Bishop, no man was ever so vain to attempt that), "was in his pride the forerunner of Antichrist[k]."

Thirdly, when our Protestant Bishops received holy Orders from their predecessors of the communion of Rome lapsed, yet it was not *qua tales*—as they were corrupted, but simply, as they were Bishops: even as a great part of those orders which are at this day in the Church of Rome, are derived lineally from Arian predecessors.

Let us hear now what Dr. Whitaker saith:—that "our Bishops and ministers, though they be not ordained by

[h] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 22. p. 197.]

[i] [See Just Vindic., c. v. (vol. i. pp. 161, 162), Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

[k] [Greg. M., Epist., lib. v. Ep. 21; Op. tom. ii. p. 751. C.—See also lib. v. Ep. 43, and ix. Ep. 68; ibid. pp. 773. B, 984. C: and the Just Vindic., c. viii. vol. i. pp. 253, 254; Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

papistical Bishops, yet they are orderly and lawfully ordained[l]." Again he saith, that the Romanists accounted "none lawful pastors," but such as are "created according to their form and order; but we say" truly, "their ministry was corrupted, and therefore we ought not to be created Bishops by them[m]." "*Distingue tempora*"—"distinguish but the times," and the answer offers itself. The doctor speaks of those times, after the separation was formed between us and them, after their Form of Ordination was purged from its corruptions, and a new Form by law established. Then for a Bishop or Priest of the Protestant communion to have repaired to a papistical Bishop for ordination, had been an unlawful act, which he ought not to do when he might be ordained lawfully and orderly at home by a Bishop of his own communion. Yet further Doctor Whitaker saith, that the constitution for a Bishop to be created by two or three Bishops "ought to be observed" in a "flourishing Church," as "long as things remained whole and entire," but "not in a lapsed Church;" that is, as he expresseth himself, when there are no "godly Bishops, from whom ordination may be had[n]:"—and again,—"They who have authority to call, have authority to ordain, if lawful ordination cannot be obtained;" as when "the Bishops of those times could not be drawn to ordain any," but "such as in all things favoured them[o]." These two places carry their answer with them;—that the doctor pleads only in the case of invincible necessity—where ordination cannot "be had"—where it "cannot be obtained"—where "the Bishops" will "not be drawn to ordain any but such as" will engage themselves to maintain their errors. The Romanists do teach, that the Pope may dispense with a simple Presbyter to ordain[p]. Invincible necessity is a dispensation from God Himself, and doth in some cases suspend the execution of His own law; as we see in the not circumcising the [Josh. v. 5.]

[l] [Whitaker, Controv. cont. Bellarm. et Stapleton., Controv. II. Qu. v. c. 6; Op. tom. i. p. 509. col. b.—quoted by S. N., Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 20. p. 195. See the Consecr. and Success. &c., c. ix.; vol. iii. p. 134. note r; Disc. v. Pt. i.]

[m] [Whitaker, ibid. col. a: quoted by S. N., ibid.]

[n] [Whitaker, ibid.; quoted by S. N. ibid.]

[o] [Whitaker, ibid. p. 510. col. a; quoted by S. N., ibid. § 21. p. 196.]

[p] [Th. Aquin., Summ., P. III. c. lxxxii. c. 11. Ad primum. And see above, p. 247. note q.]

PART IV.

Israelites' children, whilst they travelled in the desert. How much more doth it dispense with the canons of the Church. Or shall a dispensation from Rome be more effectual than a dispensation from Heaven? But God be praised, this was not the case in England; where there was not any such necessity, nor needed any such remedy. Whether it was so in some foreign parts or not, I dispute not. They must [Rom. xiv. 4.] "stand or fall before their own Master." But where S. N. addeth, that "in the end," the doctor "fleeth to an extraordinary succession[q]," if the doctor do use any such plea, it is only in the case of invincible necessity, and in behalf of some foreign Churches; of whose communion he apprehendeth himself to be, and therefore calleth them our Church[r]. But for the Church of England he neither needeth, nor doth, nor could, make any such plea; he himself having an ordinary calling, and being solemnly and lawfully, according to the institution of Christ and the pattern of the primitive ordinations, consecrated by those who derived a personal succession from the Apostles; unless some please to call that form extraordinary, which was so lately reformed.

[S. N.'s groundless triumphing.]

And though S. N. may put all in his eye which he gets by these testimonies, and see never a whit the worse, yet, according to his use, he triumphs in his interrogations:—"Where lay your registers hid," and your "forged consecrations," when Doctor Whitaker, a great "light of your Church, wrote directly against them[s]?" Or rather, if the Doctor had written against all the registers in the kingdom (as, in truth, he doth not, he could not), one might justly have demanded, where lay Doctor Whitaker hid, that he should be so great a stranger in his native country. And the best apology that could be made for him in such a case were, that he was a mere contemplative man, confined to his study in St. John's College, better acquainted with polemical writers than with records. But there needs no apology for him. S. N. needs one much more; though he less deserve it:—to prefer one negative testimony, misunderstood and

[q] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 21. p. 196.]

[r] [The context will shew, that this is a correct account of Whitaker's position and arguments. See above in vol. iii. p. 135. note s.]

[s] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 21. p. 196.]

misapplied, before so many affirmative in the point; and to
1011 accuse of forgery the registers and records of a whole national Church, presumptuously of his own head, without either witness or ground. S. N. should do well to consider, first, that our registers are not one or two, in each diocese one at least, dispersed through all the parts of the realm, without any mutual intelligence one from another. That all these should concur in a forgery, and yet maintain such a present harmony one with another, is incredible. Secondly, that the registries are public places, situated in the most conspicuous parts of a populous city, whither all persons have recourse from time to time, and view the records: certainly most unfit places for forgeries, which are works of darkness, and use to be acted in holes and corners. Thirdly, that the persons who keep them, are public notaries, sworn officers of known integrity, who may record no acts upon hearsay and vain reports, but those only whereof they were eye-witnesses themselves. Fourthly, that consecrations are not acted in private houses or chambers, but in the church, in the view of all the whole assembly, whither all persons of quality do resort upon such extraordinary occasions, where three Bishops must be present, if it be the consecration of a Bishop, and if it be only of Presbyters, the Bishop, the Archdeacon, and two or three of the gravest of the clergy. Fifthly, that the undoubted truth of these acts is corroborated, not only by the traditional suffrages of all the inhabitants, who have heard it related by their parents and predecessors, but also by many ocular witnesses, who were present themselves, and were living, when Mr. Mason did print his book. It had been too early then to expose lying legends and feigned consecrations to the public view of the world, when so many were living in every place who could upon their own knowledge have refuted the falsehood of them. Yet never was there heard any such exception against any one of them throughout the kingdom. And if S. N. had been half so solicitous of what he writes as Mr. Mason was, or had taken so much pains to have repaired to any one register, to examine the truth of the particulars, he would never have presented such a gross calumny to the eye of the world. Lastly, the instruments given to the persons consecrated under the hands and

[The evidence of our ecclesiastical registers indisputable.]

PART IV.

seals of the consecraters, attested by the public notary, do leave no place for doubting or denying it. He may as well question the Acts of former Parliaments, or the canons of synods, as these authentic evidences[t]. He might as well question, whether there was such a king as Edward the Sixth. The author may do well hereafter to be more wary how he lets such drowsy dreams drop from his pen. "*Negare factum*" —to deny a record or evidence, without good proof of forgery, is held one of the most dishonest pleas in law.

[In what sense the English Church believes the Pope to be an Anti-christ, in what sense not.]

Yet, as if he had undeniably proved his intention, S. N. proceeds to shew the reason, why they (the Protestants) do "disclaim the ordination of Bishops" of the Roman Communion;—"because they account" the "Pope to be Antichrist," and "the Bishops" actually subordinate to him, "Antichristian prelates[u]." Hereupon he declaims against "the misery of English superintendents," who, "to the condemnation of all their brethren who want that calling, are fain to beg their spiritual power from such as they misdeem" to be "Antichristian Bishops[x]." These he calls "base thoughts" and this a "miserable refuge[y]." O how careful is S. N. for their brethren, even as Judas was for the poor! But stay, Sir, not over fast, for fear of breaking your shins. The Protestants would borrow a word or two with you. First, they crave leave to tell you, that your new structure is a castle in the air without ground or foundation. As they do not "beg [their[z]] spiritual power" from any creature, so they have defined nothing concerning Antichrist; howbeit some particular persons have delivered their private opinions with confidence[a]. The name of Antichrist is taken sometimes more largely, sometimes more strictly. Largely, for every one that

[John xii. 6.]

[t] [See, for all this, the Consecr. and Success., &c., in vol. iii. Disc. v. Pt. i.; especially c. v. pp. 87-93, and the 1st Table in the Appendix, ibid. pp. 216-231.]

[u] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 22. pp. 196, 197.]

[x] [Ibid., p. 197.]

[y] [Ibid.]

[z] ["This" in the folio edition, by a misprint.]

[a] [S. N. quotes for the point, Whitaker (Controv. II. Qu. iii. c. 1. Op. tom. i. pp. 467, sq.), Fulke (Comment. in 2 Thess. c. ii. sect. 9, in Apocal. c. xvii. sectt. 1, 4, c. xx. sect. 2; pp. 657, 888-890, 905. 4th edit. 1633), Sparke (Answer to M. John de Albines, c. i. p. 23), Powell (Tract. de Antichristo. passim; Lond. 8vo. 1605): and might no doubt have multiplied quotations *ad infinitum* from writers of the same stamp. For a history of the doctrine respecting Antichrist, see Mede's Works, bk. iii.; Dr. Todd's Donnellan Lectures for 1838; and Burton's Bampton Lectures, note 60: the first interpreting the passages of Rome; the last (as did Hammond), of the Gnostics; and the second, as hitherto unfulfilled.]

is an opposer of Christ; as 1 John ii. 18,—"Now there are many Antichrists." In this sense we believe the Pope to be an Antichrist: that is, an opposer of Christ's prophetical office, by presuming to add his own patches to the doctrine of this Great Prophet, as necessary parts of saving truth; an opposer of His Priestly office, by mixing the sufferings of the Saints with the Blood of Christ to make up a treasury for himself, by making new propitiatory Sacrifices, as if the Sacrifice of Christ were not all-sufficient; an opposer of the kingly office of Christ, by intruding himself, under the pretensed names of St. Peter and St. Paul, to be the head regent
912 and Judge of the whole Catholic Church, to be the Vicar General of Christ, a Vice-God upon earth, not only appropriating to himself the power of the Keys, but challenging also a plenitude of civil power, to dispose of all the kingdoms of the world. "*Nos, nos, imperia, regna, principatus,*" &c.—"We, even we, have power to give and to take away all the empires, kingdoms, and principalities of the world[b]." "*Vides, O Petre, successorem tuum, et Tu salutifer Christe Tuum cerne Vicarium*"—"O St. Peter, look upon thy successor, and Thou sweet Saviour behold Thy Vicar." See whither the pride of the "Servant of Thy Servants" is ascended. So every way he is an Antichrist.

Secondly, the name of Antichrist is sometimes used more strictly, and in a more eminent sense, for *the* Antichrist; for "that man of sin, the son of perdition," mentioned 2 Thess. ii. 3. And in the latter sense, it is disputed problematically among the Protestants, whether the Pope be that great Antichrist. Doubtless all the signs of Antichrist do agree to him; as, to "sit in the temple," or "upon the temple, of God;" to have the original of his greatness out of the ruins or decay of the Roman empire; to inhabit a city builded on seven hills; to shew himself first about the year 666. But it is confessed likewise, that these marks do all agree to the Turk. So, whether the one or the other, or perhaps a third, the Protestants determine not; but leave private authors to their own opinions[c].

["Εἰς τὸν ναὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ καθίσαι."]

[Rev. xiii. 12, 18; xvii. 9.]

Thirdly, suppose the Pope to be an Antichrist, yet it doth not follow, that every Bishop under his jurisdiction is formally

[b] [Platin., in Vita Gregor. VII., p. 169. 1.]

[c] [Compare Schism Guarded, sect. vii. (vol. ii. p. 582), Disc. iv. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

Antichristian: namely, such as do err out of invincible ignorance, and hold the truth implicitly in the preparation of their minds, being ready to receive it whensoever God should reveal it; such as repent of their secret and unknown errors: of which sort we do not doubt but there are many thousands who live in the communion of the Roman Church.

Fourthly, supposing they were all Antichristian prelates, what are the Orders which they give the worse? There may be power of Ordination, where there is not purity of doctrine. The mysteries of God do not fail by the miseries of man; neither do His ordinances cease to be holy, because the ministers are unholy. What are the Scriptures the worse, because we received them at the hands of the Jews? What did the Baptism of Simon [Magus[d]] come short of the Baptism of Simon Peter? What difference between the receiving their Orders from Popish prelates, or their Christendom from Popish Priests? Many an orthodox Bishop derives both his Orders and his Chair from Antichristian heretics.

[Rom. iii. 2.]
[Acts viii. 13.]

Lastly, for 'condemning our brethren,' we are not so apt to censure whole Churches as the Romanists are. We account it a like folly, out of a hatred of the botches or sores, to hate the body, and out of the affection to the body, to dote upon the ulcers. The greatest part of Protestants, by much and much, enjoy an ordinary succession; and those who do not, might be necessitated to it. However, it is nothing to this question, nor to the Church of England.

[S. N.'s] Tenth Objection [to our Orders;—that we have no mission or vocation.]

10. Thus we are come to his tenth and last argument, in the 23rd, 24th, 25th, 26th, 27th, 28th, and 29th Sections; but so perplexed and confused, so full of disorders and impertinences, that it appears evidently what a deal of trouble he had to pump out this last reason. I will reduce [his[e]] discourse into the most advantageous order that I can, or it will admit. The scope of it is this:—'Mission or vocation is necessary to the lawful exercise of the holy function of a pastor; but though the Romanists should grant to Protestants a true consecration derived from Catholic Bishops, yet

[d] [Misprinted "Judas" in the folio edition.]

[e] ["this" in the folio edition, by a misprint.]

their mission or calling to preach their Protestant, or Calvinistical, doctrine, they are never able to shew.' To make his antecedent more clear, he distinguisheth calling into two kinds; "the one immediately from God, which is [called] an extraordinary mission; . . the other mediately, by authority communicated unto them from Apostolical men, . . which is termed an ordinary vocation, . . which hath continued ever since Christ, and shall continue to the end of the world," which he that wanteth, "is an intruder," no pastor[f].

[Mission extraordinary and ordinary.]

I pass by his distinction for the present, with these two animadversions. First, that a mission may be truly called extraordinary, which is mediately from the Church or the pastors of it; if it be done after an unusual and extraordinary manner, either in respect of the ministers, or of the forms, or the rites and ceremonies used in it. And, in this sense, the vocation of some Protestant ministers in foreign parts is called extraordinary: which I omit, as not concerning the
1013 Church of England, nor the question in hand. Secondly, this mediate mission or vocation is the very same with ordination. So this assumption implies a contradiction in itself; —thus,—Though it should be granted that Protestants are truly ordained, yet they have no true ordination.

[Protestants do not deny, that mission is necessary for pastors.]

The next thing considerable in his discourse, is the proof of his antecedent,—that mission is necessary for pastors:—sect. 23, by the authority of St. Paul, Rom. x. 15.—"How shall they preach except they be sent[g]?"—and sect. 26, by the testimony of Luther,—that they who intrude themselves into the office of preachers without a lawful calling are "impostors[h];"—and sect. 28, by the confession of Calvin,—"that God commandeth the Word and doctrine to be required from the mouth of prophets and doctors;" and that Servetus, and all such [as] "foolishly hunt after revelations," are very "Mahomets," or "restorers of a new world[i]."

All this superfluous discourse might well have been spared. For the Protestants do readily assent to his antecedent—that it is not lawful to exercise the office of a pastor in the

[f] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 23. pp. 197, 198.]

[g] [Ibid., § 23. p. 197.]

[h] [Ibid., § 26. p. 200: from Luther., In Epist. ad Galatas, fol. 276. Wittemb. 1554. (among his works in Latin, Witeb. 1550-1557, tom. v.).]

[i] [Ibid., § 28. p. 202; from Calvin, In Isai. c. lix. v. 21 (Op. tom. ii. p. 380. b), and Contra Errores Serveti (Op. tom. viii. p. 565. b).]

PART IV.

Church without a lawful calling—without any proofs. But that conclusion, or rather collusion, which he draws from the last testimony,—that Calvin, and Cranmer, and "the progenitors" of the English Protestants, were "so many Mahomets, who, contrary to the public truth received in the Church, challenged another" truth "revealed unto them out of the Holy Scriptures[k]"—is an unjust imputation, and (in this author's language) a "spiteful calumniation[l]." It is not the same thing, to erect a new Church, and to reform an old Church. There is a vast difference between the introduction of a new Gospel, and the reducing of things to a right state according to the Gospel received in the Church, and authorized by Christ; between those who "hunt after" new "revelations," and those who swerve not in any thing from the analogy of faith; between those who trample under foot the fundamental articles of Christian religion, and those who believe all things, which the holy Apostles, the Nicene Fathers, and holy Athanasius, thought necessary to be believed; between innovators, and those who endeavour to conform themselves in all things to the pattern of the primitive Church, who are ready to shed their bloods for the least particle of saving truth. And therefore S. N. talks to no purpose of the "reformed Gospel[m]." The Protestants never thought of reforming the Gospel: as somebody did of burning St. Paul's Epistles, not because they contained any thing which was false, but "*quædam male sonantia*"—"some things which sounded ill." Likewise in vain doth he demand, whether the Church of Protestants were extant in the world before the Reformation[n]: as if Protestancy were of the essence of the Church. As the errors of the Roman Church were accidental to it, so likewise was the protestation against those errors, and the reformation of them; which might either be present or absent "*sine interitu subjecti.*" A garden is the same before it be weeded and after. To be purged doth not give a new being to the body. The glory of Christ's Church was not extinguished by superstitious errors, but only eclipsed.

[See 2 Pet. iii. 16.]

The next thing which we are to observe, is, how he prov-

[k] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 28. p. 202.]
[l] [Ibid., § 22. p. 197.]
[m] [Ibid., § 28. p. 202.]
[n] [Ibid.]

Discourse VII.

[Whether Protestants have due mission or vocation.]

eth his assumption,—that Protestants have no vocation.—'If Protestants have a calling, it is either from princes or persons secular, or prelates ecclesiastic;' but "secular persons cannot communicate spiritual power:" moreover 'Protestant princes there were none,' and "Catholic princes would give no commission to preach Protestant doctrine:" in like manner, there were then "no Protestant Bishops or Priests in the world;" and "Catholic Bishops were so far from giving them any calling or commission to preach or administer the Sacraments after their manner," that "they excommunicated" them, and "laboured by all means to suppress their .. new-coined Gospel[o]." And sect. 27, he urgeth this argument further:—that though they had "power to preach truth, yet, when they began to preach other doctrine .. than that which was put into their mouths by their predecessors, therein they left[p] their calling and ran of themselves;" as an ambassador, "if he change the message of his prince," is not "therein truly his ambassador; especially if the prince countermand" it, and "recal" his power; but the Bishops of those times did "contradict the doctrine" of the first Protestants, and "reverse their commission:" and there is no "doubt, but they who have power to communicate, have power also to revoke and restrain the authority which they gave;" and "whosoever altereth the tenor of his commission, or persisteth after revocation, runneth unsent[q]."

I would the author had either understood himself more clearly, or expressed himself more distinctly, or been more
1014 constant to one sense. Sometimes by mission he understands that habitual authority which is communicated in Ordination; sometimes that actual power to exercise this authority, which springs from the application of the matter. Sometimes he speaks of a mission of council, which implies not any jurisdiction: and sometimes, leaving all these, desultoriously, instead of the commission, he falls upon the instructions; as if the not pursuing of them did void the commission.

I shall set down mine answer in distinct conclusions.

[o] [Guide of Faith, c. xx.] § 24. [pp. 198, 199.]

[p] ["*lost* their calling," in the orig.]

[q] [Guide of Faith. c. xx. § 27. pp. 200, 201.]

PART IV.

[i. Christ the source of all authoritative mission.]

i. First, the original power of holy Orders, and all authoritative mission, is from Jesus Christ. He is "the Lord of the Harvest," Which "sends labourers into His harvest." He "giveth" to His Church "some Apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, some pastors, some doctors:"—not only Apostles, evangelists, and prophets, which had an extraordinary and immediate calling; but also pastors and doctors, who were called immediately by the Church. "The Church" is "the House of God." The ministers are the "stewards" of this "House." Who can appoint a "steward" but the lord? They are Christ's "ambassadors." Who can substitute an ambassador but the sovereign prince?

Matt. ix. 38. Eph. iv. 11. 1 Tim. iii. 15. 1 Cor. iv. 1. 2 Cor. v. 20.

[ii. The Church the channel, through which by succession that mission is derived from Him to us.]

ii. Secondly, though the authoritative power of mission and vocation be in Christ, yet we ought not (with the Anabaptists or other enthusiasts) to trust to fanatical and fantastical revelations, or to think that every private motion is a sufficient mission or calling. Therefore Christ hath committed a ministerial power to His Church, to ordain by imposition of hands fit persons for that holy function, whereby the grace of holy Orders is derived from Him to us by a line of perpetual succession. And what the Church doth in that kind, ought to be interpreted as the act of Christ Himself. St. Paul tells the elders of Ephesus, whose calling without doubt was both ordinary and mediate, that "the Holy Ghost had made them Bishops" (or superintendents) of "the flock" of Christ. And the same Apostle doubteth not to call them the "ambassadors" of Christ, who did bear the treasure of the Gospel "in earthen vessels." He who wanteth this ministerial mission or vocation, is an intruder; and cannot expect the blessing of God upon his labours. It was the judgment of the ancients concerning Origen, that the reason why he fell into so many gross errors, was because he thrust himself into the office of a preacher before he had a lawful calling from the Church. One reason why our Saviour would not suffer the Devil to say he knew Him, was, because he had no calling. If you ask me then, who it is that gives Episcopal grace, God or man, I answer with St. Ambrose, "*Sine dubio Deus, sed tamen per hominem dat Deus*"—"Without doubt God, but yet God gives it by man; man imposeth hands, God giveth the grace;

Acts xx. 28. ["overseers." Eng. Vers.] [2 Cor. v. 20;—iv. 7.]

[Luke iv. 34, 35; 41.]

the Priest imposeth his suppliant right hand, and God blesseth with His powerful Right Hand; the Bishop initiates the orders, God gives the dignity[s]."

iii. From these two former conclusions doth arise a third, —that the Bishop who conferreth holy Orders, hath no power to revoke the same, because he is but a ministerial, not an authoritative agent. To this conclusion the Romanists give assent; teaching, that holy orders cannot be iterated, nor the character blotted out[t]. Yet it is true, that the Bishop who ordains, may sometimes suspend or restrain the canonical exercise of holy Orders: with these two cautions;—first, it is only where the Bishop hath actual jurisdiction over the person suspended; secondly, it must be done "*clave non errante*"—"the key not erring." If the key do err, that is, if the sentence be unjust, it may perhaps bind passively; but it binds no man actively, but him who gave the sentence,—to repent.

[iii. Such mission cannot be revoked by the Bishop, who is but the ministerial agent in conferring it.]

iv. Fourthly, there are many things which ought to concur, as requisite to the actual and lawful exercise of that habitual power, which is conferred by Ordination, according to the divers and respective constitution of several places and societies; as nominations, presentations, elections, installations, collations, institutions, *Congé d' eslires*, confirmations, and legislation itself: wherein several and respective persons or societies, as well secular as ecclesiastical, do challenge a just and respective interest; as princes, Parliaments, synods, Prelates, patrons, Deans and Chapters, and in some places, at some times, the people. All these requisites the English clergy have without all controversy (except the author will adventure once more to deny all the records of the kingdom). Neither are these respective interests devised by the Protestants, but acknowledged to be just even when Popery was at the highest: witness those laws which invest the crown
1015 [with[u]] the right [of] patronage, and those which debar

[iv. Certain requisites to the actual exercise of such mission are within the sphere of secular authority.]

[s] ["Quis dat, frater, Episcopalem gratiam? Deus, an homo? Respondes sine dubio; Deus. Sed tamen per hominem dat Deus: homo imponit manus, Deus largitur gratiam: sacerdos imponit supplicem dexteram, et Deus benedicit potenti dexterâ: Episcopus initiat ordinem, et Deus tribuit dignitatem." Pseudo-Ambros.,] De Dignit. Sacerd., c. v. [Op. tom. ii. Append. p. 363. D, E. And see also the Comment. in 1 Epist. ad Cor., c. x. ver. 4; ibid. p. 151. B.]

[t] [See above p. 209.]

[u] ["in" in the folio edition, by a misprint.]

PART IV.

foreigners from possessing ecclesiastical benefices in England, directly against the Pope's provisions[x]; that is still to be understood—by applying or substracting the matter. No legate *de latere* was allowed by the law of England but the Archbishop of Canterbury[y]. And if any was admitted of courtesy, he was to take his oath, to "do nothing derogatory to the king or his crown[z]." If any man do denounce the Pope's excommunication without the assent of the king, he was to forfeit all his goods[a]. It was not lawful for any man without the king's license to appeal to Rome[b]. The investiture of Bishops and churchmen was in the hands of the king[c].—To omit many other laws to the same purpose.—By which S. N. may see evidently, that when Popery did bear sway, yet the kings of England enjoyed an ecclesiastical supremacy, either to restrain or to give liberty in certain cases to the exercise of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, by applying or withdrawing the matter.

[These conclusions applied to answer S.N.'s question.]

Now, to S. N.'s question, I answer, that the Protestant Bishops had their habitual power from those who did ordain them, and the liberty to exercise this power actually from several and respective persons and societies, as well secular as ecclesiastical, according to their several interests. Neither is it material, whether those who ordained them were Protestants or Papists; seeing that the ministerial order is not changed, either by introducing "hay or stubble" upon the foundation, or removing it from the foundation.

[1 Cor. iii. 12.]

Secondly, I answer, that those who ordained them, had no power to revoke their ordination; as he that baptizeth a Christian, hath no power to revoke or annul his Christendom. Nor yet had they power to restrain the exercise of their Orders in England, for want of jurisdiction; which either they never had, or it was taken away from them, not by Cranmer and Ridley, but by the law of the land, by king and Parliament and synod, by the Church and commonwealth of England.

[x] [See above in Just Vindic., c. iv. vol. i. pp. 143-150; Disc. ii. Pt. i.]

[y] [Ibid., p. 140. note m.]

[z] Placit. An. 1. Hen. VII. [See above in the Just Vindic., ibid. p. 141. note n.]

[a] Placit. 23. et 24. [Edwardi I.—See in the Just Vindic., ibid. note o.]

[b] Placit. 32. et 34. Edw. I. [Just Vindic., ibid. note p.]

[c] Matt. Paris., [in an. 1164. p. 101. —See Schism Guarded, sect. i. c. 5 (vol. ii. p. 404-109), Disc. iii. Pt. i.]

His comparison of an ambassador will advantage his cause nothing at all: because they who confer holy Orders, have no such sovereign power as the prince; being not the author of holy Orders, as the king creates ambassadors. Yea, rather, his comparison maketh against himself. An ambassador must look more to the instructions of his prince, than to the direction of subordinate ministers. The instructions of our Sovereign Prince, from whom all holy Orders do flow, are the Scriptures, the sacred oracles of God, the key of His revealed councils. He changeth the ambassage of his prince, who varies from his instructions; and not he, who ordereth all his affairs by his instructions. Lastly, an ambassador, varying from his instructions, doth not thereby invalidate his legantine power in those things wherein he pursues his instructions. Neither doth every abuse of a lawful power presently take away the power. If it did, the Romanists have more cause to look about them than the Protestants: some of whom have dared to call their instructions "*Evangelium nigrum*"—"the black Gospel," "*theologiam atramentariam*"—"inken divinity." This is more than varying from their instructions. The Lord will one day call them to an account for these blasphemies. But see how S. N. is quite digressed from his question. The question is about the essentials of holy Orders, and whether the Protestant ministers have a calling or commission to preach. He declineth the mark, and discourseth at random, whether they do pursue their instructions and exercise their function as they ought; the full debating whereof would be little for the credit of his cause.

[S. N.'s Concluding Argument, against the mission of our clergy; —that they have only private interpretation of Scripture; and there-

11. S. N. makes one flourish more, before he leaves this subject. Having urged before, that Cranmer and the rest had no commission from those who did ordain them to preach the Protestant doctrine, sect. 24. he recites Mr. Mason's answer, —that "they had commission to preach truth, which God by the Scriptures having revealed unto them, they preached it and commended it to posterity[d]." To this just answer

[d] [Mason, Vindic. of Engl. Orders, bk. i. c. 2. p. 11. ed. 1613; quoted by S. N., Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 24. p. 199.]

PART IV.

fore no infallible or authoritative rule of Faith.]

he replies sect. 25;—that "the private interpretation" of Scripture, such as theirs was, "is fallible and subject to error;" that "every heretic challengeth this revelation" to himself, "and maintaineth it with as much reason as the Protestant[e]:"—and sect. 27,—that they "all pretend their mission and calling by Scripture; that the Donatists, the Circumcellians, the Arians, arrogated" to themselves "and had as good warrant for" their exposition "of Scriptnre as the Protestants[f];" that "the voice of God speaking in the Scripture, is nothing else but the very text of Scripture" (whereas "the Gospel is in the sense, not in the words[g]"); that 1016 all "industry in reading and finding out the sense of Scripture is deceivable, therefore Protestants could have" no "infallible certainty from Scripture of that truth which they delivered," which certainly "is necessary to faith;".. "yea, that though they should have lighted upon the truth in some essential article of belief, yet" this is "not that Divine truth which we are commanded to embrace, but a mere human verity," because "the motive for which Protestants believe is altogether fallible," but the Roman Catholics have an "infallible motive," that is, the proposal of the Catholic Church[h];.. therefore "the truth revealed" out of "Scripture" was no "sufficient" warrant for Cranmer and the rest to preach such Protestant articles as they now maintain[i], contrary to the approved doctrine of the Church;.. that "to avoid confusion and occasions of error, which might ensue from leaving of Scripture to the private interpretations of particular men, it pleased God to unfold the true meaning of His Word to the public pastors of His Church; to them He delivereth infallibly the inheritance of truth, of them only we must seek it; .. otherwise every fantastical spirit might devise what revelations he pleased[k]:"—and so, for a conclusion of this discourse, he commends Tertullian's[l] rule,—"to draw down from the pure Churches the line of faith, and seeds of doc-

[e] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 25. p. 199.]
[f] [Ibid., § 27. p. 201.]
[g] [Hieron., In Epist. ad Galatas, c. i.; Op. tom. iv. P. i. p. 230.]
[h] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 25. pp. 199, 200.]
[i] [Ibid., § 26. p. 200.]
[k] [Ibid., § 27. p. 201.]
[l] [Tertull., De Præscript. adv. Hæret., c. xx. (Op. p. 208. D. Paris. 1664).—"Ecclesias apud unamquamque civitatem (Apostoli) condiderunt, a quibus traducem fidei et semina doctrinæ cæteræ exinde ecclesiæ mutuatæ sunt, et quotidie mutuantur ut Ecclesiæ fiant."—partly quoted by S. N., ibid. § 29. p. 203.]

trine,"—and that of St. Cyprian[m],—"to repair to the conduit-head" of "Apostolical tradition, and from thence to direct the pipe to our times;" with whom Irenæus[n], Athanasius[o], and St. Austin[p], did concur[q].

This is the full sense of his discourse, as near as I can collect it, set down to the most advantage of his cause. He might well seem to be one of Zeno's scholars, who sometimes wanted opinions but never wanted arguments[r]; at least such as this, that is to say, impertinent, and wide from the cause. The question is of the commission, his whole discourse is of the instructions. If a prince's agent swerve unwillingly in some inferior matter from the tenor of that which he hath in charge, he doth not straightway forfeit his place. But, on the contrary, if an inferior minister of state should usurp a power to impose a charge upon a public agent contrary to law, such an injunction were void. So, if a Bishop shall require those whom he ordains, to preach that which is evidently repugnant to Holy Scriptures, they ought "to obey God rather than man;" and to say, "*Da veniam*," *Episcope*, "*tu*" *suspensionem*, "*Ille gehennam minatur*[s]." But there are no instructions so strict, which bear not a latitude more or less to the judgment

[S. N. hath wandered from the question—*who* are to preach, to the question—*what* they are to preach.]

[Acts v. 29.]

[m] [Cypr., Epist. lxxiv. Ad Pompeianum, pp. 215, 216. ed. Fell.—"Si ad Divinæ traditionis caput et originem revertamur, cessat error humanus; . . si canalis aquam ducens, qui copiose prius et largiter profluebat, subito deficiat, nonne ad fontem pergitur, ut illic defectionis ratio noscatur? . . Quod et nunc facere oportet Dei sacerdotes præcepta Divina servantes, ut si in aliquo nutaverit et vacillaverit veritas, ad originem Dominicam et evangelicam et Apostolicam traditionem revertamur, et inde surgat actus nostri ratio unde et ordo et origo surrexit."—partly quoted by S. N., ibid.]

[n] [Iren., Adv. Hær., lib. iv. c. 45. (p. 345. ed. Grabe)—"Quemadmodum audivi a quodam presbytero, qui audierat ab his qui Apostolos viderant et ab his qui didicerant."—referred to by S. N., ibid.]

[o] [Athan., Orat. i. cont. Arian., § 2. (Op. tom. i. P. i. p. 407. A);—"Οἱ δὲ παρ' ἑτέρων" (scil. than Christ) "ἔχοντες τὴν ἀρχὴν ἧς νομίζουσι πίστεως, ἐκείνων εἰκότως ἔχουσι καὶ τὴν ἐπωνυμίαν ὡς αὐτῶν γενόμενοι κτίσεως."—partly cited (in Latin) by S. N., ibid., as from Orat. ii. cont. Arian.; that oration which is numbered as the first in the Benedictine edition, occupying the second place in earlier editions.]

[p] [August., De Bapt. cont. Donatist., lib. v. c. 26. § 37. (Op. tom. ix. p. 158. D); "Quod autem nos (Cyprianus) admonet, 'ut ad fontem revertamus,'" &c. (abridging the passage quoted above in note m), "optimum est et sine dubitatione faciendum."—In Joann. Tract. xxxvii. § 6. (Op. tom. iii. P. ii. p. 552. F, G);—"Catholica fides veniens de doctrinâ Apostolorum, plantata in nobis, per seriem successionis accepta, sana ad posteros transmittenda, inter utrosque, id est, inter utrumque errorem" (Arianorum scil. et Sabellianorum) "tenuit veritatem."—both passages in part quoted by S. N., ibid.]

[q] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 29. pp. 203, 204.]

[r] [Diog. Laert., vii. 179; of *Chrysippus*, the pupil of Zeno.]

[s] ["Da veniam, imperator; tu carcerem, Ille gehennam minatur." Aug., De Verb. Domini, Serm. lxii.; Op. tom. v. p. 362. F.]

PART IV.

and discretion of the party trusted, to proceed *pro re natâ*, according to the law of nations[t]. Neither is there any Form of Ordination, either ours, or theirs, which limits the persons ordained, or authorizeth him who confers Orders to limit them, strictly and precisely to these opinions, which they must teach the people; but doth authorize them in general to preach the Gospel, and to apply that according to their best skill to the edification of their flock. This they did; and this is all which was enjoined them, this is all which could be enjoined them. If they had been enjoined otherwise, yet this is all which they ought to perform. We acknowledge the canonical obligation of a clerk to his ordinary; we confess, that much respect is due to the chief pastors of the Church: but yet not so as to make the authority of a single fallible person to be like Medusa's head, to transform reasonable men into stones.

[Particular Churches liable to degeneracy.]

No house is builded so strong but sometimes stands [in] need of reparation. No man keeps so good a diet but now and then needs the help of physic. So errors will be sprouting up in the best societies; and those Churches which have been most carefully planted, will in time require a weeding and reformation. He that will admit no Church but that which is spotless, with Acesius[u] must provide a ladder for himself to climb alone to Heaven. When the Church of Corinth was newly planted by St. Paul, what abuses were suddenly crept into it! Some denied the resurrection. They were all torn asunder with schisms and factions. Add to these the toleration of incest; profanation of the Blessed Sacrament; irreverence in their prayers; notorious abuse of the gift of tongues; contentions about trifles before infidels; insomuch as they stood in need to be visited "with a rod." Not England only, but Rome also, is a particular Church, as Corinth was; as subject to errors as they, and stands in need sometimes to be weeded as well [as] they. The upstart name of Roman-Catholic is a late device, unheard of in the primitive times and many ages after. There is only this difference between Rome and Corinth, that as those diseases

1 Cor. xv. 12.
1 Cor. i. 12.
[1] Cor. v. 1.
1 Cor. xi. 22.
1 Cor. xi. 13.
1 Cor. xiv. 26.
1 Cor. vi. 1.
1 Cor. iv. 21.

[t] [For the meaning of this expression as technically used in the time of Bramhall, see above p. 72. note i, and authorities there cited.]

[u] [Socrat., H. E., i. 10.—Sozom., H. E., i. 22.]

1017 commonly are most mortal, which are insensible, so the errors of Rome are much more dangerous, because they will not confess that they can err; and doating upon a supposed infallibility, as Ixion did upon a cloud, they neglect the means of a true recovery, and deprive themselves of a "second plank after shipwreck[v]." This proclivity to error proceeds partly from the malice of the envious one, who is continually busied in sowing tares, and partly from the desultorious nature of man, who is "*omni mobili mobilior.*" Hence it comes to pass, that the best ordinances are subject to a bending and declining. [Matt. xiii. 25.]

[The Scriptures a rule of supernatural truths.]

Therefore God, having pity on mankind, hath provided for us a rule of supernatural truths, His Holy Word: to be "a light unto" our "feet, and a lantern unto" our "paths;" which is "able to make" us "wise unto salvation;" which is "profitable" to teach, to correct, to exhort, to convince, "that the man of God may be perfected to every good work." Therefore the Scriptures are called canonical, because they are the canon or rule of our Faith. A rule is no rule, if it be imperfect. They are the "testament" of the Everliving God. It is not lawful to add any thing to the testament of a mortal man. "In vain," saith God, "ye worship Me, teaching for doctrine" (that is, for substantial necessary truths) "the precepts of men." They are "the power of God unto salvation." Therefore men "err" because they "know not the Scriptures." God sends His people "to the law and to the testimony; if they speak not according to these, there is no light in them." Let it be admitted, that there be some unwritten verities, which, being known, are of necessity to be believed; yet certainly they are not absolutely necessary in themselves to salvation to be known, which the Holy Ghost hath not thought necessary to be recorded. [Ps. cxix. 105.] [2 Tim. iii. 15-17.] [2 Cor. iii. 6.-&c.] [Matt. xv. 9.-&c.] [Rom. i. 16.] [Matt. xxii. 29.] [Isa. viii. 20.]

[To whom the interpretation of the Scriptures doth belong.]

Yet every one hath not skill or power alike to apply this rule. "The Scripture is not in the words, but in the sense; not in the superficies, but in the marrow[x]." Many helps are requisite to a right interpreter: as, to know the right analogy

[v] [See above p. 158. note q.]

[x] [Hieron., In Epist. ad Galatas, c. i.; Op. tom. iv. P. i. p. 230.—"Nec putemus in verbis Scripturarum esse Evangelium sed in sensu, non in superficie sed in medullâ."]

PART IV.

of faith, and to regulate all his expositions by it, which every one cannot comprehend; to compare place with place, and text with text, which every one cannot perform; to understand the coherence of the antecedents with the consequents, which all men are not capable of; to know the idiotisms of that language wherein the Scriptures were written, which few attain unto; "to draw down the line of faith and seeds of doctrine from those purer Churches of the primitive times," as Tertullian adviseth; and "from the conduit-head of Apostolical tradition to direct the pipe to our times," as St. Cyprian doth exhort and St. Austin approve: which counsel we readily embrace. And, lastly, those who by their office are consecrated to the service of God, have ordinarily a peculiar assistance of the Holy Ghost. Therefore, as we make the Scriptures the rule of faith, or (as others phrase it) the judge of controversies (that is, as the law is judge of civil differences, and no otherwise), so we do not ascribe to every one the same degree of judgment. To private men, we yield only a judgment of discretion; that is, we would not have reasonable men like David's horse and mule, "void of understanding." To the pastors of the Church we give a judgment of direction; and to the chief pastors or Bishops, a judgment of jurisdiction, more or less, according to their respective places or offices in the Christian Church; and above particular pastors, to a synod; and most eminently, to a General or Oecumenical Council, which we make the highest judge of controversies upon earth[y].

[Ps. xxxii. 9.]

[The authority of our Reformers to interpret them.]

To his objection then I answer; first, for our reformers;—that Cranmer, and those others who were prime actors in the Reformation, were not private persons, but public pastors of the Church; to whom this author saith, that "God unfoldeth the meaning of His" word; to whom "He delivereth infallibly the inheritance of truth[z]." Yet these were not our reformers, but the synods and Parliaments of our kingdom under the sovereign prince, the synods proposing, the Parliament receiving, the king authorizing.

[The manner of our Reformation.]

Secondly, for the manner of our reformation:—it was not seditious, tumultuous, nor after a fanatical or enthusiastical

[y] [See the Answ. to La Millet., vol. i. pp. 48-53; Disc. i. Pt. i.]

[z] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 27. p. 201.]

way, but done with all requisite helps, taking the primitive Church to be their pattern, and the Holy Scriptures, interpreted according to the analogy of faith, to be their rule.

[The subject of our Reformation.]

Thirdly, for the subject of their reformation:—as it was not other Churches but their own, so it was not of "articles" of "Faith[a]"—(S. N. mistakes; though the Roman Church challenge such a power, yet the Protestant Church doth not),

1018 —but it was of corruptions which were added of later times, by removing that "hay and stubble" which the Romanists had heaped upon the foundation; always observing that rule of Vincentius Lirinensis, to call nothing into question which hath been believed always, every where, and by all Christians[b]. Yea, further, these turbulent persons, who have attempted to innovate any thing in saving Faith, who upon their arising were censured and condemned by the universal Church, we reckon as nobody; nor doth their opposition hinder a full consent. Hence it is, that the Romanists do call our religion a "negative religion;" because in all the controversies between us and them we maintain the negative: that is, we go as far as we dare, or can, with warrant from the Holy Scriptures and the primitive Church, and leave them in their excesses, or those inventions, which themselves have added. But in the mean time they forget, that we maintain all those articles and truths which are contained in any of the ancient Creeds of the Church; which I hope are more than "negatives."

[1 Cor. iii. 12.]

[The extent of our Reformation.]

Lastly, for the extent of our separation.—We have not left the Catholic Church, but only the Roman Church; and that not absolutely, but in their superstructures, which they have added to the doctrine of saving truth. And even in these, with the same mind that one would leave his father's or his brother's house when it is infected, with a desire to return again, when it is free; and in the mean time, we pray for it that it may be free. We would admit the Church of Rome to be a sister, if that would content them; yea, an elder sister; and rather than fail, to be a Mother Church to the Saxons: but we may not allow them the place of a "lady and

[a] [Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 25. p. 199.]

[b] [Commonit., pp. 308, 309. ed. Baluz. Brem. 1688.]

PART IV.

mistress[c]." This same thing was the ground of the divisions between the Emperors and the Popes, which set the Western world on fire. This same was the ground of that separation of the four Patriarchs of Constantinople, Antioch, Alexandria, and Jerusalem, from the fifth of Rome; when they used these or the like words, "Thy greatness we know, thy covetousness we cannot satisfy, thy encroachments we can no longer endure, live by thyself[d]." His reason that he urgeth against us,—that the Arians, the Donatists, and the Circumcellians pleaded Scripture for themselves (he might have added the devil also),—is of no weight at all. Shall we refuse to eat, because some have poisoned themselves? or to travel, because some have strayed from the right way? A drunken man thinks that he is sober, but a sober man knows that he is sober. S. N. would have us like that foolish novice, who having a goodly heritage left him by his father and good evidence to shew for it, yet, because others claimed his inheritance, he threw his evidence into the fire, bidding them take it rather than he would be troubled about it. The young man is the Christian, the field true religion, the father, our heavenly Father, the evidence His sacred word. Because the heretic and the schismatic lay claim to true religion, shall we therefore neglect our inheritance, and cast away our evidence?

[Matt. iv. 6.-Luke iv. 9-11.]

But S. N. and his fellows will admit no reformation, no, not so much as in the exposition of a text of Scripture, without an infallibility—unless we know the sense of the text as certainly we know the articles of our Faith. This is a high degree of infallibility, not to err in the exposition of a text of Scripture; and, by his good leave, more than they dare ascribe to the Pope himself, whom they make to be infallible in the conclusion but not in the premisses[e]. So, by their own doctrine, the Pope himself may misapply a text without prejudice to his supposed infallibility. We believe the Holy Ghost doth lead the Catholic or Universal Church into all truths, which are simply necessary to salvation, and

[Promise of infallibility belongs to the Universal Church, not to particular Churches.]

[c] [S. Bernard., De Consider. adv. Eugen. Papam, lib. iv. c. 7; ap. Goldast., S. Rom. Imp., tom. ii. p. 88.]

[d] [Gerson, Serm. coram Reg. Francor. de Pace et Unit. Græcorum, Consid. Septima; Op. P. iv. fol. 114. o.—"Potentiam tuam recognoscimus, avaritiam tuam implere non possumus, vivite per vos." See above in the Reply to S. W.'s Refut., sect. x.; vol. ii. pp. 334, 335; Append. to Disc. iii. Pt. i.-&c.]

[e] [Bellarm., De Rom. Pontif., lib. iv. c. 2; Op. tom. i. pp. 951. B—953. B.]

[doth] preserve it from all such damnable errors as are destructive to saving faith; so that "the gates of Hell shall never prevail against it." [Matt. xvi. 18.] But we believe also, that it is the property of the Church triumphant to be without all spots and wrinkles. [Ephes. v. 27.] Particular Churches are of another nature; they have no such privilege; no, not Rome itself. They may fall and fail and apostatize from Christ, without any prejudice to the promise of Christ; as those seven Golden Candlesticks have done, in the midst of which the Son of Man did delight to walk. Rev. ii. 1. God puts not out the candle, when He removes the Candlestick; neither is the light of the Gospel extinguished, when it is transferred from one nation to another by the just judgment of God. So God hath promised, that "day and night, summer and winter" shall never fail, so long as "the earth remaineth;" [Gen. viii. 22.] but that is, successively: one's day is another's night, summer to one is winter to
1019 another. It were a high presumption or folly, for any one climate, trusting to His promise, to challenge perpetual sunshine or an everlasting day. Once, this is certain, that this supposed infallibility doth detain them in real errors. He who acknowledgeth that he may wander out of [his[e]] way, will be more studious and inquisitive after the right way. But he that believeth he cannot err, will never repent or amend what is amiss. Whilst we live in this world, we are not comprehenders, but travellers; we "see not face to face," [1 Cor. xiii. 12.] but "darkly, as in a glass."

[Articles of Faith to be distinguished from particular truths.]

And as there is a great difference between particular Churches and the Catholic or universal Church, so there is as great a difference between particular truths and articles of Faith. A great part of those errors and corruptions which we reformed, were practical; "*in agendis*"—"in things to be done," and not "*in credendis*"—"in things to be believed:" as the half-communion, private Masses, prayers in a tongue unknown, the inundation of indulgences, the invocation of Saints, the worshipping of images; some of which they do acknowledge to have been otherwise practised in the primitive Church, and do not maintain that any of them are necessary by the institution of Christ[f]. It is true, there were also

[e] ["this" in the folio edition by an obvious misprint.]

[f] [See the Answ. to La Millet. (vol. i. pp. 54-60); Disc. i. Pt. i.]

PART IV.

other doctrinal errors reformed, "*in credendis;*" but yet these were of an inferior alloy, and come far short of articles of Faith. The very highest of them are but the original conclusions, [derived[g]] from articles of Faith or from texts of Holy Scripture, by probable consequence, by the light of reason, and not revealed, as articles of Faith are, by the light of Grace[h]. Therefore they cannot be so certain as articles of Faith. The premisses are ever more evident than the conclusion. "*Propter quod unumquodque est tale, illud magis est tale*[i]." When the proposition of an argument is a text of Holy Scripture, or an article of Faith, and the assumption an inference from thence, the conclusion must follow the weaker part.

[Infallibility claimed by the Romanist for the Church of Rome and denied by him to the Protestants.] [Matt. v. 14.]

But "*cui bono?*" whither tends all his discourse, but to shew, that the Protestants have no infallible proponent; but the Roman Catholics have an infallible proponent; that is, the Church of Rome: which is the authoritative interpreter of Scripture, the judge of controversies, the infallible guide, into whose sentence the last resolution of our faith ought to be made; the "city built upon the top of a mountain," to whose determinations we must submit upon pain of damnation: that if this infallible guide were not conspicuous to every man, who doth not wilfully shut his eyes, God had been wanting to His Church, and had not provided sufficient means for the salvation of mankind. Thus they cry one and all with open mouth.

I commend their discretion. If they could make this one assertion good, it would save them much labour, when they are hardly put to it in particular questions. As those flatterers of the King of Persia could not find a law for him to marry his sister, but they found out a law that he might do what he would[k], which is as good; so the Romanists think to make good all their particular errors by this one general assertion. They like the counsel well, which Alcibiades gave to Themistocles in Plutarch, when he found him busy

[g] ["Deputed" in the folio edition by an obvious misprint.]

[h] [Compare Schism Guarded, Sect. vii. (vol. ii. pp. 581, 582); and the Vindic. of Episcop. against Baxter, c. v. (vol. iii. p. 539): Discourses iv. Pt. i. and iii. Pt. ii.]

[i] [Aristot., Analyt. Poster., I. ii. 15.—"'Αει δι' ὃ ὑπάρχει ἕκαστον, ἐκεῖνο μᾶλλον ὑπάρχει· οἷον δι' ὃ φιλοῦμεν, ἐκεῖνο μᾶλλον φίλον."]

[k] [Herod., iii. 31.]

about his accounts to the city;—that "he should rather study to give no account[1]." To dispute particular questions, were to give an account of their errors; but to plead an infallibility, frees them from all accounts.

The truth is, the Protestant Church is not the more fallible, but the less fallible, because it doth not presume to challenge an infallibility to itself. They have as good means of knowledge, and as great assurance of finding out the truth, as the Romanists can pretend unto; whether it be the Holy Scripture, or Apostolical tradition, or the expositions of all former ages, or a confirmed succession of lawful pastors. The truth is likewise, that the Romanists have no such certain infallible proponent as they brag of, but deck themselves with the stolen feathers of the truly Catholic or Universal Church. If it be lawful for us to expostulate so familiarly, I had almost said so saucily, with God, as they do, we might urge with more reason, that if God have placed such an infallible proponent upon earth, and hath not given sufficient intimation who it is, nor so much as insinuated Rome unto us, unless it be under the name of Babylon, then He hath not provided sufficiently for the salvation of mankind. St. Paul tells us, that when our Saviour ascended, "He gave" unto His Church, "some Apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, some pastors, and teachers, for the perfecting of the Saints, for the work of the ministry, for the
1020 edifying of the Body of Christ;" but He tells us not a word of any one such universal and infallible proponent.

[His double error herein.]

[1 Peter v. 13.]

Eph. [iv.] 11, [12.]

But to lay this mystery a little more fully open, observe with me these three things.—

i. First, that the Romanists themselves are divided into six several parties about this infallible proponent, who it is, or what it is. If they have an infallible proponent, how comes it to pass, that there is such diversity of opinions about this proponent, who it is? Of the six ranks, they cannot choose but confess, that five (we say, all six) do want an infallible proponent. In the first place, this infallible proponent might do well to propose himself to be infallible; but the mischief is, that the other five parties would not submit to his judgment, because they do not believe him to

[i. The Romanists divided as to who their infallible proponent is.]

[1] [Plut., in Vitâ Alcib., tom. ii. pp. 11, 12. ed. Bryant.]

PART IV.

be that infallible proponent. Some, and those the greatest party, do hold, that this infallible proponent, this 'virtual' Church of Rome, to whose determinations we must all submit, is the Pope of Rome: others say, no, it is not the Pope alone, but the Pope jointly with his conclave of Cardinals: a third party say, neither the one nor the other, but the Pope with a Council, either general or provincial: not so, say the fourth party, a particular Council is not sufficient, it must be a general Council with the Pope: the fifth party say, that the concurrence of the Pope is needless; an œcumenical Council, either with or without the Pope indifferently, is this infallible proponent; and these come the nearest the mark: the sixth attribute this infallibility to none of all these, but to the whole 'essential' Church, or the multitude of true believers[m]. What differences are there here about that, which should set us all at unity. We see small signs of any infallibility yet. The Protestants might adventure, without any great danger, to submit to the Roman Church when the Romanists themselves can agree what this Roman Church is. And, lastly, after all this strife, when all comes to all, this infallible proponent, to the common and ordinary sort of Christians, proves to be the parish-priest; his flock know no Popes, nor conclaves, nor Councils, nor Churches, but as he is pleased to inform them, be it right or wrong. S. N. almost saith as much;—"that it pleased God to unfold the true sense and meaning of His will to the public pastors and preachers of His Church; to them He infallibly delivereth the inheritance of truth, of them only we must seek it, from them alone we can have our vocation to preach[n]." They have spun a fair thread, if they make every curate or parish-priest to be an infallible proponent.

[ii. And far from infallibly certain, upon their own grounds, whether the Pope

ii. Secondly, whereas the greatest part of these six is that which holds for the Pope, I ask, how can they have an infallible certainty of his determinations, of whom they are not infallibly certain that he is Pope, or the successor of St. Peter? The common tenet of their schools is, that "it is not *de fide* that Innocent the Eleventh is Pope or St. Peter's

[m] [See Bellarm., De Concil. Auctor., lib. ii. throughout, and the authorities by him quoted.]

[n] [S. N., Guide of Faith, c. xx. § 27. p. 201.]

successor[o]." It is not impossible, that a female may creep into that see; as hath been not improbably related by many authors of John the Eighth. The Pope's own Bibliothecary, setting down the story, unwillingly enough, makes this apology for himself,—'*ne contra omnes sentire videar*'—'that he might not seem contrary to all men[p];' by which it appears, that it was generally believed in those days. It is not impossible but that the Pope might fail in his own Baptism: that is, if he who christened him, according to their grounds, had no intention to christen him; which in these atheistical times (especially in Italy, where so many Priests are, and so many Popes have been, atheists), is not so improbable. But I confess these are remote dangers or fears. There is a third that toucheth them nearer. What if the present Pope be not canonically elected? In any of these three cases,—if he be not a male, if he be not christened, if he be not canonically elected,—he is no Pope, no successor to St. Peter, cannot pretend to any infallibility, even his greatest vassals being judges. And to this last requisite, of canonical election, there is much to be said. They who pry narrowly into the affairs of the conclave, and can espy daylight through a millstone, if it have a hole in the midst of it, do say, that there hath scarcely been one canonical election in our memories without gross and palpable simony; they say, the active and potent cardinals lick their fingers well in a vacancy, as the exchequers or privy purses of Spain and France can abundantly testify.

[be truly Pope or no.]

iii. Thirdly, supposing that they did agree, that the Pope of Rome were the 'virtual' Church, and that he was this infallible proposer, suppose also that they were infallibly certain, that Innocent the Eleventh, or any other particular
1021 Pope, is the Pope and a true successor of St. Peter, let us see, in the third place, what infallibility it is, which they ascribe to him. Are they sure, that the Pope cannot err? No; they confess he may err as a private man, but not as a Pope, "*è cathedrâ*"—"from his chair;" as if the Pope were like

[iii. And far from agreed as to what the infallibility is, which they (part of them) ascribe to him.]

[o] [See authorities in Bp. Andrewes, Resp. ad M. Torti Lib., pp. 238, 239. 4to. Lond. 1609.]

[p] [Platin., in Vitâ Joh. VIII. p. 125. 2.—"Ne obstinate nimium et pertinaciter omisisse videar, quod fere omnes affirmant"—are the words of Platina.]

PART VII.

Apollo's nun, who gave oracles whilst she was mewed up in her case, but was no wiser than her neighbours when she came abroad. Well, but can he not err in his determinations as a Pope? Yes, say they; he may err in the premisses, but not in the conclusion. This is something strange. But are they certain he cannot err in the conclusion? Yes, say they; he may err in the conclusion itself, if it be a matter of fact, but not if it be a matter of Faith. But can he not err in the conclusion of a matter of Faith? Yes, say they; he may err in a conclusion of a matter of Faith, if he do not define with due advice and deliberation. See what an infallibility this is. The Pope is infallible as a Pope, but not as a private man; as a Pope in the conclusion, but not in the premisses; in the conclusion, if it be matter of Faith, but not if it be matter of fact; in the conclusion of a matter of Faith, if he use a due advice and deliberation, otherwise not[q]. Some Oedipus resolve me this. And what is this "due deliberation?" Nay, stay there, that admits a further dispute. Had not the Pope better be without such an infallibility, than have it? "Take nothing and hold it fast[r]?" Thus,

> "Fidem minutis dissecant ambagibus,"
> "Ut quisque est linguâ nequior[s]."

But I leave them wandering in their mazes, and S. N. to his vapours. It shall suffice to have answered his arguments; and to conclude, that if there be any holy Orders upon earth, the Church of England hath holy Orders.

[q] [See Bellarm., De Pontif. Roman., lib. iv. c. 2. (Op. tom. i. pp. 951. B—953. B).]

[r] ["Λάβε μηδὲν καὶ κρατεῖ καλῶς."]

[s] [Prudent., Apotheos., Præfat. Secunda, vv. 21, 22.]

OXFORD:
PRINTED BY I. SHRIMPTON.

ERRATA.

P. 43. note b, *for* Shulz *read* Schulz.
P. 76. — u
P. 77. — b } *for* p. 81. note o *read* p. 81. note p.

I.

INDEX OF TEXTS.

II.

GENERAL INDEX.

The Roman numerals refer to the *volume*, the Arabic numerals following them to the *page*.

INDEX OF TEXTS.

OLD TESTAMENT.

GENESIS.

i. 5. V. 49.
26. IV. 527.
28. V. 120.
31. IV. 68. 99.
ii. 3. V. 16, 17. 19—22. 27. 78.
iii. 4, 5. III. 298.
11. 13. IV. 56. 303; V. 158.
12. V. 153.
iv. 3. V. 64, 65. 153.
6. IV. 56. 303.
viii. 22. V. 273.
ix. 3. 6. IV. 95, 96.
xii. 1. V. 100.
xiii. 9. IV. 224.
xvii. 14. V. 176.
xviii. 25. IV. 78. 229. 315, 316.
xix. 22. IV. 78.
xxi. 9. II. 508.
xxii. 2. IV. 304.
xxv. 23. IV. 68.
xxix. 31. IV. 68.
xxxii. 24—30. IV. 108.
xxxiii. 4. I. 76.
xxxiv. 23. III. 433.
xxxvii. 4. 21. III. 433.
xxxix. 11, 12. II. 59.
xl. 23. I. 76; V. 130.
xli. 20, 21. II. 423.
xlii. 13. I. 62.
xlv. 5. IV. 230. 237; V. 53.
xlix. 7. IV. 416.
1—28. IV. 126. 380.
l. 20. IV. 237; V. 53.

EXODUS.

i. 16—22. I. 169; IV. 89. 325, 326.
7—10. IV. 70.
iii. 11. V. 96.
14. IV. 428.
iv. 3. I. 16.
vii. 3. IV. 230.
viii. 15. IV. 70.
ix. 34. IV. 70.
xii. 35, 36. IV. 309; V. 120.
xiii. 21. III. 348.
xvi. 22—30. V. 20.
xviii. 13—26. III. 359.
xx. 7. V. 18.
8—11. V. 16, 17. 28, 29.
12. V. 18.
xxi. 6. III. 348.
7. IV. 569.
33, 34. IV. 163. 328.
xxii. 28. III. 335.
xxiii. 8. IV. 230.
xxxi. 13. V. 17.
16, 17. V. 13.
xxxii. 28. II. 29.
xxxiii. 5. V. 139.
xxxvi. 6. I. 141.

LEVITICUS.

i. 3. IV. 224.
xix. 5. IV. 224.
xxv. 23. V. 100.
47. III. 348.
xxvi. 36. V. 96.

NUMBERS.

v. 7. V. 158.
xiv. 9. V. 96.
28—30. I. 80.
38. II. 41.
xvi. 3. 10. III. 323.
3. 13. II. 77.
12—14. III. 331.
32. II. 29.
41. 49. III. 311.
xxi. 8, 9. II. 195.
xxii. 38. IV. 126. 380.
xxiii. 12. IV. 380.
19. IV. 316.
xxx. 13. IV. 38. 41. 284.
xxxv. 22. IV. 429.

DEUTERONOMY.

ii. 30. IV. 230.
v. 11. V. 18.
xii. 5. 21. V. 100.
xvii. 19. III. 359.
xx. 8. V. 96.
xxv. 2. IV. 324.
xxx. 19. IV. 235; V. 54.
xxxiii. 4, 5. III. 429.

JOSHUA.

i. 16, 17. IV. 225.
v. 5. V. 243, 244.
2—9. V. 46.
xiv. 6—10. II. 41.
xxiv. 15. IV. 38. 41. 235. 285; V. 54.

JUDGES.

vii. 3. V. 96.
20. II. 454.
ix. 48. V. 98.
xiv. 6. V. 100.

RUTH.

iv. 11. V. 99.

I. SAMUEL.

ii. 15, 16. IV. 224.
viii. 5. III. 322.
18. III. 352.
ix. 24. V. 96.
x. 25. III. 384.
xi. 7. V. 95.
xv. 17. I. 29; III. 326; V. 232.
xix. 5. IV. 338.
xxii. 17—19. I. 169; III. 351; IV. 338.
xxiii. 11, 12. IV. 478.
xxv. 21. 32. III. 453.
xxvi. 9. III. 353.
xxviii. 23. IV. 378.

II. SAMUEL.

vi. 7. III. 441. 578.
x. 12. V. 91. Text of Disc. ii. Pt. iv.
xi. 14—17. IV. 66. 74. 312.
xii. 13, 14. IV. 244. 338.
23. V. 177.
xiii. 14. IV. 392.
xv. 1—6. III. 334.
xvi. 10. IV. 230. 396.
xxi. 1, 14. IV. 326. 338.
xxii. 24. I. 123.
xxiv. 12. IV. 38. 41. 224. 235. 285, 286.
24. V. 101.

I. KINGS.

ii. 2. V. 98.
35. I. 172.
iii. 11. IV. 55. 224. 300, 301.
vii. 15—22. III. 426.
xii. 1—4. III. 343, 344.
15. IV. 230. 396.
28. II. 29.
26—33. I. 73.
xiii. 4. II. 29.
xviii. 17. III. 323.
xix. 3. V. 96.
xxi. 19. IV. 326. 338.
xxii. 23. IV. 396.

II. KINGS.

vi. 32. IV. 326.
x. 18—31. I. 123; II. 69. 187. 391.
xviii. 4. II. 195.
23. II. 361.
xxv. 7. III. 311.

II. CHRONICLES.

iii. 15—17. III. 426.
vi. 29. V. 148.
xiii. 17. III. 344.
xix. 5. III. 359.
xxxvi. 13. III. 311.

EZRA.

vii. 13. IV. 224.
ix. 13. IV. 324.

NEHEMIAH.

ii. 3. V. 99.
7, 8. V. 101.
iv. 17. V. 101.

ESTHER.

i. 8. IV. 378.
iii. 12, 13. IV. 89. 325.
iv. 16. V. 99.
vi. 1. III. 345.

JOB.

i. 5. V. 23, 24.
21. IV. 230.
xii. 14. IV. 231.
xxxi. 11. IV. 324.
xxxvii. 23. IV. 244.
xxxviii. 4. IV. 65. 78.
31. IV. 307.
xl. 9. IV. 65. 79.
xli. 1. 34. IV. 516, 517.

PSALMS.

ii. 8. II. 107.
10. III. 359.

viii. 6, 7. IV. 340. 416.
xviii. 23. I. 123.
xix. 12. I. 127. 269; V. 223.
xlv. 10. I. 105; II. 79.
l. 15. I. 58.
li. 4. III. 260. 384.
10. IV. 232; V. 162.
lxviii. 18. V. 114.
lxxxv. 2. V. 151.
lxxxvii. 2. V. 176.
xcv. 8. IV. 70.
cii. 13, 14. V. 100.
ciii. 4. V. 162.
cv. 25. IV. 70.
cvii. 17. IV. 244.
cix. 6—16. V. 157.
cx. 4. V. 226.
cxiv. 2. V. 100.
cxix. 105. V. 269.
137. I. 250.
cxxvi. 1. V. 113—115.
4. I. 277.
7. II. 277; V. 113. 116. Text of Disc. iii. Pt. iv.
cxxxvii. 1. V. 100.
cxxxix. 16. II. 204.

PROVERBS.

vii. 14. III. 573.
viii. 15. II. 198; III. 318.
xx. 5. IV. 400.
xxviii. 13. V. 147. Text of Disc. iv. Pt. iv.

ECCLESIASTES.

iii. 1—3. V. 126.
iv. 12. III. 419.
vii. 15. V. 131.
viii. 12, 13. V. 157.
x. 20. III. 335.

ISAIAH.

i. 6. V. 148.
v. 4. IV. 239. 453, 454.
vii. 16. IV. 39.
viii. 20. V. 269.
x. 6. IV. 231.
xxviii. 21. IV. 354.
xxxvi. 18—20. II. 586.
lxv. 5. I. 108; I. 214.

JEREMIAH.

i. 5. V. 21.
x. 23. IV. 231.
xix. 5. IV. 239.
xxxii. 35. IV. 239.

LAMENTATIONS.

iii. 33. IV. 244.
39. IV. 243. 324.

EZEKIEL.

iii. 20. IV. 230.
xviii. 2. 4. 25. II. 391; IV. 316; V. 152.
31. IV. 56. 303.
xx. 12. V. 17.
xxviii. 3. IV. 497.
xxxiii. 11. IV. 56. 303.

DANIEL.

i. 13. 16. IV. 294.
iii. 4—6. I. 169; IV. 89. 325.
18. II. 58; III. 351; IV. 326.
iv. 5. III. 345; V. 119.
34—37. IV. 70.
vi. 6—9. IV. 89. 325.
14—17. IV. 73.
viii. 7. IV. 407.
xi. 11. IV. 407.

JOEL.

ii. 12. IV. 360.
28, 29. IV. 409; V. 51.

AMOS.

iii. 6. IV. 355. 367. 396. 581.

JONAH.

iii. 4—10. II. 29; IV. 304. 360.

MICAH.

vi. 2. IV. 316.

ZECHARIAH.

iii. 2. III. 335.

MALACHI.

i. 2, 3. IV. 68.
iv. 2. V. 58.

APOCRYPHA.

WISDOM.

i. 13. 16. IV. 354.
iv. 11. IV. 478.
xvii. 11. V. 106. 134.
xvii. 12. I. 76; IV. 51. 126; V. 96.

ECCLESIASTICUS.

xii. 7. IV. 536.
xx. 29. IV. 230. 574.

NEW TESTAMENT.

ST. MATTHEW.

ii. 14, 15. IV. 69.
16. V. 176.
iii. 6. V. 158.
9. IV. 77.
iv. 10. V. 65.
v. 10. V. 174.
14. V. 274.
15. II. 95.
vi. 24. IV. 68.
25. V. 102.
33. I. 73, 74.
vii. 25. I. 42; II. 95. 358.
ix. 5. V. 213.
x. 23. III. 353.
29. IV. 182. 470.
xi. 21. IV. 478.
xii. 43—45. V. 161.
xiii. 25. II. 492.
xiv. 7. V. 108.
9. IV. 73.
xv. 6. II. 382.
9. II. 206; V. 215. 269.
xvi. 18. I. 42; II. 351. 611; V. 273.
26. II. 181.
xviii. 17. II. 322.
20. II. 565.
xx. 9—13. IV. 310.
13—15. IV. 68.
xxii. 21. II. 128; III. 348. 352. 566.
29. V. 269.
xxiii. 10. III. 479.
13—15. 23—29. V. 154.
xxv. 9. I. 57.
34—40. I. 56; V. 180.
41. IV. 325.
xxvi. 26. I. 8. 15; V. 57.
27. II. 35.
53. IV. 120. 240. 376.
xxvii. 15. V. 49.
51. V. 59.
xxviii. 1. V. 55. 60.
18. I. 116.
20. II. 382; V. 32.

ST. MARK.

viii. 31. V. 55.
xiv. 15. V. 51.
22. I. 8. 15; V. 57.
xvi. 2. I. c; V. 55. 60.
9. 12. V. 55. 60.
16. II. 87.

ST. LUKE.

iii. 8. IV. 120. 376. 479.
iv. 8. V. 65.
34, 35. 41. V. 262.
v. 7. II. 136; V. 119.
vi. 12. III. 163.
ix. 24. IV. 497; V. 174.
xi. 24—26. V. 161.
xii. 14. II. 399. 455.
17—19. IV. 224.
xiii, 34. IV. 239.
xiv. 26. IV. 68.
28. IV. 453.
xv. 32. IV. 233.
xvi. 8. IV. 310.
21. IV. 104.
xviii. 11. III. 578.
xxii. 12. V. 51.
17. V. 217.
18—25. III. 331.
19, 20. I. 8. 15. 20; V. 57. 213. 217, 218.
25, 26. III. 479.
32. II. 598.
47, 48. III. 578.
53. II. 334.
xxiii. 34—42. V. 162.
xxiv. 1. V. 55. 60.
11. V. 56.
30. 35. V. 56—58.

ST. JOHN.

i. 3. IV. 60.
ii. 1—10. I. 16.
14—16. III. 578.
iii. 5. V. 173.
10. II. 492.
iv. 22. II. 39.
vi. 44. IV. 231. 400.
67. IV. 225.
70. III. 495.
ix. 3. I. 27; IV. 65. 79.
22. IV. 89. 325.
x. 16. III. 504.
xi. 51. IV. 380.
xv. 5. IV. 232.
xvi. 2. III. 444.
xviii. 17. V. 151.
36. II. 455; III. 269. 478.
xix. 11. III. 324.
30. V. 59. 69.
xx. 1. 19. 26. V. 51. 55. 60.
21. II. 152. 372. 455. 483; V. 38.
22, 23. III. 126; IV. 502; V. 186. 214. 216. 248.

xxi. 15—17. II. 351.
18, 19. II. 162.

ACTS.

i. 3. V. 58.
13. V. 51.
ii. 1. V. 48. 51—53. 60.
3. II. 360.
15. 17, 18. V. 51.
23. IV. 230.
33. IV. 409.
42. V. 50.
iv. 27, 28. IV. 230.
31. V. 52.
v. 4. IV. 55. 301; V. 120.
5. III. 352.
29. III. 351, 352; IV. 323. 498. 540; V. 267.
37. III. 334.
vi. 6. III. 126.
viii. 9, 10. III. 334.
13. V. 258.
xii. 3. III. 352.
xiii. 3. III. 126. 163.
18. IV. 71.
xiv. 16. IV. 71.
23. III. 126.
xv. 5. 10, 11. V. 45.
21. III. 309. 580.
24. V. 69.
25. II. 429.
23—29. V. 38.
28. II. 179. 455; III. 522; V. 36. 38.
39. I. 98.
xvi. 3. V. 45.
xvii. 23. II. 49.
28. III. 320; IV. 74. 269. 374.
29. IV. 426. 489.
30. IV. 71.
xix. 9. I. 100.
18. V. 158.
23. III. 400. 433.
xx. 7. I. c; V. 48—51.
28. V. 262.
xxi. 20—25. II. 179; V. 45.
xxiii. 5. III. 335. 356.
12. V. 108.
xxvii. 22. 31. IV. 342, 343.

ROMANS.

i. 16. V. 269.
ii. 4, 5. IV. 72. 361.
28, 29. II. 77.
iii. 2. V. 258.
iv. 19. IV. 233.
v. 5. IV. 409.
vii. 15. IV. 413.
viii. 33, 34. I. 56; II. 87.
ix. 11—23. 31, 32. IV. 64, 65. 67—77.
16. IV. 230.
x. 3. IV. 77.
xi. 16. V. 173.
20—23. IV. 77. 315. 361.
xii. 8. III. 474.
xiii. 1, 2. 4. I. 62; II. 198. 461. 551; III. 318. 332. 348—350. 352. 565; IV. 543. 561. 587; V. 67.
xvi. 10. III. 467.

I. CORINTHIANS.

i. 2. 11. II. 48.
10. I. 103; II. 27.
12. II. 455.
iii. 3. I. 103.
6. V. 102.
11. I. 247.
12. II. 38. 312.
21—23. V. 120, 121.
iv. 7. IV. 232.
21. II. 454; IV. 224.
vi. 2. I. 250.
vii. 14. V. 173. f.
ix. 7. III. 332.
16. II. 93.
22. III. 310.
x. 13. IV. 71, 72.
16. V. 50.
19. IV. 351. 537.
20, 21. II. 28.
xi. 23. V. 57.
24. I. 8. 15.
18—34. I. 8.
xii. 6. IV. 232.
16. II. 86.
xiv. 16. II. 35.
xv. 12. II. 48.
23. I. xli. Text of Bp. Taylor's Funeral Sermon.
xvi. 1, 2. I. c; V. 39, 40. 47. 66.
22. II. 411.

II. CORINTHIANS.

ii. 10. II. 455.
16. IV. 453.
iii. 6. V. 269.
v. 17. IV. 232.
19. V. 213.
20. V. 262.
ix. 5. V. 47.
x. 4. II. 457.
xi. 12. IV. 225.
28. II. 144.

GALATIANS.

i. 8. I. 26; II. 33.
15. V. 21.
iv. 9—11. II. 48.
29. II. 508.
v. 10. III. 323.
4—12. II. 48.
vi. 15. IV. 232.

EPHESIANS.

ii. 1. IV. 233.
10. IV. 232.
iv. 4—6. II. 319, 320. 608; III. 504
11. V. 262. 275.
14. IV. 592; V. 98. 127.
v. 14. IV. 233.
25—27. II. 39. 321; V. 273.

PHILIPPIANS.

i. 15—18. II. 33.
18. IV. 225.
ii. 12, 13. IV. 232.
iii. 15. II. 56.

COLOSSIANS.

i. 20. V. 148.

I. THESSALONIANS.

v. 21. I. 50.

II. THESSALONIANS.

ii. 3. V. 257.
7. II. 492.

I. TIMOTHY.

i. 3. II. 33.
ii. 1, 2. III. 352.
iii. 14, 15. II. 22; IV. 493; V. 262.
iv. 8. I. 56, 57.
14. III. 126.
v. 8. V. 102, 103.
17. III. 474.
19. II. 455.
22. III. 126.
vi. 3—5. I. 100.
9. IV. 225.
12. II. 479.

II. TIMOTHY.

i. 6. III. 126.
13. II. 284.
ii. 13. IV. 77. 316.
17. II. 31.
iii. 15—17. V. 269.
iv. 13. II. 278. 474.

TITUS.

i. 2. IV. 78. 316.
iii. 1. III. 348.
5, 6. II. 26; IV. 409.
11. IV. 412.

PHILEMON.

14. IV. 224.

HEBREWS.

i. 2. IV. 60.
iv. 4—9. V. 17.
13. IV. 156.
v. 12. II. 278.
vi. 1. II. 278.
10. IV. 78. 316.
vii. 12. III. 468.
x. 14. I. 54.
28. IV. 324.
31. III. 364.
xi. 23. IV. 326.
24, 25. IV. 39.
xiii. 6. IV. 361.
17. III. 474.

JAMES.

i. 13, 14. IV. 69.
iv. 13—15. IV. 225.
v. 14. I. 56; V. 213.
16. IV. 107; V. 158.
20. V. 150.

I. PETER.

i. 18, 19. II. 382.
ii. 13. II. 219; III. 318. 348, 349. 360. 382.
19. III. 353.
iv. 8. II. 56.
16. III. 353.
v. 1. II. 240.
3. III. 479.
13. II. 290. 378; V. 275.

II. PETER.

ii. 4. IV. 325.
10. III. 335.

I. JOHN.

ii. 18. V. 257.
iii. 4. IV. 319.
15. II. 77.

JUDE.

8. III. 335.
11. V. 64.
16. III. 350.

REVELATIONS.

i. 10. I. xcix; V. 43, 44. 54. 56.
20. III. 470.
ii. 5. I. 43; II. 387.
14, 15. 20. II. 48.
iii. 20. IV. 106. 361.
xviii. 4. V. 206.
xxi. 14. II. 239.
xxii. 9. I. 58.
20. I. 60.

GENERAL INDEX.

A.

Aaron, English Priests (and the Christian Priesthood) are neither of the order of Melchisedek nor of that of, but belong to a third order, V. 224—226. See *Priests*.

Abbess, An, exercises spiritual jurisdiction over her nuns, in the Roman Church, although a lay person, I. 170; II. 221.

Abbot, An, by delegation from the Pope, may join in consecrating Bishops, according to the Roman Schools; see *Consecration of Bishops*. Number of mitred, who were Lords of Parliament, in 1534, I. 114. 120; II. 99. 501. Two and twenty, joined the spiritual and temporal Peers in a letter to the Pope condemning Henry VIII.'s marriage with Qu. Katharine, II. 189.

Abbot, Robert, D.D., Bishop of Salisbury 1615—1617, an able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67.

Aberdeen, General Assembly of; see *Assembly, General, of Aberdeen*.

Abiathar, deposed from the Priesthood by Solomon, I. 172.

Abortive Infants, doctrine of the Roman Schools respecting the salvation of; see *Infants*.

Absolution, the Sacrament of Reconciliation, according to Romanists, V. 214. The Church of England acknowledges a ministerial power of remitting sins by, in Priests, III. 167; V. 190. 213. Protestants have not pared away all manner of, V. 222. Laymen possess no power of, III. 167. Preposterous manner of, before satisfaction, in the Church of Rome, I. 56. See *Confession, Keys Power of the, Penitence, Priests*.

Abyssinia, Church of; Patriarchs of: see *Church of Abyssinia, Patriarchs of Abyssinia*.

Acacians, The, I. 102.

Acacius, was condemned by the Council of Chalcedon, I. 261; II. 433. See *Gelasius*, Pope.

Accommodation, the way to a general, between the Churches of England and Rome; see *Reconciliation*.

Acephali, III. 469.

Acesius, V. 268.

Ackworth, see *Acworth*.

Acquiescence, obedience of; see *Obedience*.

Acts of Oblivion, after the Scotch Rebellion, passed in 1641, III. 436; V. 108.

—— *of Pacification*, between England and Scotland, in 1641, V. 105.

—— *of Parliament*, English, Scotch, Irish; see *Laws, Statutes*.

Acting, Beginning of, Necessity of, as distinguished from beginning and necessity of Being; see *Actions, Aquinas, Necessity*.

Actions, Four sorts of,—of free agents, of free and natural agents mixed, of brute beasts, of natural inanimate creatures, IV. 181—183. 467. The question between Bramhall and Hobbes, respects the first sort alone, IV. 181—184. 467.

1. *Of Free Agents*—

Beginning of acting is from free agents themselves, although not the beginning of their *being*, IV. 169. 179. 464.

Contingent, explained, IV. 111. 156. 183. 269. 365. 429; and see *Contingent*.

Deliberate, all free acts are, IV. 47. How far a particular deliberation is requisite to the freedom of an act, IV. 50. 54. 162. Some indeliberate may be punishable, IV. 432. See *Deliberation*.

Elicit and Imperate, not an improper distinction, IV. 138. 432. Nor unnecessarily obscure, IV. 140. Generally received, IV. 395. And by the Synod of Dort, IV. 395, 396. Elicit acts of the will cannot be necessitated, imperate can, IV. 130. 399.

Evil, God's agency in, IV. 238. How God is the cause of, yet

not the cause of their sin, IV. 74. See *God, Agency of.*
Proceeding from *Fear*, are not compulsory, IV. 48. 124. May or may not be spontaneous, IV. 48.
Free, distinguished from voluntary, IV. 165. There are free, IV. 181, 182. Free in act, but not free in will, a silly distinction, IV. 27. 30. 32. 38. 41. 44. 55. 211. 221. 223. 234. 274. 284. 287. 371. 421. 462. 467. and against both law and logic, IV. 467. All free, are deliberate, IV. 47.
Of God, see *God.*
Good, God's agency in, IV. 238.
Habitual, are voluntary, IV. 53. How they differ from acts done in passion, *ib.* Habits facilitate, IV. 432.
Immanent, distinguished from *imperate*, acts of the will, IV. 125; and from the *transient* acts of God; see *God, Immanent acts of.*
Imperate; see *Actions Elicit, Actions Immanent.*
Indeliberate; see *Actions, Deliberate.*
Involuntary; see *Actions, Voluntary.*
Proceeding from *Passion*, how far voluntary, IV. 53, 54. Done in sudden passion, or 'motus primo primi,' not properly free, but rather necessary, IV. 161. Justly punished because (and whensoever) done through our own either past or present choice, IV. 162, 163. See *Actions Habitual, Motus Primo Primi.*
Spontaneous, identical with voluntary acts, IV. 47. Explained, IV. 47. 54. 293. See *Spontaneity.*
Voluntary and *Involuntary*, defined, IV. 49. The several kinds and order of, *ib.* Distinguished from free, IV. 165. Habitual are, IV. 53.
See *Election, Free, Liberty, Necessity, Will.*
2. *Mixed*, what they are, IV. 134. 182. 467. There are, IV. 388. Aristotle's definition of, IV. 134. d. A necessary effect requires *all* necessary causes, IV. 468.
3. *Of brute beasts*, all the individual acts of, not antecedently necessitated, IV. 100. 182, 183. 469. Capable of being formed by art to observe certain rules, IV. 101. Performed in such cases (not from reason but) from sense of present or memory of past joy or pain, *ib.* Contain neither deliberation nor election, IV. 50—52. See *Beasts.*
4. *Of inanimate creatures*, the natural, are necessary, IV. 183. 470. Are determinate, not voluntary, IV. 393.
Active Obedience; see *Obedience.*
Acworth, George, L.L.D., story from, respecting Bishop Bonner and Pope Clement VII., II. 128. 503; III. 54. respecting a conspiracy of the recusant (Marian) Bishops at the time of Queen Elizabeth's accession, II. 247; III. 57, 58. Said to have assisted Abp. Parker in compiling the De Antiquitate Britannicæ Ecclesiæ, III. 12. d. and in his other antiquarian pursuits, *ib.*
Adam, every theory of Necessity proves too much, in proving, a necessary agent; which Necessitarians deny, IV. 58. Was a necessary agent if other men are, IV. 62. Hyperbolical expression in the Roman Missal respecting the sin of, attributed to Gregory the Great, V. 131.
Adamites, The, II. 564.
Adamson, Patrick, Archbishop of St. Andrews 1575-1591, III. 255. See *Assembly, General, of St. Andrews*, A.D. 1586.
Additions to the Creed, see *Creed.*
Adduction, of the Body and Blood of Christ to the Elements in the Holy Eucharist, scholastic theory of, I. 16. 20.
Adoration, of Christ; see *Christ.* Of the Elements in the Holy Eucharist, or of the Host, see *Lord's Supper.* Of the Blessed Virgin, see *Mary.* Of the Saints, see *Saints.* Of the Crucifix, see *Crucifix.* Of Images, see *Images.* Of Relics, see *Relics.*
Adrian I., Pope 772—795, surrendered to Charlemagne all right both in the election of Popes, and in the investiture of Bishops, I. 213; II. 232. 403. Legates of, to Kinulphus (or Cynewulf), II. 137. i. 140.
——— *II.*, Pope 867—872, case of, with Charles the Bald, King of France, and Hincmar, I. 219, 220.
——— *IV.*, Pope 1154—1159, arrogant letter of, to the Emperor Frederic I. respecting the homage of

Bishops, I. 202. 213, 124; II. 404, 405. 418. Answer of German Bishops to, I. 202. And of Frederic himself, I. 202, 203. 214.

Adrian VI., Pope 1522—1523, testimony of, to the necessity of a reformation in the Church, I. 207. 278; II. 385. Letter of Charles V. to, against the payment of Tenths, II. 425. Representation of the Diet of Nuremberg to, upon the same subject, I. 216; II. 385.

———, Emperor of Rome, saying of, that the Commonwealth "populi rem esse non propriam," III. 345.

Adults, see *Infants*.

Adventurers, The, a party in the Irish House of Commons, A.D. 1660, V. 136. d. 147. a. Charles II. parted with all his forfeitures in Ireland in order to reinstate the royalists in their property without injury to the, V. 132. 141. See *Jones, Mervyn*.

Advices of Constance, against Papal usurpations, in 1416, I. 209.

——— *of Mentz*, against Papal usurpations, in the time of the Council of Basle, I. 209. 214, 215.

Ælfric, Sermon on the Eucharist, translated by, into Saxon, at the end of the tenth century, I. 70. Editions of it in the time of Qu. Elizabeth, and James I., I. 70. q. Affirms the doctrine of the Real Presence but not Transubstantiation, I. 70.

Aelred, see *Ealred*.

Æneas Sylvius; see *Pius II.*, Pope.

Aerians, heresy of the, revived in these latter days; see *Presbyterians*. That revival to be justly attributed to Papal dispensations authorizing Priests to perform Episcopal acts, II. 71; III. 26, 27; V. 247.

Æthelstan, King of England 924—940, ecclesiastical laws made by, I. 137; II. 413.

Æthiopia; see *Alvarez, Claudius*.

Æthiopia, Church of; Patriarch of: see *Church of Æthiopia, Patriarch of Æthiopia*.

Afflictions, see *Crosses*.

Africa, see *Miramoulin*.

———, *Church of;* see St. *Augustin, Bishops African*, St. *Cyprian, Collation—Patriarchate—Primate of Carthage*.

Agatho, Pope 678—682; see *John the Precentor, Theodore*.

Agent, see *Actions*.

Aggregative treason, see *Treason*.

Aidan, a Scotch Bishop, converted the Northumbrians to Christianity, I. 267. 273.

Aix la Chapelle, see *Aquisgrane*.

Alabaster, William, D.D., an English Clergyman, account of, III. 105. k. Hearsay tale refuted concerning a conversation of, with Bishop Bancroft, about the Nag's Head Consecration, III. 105—107.

Alanus; see *Allen, William*, Cardinal.

Alberic, a Papal legate in 1138, the first who reserved any case in England for the censure and absolution of the Pope, II. 446, 447.

Albertinus, see *Aubertin*.

Albuna, see *Patriarch of Æthiopia*.

Aldrich, Thomas, Master of C. C. C. Cambridge 1569—1573, violent opposition of, to Abp. Parker, III. 12. f. Supposed translator of the Puritan "Lyfe" of Archbishop Parker, *ib*.

Alençon, Synod of; see *Synods, French Reformed*.

Alensis, Alexander; see *Alexander Alensis*.

Alexander I., Pope 109—119, ordained but five persons, I. 162. Patriarchate of, did not include Britain, *ib*.

——— *III.*, Pope 1159—1181; see *Bishops English, Henry II.* King of England. First mention of the word Transubstantiation was in the time of, I. 24. n.

——— *IV.*, Pope 1254—1261; see *Sewalus de Bowill*, Abp. of York.

——— *VI.*, Pope 1492—1503, Bull of, granting certain privileges to the Venetians, I. 243.

——— *II.*, King of Scotland, refused to admit Papal legates into Scotland, II. 151.

——— *Alensis*, or *De Hales*, admission of, respecting Transubstantiation, I. 13. Doctrine of, respecting the salvation of abortive infants, V. 178.

———, *Peter*, of Arles, Canon of Canterbury Cathedral in the reigns of Edw. VI. and Eliz., III. 193. f.

Alexandria, Church of; Council of; Patriarch of; Patriarchate of: see *Church of Alexandria, Council of Alexandria, Patriarch of Alexandria, Patriarchate of Alexandria*.

———, *Patriarchs of;* see St. *Clement*, St. *Cyril, Dioscorus*.

———, *St. Clement of;* see *Clemens Alexandrinus*.

Alfred, King of Northumbria 684—705, treatment by, of Archbishop Wilfrid, I. 133, 134; II. 132. 439. Did not allow the authority of Papal legates in his kingdom, I. 133, 134; II. 132.

———, or *Alured*, King of England

871—901, made Asser Bishop of Sherborne, and Deneulfus Bishop of Winchester, I. 146. Ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413. Laws of, dispensed with ecclesiastical crimes by the sole authority of the King and Church of England, II. 447.

Allatius, Leo; see *Leo Allatius.*

Allegiance, Oath of; see *Oath of Allegiance.*

Allegiance; see *King, Obedience.* Hobbes's doctrine answered, that the loss of sovereignty 'de facto,' voideth all duty of, IV. 557.

Allen, or *Alanus, William,* Cardinal, died in 1594, notice of, I. 66. i. Was an active agent in founding and carrying on the seminaries for English Priests at Rome, Rheims, and Douay, I. 66. Apology of, for the Seminary Priests, II. 108. 115. 117. s. 500. Said by Camden to have been with the Earl of Desmond in Ireland in 1579 during his rebellion, II. 112. Treasonable book of, I. 184; II. 114. Doctrine in it, about the Kings of England, I. 184. 186. Archpriest Blackwell scandalized at it, *ib.* Knew nothing of the Nag's Head fable, III. 46. Admits Henry VIII. to have been a Romanist in all points but that of the Papal supremacy, II. 108. 500.

Alley, William, Bishop of Exeter 1560-1570, proof of the Consecration of, III. 223. Commission for the Confirmation and Consecration of, III. 68. 223. Alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.

Almsgiving, a duty on the Lord's Day, which Christians owe to Christ, V. 39, 40. 47. 66. Passages from Justin Martyr and St. Cyprian respecting the primitive custom of, upon the Lord's Day, V. 39, 40. 66.

Alphonso the Magnanimous, King of Naples and Sicily, magnanimous saying of, III. 438.

Alphonsus à Castro, accuses the Greek Church as condemned heretics, II. 330.

Altar, an innocent name, used by the Primitive Church without any scruple, V. 77. Bowing to the, no "innovation," *ib.* Nor placing it at the east end of the quire, *ib.*

Altare Damascenum, see *Calderwood.*

Alured, see *Alfred.*

Alvarez, History of Æthiopia by, III. 557.

Alypius, in St. Augustin, omits the Council of Sardica from his list of General Councils, II. 533.

Amator, see St. *Patrick.*

Ambrose, St., election of, to the See of Milan, confirmed by the Emperor Valentinian the Elder, II. 230. Conduct of, towards the Emperor Valentinian III., a pattern of due obedience to the civil magistrate, III. 351. 353. Conduct of, towards Theodosius, an act of Christian discretion, not of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, III. 260. Heroical mind of, under persecution, V. 124. Held, that kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384. Complaint of, respecting a law of Valentinian the Elder limiting gifts made to the Church, I. 142; II. 230.

Knows only of two Sacraments properly so called, I. 55. Quotation from, respecting Baptism, V. 174. Speaks of the Emperor Valentinian III. as 'baptized in desire,' although he had not received actual baptism, II. 390; V. 174. Similar inference of, from the case of David's child by Bathsheba, V. 177. Held a Real Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r-u. Language of, respecting repentance, V. 158, 159.

Legend in, respecting St. Peter's return to Rome, II. 161. Asserts the equality of all the Apostles among themselves, I. 153. k. Quotation from (not genuine), respecting Bishops, mistaken, III. 469. Quotation from (not genuine), concerning Episcopal grace in conferring orders, III. 165; V. 262.

Language of, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 472, 473.

Account by, of the cells of bees, IV. 52. Saying of, that roses grew without thorns in the garden of Eden, III. 332; V. 148.

Amb's Ace, Hobbes's argument from the throwing of, respecting liberty and necessity, IV. 29. 180. 183. 185. 471. 473. The instance in, hath lost Hobbes his game, IV. 270.

Ames, or *Amesius,* doctrine of, respecting the Sabbath, V. 12. h. 18. p. 20. s.

Amurath II., Emperor of Turkey, indignation of, against the perjury of the Christians, III. 311.

Amyraut, a French Reformed Divine, favoured Episcopacy, III. 536. j.

Anabaptists, The, II. 595. How and why schismatical, V. 206. Reject Ordination, III. 147. 475. Deny the relative holiness of one day, place, or person, above another, V. 9. 61. One murdered his son in imitation of Abraham, III. 354.

Anacletus, or *Anencletus,* or *Cletus,* Pope

78—91 (probably), ordained by St. Peter, I. 162. Ordained but six persons himself, *ib.* Patriarchate of, did not include Britain, *ib.* Alleged decree of, in Gratian, respecting the conformity of the government of the Church to that of the Commonwealth, II. 180, 181.

Analogical matter, as explained by Porphyry, IV. 445.

Ananias, case of, proves free will, IV. 55. 301.

Anastasius II., Pope 496—498, Roman clergy withdrew from the communion of, I. 102. Answer of German and French Bishops to, I. 218.

Andrewes, Lancelot, D.D., Bishop of Chichester, of Ely, of Winchester, 1605—1626, III. 119. An able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67. Second to no man, if he hath his equal, in this last age, V. 76. Doctrine of, respecting the Real Presence, V. 217. Makes no question that St. Peter had a primacy, but one of order, not of power, II. 371; III. 549. Affirms Episcopacy to be of Divine right, yet not so that there is no salvation or no Church without it, III. 518. Question between, and Abp. Bancroft, whether those who were to be consecrated to Scotch Bishoprics in 1610, must not first be ordained Presbyters, as having received no ordination from a Bishop, V. 76. r. and compare III. 105. See *Moulin, Pierre du.* Calls Henry VIII. a "true defender of the true faith," II. 108.

Andrews, St., Archbishops of; see *St. Andrews, Archbishops of.*

——— *Assembly General of*; see *Assembly, General, of St. Andrews.*

Anencletus, see *Anacletus.*

Angelo de Corrario; see *Corrario, Angelo de.*

Angels, of the freedom of good, IV. 33. 36. 121, 122. 127. Texts concerning the local motion of, IV. 407, 408. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning, IV. 407. 535.

Angels of the Churches, in the Book of Revelations, proof that Bishops are meant by the; see *Bishops.*

Angles, East; see *East Angles.*

Anglo-Romanists, see *Romanists.*

——— *Priests*; see *Priests, Anglo-Romanist.*

——— *Writers*; see *Writers, Romish.*

Angus, Earl of; see *Douglas.*

Anjou, University of; see *University of Anjou.*

Anlaby, near Hull, first blood shed at, in the Rebellion, III. 451.

Annates, see *First Fruits.*

Anne, wife of Richard III. of England, III. 312.

Anselm, Archbishop of Canterbury 1093—1109, elected by William Rufus, I. 146. Entertained by Pope Urban II. at the Council of Barre, A.D. 1097, as "the Pope of another world," I. 164. Eadmer placed over, at his own entreaty, to exercise his obedience, II. 456.

Contest of, with Henry I. of England, respecting appeals to Rome, I. 135. respecting investitures, I. 263; II. 406, 407. Account of the compromise between Henry I. and, respecting investitures, given by Matthew of Westminster and Florence of Worcester, V. 202. m, n. Investiture of Bishops by Kings, first condemned in the time of, II. 404, 405. Such investiture admitted by, in his own person, II. 406, 407. 465. And acknowledged by, to be the common case of Bishops in those days, although he afterwards waved the acknowledgment, *ib.* The second appellant to Rome from England, I. 135, 136; II. 439. And as much without success as Wilfrid had been, *ib.* Unsupported by his suffragan Bishops, I. 136. The ancient liberties of the English Church went to wreck in the days of, II. 456. Advised by the English Bishops to renounce the Papal power, II. 458. Warned to obtain the King's leave in order to quit England, II. 421, 422. The Empress Maud dispensed with from taking the veil in the time of, without any suit to Rome for a foreign dispensation, II. 448.

Doctrine of, respecting the Will of God, IV. 57. 80. respecting sin, IV. 74. Illustration from, of a sword and crown, respecting the immutability of God's decrees, IV. 77. 363; V. 15. Interpretation by, of 2 Tim. ii. 17, II. 31, 32.

Answer, An, to La Milletière's Epistle to Charles II., by Bishop Bramhall, Works, Part i. Discourse i., I. 7—81. Occasion of, I. xxvi. Where written, I. xxvi. 23. 78. Editions of, I. xxvi. Owned by the author and a mistake in it corrected, I. Pref. 276. Translated into French, I. xxvi.; III. 547. Exceptions taken to, by a Jesuit, and answered by the author, III. 546. The transcriber of, converted by it from Romanism, III.

547. Contents of, I. 1—6. See *Milletière.*

Answer, An, to S. N.; see *Ordination Protestants' Vindicated.*

Antecedent; see *Cause, Necessity, Will.*

Anthropomorphites, disputation of the Fathers against the, IV. 489.

Antichrist, what are the marks of, III. 287; V. 257. A mark of, to be denominated from another than Christ, III. 504. Worth enquiry whether the marks of, do not agree as eminently to the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland as either to the Pope or to the Turk, III. 287. The marks of, agree both to the Pope and to the Turk and perhaps to a third, V. 257. In what sense the Church of England believes the Pope to be an, in what sense not, III. 520; V. 256—258. The Pope may have been called, by particular preachers, but what is that to the Church of England, II. 582. The Court of Rome the great, as distinguished from the Church of Rome, III. 520. Whether Pope Gregory VII. was, II. 451. Norbert, Archbishop of Magdeburg, and the Waldenses, affirmed in the times of Gregory VII. and Paschal II., that the, was to be revealed in that age, *ib.* "Episcopus Universalis," or Head of the Catholic Church, an Antichristian title, according to Gregory the Great; see *Gregory I.* Pope. Orders given by Antichristian prelates, valid, V. 258; and see *Orders.*

Antioch, Bishop of, Church of; see *Rome, Bishop of Rome, Church of Antioch,* St. *Peter. Patriarch of, Patriarchate of;* see *Patriarch of Antioch, Patriarchate of Antioch.*

Antioch, Patriarchs of; see *Ephræm, Leontius.*

Antiochenus, Victor; see *Victor Antiochenus.*

Antipathies, Of 'Motus primo primi,' and, IV. 379. Of secret sympathies and, IV. 431.

Antiquitate, De, Britannicæ Ecclesiæ, Book of the Lives of Seventy of the Archbishops of Canterbury, by Archbishop Parker, genuineness of the original edition, printed privately in 1572, III. 11. c. 120—122. Copies of it, III. Pref. 11. c. 85. f. 92. q. 121. z. 123. g. Reprinted at Hanau in 1605, III. 11. 121. with the omission of the Life of Abp. Parker himself, III. 121, 122. Authorship of the, III. 11, 12. d. 123. e; and see *Acworth, Jocelyn, Yale.*

Quoted to prove, that the records of the Consecrations of the first Bishops in Queen Elizabeth's reign were not forged, III. 92. 96. 120. and that the Nag's Head story is false, III. 96, 97. Extract from the, relating to those Consecrations, III. 229. e.

The Table from the Archiepiscopal Register contained in the, a genuine portion of it, III. 122. consistent with the rest of the book, III. 123. and published to the world before Mr. Mason's book, III. 119. Account of that Table, III. 123. g. 229. f.

Account from the, of Abp. Cranmer, II. 103. Henry VIII. a "defender of the Gospel," according to the, II. 108.

Of the Life of Archbishop Parker contained in the first edition of the; see *Jocelyn, Parker Matthew.*

Antoninus Pius, Emperor of Rome, doctrine of, that kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384.

Antonius de Rosellis; see *Rosellis, Antonius de.*

Antony, St., saying of, respecting monks, I. 119.

Apellites, The, II. 97.

Apiarius, I. 99. l.

Apocrypha, The, is rejected from the canon of Scripture by the Greek as well as by the English Church, II. 634.

Apologetic Answer of Charles the Bald to Pope Adrian II., I. 219, 220.

Apology for St. Jerom, by Blondel; see *Blondel.*

Apology for the Church of England, by Bp. Jewel; see *Jewel.*

Apology for the Oath of Allegiance, by King James I.; see *James I.* King of England.

Apostles, The, were vice-gerents of Christ, V. 38. Vicars of Christ, II. 152. Possessed a legislative power in the Church, II. 455. and a dispensative power, *ib.* and a judiciary power, *ib.* and a power of binding and loosing, *ib.*

All equal in relation to one another, not only in relation to Christian people, as Bellarmine feigns, I. 152, 153; II. 371, 372. 469. 483; III. 549, 550. And admitted to be so in truth by Bellarmine himself, I. 153; II. 152—155. The supremacy was in the whole College of, I. 152, 153; II. 469; III. 550. All had successors, and not St. Peter only, I. 153; II. 156; III. 550. All Pastors as well as St. Peter, I. 153, 154; II.

156, 157. 372. How St. Peter was Head of the rest, II. 155. 372. St. Peter had a primacy of order but not of power among the, see St. *Peter*.

Universality an incommunicable qualification of the, II. 158. What gifts were peculiar to the, *ib.* Established no monarchy in the Church, I. 154. Nor even patriarchate, in the later sense of the word, *ib.* The highest constitution established by the, exceeded not *national* Primates, I. 154; II. 149. 525. Many Churches not in communion with Rome have adhered to the doctrine of the, II. 329. See *Bishop of Rome, Patriarch, Primate*.

Some constitutions made by the, such as the Church might abrogate, being local or temporary, V. 37. 62. Constitutions of the, not merely human laws; see *Constitutions, Apostolical*.

The Sabbath changed, if not by our Lord's authority (which there is no cause to doubt), at least by that of the, I. xcix, c; V. 32. The Lord's Day observed as a weekly holiday in the time of the, V. 34—36. 43, 44. 47—54.

Hobbes's self-contradictions respecting the ecclesiastical power of the, IV. 585—587.

Tradition respecting the place where the, were assembled upon the Day of Pentecost; see *Sionis Cœnaculum*.

Apostles' Creed; see *Creed, The Apostles'*.

Apostolical Canons; see *Canons, Apostolical*.

——— *Churches;* see *Churches, Apostolical*.

——— *Constitutions;* see *Constitutions, Apostolical*.

——— *Council;* see *Council, Apostolic*.

——— *Succession*, what it is, V. 262. Lineal succession of orders, not of opinion, II. 94. See *Orders*. Is not derived through the Bishop of Rome to all other Bishops, see *Bishop of Rome*. How far essential to a Church, see *Bishops, Church Universal, Church Particular*. No doubt about the, of the Church of England; see *Church of England, Orders English*.

——— *Traditions*, see *Tradition*.

Appeals, to the Pope, St. Augustin opposed to the Bishop of Rome respecting; see *St. Augustin*. And St. Cyprian, see *St. Cyprian*. Of the canon of the Council of Sardica concerning, see *Council of Sardica*. And of the Council of Chalcedon, II. 301. 534. The Pope can receive none from England without usurpation, II. 438—441. 444. 514. None might be made without the King's license, I. 141. 150. 213; II. 298. 514; V. 264. English laws against, I. 136. 147; II. 298. 439, 440. See *Statutes of Clarendon, of Præmunire*. The Popes usurped the right of, I. 263. The first from England, that of Wilfrid Archbishop of York, I. 133—135; II. 131. 438, 439. The second, that of Anselm, I. 135, 136; II. 439, 440. See *Anselm, Henry I.* King of England, *Kings of England, Wilfrid*.

Appeals, to the Civil Magistrate, from the Church, condemned absolutely by the Scottish Disciplinarians, III. 255, 256.

———, *to the Emperor*, canon of the Council of Milevum, concerning, I. 116.

———, *to the King*, from Church Courts, always allowed to clerks in England, I. 144; II. 417. 439. 442. 514. 533; and see *Statute of Clarendon*. And to all subjects, III. 255.

———, *to a General Council*, from the Pope, I. 249. Declared to be lawful by the Gallican Church, I. 227. by the Councils of Pisa, Constance, and Basle; see *Councils of Basle, Constance, Pisa*. Condemned by a Bull of Pope Pius II., I. 214. And by the Councils of Florence, and of the Lateran; see *Councils of Florence, of Lateran the Fifth*.

Of Louis IV., Emperor of Germany, from Pope John XXII., I. 215. Of Philip IV. from Boniface VIII., I. 220. Of Maximilian King of the Romans, and of the Kings of France and Navarre and others, from Julius II., I. 193. Of Charles V. of Germany from Clement VII., I. 215. Of Henry IV. of France from Gregory XIV., I. 220. Of the School of Sorbonne from various Popes, *ib.* Of the University of Paris from Leo X., I. 223. Threatened, of Henry VIII. from Clement VII.; see *Bonner*.

Appendix, in Answer to the Exceptions of S. W., or a Reply to S. W.'s Refutation of the Bishop of Derry's Just Vindication of the Church of England, by Bishop Bramhall, Works, Part i. Appendix to Discourse iii., II. 285—335. Contents of, II. 16—19. When written, II. 324. r. Account of, I. xxviii. See *Serjeant, William*.

Appetite, the sensual and rational very

different, IV. 225. Of the intellectual and sensitive, not the same thing, IV. 440.

Approbation, knowledge of, as distinguished from knowledge of vision, IV. 60.

Apuleius, quotation from, respecting destiny, IV. 116.

Apulia, Kings of; see *Kings of Apulia.*

Aquapontanus, see *Bridgwater.*

Aquarians, heresy of the, respecting the Eucharist, I. 9.

Aquinas, St. Thomas, differs from Bellarmine concerning the Body of Christ in the Sacrament, I. 18. Admission of, concerning the Presence of Christ in the Sacrament, I. 22; II. 211. Opinion of, respecting the authority of the Pope in imposing articles of Faith, I. 26. s. the power of the Keys, whether it be declarative or operative, II. 454. that adoration is terminatively due to Images and to the Cross, I. 46. z. Respecting the invocation of Saints, I. 58. l. the morality of the Fourth Commandment, V. 28. n. that the public assemblies of the Church might be transferred from the Lord's Day to any other day of the week, and that the Church is not bound to the septenary number, V. 10. d. Respecting the permanence of the character conferred in orders, V. 210. the obligation of vows, II. 177, 178. the duty of oppressed subjects, III. 352. the way in which the dictate of the understanding doth determine the will, IV. 292.

Distinction taken by, between "opinari" and "credere," II. 209. knowledge of vision and of approbation, IV. 60. a will operative and a will permissive, IV. 71. the imperate and the immanent acts of the will, IV. 125. the elicit and the imperate acts of the will, IV. 130, 131. 'voluntas signi' and 'voluntas beneplaciti,' IV. 239. necessity of being and necessity of acting, IV. 264. 'velle mutationem' and 'mutare voluntatem,' as spoken of God, IV. 108; V. 15. Order of voluntary and involuntary actions according to, IV. 49.

Definition of justice by, IV. 81. of law, *ib.* of piety, IV. 104. of petition, IV. 107. of the 'aspect of God,' IV. 156. of intention, IV. 164. of eternity, IV. 154. 175. 426, 427. 481.

Aquisgrane, Council of; see *Council of* (Aquisgrane or) *Aix la Chapelle.*

Archpriest, title given, after the death of the Bp. of Chalcedon, in James I.'s reign, to the principal of the Romanist clergy in England; III. 101. z. See *Blackwell, Collington, Smith Richard.*

Ardagh, Bishop of Kilmore and; see *Bedell.*

———, *Dean of;* see *Bernard, Nicholas.*

Argall, Thomas, Registrar of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, was one of the witnesses at Abp. Parker's Consecration, III. 88. 206. 213.

Argenis, The; see *Barclay, John.*

Arians, The, made Christ a secondary God, II. 564. And maintained that "erat quando non erat," II. 90; and see *Council of Ariminum.* Condemned all others but themselves, II. 97. May admit the Apostles' Creed interpreted their own way, but not as interpreted by the first four General Councils, II. 597. 619. Doxology of the, I. 110; II. 46. Communicated with the orthodox at Antioch, and how, II. 46, 312. 583. 585. Many orthodox Christians had their orders from the, III. 57; V. 205. 258; and see *Ordination.* Pope Liberius consented to the, I. 254.

Arimathæa, Joseph of; see *Joseph of Arimathæa.*

Ariminum, Council of; see *Council of Ariminum.*

Aristobulus, mentioned by St. Paul, supposed by good authors to have been a British Bishop, III. 467.

Aristotle, definition by, of hypothetical necessity, IV. 25, c. 264. of fear, IV. 51. of mixed actions, IV. 134. d. of deliberation, IV. 164. 178. of the practical judgment, IV. 290. of election, IV. 291. 293. 295. of spontaneity, or τὸ ἑκούσιον, IV. 293. 295. of αὐτόματα, IV. 294, 295. of compulsion, IV. 378. Free-will maintained by, IV. 216. Defence by, of terms of art, IV. 282. Triple division by, of goods, IV. 345. Five causes of fear, according to, IV. 134. 390. On the power external objects have over the will, IV. 407. Kinds of motion according to, *ib.* Account by, of the reasoning and social powers of bees, IV. 46. 52.

Ark of Noah, a type of Baptism, II. 269. And of the Catholic Church, *ib.*

Arles, Council of; Primacy of: see *Council of Arles, Primates of Arles.*

Armagh, Archbishop of, Patent procured for the, by Lord Strafford, on behalf of Abp. Ussher and his successors, that they should take precedence of the Lord Chancellors of Ireland,

V. 84. Is Primate and Metropolitan of all Ireland, II. 538, 539. See *Termonfeckan.*

Armagh, Archbishops of; see *Bramhall, Margetson, Richard, Ussher.* Titular Archbishops of (R. C.), see *Creagh, Donat-o-Teig, Robert Venantius.*

Armenia, Church of; Patriarchs of: see *Church of Armenia; Patriarchs of Armenia.*

Armenians, Letter of Pope Eugenius IV. to the, at the Council of Florence; see *Eugenius IV.* Pope.

Armerar, John, account of, III. 194. k. A witness to Abp. Parker's election to the see of Canterbury, III. 194.

Arminianism, Church of England falsely accused of, IV. 219. Disputes concerning, in England, acknowledged by Baxter to have been about words more than matter, III. 506. 571.

Arminius, opinion of, respecting free-will, IV. 218, 219.

Arms, College of, record preserved in the, of the Obsequies of Henry II. King of France, III. 150. p.

Arno, Archbishop of Salzburg, Letter to, from Louis IX. of France, I. 206.

Arnobius, doctrine of, that kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384.

Arnoldus, see St. *Cyprian.*

Arragon, Kings of; see *Kings of Arragon.*

Array, Commission of, issued by Charles I. in June 1642, III. 297. 360—362. 7 Edw. I. stat. 1, alleged in favour of the legality of the, III. 362.

Art, Terms of; see *Terms of Art.*

Arthur, King of Britain, date of the reign of, II. 172, 173. Said to have removed the primacy of Wales from Caerleon to St. David's, I. 163, 178; II. 172. 185; and see *Caerleon, Menevia.*

Articles of Faith, none other than are comprehended in the Apostles' Creed; see *Creed, Faith the Catholic.* To be distinguished from particular truths, V. 273, 274. Negatives not held by the English Church as, II. 210. 313, 314. 592. No difference in, between the Churches of Rome and England, II. 34. 581; V. 273, 274. The Papacy made an, by Romanists, II. 243. See *Church of England, Church of Rome.* Authority of a General Council respecting; see *Council, General.* Authority of the Pope respecting, see *Aquinas, Bishop of Rome.* The Pope and Church (or Court) of Rome obtrude new, and are therefore schismatical; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Court of Rome, Pius IV.* Pope. XXXIX Articles of the Church of England are not; see *Articles, Thirty-nine.*

Articles, of the Clergy, recognize the Royal supremacy, I. 30; II. 298. 514. recognize the Royal authority in the election of Bishops, I. 146.

———, *The Thirty-nine,* of the Church of England, are no points of Faith, II. 201. 476. 593. Are subscribed, not sworn unto, as theological verities for the preservation of unity, not as articles of Faith, II. 261. 593. and by the clergy, II. 201. 261. Not suffered to be rejected by any man at his pleasure, nor yet looked upon as essentials of saving Faith, but as pious opinions fitted for the preservation of unity, II. 201. 470.

The 19th, 28th, 31st, and 33rd, explained, II. 581, 582. The 20th explained, I. 52. And the 22nd, II. 581. 592. Sanctâ Clarâ's words respecting the 33rd, II. 582. The 37th, disclaims all spiritual power in the king, I. 30; II. 220. 393. 399. 452. 458. and is justified by Sanctâ Clarâ, I. 30. 125. See *Clarâ, Franciscus a Sanctâ.*

Were adopted by the Irish Church in 1634, I. vii; V. 80. Canon concerning the adoption of the, framed by Abp. Ussher, re-written by Lord Strafford, and carried by the latter's authority, V. 80. m. See *Bramhall, Church of Ireland, Convocation Irish of* 1634.

———, *Irish,* debate concerning the, in the Irish House of Bishops, in 1634, I. vii. xix, xx. xxxvi; V. 80-82. Lord Strafford's policy concerning the, V. 80. l. Gradually fell into disuse after the adoption of the English by the Church of Ireland, V. 80. l. 81. o. Calvinistic tendency of the, I. xix. xxxvi. See *Bedell, Bramhall, Church of Ireland, Convocation Irish of* 1634, *Heylin, Ussher.*

——— *of Queen Mary,* sent to Bishop Bonner; see *Bonner, Mary* Queen of England.

——— *of Stirling;* see *Stirling, Articles of.*

———, *the Six,* against Protestants, 31 Henry VIII. c. 14, I. 120. 129; II. 98.

———, the Twelve new, of the Creed of Pope Pius IV.; see *Pius IV.* Pope.

Arundel, Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury 1396—1414; see *University of Oxford.* Argument of, from the royal oath, pressed upon Henry IV.

when he was urged to spoil the Church property, III. 371. 419.
A Sacrobosco, see *Holywood*.
A Sanctâ Clarâ, see *Clarâ*.
Asaph, Bishops of St.; see *St. Asaph, Bishops of.*
Asia, Churches of, not subject to the Bishop of Rome, I. 132; and see *Churches, Eastern.*
Asia, the Less, diocese of, assigned to the Patriarchate of Constantinople upon its establishment, I. 177; II. 489.
Aspect of God, what is meant by the, IV. 156. See *Aquinas.*
Assemblies, Presbyterians slight Councils and Convocations, yet extol, III. 306. And teach that ecclesiastical persons have the sole power of convening and convocating, III. 249.
Assembly, General, of the Scotch Kirk, letter of, fraternizing with the English Bishops in 1566, III. 243.
———, *of Aberdeen*, A.D. 1605, held in defiance of the king's discharge, by twenty Presbyters at the most, III. 246.
———, *of St. Andrew's*, A.D. 1582, violent proceedings of, against one Montgomery, in spite of the king's prohibition, III. 255.
———, A.D. 1586, violent proceedings of, against Adamson Archbishop of St. Andrew's, III. 255.
———, *of Dundee*, A.D. 1580, proceedings of, in defiance of the king's proclamation, III. 245, 246. Decreed the abolition of Bishops, III. 246.
———, A.D. 1593, interference of, with the Spanish trade, and with the Monday markets of Edinburgh, 'in order to religion,' III. 265.
———, *of Edinburgh*, A.D. 1567, decree of, respecting Church property, controlling the Parliament, III. 248. 265.
———, A.D. 1570, large declaration of, respecting the power of ecclesiastical synods, III. 249.
———, A.D. 1582, justified the Raid of Ruthven, III. 267.
———, A.D. 1587, justified the treasonable sermon of one James Gibson, III. 257.
———, A.D. 1590, obtruded the Book of Discipline upon the Scotch Kirk in spite of the State, III. 247. 249.
———, A.D. 1591, enforced the observance of the Book of Discipline, III. 249.
Assembly, General, of Edinburgh, A.D. 1593, resolution of, to take arms, in order to secure the condemnation of the Popish Earls of Angus, Huntley, and Errol, III. 261. 268.
———, A.D. 1594, 1596, blood-thirsty violence of, against the Earls of Angus, Huntley, and Errol, III. 261.
———, A.D. 1647, form of Church Government, &c., propounded to, in cxi. Propositions, III. 250. Treasonable doctrine of, III. 268. Doctrine of, relating to the independence of the Church upon the State, III. 250—254. and the subjection of even the supreme magistrate to the Kirk, III. 259.
———, A.D. 1648, claimed authority in civil as well as ecclesiastical matters, III. 263. Excommunicated all who obeyed the decree of Parliament for aiding King Charles I., III. 264, 265. 273—275. And assembled the people in arms at Machline Moor to enforce their decree, III. 275. See *Commissioners.*
———, *of Glasgow*, A.D. 1581, remonstrance of, respecting the non-observance of the Book of Discipline, III. 248.
———, A.D. 1610, restored their temporalties and full power to the Scotch Bishops, III. 247.
———, A.D. 1638, annulled the acts of the Assembly of 1610, III. 247. f. Justified by the Scotch commissioners in 1648, in its rejection of Episcopacy, although at that time the law of both Church and State, III. 266.
———, *of Perth*, A.D. 1596, III. 270.
———, *Westminster*, in 1643, Letter of Diodati to the, I. 39. i.; III. 486. l. Book on the Sabbath published by two members of the; see *Cawdrey, Palmer.*
Assent, Royal, to the election of a Bishop to an English see; see *Commission.* To Bills passed by the Houses of Parliament; see *Kings of England, Oath Coronation of the Kings of England.*
Asser, made Bishop of Sherborne by King Alfred, I. 146.
Assize of Clarendon, see *Statute of Clarendon.*
Astrology, of the theory of necessity grounded upon, IV. 59, 60. 141. 306. See *Stars.*

Athanasian Creed; see *Creed, Athanasian.*
Athanasius, St., interference of the Bishop of Rome on behalf of, explained, II. 149. 434. Condemnation of, by Pope Liberius, I. 254. Testimony of, to the orthodoxy of the British Bishops respecting the doctrine of the Trinity, II. 532. and whether British Bishops were at the Council of Sardica, *ib.* respecting the return of St. Peter to Rome, II. 161. Passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. s. Tradition, V. 267. Heretical ordination, V. 204. High expression of, respecting the Holy Eucharist, V. 163. z. Testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath prior to the time of Moses, V. 23. a. 25. g. 26. h. Quotation from, to shew, that the Sabbath was changed to the Lord's Day by our Lord Himself, V. 33. and that the Church may not change the Lord's Day, V. 63, 64.
Athanasius Hibernicus; see *Vesey, John*, Bishop of Limerick.
Athelred, see *Ethelred.*
Athelstan, see *Æthelstan.*
Atherton Moor, battle of, V. 110. g.
Attributes of God, see *God.*
Aubertin (*Albertinus*), *Edmund*, a Huguenot minister at Charenton, in 1651, I. cxxxvii. c. Account of, I. 7. c. Controversy of, with La Milletière, I. cxl. d. cxli. e. 7. See *Blondel.*
Aubrey, William, LL.D., Vicar General to Archbishop Grindal, acknowledged Scotch Presbyterian Orders, in 1582, III. 135. t.
Audientes, in the Primitive Church, who so called, I. 104.
Audley, James Touchet, Baron; see *Touchet.*
Augsburg, Confession of, } see *Confession*
Augustan Confession, } *of Augsburg.*
Augsburg, Diet of; see *Diet of Augsburg.*
Augustin, St., Bishop of Hippo, profligate youth of, V. 154. Prayers of his mother Monica for the conversion of, I. 77; V. 125.

Doctrine of, respecting the nature of God, IV. 229. the Will of God as necessitating events, IV. 422. the distinction between the Will and Prescience of God, IV. 423.

Defends the freedom of the human will, IV. 31. 273. Noble passage from, concerning it, IV. 31. 276. Passage quoted from (not genuine), respecting the power of Satan over the human will, IV. 91; V. 153. Definition by, of sin, IV. 319.

Definition by, of the Catholic Church, II. 213. 258. Doctrine of, that the elect belong to the Church invisibly, before they are actually converted, I. 78. that wilful obstinacy is necessary to constitute a formal heretic, I. 112. 127; II. 294. 390. 507. and to separate men from the Church, II. 584. Distinction drawn by, between "hæretici," and "hæreticis credentes," II. 205. 243. 637; V. 208. And between those who are *in and of* the Church, and those who are *in* but *not of* the Church, II. 584. 590. His touchstone of Catholicism, II. 96. Doctrine of, respecting unity, II. 33. and separation from the Catholic Church, II. 31. 81. 594. Comparison of, between schism and idolatry, II. 29, 30. Concerning the Donatists, II. 30, 31. 33. 41. 148. 256. 271. Concerning charity against the Donatists, II. 41. 48. 258. 271. Concerning unjust excommunication, II. 237; V. 209.

Opposed to the Bishops of Rome with respect to appeals, I. 99. Yet not therefore schismatical, *ib.* Account made by, of the see of Rome, II. 235.

Doctrine of, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. Universal consent, II. 68. 383; V. 34. Tradition, V. 267. 270. Apostolical traditions, V. 34, 35. 40. Omits the Council of Sardica from his list of General Councils, II. 533.

Doctrine of, respecting schismatical Baptism, II. 81. unbaptized infants, V. 178—180. In this last point agrees neither with the Church of Rome nor with Protestants, *ib.* Affirms the Breaking of Bread at Emmaus to have been the Sacrament of the Eucharist, V. 57. Passages from, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r. the Adoration of Christ in the Eucharist, I. 21. the institution of the Lord's Day, V. 33. 35. 40. the way in which prayer is answered, I. 77. the worship of Images, I. 46; II. 619. Rule of, respecting indifferent ceremonies, III. 471.

Affirms that there are but two places after death, Heaven and Hell, thus excluding both Purgatory and Limbus Infantum, V. 178, 179. Contradicts Purgatory by his doctrine about "abdita receptacula," I. 59; V. 192.

Distinction of, between honour

'servitutis' and 'caritatis,' as due to the Angels, I. 43. Doctrine of, respecting the knowledge of things upon earth possessed by the Saints in Heaven, I. 79.

Obedience due to God rather than to Princes, according to, when their commands clash, I. 168; III. 275; V. 267. yet held that unjust commands may be justly obeyed, I. 169. Saying of, that the blood of the Martyrs is the seed of the Church, III. 353.

Argument of, to prove the impossibility of the world being spherical, III. 416; IV. 176.

Augustin, St., Archbishop of Canterbury 597—604 (probably), arrival of, in England, I. 132. Did not preach or even enter the realm until he had the king's license, *ib.* Propositions of, to the British Synods, I. 162, 163; II. 152. 302. 542. Dinoth's reply to, *ib.* Propositions of, rejected, *ib.* Was not acknowledged by the British Bishops as their Archbishop, I. 163. 201, 202; II. 133. 172. 542. Slaughter of the monks at Bangor, whether or no attributable to, I. 163, 164. Mission of, from Rome, no title for Papal Jurisdiction over England, II. 132. 172. But a small portion of Britain converted by, I. 266—268; II. 133. 300. There were British Bishops remaining in Britain before he preached to the Saxons, I. 267; II. 94. Converted Kent only and some few adjacent counties, I. 267; II. 133. 300. Converted King Ethelbert of Kent, I. 267; II. 133. 542. Scotch Church independent of; see *Bishops Scotch*, *Church of Scotland*. Consecrated the Saxon Bishops by himself, from necessity, I. 163. 270; II. 273; III. 51. Dates of the arrival of, in England, and of his death, I. 158; II. 172. m. See *Church Britannic*, *Church Saxon*, *Consecration of Bishops*, *Dionothus*, *Gregory I.* Pope, *Synods British*. Life of, see *Gocelinus*.

Augustin, St., Abbey of, patronage of the, desired by Lanfranc, but refused, from William the Conqueror, II. 406. Privileges of the, granted by the Popes, but condemned as null, because not ratified by the King and approved by the Peers, II. 434.

Augustinus, a book so called, by Jansenius; see *Jansenius*.

Aurea Bulla, see *Bulla Aurea*.

Αὐτεξούσιον, i. e. free will, a term frequent among the Greeks, IV. 216. Justified from St. Paul, IV. 217. Disliked by Calvin, IV. 216, 217.

Authentics; see *Justinian*, Emperor of Rome.

Authority, of the Church; see *Church Universal*, *Church Particular*. Of the Church of England; see *Church of England*. Of the Kings of England, see *Kings of England*. Of the Church and Kings of England to effect a reformation in the Church; see *Church of England, Kings of England, Reformation*. Of the Pope, see *Bishop of Rome*. Of a General Council; see *Council, General*. Of Patriarchs, see *Patriarchs*. Of Bishops, see *Bishops*. Of the Fathers, see *Fathers*. Of the Scriptures, see *Scriptures*.

Αὐτοκέφαλοι, Αὐτόνομοι, what meant by, in the Church, I. 161; II. 544. The Britons were, *ib.* See *Church, British*.

Αὐτόματα, what meant by, IV. 294, 295.

Autun, Stephen Eduensis, Bishop of; see *Stephen Eduensis*.

Auxerre, Bishop of; see *Germanus*.

Auxentius, an Arian Bishop of Milan, predecessor of St. Ambrose, II. 230.

Avalonius Elvanus; see *Elvanus, Avalonius*.

B.

Bacon, Sir Nicholas, letter of, to Archbishop Parker, accompanying the Royal Assent to the latter's election to the See of Canterbury, from the Library of C.C.C. Cambridge, III. Pref. p. 179. p. Redgrave, a seat of; see *Redgrave*.

——— *Francis, Lord Verulam*, Quotation from, III. 368. Opinion of, respecting the spoliation of Church property in the time of Henry VIII., III. 434. respecting Bishops, III. 468. Saying of, about hope, V. 118.

Baillie, Robert, Scotch Presbyterian minister, review by, of Bramhall's 'Fair Warning,' I. xxx. xxxv. y; III. Pref. d. One of the deputation sent to the Hague in 1649, to offer Charles II. the crown of Scotland, III. Pref. b. Letters and book of, against Bramhall, on that occasion, III. Pref. b. d. Accusation brought by, against Bramhall, of Popery, III. Pref. k.

Bain, Paul, book of, respecting Episcopacy, III. 473.

Baker, John, a witness to Archbishop Parker's consent to his Election to

the Archbishopric of Canterbury, III. 199. ' One of the witnesses for Archbishop Parker at his Confirmation, III. 177. Evidence of, on that occasion, III. 199, 200. Treasurer to Archbishop Parker, III. 199. z. 205. 213. Account of, III. 199. z.

Baker, Sir Richard, mistake of, in his Chronicle, respecting Archbishop Parker's Consecrators, III. 131. g. respecting the Bishops upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. Pref. a.

———, *Thomas*, of St. John's College, Cambridge, the antiquary, aided Courayer in his work upon Anglican Orders, III. Pref. l.

Balaam, the benediction of, not in his own power, IV. 126. 380.

Balatus Ovium, a tract so called, being an address to the Pope respecting his treatment of the Portuguese Bishops in 1651, I. 224. 246; II. 214. 600.

Balcanquell, a Presbyterian minister, saucy and seditious expressions of, against King James I., III. 257.

Bale, John, Bishop of Ossory 1552—1553. when consecrated, III. 56. y. Named in the second commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, III. 52. 74. 178. Testimony of, respecting Barlow's Bishopric, III. 139. d. Canon of Canterbury upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 193. h. Testimony of, to the story of Dionothus, II. 544.

Ballard, conspiracy of, to kill Queen Elizabeth, II. 114.

Balm, the essential matter of the Sacrament of Confirmation, according to the Roman schools, II. 202.

Bamberg, Syndeger, Bishop of; see *Clement II.* Pope.

Bancroft, Richard, D.D., Bishop of London 1597—1604, Archbishop of Canterbury 1604—1610; hearsay tale confuted respecting the testimony of, to the Nag's Head Consecration, III. 105. Question between, and Bp. Andrewes, concerning the Scotch Bishops of 1610, V. 76. r.

Bandini, Cardinal, instructions of, relative to the Patriarch Cyril Lucar, II. 267.

Bangor, Bishops of; see *Capon, Deane, Glyn, Meyrick.*

———, *Monks of*, slaughtered by the Saxons, with Augustin's consent, I. 163, 164. Account of, II. 302. 543. See *Dionothus.*

Baptism, Holy, one of the two Sacraments generally necessary to salvation, I. 55. 105. An essential of a true Church, II. 26. The same Sacrament whether purely or corruptly administered, II. 79. Noah's ark a type of, II. 269.

The English Church acknowledges remission of sins in, V. 190. 213. See *Sacraments.*

Want of, fatal, unless upon the plea of invincible necessity, V. 172. Baptismal Grace, absolutely, external Baptism only generally, necessary to salvation, *ib.* Desire of, accepted for Baptism itself, II. 70. 390; V. 174; and see St. *Ambrose.* Analogous case of martyrdom, see *Martyrdom.* Opinion of the primitive Church as to the necessity of, as gathered from their practice of delaying it, V. 177. See *Circumcision, Peter Lombard, Sacraments.*

Of infants, answer to the objection that it is not contained in the Creed, II. 470, 471. 474. Want of, in infants, how far supplied by the faith of parents, V. 174—177; and see *Infants.*

No person admitted to, by the Catholic Church, unless he made a free profession of the Creed, either by himself, or by his sureties, II. 291. 479. See *Creed.*

Form of, delivered by tradition, V. 218. Form of, in the Greek Church, allowed by the Church of Rome to be valid, *ib.* Instance of the, of a Jew, with sand in the desert, V. 175. 239. Ordinarily administered in the primitive Church only twice in the year, at Easter and at Whitsuntide, V. 177. The British agreed with the Eastern Church in the administration of; see *Church British, Churches Eastern.*

Dangerous consequences of the Romish doctrine of Intention, as regards, V. 210.

Whether laymen can administer, III. 167. Of heretical, II. 618. Dispute respecting the rebaptization of persons heretically baptized, see St. *Cyprian.* Of schismatical, II. 81.

"Baptismus Flaminis, Fluminis, Sanguinis," V. 175. q.

Baptism of pains and tears, Repentance so called by the Fathers; see *Repentance.*

———, a Short Discourse to Sir Henry de Vic, of persons dying without, by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part iv. Discourse v, V. 171—180. Occasion of, I. xxxiv; V. 171. Editions of, V. Pref. Contents of, V. 169.

Barbarossa, Frederic; see *Frederic I.*

Barbosa, Odoardus; see *Odoardus Barbosa.*

Barclay, John, author of the Argenis, assertion of, respecting Calvin, V. 10. e.

Bardas, the Patrician, preposterous intermeddling of, in ecclesiastical business under the Emperor Michael, II. 231.

Barkley, Gilbert, Bishop of Bath and Wells $15\frac{58}{60}$—1581, proofs of the consecration of, III. 222. Alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s. Commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 222.

Barlosa, see *Barbosa*.

Barlow, Thomas, D.D., Bishop of Lincoln 1675—1691, Letter of Bramhall preserved in the papers of, I. xxxiii. h. xcviii. y ; V. Pref.

——— *William*, D.D., Prior of Bisham, Bishop of St. Asaph, of St. David's, of Bath and Wells, of Chichester, 1536—1568, notice of, before he became Bishop, III. 227, 228. Sent ambassador to Scotland twice by Henry VIII., III. 141. 227. Letters of, from Scotland, III. Pref. 141. m.

Evidence of the consecration of, III. Pref. and 136—148. Actually possessed four Bishoprics successively, III. 138—140. 138. d. Both elected and confirmed Bishop, III. 140. The letters patent for the confirmation of, also command his consecration, *ib.* Formally acknowledged to be a Bishop, III. 141. And this by accusers and enemies, III. 141. i. Consecration of, never doubted during his lifetime, nor until forty-eight years after his death, III. Pref. 136, 137. Parallel between the case of, as regards his consecration, and Bp. Bonner's, III. Pref. 141. l. Sat in Parliament as a Bishop, III. 142. and in Convocation, III. 142. o. Joined in consecrating other Bishops, III. Pref. 143. Acts of, as a Bishop, legally valid, III. 143. Acts of, respecting the temporalties of his sees, legally valid, although questioned upon other grounds, III. 143. t. Testimony of Records to the consecration of, III. Pref. 138. d. 144. 228. Mistake of Bishop Godwin about it, III. 144, 145. Objections of Father Talbot concerning it, III. 145. Why not mentioned in the Restitution of his Temporalties, III. 155. No record of it to be expected in more than one Register, III. 138. c. 157. No (regular) record of Bishop Gardiner's consecration, any more than of his, III. Pref. 158. Nor of those of many others, III. Pref. Probable day of it, III. Pref. Argument from the signatures and contents of the letters of, from Scotland, respecting the day of his consecration, III. Pref. 141. m. Argument to the same effect, from his precedence in Parliament, and in Convocation, III. Pref. 142. o.

Erroneous doctrine of, respecting the necessity of Ordination, III. Pref. 139. d. 141. i. Joined in repressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans at Frankfort, III. 317.

Evidence of the translation of, to the See of Chichester, in 1559, III. 139. d. 227.

Named in the first Commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, III. 72. And in the second, III. 52. 74. 178. Actually joined in confirming him, III. 83, 84. 174-203. And in consecrating him, III. Pref. 56. y. 85, 86. 174. 205. 212. Was not (what is termed) the Consecrating Bishop at Archbishop Parker's consecration, III. 136. y. 205. o.

Barnabas, St., dispute of, with St. Paul, did not presently render them both schismatics, I. 98.

Barnes, Robert, D.D., put to death by King Henry VIII. for his religion, II. 104. 108. What meant by his making the king a "whole king," II. 104.

———, *John*, D.D., author of the Catholico-Romano-Pacificus, confessed that the British Isles are subject to no Patriarch but their own, by the Cyprian privilege, V. 209. Was confined for it in the Hospital of the Holy Ghost at Rome, *ib.* Book of, published in part by Dr. Basier, and afterwards fully by the Rev. Richard Watson ; see *Basier, Watson Richard.*

Baron, Richard, author of a dissenting publication in 1768, in which Abp. Bramhall's programme of the service at the Consecration of the Irish Bishops in 1660-1, is preserved, V. Pref. p.

Baronius, judgment of, on the resistance of Ignatius Patriarch of Constantinople to the Roman See, I. 107. Book of, publicly burned by order of the King of Spain, and why, I. 229.

Barons, eldest sons of, permitted of old to be present in Parliament, IV. 564. Of the wars of the, III. 342.

Barre, Council of ; see *Council of Barre.*

Barwick, John, Dean of St. Paul's 1661—1664, I. xxix. q. Life of, by Peter Barwick, III. 25. j. Adver-

tisement by, prefixed to Bramhall's Consecration of Protestant Bishops Vindicated, III. 5—10. Life of Bishop Morton by, III. 24. h. Information and documents respecting Bishop Morton, and the Nag's Head Fable, supplied to Bramhall by, I. xxix. q; III. 5. a. 25. j. 31. 71. y. 99. Measures of, to preserve the succession of English Bishops during the Rebellion; see *Bramhall.*

Barwick, Peter; see *Barwick, John.*

Basier, Isaac, D.D., the traveller, and biographer of Cosin, tract of, on the Ancient Liberty of the British Church, V. 209. t. A part of Dr. Barnes' Catholico-Romano-Pacificus published in it, *ib.* Banished from England, in common with Bramhall, V. 209. u.

Basilius, Emperor of Constantinople, speech of, to the laity, in the (eighth) General Council, of Constantinople, A.D. 869, II. 231.

Basil, St., expressions from, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 11. x. Passage of St. Gregory of Nyssa cited as from, concerning the Sabbath, V. 25. Reckons the Lord's Day an Apostolical tradition, V. 35.

Basire, see *Basier.*

Basle, Council of; see *Council of Basle.*

Bath and Wells, Bishops of; see *Barkley, Barlow William, Bourne, Clerk John, Fox Richard, Ken, Laud, Wolsey.*

Battle, Abbey of, three churches appropriated to the, by William the Conqueror, upon his own authority, I. 139.

Batts, Parliament of; see *Parliament of Batts.*

Bavaria, Louis of; see *Louis of Bavaria.*

Baxter, Richard, attack of, upon Episcopal divines, and especially upon Bramhall, in a treatise called "The Grotian Religion," as designing a reconciliation with the Pope and Church of Rome, I. xxxi; III. Pref. 503, 504. Ill-chosen title of the treatise of, III. 503. Controversy of, with Drs. Pierce and Sanderson, which occasioned it, III. 503. b. Scope of it, III. 504. Inconsiderate haste with which it was written, III. 507. 572. Attack of, recoils upon his own head, III. 505. See *Vindication of Bramhall and Episcopal Clergy.*

Groundless attack of, upon Grotius, answered, III. 511-514; and see *Grotius.*

No Grotian design, such as is imagined by, in England, viz. for reconciliation with the Papacy as now established, III. 514. Feeble reasons of, for his supposition, III. 515. 519—522. 524—528. The groundless fear which occasioned it, III. 516. Himself admits that the Church of Rome is a true Church, III. 519. And gives honour to members of it, III. 520. Upon whose side lies the schism, Mr. Baxter's or the Grotians', III. 560. Upon whose side lies the want of charity or the persecution of their adversaries, III. 561. Ill-timed imputation by, of pride, III. 563. See *Grotius, Reconciliation.*

Refuses to name those Episcopal divines whom he accuses, III. 519. Groundless distinction made by, between 'old' and 'new' Episcopal divines, III. 523. 536. Malicious and idle suggestions of, against Charles I., III. 528. Acknowledgeth, that Bishop Bramhall is no Papist, III. 543.

Exceptions of, to Bishop Bramhall's terms of union between the Churches of Rome and England, III. 547—559. Terms proposed by himself, III. 563-566. See *Reconciliation.* Rash assertions of, about Roman Catholics, III. 559.

Concessions made by, of doctrines held by his own fellows, III. 505. Confession of, that the disputes respecting Arminianism in England were more about words than matter, III. 506. 571. Of course anti-Episcopal, III. 531. Bitter invectives of, against the Church of England, III. 574; and see *Rivet.* Impertinent railing of, against the Episcopal clergy, III. 580. Defence by, of sequestrations, III. 508—510.

Bayne, Ralph, Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry 1554—1559, deprived and when, upon Queen Elizabeth's accession; see Table of Deprivations, III. 232. Died before his successor's consecration, *ib.;* and see *Bentham.*

———, *Paul;* see *Bain, Paul.*

Beacon, Thomas, aided in repressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans at Frankfort, III. 317.

Beasts, Brute, death and pain inflicted upon the, explained and justified, IV. 79. Parallel case of the, not relevant to that of men, with respect to rewards and punishments, IV. 100. 317. The terms reward and punishment applied to the, by analogy only, IV. 101. 347, 348. Act when trained, not from reason, but from sense of present, or memory of

past joy or pain, IV. 101. All the actions of the, not necessary, IV. 100. 182. 469. Of the dominion of man over the, IV. 339—341. Hobbes attorney-general for the, IV. 339. See *Actions of Brute Beasts.*

Beatifical Vision; see *Vision, Beatifical.*

Becancelde, Council of; see *Council of Becancelde.*

Becket, Thomas à, Archbishop of Canterbury 1162—1170, swore to the Constitutions of Clarendon, I. 145. 187. but fell from his oath, *ib.* Suffragan Bishops of, and the Barons of the kingdom, against him in his dispute with Henry II., I. 187. Murder of, to be abhorred, *ib.* Yet was no martyr, *ib.* and undeservedly canonized, *ib.*

Bede, the Venerable, expressions of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r. Affirms the "Breaking of Bread" at Emmaus to have been the Holy Eucharist, V. 57. d.

Omits the Council of Sardica from his list of General Councils, II. 533. Mistakes from the works of, respecting the Culdees, as though Bishops had been subject to Presbyters in Britain and ordained by them, I. 273—275. Testimony of, to the history of Dinoth's conference with St. Augustin, II. 542, 543. Words inserted into the History of, to excuse St. Augustin from the slaughter of the monks of Bangor, I. 164. Corrects Prosper's account of St. Germanus being a legate of the Pope, II. 171. 536.

Testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath prior to the time of Moses, V. 23. a.

Holds, that kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384. Confusion made by, between Columba and Columbanus, I. 273, 274. Evil character given by, of the Britons, II. 545.

Bedell, William, D.D., Bishop of Kilmore and Ardagh 1629—1641, used the Irish Articles (previously to 1634), in examining a candidate for orders, V. 81. p. q.; and see *Price.* Controversy of, with Wadsworth; see *Wadsworth.*

Bederna; see *York, City of.*

Bedford, Suffragan Bishop of; see *Hodgkin.*

Bees, account given by naturalists of their phantasy, or power of forming ideas, IV. 52. Aristotle's account of the instinct of, IV. 46. 52. St. Ambrose's, IV. 52. Crespet's assertion respecting, that they bend their thighs in the form of a cross, and bow themselves, when quitting their cells, IV. 53.

Beggars, Supplication of; see *Supplication of Beggars.*

Beginning of Unity, required in all societies by the law of nature, according to Calvin, and Beza; see *Beza, Calvin.* St. Peter had a, in the Church; see St. *Peter.* The Bishop of Rome has a, according to St. Cyprian; see St. *Cyprian.* And would be allowed by the Church of England to have a, if he would be content with it, see *Bishop of Rome, Church of England, Primacy.*

Béguines, The, I. 120.

Being, beginning of, necessity of, as distinguished from beginning and necessity of *Acting;* see *Actions, Necessity.*

Bekenshaw, or *Bekinsau*, book of, published in 1546, De Supremo et Absoluto Regis Imperio, I. 122; II. 503.

Belief; see *Creed, Faith.*

Bell, John, Bishop of Worcester 1539-1543, proof of the consecration of, III. Pref. 140. d.

Bellarmine, Robert, Cardinal, doctrine of, that the last act of the understanding necessitates the will, IV. 42. Definition by, of a free agent, IV. 173. 263. of free will, IV. 285. of sin, IV. 319. Doctrine of, respecting concupiscence without consent, IV. 439.

Definition by, of the Church Catholic, II. 596.

Doctrine of, respecting the infallibility of the Pope, I. 255; II. 437. 598; V. 272. Conditions laid down by, for the exercise of the Papal infallibility, entirely explain it away, I. 256; II. 437. Doctrine of, that the Pope is the sole fountain of Episcopal jurisdiction, II. 327. respecting obedience to the Pope, II. 93. the lawfulness of resisting the Pope, I. 107. the Papal supremacy, III. 301, 302. the temporal authority of the Pope, I. 255; II. 416. 420. 435, 436; III. 301. Gives temporal power to the Pope with so many cautions and reservations that it signifies nothing, I. 256; II. 435, 436. Doctrine of, respecting the African Bishops' appeal to Rome, II. 150. Evasion by, of the canon of the Council of Chalcedon respecting appeals, II. 534, 535. of St. Cyprian's

Epistle condemning appeals to Rome, II. 150. 444. Interpretation of, refuted, of the oath of a certain Bishop to the Pope mentioned by Gregory the Great, II. 419. Testimonies quoted by, respecting the authority of the Bishop of Rome over General Councils, II. 327. 557. All the Apostles equal in power according to, I. 153; II. 152—155. 469. 483; III. 549, 550. Distinction taken by, between the fact of the Bishop of Rome's succession from St. Peter, and the reason of his succession, II. 379. Confesses, that the Apostolic see is not so fixed to Rome that it cannot be removed, II. 143. 240. 321. 378. 380. 610; III. 551. Mentions five changes in the manner of choosing a Pope, II. 404. Admits the term Pope to have been used absolutely for the Bishop of Rome, so early as the Council of Chalcedon, II. 303. 540.

Confesses, that Christian kings held the patronage of the Church 'for a long time,' II. 450. Affirms, that Pope Gregory VII. followed the old ecclesiastical laws in condemning homage and investitures taken from a lay hand, but only produces one counterfeit canon of the eighth Œcumenical Council to bear out his assertion, II. 450, 451. Character given by, of Pope Gregory VII., II. 450.

Conditions of a General Council according to, II. 249. 330. 532. 568. Evasion by, answered, of the decrees of the Councils of Constance and Basle respecting the superiority of a General Council to the Pope, I. 250—252. Affirms the contrary doctrine to be 'fere de fide,' II. 327. 492. 557. Answered by Dr. Field, II. 281.

Passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. the sufficiency of Holy Scripture, I. 49; V. 31.

Doctrine of, respecting the Sacrament of Baptism, V. 173. respecting martyrdom, as supplying the want of Baptism, V. 174. Denies salvation to unbaptized infants, V. 175. An answer to some parts of his work De Sacram. Euchar., I. 9. 16. 18. 20. Admission of, respecting the adoration of the Host, I. 21. Doctrine of, respecting the Sacrifice of the Cross, II. 88. the withholding the Cup at the Eucharist, I. 20; V. 56. on Luther's opinion respecting the withholding of the Cup, II. 202.

Doctrine of, respecting the worship of the Cross, I. 46. z. and of Images, *ib.* the knowledge possessed by the Saints in Heaven of things on earth, I. 58. l.

Doctrine of, respecting the Sabbath, V. 61.

Perversion by, of St. Paul's precept respecting obedience to the civil magistrate, III. 349. Holds that allegiance is not due to infidel princes, II. 436. Gives the Pope power to depose princes, III. 302. Denies that princes are princes of clerks, II. 420.

Bellasis, Colonel, routed by Fairfax at Selby, V. 91. a.

Bellay, Du; see *Du Bellay*.

Benedict IV., Pope about 903, I. 255.

——— *IX.*, Pope in 1033, deposed by the Emperor Henry II. as "a most filthy monster," I. 173.

——— XI., Pope 1303—1304, appeal of the School of Sorbonne from, to a General Council, I. 220.

——— *XII.*, Pope 1335—1342, letter to, from the Electoral College of Germany, I. 212; II. 223. Letter of Edward III. of England to, respecting his right to the crown of France, II. 146. Excommunicated the Emperor Louis of Bavaria, II. 147.

——— *XIII.*, or Peter de Luna, Pope at Avignon 1395, rejected by the first Council of Pisa, I. 218. Turned out by the Council of Constance, I. 252.

Beneplaciti, Voluntas; see *God, Will of.*

Bentham, Thomas, Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry 1559—1578, proof of the consecration of, III. 222. Commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 222. Alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.

Berengarius, 1035—1088, heresy laid to the charge of, respecting the Real Presence, I. 11. His retractation of it, I. 12. Opponents of, equally in error on the other side, by the acknowledgment of many Schoolmen, I. 12, 13; and see *Nicholas II.* Pope, *Umbertus*. Possibly innocent of heresy himself, if fairly represented, I. 11. z; and see the fragments of his own writings upon the subject as published at Berlin in 1834, and at the end of Bowden's Life of Gregory VII., vol. ii.

Berkeley, see *Barkley*.

Berinus, an Italian, first converted the West and South Saxons to Christianity, I. 267.

Bernard, St., quotation from, III. 299. Complaints of, to Pope Eugenius IV., respecting the corruptions of the Church, I. 190. 263. Words of, cited to prove, that the Pope was not 'Lord' or master of other Bishops, and the Roman Church a mother but not 'mistress' of other Churches, I. 26. 232. 247; II. 200. 240. 325. 621, 622; V. 207. 271. Evil character of the Irish given by, II. 545. High eulogy passed by, on the Templars, II. 196. and on the faith and conversation of the Waldenses, II. 451. Quotation from, respecting the free power of kings, III. 425. that soldiers dying on the field of battle, for their country and for their religion, are crowned with a crown of martyrdom, V. 110. Thought to have been the author of the Rule of the Templars, II. 196. Letter of, respecting unbaptized infants, to Hugo de S. Victore, V. 175. m.

Bernard, Nicholas, D.D., sometime Dean of Ardagh, and Chaplain to Archbishop Ussher, letter to, from Bishop Bramhall, on the observance of the Sabbath and Lord's Day, I. xcviii-ci. Addressed to, according to Bp. Barlow, I. xxxiii. h. xcviii.; V. Pref. Bramhall's Discourse upon the same subject probably addressed to, I. xxxiii.; V. Pref. Published some papers of Abp. Ussher, after his death, viz. i. On the extent of Christ's Death and Satisfaction, ii. On the Sabbath and observation of the Lord's Day, iii. On the ordination in other Reformed Churches, I. xxxiii.; V. 74. n. 75. p. See *Ussher.*

Bertha, Queen of Kent, a Christian before St. Austin came to England, I. 267.

Bertram, first difference about the Presence of Christ in the Sacrament in the days of, I. 11.

Berwick, Rev. Edward, Letters and Will of Abp. Bramhall edited by, among the Rawdon Papers, I. iii. See *Rawdon Papers.*

Best, John, Bishop of Carlisle 1560—1570, proof of the consecration of, III. 226. Affirmed by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.

Beza, Theodore, present at the Colloquy of Poissy, I. 68. o. Belonged to the Council of Sixty at Geneva although it was a civil office, III. 304.

Large admissions of, respecting Bishops, III. 470. 484, 485, 486. 490. Admits it to be the dictate of nature, that one should preside over the rest in the Church, II. 386; III. 535. 551. Objections of, against the abuses of Episcopacy, not against Episcopacy itself, III. 490, 491. Triple division of Bishops by, III. 481, 482.

Seditious book of, De Jure Magistratuum, III. 301. Authorship of it rightly attributed to, III. 301. r. Seditious doctrines contained in it, III. 301. 316. 364.

Comment of, upon Acts xx. 7, V. 48.

Bible, The; see *Scriptures.* Delivery of, to Priests, and of the New Testament to Deacons, at their ordination; see *Ordination of Deacons, Ordination of Presbyters.*

Biel, Gabriel; see *Gabriel Biel.*

Bigamists, i. e. persons twice married, Papal canon (made at the Council of Lyons) excluding, from privilege of clergy, only received with a legislative interpretation in England, I. 140; II. 432.

Bilson, Thomas, Bishop of Worcester 1596, of Winchester 1597—1616, testimony of, against the Patriarchal power claimed by the Pope in England, I. 152. Book of, against the Puritans, respecting the Descent of Christ into Hell, II. 596. g.

Binding and Loosing; see *Absolution, Excommunication, Keys Power of the, Priests.*

Bisham, Prior of; see *Barlow, William.*

Bishop, William, 1553—1624, Bishop of Chalcedon, an able polemic writer for the Roman Church, I. 67.

———, *John*, a Roman Catholic Priest, book of, against the Pope's deposing power, in 1598, II. 116.

Bishops, all anciently called Pastors, II. 145. called "Angels of the Churches" in the Book of Revelations, II. 69; III. 470.

Nomination and investiture of, see *Investiture.* Nomination and investiture of, in England; see *Bishops English, Kings of England.* In France; see *Bishops French, Kings of France.* In Germany; see *Bishops German, Charlemagne, Emperors.* In Spain; see *Bishops Spanish, Kings of Spain.* In Hungary; see *Kings of Hungary.* In Apulia; see *Kings of Apulia.*

Ancient mode of electing, in the primitive Church, V. 201, 202. Election by Deans and Chapters neither essential to Episcopacy nor evermore used in the Church, V. 201. Either in England or elsewhere, V. 201—

203. Election of, in England; see *Bishops, English.*

Three Bishops required to consecrate, by the canons, four by the statute law of England, III. 73. c. 77. Two or even one would be justified by necessity, III. 51. One held sufficient in case of necessity by Gregory the Great; see *Augustin of Canterbury.* One and two Presbyters held sufficient (with the Pope's dispensation) by the Roman Schools, III. 106. Or one and two mitred Abbots, *ib.* Ordination of, in England; see *Bishops English, Consecration of Bishops, Ordinal English.*

Homage paid by, to laymen and kings, invariably before the time of Paschal II., by Platina's own acknowledgment, I. 187; II. 405. 417. 465; and see *Oath of Allegiance.* In England; see *Bishops, English.* In France; see *Bishops, French.* Oath of fidelity to the Pope, when first taken by; see *Oath of Bishops to the Pope.*

Episcopal character indeleble, V. 209. 263. Even in cases of lawful suspension, *ib.* Extravagances of the Roman Schools respecting the permanence of the Episcopal character, V. 209, 210. See *Aquinas, Vasquez.*

Threefold power in, of Order, Interior Jurisdiction, Exterior Jurisdiction, II. 453. No controversy with the Romanists respecting the two former, *ib.* unless this—whether the Bishop of Rome alone derives his jurisdiction immediately from Christ, and all other Bishops only mediately through him, II. 159. 239. 327. 438. 453. 464. And this controversy is only with a part of the Church of Rome, *ib.* Many, do not derive their orders at all from St. Peter or from any Roman Bishop, and yet are true Bishops, II. 160. 453, 454. 530; V. 253. Are ambassadors of Christ, not of the Pope, I. 153. Jurisdiction of, not necessarily derived from the Pope, I. 227; II. 160. 327. 453; V. 252. See *Bishop of Rome.* Exterior jurisdiction of, wholly political, and proceedeth originally from sovereign princes, II. 129. 428, 429. 455—457. Are proper judges of the canons, II. 428. Similar doctrine of the Gallican Church, I. 227. See *Jurisdiction, King, Mission.*

The benefice and office of, two distinct things, I. 272; III. 78. 172; V. 201. 229. 232. Confirmation, Inthronization, Restitution of Temporalties, homage, belong to the former, Consecration to the latter, III. 78. 83; V. 263. The former, political acts, the latter belong to the key of order, III. 83. The former come from the King, the latter from Bishops, I. 272; V. 229, 230. Meaning of the term Bishop Elect, III. 94. u.

Have a ministerial mission through Christ to confer holy orders, V. 263. Power of ordination belongs to, exclusively, III. 143. 475. How far they can suspend or restrain the gift once conferred, V. 263, 264.

Authority of, in the interpretation of Scripture, I. 50—52; IV. 500. 586. 590; V. 270.

All, believed to have an equal power by St. Cyprian; see St. *Cyprian.* Neither St. Peter nor any ancient Bishop, nor yet St. Gregory the Great himself, ever pretended to a headship of power over, II. 609. St. Peter had a primacy of order over; see *Apostles, St. Peter.* Whether the Bishop of Rome have a primacy of order among; see *Bishop of Rome, Headship, Primacy.* How pre-eminence among, arose, I. 154—156; II. 125, 126; and see *Patriarch, Primate.*

Power of the body of the clergy relatively to, III. 488.

Blessings received from the order of, III. 476. A hindrance to schisms and heresies, III. 492, 493. The calling of, not Popish, II. 70; III. 466. No adjument to the Pope but a strong bulwark against him, I. 189. 249; III. 492. 529—531; and see *Council of Trent.* Evils of other forms of Church government, III. 477. Rights of, taken away by the Popes, I. 189, 190.

Of Divine institution, I. 271; II. 307. 550. How far so, III. 490. Held to be so by the Sorbonne, as opposed to the Papacy; see *Sorbonne.* At least an Apostolical institution, I. 271. Comprehended in the Apostolic office, II. 69. Proved from Scripture and tradition, I. 53. Texts of Scripture proving, under another name, III. 474. Arguments against, from Scripture, mere mistakes, III. 479. Universally established in the Christian world at all times from the very beginning, II. 69; III. 469. Universally received throughout the whole Christian world for the first 1500 years, i. e. until Calvin, II. 62; III. 469. 531. No one formed Church that wanted, for the first 1500 years,

III. 27. 531. No Church before that of Geneva that wanted, II. 62. Unformed Churches no fit precedent, I. 275. Established in England more than 1300 years in 1643, III. 339. 467. 469. 471. Woven and riveted into the body of the English law, III. 468. Passages in St. Ambrose and St. Jerome, respecting the origin of, explained, III. 469, 470. Maintained by others than Bishops, e. g. King James I., Martin Bucer, Peter Martyr, III. 472, 473. Attachment of Charles I. to; see *Charles I.* of England, *Henderson Alexander*. Not oppugned by Whitaker, Fulke, or Reynolds, III. 473. Retained by the majority of Reformed Churches, and only put away by others from a supposed necessity, II. 62. 69, 70; III. 479—493. 531—533; and see *Durell, Hall, Morton Thomas*. Retained by Sweden, II. 69. 564; III. 480. 517. 532. by Denmark, *ib.* by the Lutherans in Germany, *ib.* by the Waldenses, II. 62; III. 531, 532. by the Bohemian Brethren, *ib.* Scottish Disciplinarians by their own authority decreed the abolition of, in 1580, III. 246. yet appointed superintendents with Episcopal power, *ib.* and afterwards (in 1606, 1612) restored their temporalties also, which had been seized by the Crown, III. 247. See *Superintendents*. Regretted by many among the Foreign Reformed Churches, I. lxx. 38, 39; II. 70; and see *Diodati, Synod of Dort*. Approved and desired by all the first Reformers and by the majority of Protestant doctors, I. 38, 39; II. 62—64; III. 482—486. 531—536. 536. j.; and see *Amyraut, Blondel, Calvin, Confession of Augsburg—of Saxony—Suevic, Farellus, Henderson, Lectius, Melanchthon, Moulin, Prussians, Rivet, Spanheim, Vossius, Zanchy, Zuingle*. Substantially defended by even the greatest impugners of Episcopacy, I. 38, 39; III. 486—489; and see *Beza, Blondel, Calvin, Salmasius*. Their objections are against its abuses, III. 490—493. Divine right of, well nigh established at the Council of Trent, I. 189. 249; II. 625. 639; III. 492. 530, 531. And would have been carried in that Council, had the number of Bishops of other countries there been proportioned to that of the Italian Bishops, *ib.* Are the safest way, since Episcopal ordinations are allowed by all, III. 474. First controversies about, introduced by the Church of Rome; see *Aerians*.

Succession of, how far to be held essential to a Church, II. 25, 26; III. 475, 476. 517, 518. Whether all those be schismatics that want, II. 42. 69, 70. Foreign (Reformed) Churches how far to be condemned for the want of, II. 70; III. 475. 517. Rejection of, gross schism materially, II. 70. They who want, put it to a dangerous question whether they be within the pale of the Church, III. 280. See *Andrewes, Church Particular*.

Residence of, would have been enforced at the Council of Trent, had the number of Bishops of other countries there been proportioned to that of the Italian Bishops; see *Council of Trent*.

Triple division of the term 'Episcopi,' made by Beza and some of the Foreign Reformed Churches, III. 481, 482.

Bishops, Suffragan, order of, in England, from the 13th to the 16th century, III. 78. o. Statute of Henry VIII. concerning, *ib.* To be distinguished from the ancient Chorepiscopi, see *Chorepiscopi*. Were true Bishops, III. 78. o. and had as much power to ordain or consecrate as the greatest Bishop in the world, III. 78. See *Bedford, Boven* or *Thevnen, Thetford*.

Bishops, Bishop of, a swelling title, misliked by St. Cyprian, I. 61.

Bishop, Universal, or *Œcumenical*, the name of, taken in three senses, i. as implying universality of care, I. 253; II. 144. ii. as implying universality both of care and of jurisdiction, I. 153. iii. exclusively, for the only Bishop in the world, I. 254. An anti-Christian title, according to Gregory the Great, I. 32. 253; II. 134; V. 252. Inconsistent with the Pope's Patriarchal power, I. 260. Pope Boniface III. obtained the title of, from the usurping Emperor Phocas, I. 131. 158. 269; II. 305. In what sense the Protopatriarchs were so called, I. 253; II. 34. 144. See *Boniface III.* Pope, *Gregory I.* Pope, *John* Patriarch of Constantinople.

Bishops, African, contentions of, with Bishops of Rome, I. 99. 106; II. 374. Letter of, to Pope Celestine, II. 374. Slighted the Council of Sardica, II. 374, 375. 533. See *Augustin, Cyprian*.

Bishops, British, ordained at home, I. 161; II. 526. 537. Acknowledged no subjection to the Pope, I. 162; II. 133. Rejected St. Augustin, I. 163, 164. 201, 202; II. 133. 543. Refused to aid St. Augustin in consecrating Saxon Bishops, I. 163. See *Primates, British*. Many English Bishops received orders from the, II. 530; V. 252; and see *Bishops, English*.

Grounds of the conduct of, respecting the observation of Easter, I. 130. 160; and see *Church British, Churches Eastern*. Orthodoxy of the, respecting the doctrine of the Trinity; see St. *Athanasius*.

Some, in the Council of Arles, I. 159; III. 339. 467. And (possibly) of Sardica, II. 532. Order of precedence among the, at the Council of Arles, I. 159, 160. See *Aristobulus*, St. *David, Dubritius, Hismael, Luidhardus, Ninian, Samson, Telaus*.

———, *Cyprian*, independent of the Patriarchs of Antioch, by a canon of the Council of Ephesus; see *Council of Ephesus*. Analogous privilege of the Church of England, relatively to the Bishop of Rome; see *Cyprian Privilege*.

———, *English*, nomination and investiture of, doth belong to the Imperial Crown, both by law and by custom immemorial, I. 135. 146. 150. 263; II. 404—409. 418. 465; V. 202. See *Investiture*.

Election of, by Deans and Chapters, not evermore in use in England, V. 201, 202. Statute of Edward VI. abolishing the mode of electing, by Deans and Chapters, III. 66. k; V. 200. repealed by Queen Mary, *ib*. Proposal of Bramhall respecting the election of, after the Restoration, when the Deans and Chapters were extinct, I. cxvi. o. Order and list of documents relating to the election of, III. 231. See *Congè d'Eslire, Election of Bishops*.

Confirmation of, what it is, III. 64, 65. List of documents relating to the confirmation of, III. 231. See *Confirmation*.

Consecration of, three Bishops required in order to the, by the canons, four by the statute law of England, III. 73. c. 77. Form of the consecration of, valid, and sufficient; see *Consecration of Bishops, Ordinal English*. Not consecrated by Presbyters, nor subject to them, of old in Britain, I. 273. Supposed instances of it in Bede mistaken, I. 274. Order and list of documents relating to the consecration of, III. 231.

Homage paid by the, to the King, II. 417; III. 231; and see *Oath of Allegiance*. Oaths of, to the Pope; see *Oath of Bishops to the Pope*.

Temporalties of, see *Temporalties*. Restitution of Temporalties to, see *Restitution of Temporalties*.

Inthronization of, in the Province of Canterbury, pertains of right to the Archdeacons of Canterbury, III. 231.

Spiritual jurisdiction of, not derived from the King, I. 272; V. 229. But the King's grant held needful to their coactive power, V. 231; and see *Jurisdiction, Kings of England*. The benefice held of the King, but the orders derived from Bishops, I. 272. Acknowledged by the Church of England to be right judges of the canons, II. 428. Possessed a dispensative power from the beginning until the Pope usurped it, II. 447. All the ecclesiastical courts in England did ever use to send out their citations in the Bishop's name, V. 229. See *Bishops*.

Many of the, have received orders through the British Bishops and not from Rome through St. Augustin, II. 530; V. 252. Derive their orders from three distinct sources, II. 94. Received orders from their predecessors of the communion of Rome lapsed, not quâ tales—as they were corrupted, but as they were Bishops, V. 252. What Dr. Whitaker meant by saying, that the orders of, are not derived from Rome, V. 251—254. Orders of, how far derived from Rome, II. 39; III. 135. t. See *Orders, English*.

Were not revolters from the Catholic Church at the Reformation, V. 205. nor heretics, V. 206. nor obstinate schismatics, *ib*. Authority of, not suspended by the Catholic Church after the Reformation, V. 208. Nor would suspension have obliterated it, V. 209.

Of the votes of, in Parliament, III. 339. Do not sit in Parliament as temporal Barons but as Bishops, III. 156. Ever had votes in the House of Peers, III. 156; V. 229. Number of, who sat in Parliament, up to 1540, I. 114. u. 120; II. 99. 501.

Thirteen hundred years old and more (in 1643), III. 339. 467. Woven and riveted into the body of the

English law, III. 468. Never wanting in England until the time of the Great Rebellion, III. 471. 532.

Expostulation of the, with Archbishop Anselm, for submitting to the Pope, II. 458. Letter of the, to Pope Paschal II. on behalf of the Church of Canterbury, II. 410. to Abp. Becket, and to Pope Alexander III. respecting the Archbishop's dispute with Henry II., I. 187. Joined in the address of the whole commonwealth of England, to Pope Innocent IV. in the reign of Henry III., I. 194, 195; II. 448. Offered Richard II. to stand with him against Papal encroachments, I. 148. 160,000*l.* extorted from the, by the Popes, within 40 years ending 1532, I. 181. Inconsistent oaths of the, in the time of Henry VIII., I. 148, 149; II. 179, 180. 357; and see *Oath of Bishops to the Pope.* Assented almost universally to Henry VIII.'s divorce, II. 188. and to the Reformation in his reign, I. 114; II. 99, 100. 189. 295. 501. 505. and to that King's claim of supremacy, I. 114; II. 99. 295. 505. by Sanders's own acknowledgment, II. 505, 506. Commissions taken out by, in the reigns of Henry VIII. and Edward VI., V. 229. p. How many, upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, had vacated their sees by death, III. 43. 232. or by flight, III. 232. Alleged conspiracy of the surviving Marian Bishops at that time, see *Acworth.* Those displaced by Queen Elizabeth, had for the most part defended, under Henry and Edward, the doctrines which they obstinately rejected under Elizabeth. II. 100. 505. How many were deprived, and successors appointed to their sees whilst they lived, on Elizabeth's accession, III. 232. Bishops consecrated on Elizabeth's accession, were rightly and lawfully consecrated; see *Nag's Head Fable, Orders English, Parker Matthew.* Account of their actual consecrations, from the De Antiquitate Brit. Ecclesiæ, III. 92. 229. e. f. from Thynne in Holinshead, III. 229. g. from Godwin, III. 230. h. from Sanders, III. 230. i. from the Rolls and Registers, III. 216—229. Their ordainers rightly ordained, viz. by such as were truly Bishops, and by a valid form of ordination, I. 270, 271; II. 272. 642; III. Pref. 56—58; and see *Barlow William, Coverdale, Hodgkin, Scory, Orders English, Ordinal English.* The, of Charles I.'s reign had no design of bringing back the Pope; see *Baxter, Grotians, Reconciliation.* Attestation of the, in 1658, to Bishop Morton's Protestation respecting the Nag's Head fable, III. 6. 32, 33, which was signed by all the surviving Bishops who had sat in the Parliament of 1641, III. 32. v. Steps for preserving the succession of the, during the Great Rebellion; see *Barwick John, Bramhall.* And for instituting the, in their Bishoprics upon the Restoration, the Deans and Chapters being extinct, I. cxvi. o.

Bishops, French, supported the Divine right of Bishops at the Council of Trent, I. 189. 249; III. 530. Commanded by the King of France to quit the Council of Trent, I. 221. Assistance afforded by the, to the Portuguese Bishops, in 1651, against the Pope, I. 224. Subject to the French King, I. 226. Nomination and investiture of the, belongs to the King of France; see *Kings of France.* Homage paid by, to the King, II. 426. Saying of a, respecting the Pope, I. 223.

———, *German,* nomination and investiture of, has belonged to the Emperors since the time of Charlemagne, II. 232. 414. Supported the Divine right of Bishops at the Council of Trent, I. 189. 249; III. 530. Opposed to Gregory VII., I. 217. Two answers of, respecting submission to the Pope, in 497 and 863, I. 218. See *Adrian IV.* Pope.

———, *Irish,* nominated by Royal letters patent without the intervention of Deans and Chapters, V. 200. Received their orders from the Scotch Bishops, not from Rome, II. 530, 531. No question about the succession of the, at the accession of Queen Elizabeth, III. 47. 52. How many were deprived at Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 52. o. No want of, at that time, had they been needed, to consecrate Bishops for England, III. 52. Fable respecting an Irish Archbishop who refused to consecrate Abp. Parker and his brother Bishops, III. 47. 52; V. 244; and see *Creagh.* Miserable condition of the, when Bramhall came to Ireland in 1633, I. vi. xviii. lxxx, lxxxi. lxxxix, xc; III. 47. Efforts of Bramhall and Lord Strafford in behalf of the; see *Bramhall, Wentworth Thomas.* Consecration of two Archbishops and ten

Bishops by Abp. Bramhall, Jan. 18, 1661, I. xii. lxxi; V. Pref. p. See *Church of Ireland*.

Bishops, Italian, at the Council of Trent; see *Council of Trent*. Number of, in early times, I. 162.

———, *Portuguese*, almost extinct in 1651, through the conduct of the Popes, I. 224. 239. Relieved by the French Church, I. 224.

Bishop of Rome, 'Pope' taken absolutely for the, so long back as the Council of Chalcedon, II. 303. 540.

Election of the, five changes in the manner of it mentioned by Bellarmine, II. 404. Gross schisms respecting the election of the, II. 75. By whom elected, II. 159. Authority of the Emperors in the election of the, II. 403, 404. Right of nomination of the, surrendered to Charlemagne by Adrian I., I. 213; II. 232. 403. And to Otho I. by Leo VIII., I. 213; II. 403. Nomination and investiture of the, sometimes, but the confirmation of the, always, in the hands of the Emperor, Eastern or Western, V. 203. Profession of Faith of the, at his election, according to a decree of the Council of Constance, II. 427. Swears at his election to keep the Faith of the Council of Chalcedon to 'the least tittle,' *ib.* Professed in former times to obey the ecclesiastical constitutions of sovereign princes and synods, I. 249.

How is it sure, that the present, is St. Peter's successor, II. 380. Romanists far from infallibly certain, upon their own grounds, whether the, be truly Pope or no, V. 276, 277. Not de Fide, that such and such a person is the, *ib.* Very dubious whether the, be not uncanonically elected, by reason of simony, I. 180; II. 380; V. 277.

Challenges a spiritual monarchy by Divine right, I. 72. 192. 249; II. 546. Monarchy of, by Divine right, an actual cause of separation from the Church of Rome to many Protestants, II. 37. and a just cause, II. 56. 241. Such an absolute universal monarchy of, by Christ's own ordination, neither instituted by Christ, nor constituted by the Apostles, nor acknowledged by the Catholic Church, II. 306. Rejected by the Primitive Fathers, II. 510. By the Eastern, Southern, and Northern Churches, II. 61. 485. 510, 511. By the Greek Church, II. 510. 634, 635. 644. By the Church of Æthiopia, III. 557. By many of the Roman Catholics themselves, II. 376, 377. 511, 512. By three parts of the Christian world, I. 169. Not virtually included in the Creed, II. 241. No old article of the Faith, *ib.* though made so by the Church of Rome, *ib.* Contrary to the first four General Councils, *ib.* Contrary to the Councils of Chalcedon, and of Sardica; see *Council of Chalcedon, Council of Sardica.* No universal tradition for it, I. 53. 65; II. 290—292. 385—388. 600. Not challenged by the ancient Bishops of Rome themselves, II. 280. Grounded by three Popes upon counterfeit canons of the Council of Nice, II. 374. Is no lord or master over other Bishops, according to St. Bernard; see St. *Bernard.* Hath a "principium unitatis," or principality of order, as St. Peter's successor, II. 145. 227. Hath not Apostolical powers as successor of St. Peter, II. 158. Is simply Bishop of Rome, II. 159. Such a primacy of order neither granted nor denied to the, by Bramhall, III. 551. No title in the, to a spiritual monarchy, as St. Peter's successor, II. 293. 302. Pretence of, from Phocas more than St. Peter, II. 302. 537; and see *Bishop, Universal.* How the, is St. Peter's successor, II. 165. 289. 373. 378, 379. 486. Why the, is St. Peter's successor, rather than the Bishop of Antioch, I. 154. Not St. Peter's successor by Christ's own ordination, II. 373. But if at all, from the Church, II. 374—377. Neither Scripture nor tradition for it, by Bellarmine's own admission, II. 377—380. A primacy of order allowed to the, by St. Cyprian; see St. *Cyprian:* and would be allowed to the, by the Church of England, for peace' sake, if he would be contented with it, I. 80; II. 357. 495. 613. Bramhall willing to grant the, a headship of order, II. 565. 625, 626; III. 551. The question of 'the beginning of unity' submitted by the English to the judgment of the Catholic Church, II. 428—430. Some colour perhaps of Divine right for a 'beginning of unity,' II. 386, 387. Superscriptions of letters to the, no evidence of the Papal Supremacy, II. 143. How the, may be said to 'preside over all creatures,' II. 145—147. 'First Movership' of the, II. 373. 468. 483. 547. 599. 613. 'Headship' of

the, uncertain and interrupted, II. 617. A Priestly Head of the Church as distinguished by Cardinal Pole from a Regal Head of the Church, I. 115, 116; II. 218. 409. Had priority of order among the patriarchs, II. 144. 165. Patriarchal power of, arises from custom and from the canon of the Council of Nice, II. 539. It was instituted by the Church, II. 73. 199. and is of human right, II. 547. Has none by God's law, I. 152. Limits and origin of the original Patriarchate of, see *Patriarchate of Rome.* Claim of the, answered, to patriarchal authority over Britain, II. 332. Not lawful patriarch of England, I. 152. 158. 162—193. 201. 259, 260. Has quitted his Patriarchate, I. 260; II. 34. 175. 305. 333. 547. 641. And forfeited it by rebellion, I. 261. And by abuse of his power, I. 262. And see *Church British, Church of England, Cyprian Privilege.* Patriarchal and monarchical power of, distinguished and discussed, II. 305. 546—548. Monarchy of the, inconsistent with his Patriarchate, I. 133. 260. 269; II. 34. 175. 302. 333. 537—539. 546. 641. Authority acknowledged by Bramhall to be due to the, as Bishop, Metropolitan, Bishop of an Apostolical see, successor of St. Peter, II. 289. 486, 487. Extent of the authority of the, in England, I. 60; II. 411—414. Artifices of the, to extend and secure his power, I. 138. 178. 243. Why the Bishop of Chalcedon is not willing to argue of the Patriarchal power of the, II. 268. Authority of the, neither of Divine nor of Apostolical institution, II. 148. Not from God, II. 198. 307. 550. Episcopal power of the, from God, Patriarchal power, from the Church, monarchical power, from himself, II. 199. Episcopal office of the, instituted by Christ or by His Apostles, II. 72. 199. Monarchy of the, by Divine right, a tenet of the Court of Rome although not of all Romanists, II. 316, 317. and enforced by excommunication, *ib.* Many Romanists would have the, to be little more than the Duke of Venice or the General of a Religious order, II. 599. If denial of the supremacy of the, maketh Protestants, the world is full of them, II. 259. Primacy of the, not necessarily fixed to Rome, by Bellarmine's own admission, II. 143. 240. 321. 378. 610; III. 551. And Gerson's, II. 610. But might be removed thence by a General Council, *ib.* See *Rome.* Is the Church's minister, not her Lord, II. 322. Not the master of all Christians, I. 249; II. 240. All other Bishops anciently equal to the, II. 240. See *Apostles, Headship,* St. *Peter, Primacy.*

Challenges temporal power over princes, directly or at least indirectly, I. 255. in order to spiritual ends, I. 41. 255; II. 435. Doctrines of the, respecting this, destructive to all civil society, I. 41, 42; II. 318. 420. 436; III. 286, 287. 302. 349; and see *Stephen III, Zachary I.* Supported in so doing by some Roman Catholics, although not by all, II. 318. The doctrine not yet defined by the Roman Church, I. 254. It leads to schism, *ib.* The temporal supremacy of the, not among St. Paul's bands of unity, II. 319. 608. It is given by Romanists with such cautions and reservations as to signify nothing, I. 256; II. 435, 436. See *Bellarmine, Council of Lateran the Fourth, Mariana, Simancas.*

The root of all spiritual jurisdiction, according to the principal Romanist writers in Bramhall's time, II. 159. 239. 327. as St. Peter's successor, I. 253. See St. *Peter.* In what sense a "principality of Priesthood" may be said to belong to the, II. 227. No Prince of Bishops, II. 375. Takes away all lines of Apostolical succession except his own, I. 72. 252; II. 327. 626, 627. And is thereby convicted of schism, *ib.* All Episcopal jurisdiction not derived from the, I. 227; II. 160. 327. 453; V. 252. Can claim no universality of jurisdiction, and why, II. 159. See *Bishop, Universal.*

Challenges infallibility of judgment, I. 63. 72, 73. 254; II. 437. 598. Yet some Bishops of Rome have been heretical, I. 254. And some have abrogated each other's decrees, I. 255; II. 92; III. 431. Who may pass judgment on the, and how, I. 255. Romanists divided into several parties as to the body in which this infallibility resides, I. 63. 72; II. 212. 436, 437. 599; V. 276, 277. And equally divided as to the conditions under which it is exercised, I. 256; II. 437; V. 277, 278. To what height the doctrine is carried by Romanists, II. 598. It is not yet defined by the Roman Church,

I. 254. It leads to schism, *ib.* See *Church of Rome.*

Power of the, in his several capacities, to convoke Synods, II. 410. Question left undecided, whether the, has power to call an Œcumenical or an Occidental Council by spiritual authority, II. 411. That question submitted by the Church of England to the judgment of the Church Catholic, II. 428, 429. Power of the, of assembling a General Council, not taken away by the Church of England, so far as it rightly belonged to him, II. 568, 569. Determined by the Gallican Church to be not above a General Council, I. 227. and by the canons themselves of the Roman Church, I. 249; II. 248, 249. and by numberless precedents, *ib.* A General Council complete without the, II. 248—250. Confirmation of the, adds nothing to General Councils, I. 250; II. 91. Has not like power over a General Council that the King hath over a Parliament, II. 249. 330. 637, 638. Decrees of the Councils of Pisa, Constance, and Basle, that the, is subject to a General Council; see *Council of Pisa—of Constance—of Basle.* That decree of the Council of Constance a lawful decree, I. 250—252; II. 250. Councils have assumed an actual superiority over the, I. 249. Has been deposed by Councils, *ib.* That the, is above a General Council, now held to be "fere de Fide," but the contrary held in the times of those Councils, II. 327. 492. 557. Has rebelled against General Councils, I. 248. 261, 262. That the, is above a General Council, implied by the Council of Florence, II. 327. 624. expressly determined by the Fifth Lateran Council, II. 327. 557. 624. Is maintained by the Romish Church in his rebellion against General Councils, and is thereby convinced of schism, I. 248—252; II. 247—252. 326. 623—625. See *Council, General.* Appeals from the, to a General Council, see *Appeals to a General Council.* Influence of the, over the Council of Trent; see *Council of Trent.* Appeals to the, from Africa, condemned by St. Cyprian, I. 61; II. 150. 444; III. 550.

Oath of allegiance due to Kings from clerks, not to the, II. 416. See *Oath of Allegiance.* How the oath of fidelity to the, came in, II. 417—420. Of the oaths taken to the, by Bishops, I. 148. See *Oath of Bishops.* Tribute paid to the, I. 149; and see *Peter-pence.*

Of the new articles of Faith of the, that they are a proof of his being in schism, I. 167. 247; II. 37. 56. 200. 325. 622, 623. and a just cause of separation, II. 200. The Apostolical Creed changed by the, I. 72. The new Creed of the, hath ruined the Faith, I. 41. See *Pius IV.*

Lawfulness of resistance to the, in some cases, allowed by Gerson and Bellarmine, I. 106, 107. 174. To withdraw obedience from the, in certain cases, allowed by the Council of Tours, I. 173—175; II. 197. Lawful to withdraw from the Pope being heretic or apostate, according to Antonius de Rosellis, I. 175. When it is lawful to resist the, II. 147. Appeals from, allowed in many cases by the laws themselves of the Roman Court, I. 249. It is lawful to withdraw obedience from Papal authority corrupted, II. 197.

In what sense the Church of England believes the, to be an Antichrist, in what sense not, V. 256—258. See *Antichrist.*

The, and the Court of Rome, most guilty of the schism of the Roman from the English Church, I. 246—256; II. 235. 325. 620. The English impugn the, and the Court of Rome, II. 604. Held by Bramhall, from Archbishop Nilus, to be the procreant or conservant cause, or both, of the schism, I. xvii. 97. 246. 248; II. 307. 323; III. 540. The cause of all the distempers in Christendom and the only impediment to a re-union, V. 208, 209. Controversy between the, and the Church of England, respecting Papal authority in England, precisely stated, II. 410, 411. England unanimous in casting out the, I. 114. 121; II. 97. 295. 501. 503. And Ireland, I. 122; II. 97. 295. 501. The Church of England had better grounds of separation from Rome, than the personal faults of the, II. 72. She separated for the faults of the Papacy itself, II. 194. Whether the, has done more good or hurt to England, not material, II. 195. The, and the Court of Rome, did break the bonds of unity, not the king and Church of England, II. 394. Reasons to convince the, and the Court of Rome, of schism, i. That they seek a higher place in the Church than is their

due, I. 247; II. 238. 325. 620. ii. The new Creed of Pope Pius IV., I. 72. 247; II. 241. 325. 622; and see *Pius IV.* iii. Their maintaining the, in his rebellion against General Councils, I. 248—252; II. 247. 326. 623—625. iv. The taking away by the, of all lines of Apostolical succession except his own, I. 252; II. 327. 626, 627. Authority of the, justly cast out of England, i. Because it entrenched upon conscience, II. 308. 556, 557. ii. For usurpations and extortions, II. 308. 558, 559. iii. On the ground of the Cyprian privilege, I. 156—158; II. 308. 569, 570. Authority of the, not limited but denied by the English laws, II. 298. The Papacy not extirpated out of England, but restricted to its just rights, II. 551. The true question between Papists and the English Church, what are the *limits* of Papal power, II. 288. Not only acts of Papal power, but the Papal power itself, contrary to English laws, II. 127. Papal power in the exterior court denied altogether by the English Church, but not all Papal power, II. 520, 521. The claims of the, that are rejected by the English, not merely exaggerations of rights, II. 297. Undefended by any precedents, II. 147. How far England has divided itself from the, II. 561. The authors of the separation of England from Rome, Romanists in all other controversies but that of the supremacy of the, I. 120; II. 98. 295. 500. 508. Case of England against the, contrasted with that of other countries, II. 309, 310. See *Church of England, Church of Rome, Court of Rome, Reformation.*

Hath no claims over England from her original conversion by St. Augustine; see *Gregory I., Church of England.* England not within the Patriarchate of the, see *Patriarchate of Rome.* The number of Bishops ordained by the, during the first three hundred years, a proof of this, I. 161. English orders not wholly derived from the; see *Bishops English, Church of England, Orders English.* But partly from British Bishops, see *Bishops British.* Partly from the Scots; see *Church of England, Orders English.* Privileges of the British Church towards the, transmitted to the Saxon and so to the English Church; see *Church of England, Church Saxon.* The Mercians and Northumbrians had their ordination from the Scots, never from the, II. 528.

Had no ecclesiastical jurisdiction in England before A.D. 600; see *Church, British.* Hath no jurisdiction in England greater than any other foreign Bishop, by unanimous determination of the Parliaments, Synods, and Universities of England, I. 114; II. 99. 295. 501. Alleged instances to the contrary, explained, II. 131—147. Thrust himself into England by degrees, I. 131; V. 230. No Saxon, English, or British King ever made any obliging submission to the, I. 132. Power of the, in England, of courtesy, *ib.* What the King of England could do in England, which the Pope could not, I. 31. 139. 150, 151; II. 298. 433. The statement answered, that the, erected Bishoprics in England, II. 138, 139. Laws restricting the power of the, in England, before Henry VIII., I. 136. 143—147; V. 263, 264; and see *Statutes.* Tyranny of the, in England, stopped by Henry VIII., I. 148; and see *Henry VIII.* Kings of England not the vassals of the, I. 184—189. King John's resigning his kingdom to Innocent III., no argument that they are, I. 188. Addresses to the, proved vain and fruitless by frequent experience, I. 193. Addresses to the, from the King, Lords, and Commonwealth of England, in 1245, I. 194; II. 448. and in 1343, I. 195; II. 145. The inconveniences in which adherence to the, would have involved England, I. 191.

No question between the, and Henry VIII., concerning jurisdiction merely spiritual, but concerning coactive jurisdiction in the exterior courts of the Church, II. 392—399. 438. 453. Deprived of exterior jurisdiction only in England, not of the power of the keys, nor of jurisdiction properly spiritual, II. 392, 393. 457—460. 502. 520, 521. 571. See *Kings of England.* Branches of Papal power cast out of England by Henry VIII., viz. power dispensative, judiciary, legislative, patronage, tenths and first fruits, fees of the Roman Court, II. 400—402. Has no jurisdiction in England, I. 114; II. 99. 295. 501.

Can receive no appeals from England, I. 141. 150. 213; II. 298. 438—440. 514; V. 264. Usurped the right,

I. 263. Princes the last judges of the injuries done to their subjects by the, II. 198. See *Anselm, Appeals, Kings of England, Wilfrid.*

Has no judiciary power in England, II. 400. 436—444.

Has no dispensative power in England, II. 400. Of the, dispensing with English laws in the exterior court, II. 445, 446. Foul doctrine of various Canonists respecting the dispensative power of the, from oaths, vows, &c., II. 445. See *Dispensations.*

Has no legislative power in England, II. 401. 427—434. 514. The first law or canon of the, obtruded upon the English Church, was that against taking investitures of Bishoprics from a lay hand, more than 1100 years after Christ, II. 429. Legislative power of the, in England, suppressed before it was well formed, II. 435. Canons of the, of no more force in England than as they were received; see *Bulls Papal, Canons Papal.*

Legations from the, to England, as rare as appeals to him, I. 136. The legates of the, have no power to enter the realm without the king's leave; see *Legates.*

Has not power by his legates to convoke synods of English subjects in England without the king's leave, I. 205; II. 411. Never did convocate any synod in England for the first 1100 years, nor preside in any by his legates, nor confirm any by his authority, II. 411—414. The first synod convoked by a legate of the, in England, was in 1125, and that with the king's leave, II. 412. See *Kings of England.*

Of the claim of the, to the sovereign patronage of the English Church, I. 146. 150; II. 298. 401. 403—409; V. 202—204. 263, 264. Never laid claim to the patronage of the English Church prior to the reign of Henry I., I. 146. Robbed the kings of England of their investitures, see *Investiture, Patronage.*

Tenths and first-fruits usurped by the, II. 422—425. Gradual progress of the usurpation of them by the, *ib.* See *Tenths.*

Extortions and usurpations of the, in England; see *Bishops English, Clergy English, Court of Rome.* In Spain, I. 231—235; and see *Castile, Estates of.* In Germany; see *Grievances, Hundred.*

The ill will of the, one cause of the necessity of making penal laws in England against the Roman Catholics, II. 112. The foreign seminaries founded by the, another cause, II. 113. See *Laws, Penal.*

Jurisdiction of the, in effect, rejected by the Emperors and other princes of the Roman communion as much as by Henry VIII., I. 200—245; II. 223, 224. 315, 316. 605.

Convented, imprisoned, and deposed, by Emperors, I. 172. Power of the, appealed against by the German Emperors, I. 202—205. Bulls of the, neglected by the Emperors, I. 214. And his legates excluded, *ib.* Coronation oath of the Emperors sworn before the, at Rome, I. 149. See *Emperors.*

Kings of France have convented the, before them, I. 220. Cannot command or ordain any thing concerning any *temporal* affairs within the dominion of the king of France, I. 225; II. 512. Has not absolute spiritual authority there, I. 225. Cannot free the French clergy from obedience to their sovereign, *ib.* Cannot send a legate into France, without the king's approbation, I. 226. Cannot convent synods in France without the king's sanction, II. 426; III. 244. Hath no legislative power in France, I. 227; II. 434, 435. And no judiciary power, I. 226; II. 443. And no dispensative power from French laws in the exterior court, II. 448, 449. See *Kings of France.* Remonstrance of the Council of Tours against the, I. 173. 192; II. 197.

Kings of Spain have appealed against the power of the, I. 228. And assert the liberties of their own Churches against the, I. 229. 236; II. 220. And in Sicily as well as in Spain, I. 138. 229; II. 145. 217. 512. Complaints of the Estates of Castile against the, I. 196. 231. 246. 263. 278.

The King of Portugal asserts his liberty against the, I. 237. Conduct of the, to the Portuguese Church during the Portuguese war of independence, 1640—1665, I. 224; V. 208.

Hath no judiciary power in the United Provinces, II. 443, 444. Reception of Urban VIII.'s Bull against Jansenius in Brabant and Flanders, I. 236. See *Brabant.*

No obedience acknowledged to the, by the Eastern Churches, I.

200; II. 485. 510, 511. The, excommunicates the Eastern Churches, II. 242, 243. 570. The words with which the Greeks departed from the, I. 200; II. 334, 335. 643—645; V. 272. Agreement of the Greek Church with the English, in denying the sovereignty, and the legislative, judiciary, and dispensative power, claimed by the, II. 634, 635. 644. See *Churches Eastern, Churches Greek.*

Neither Asia nor Africa subject to the, I. 132. Contention between the, and the African Bishops, I. 99; II. 374.

Gradual undiscernible growth of the usurpations of the, II. 491, 492. Expression of Frederic Barbarossa respecting this, I. 202; II. 491. 492. Usurpations of the, palpable, not probable only, II. 365. Some rights of all sorts, not 'all right,' usurped by the, II. 561. No manner of institution for Papal encroachments as now maintained, II. 549. Case of monarchy and Episcopacy not parallel with that of the, II. 549, 550. The Church not charged with erecting the Papacy as it now is, but the Pope and his party, II. 482. Conduct of many of the, sufficient warrant for their deposition, II. 305.

Bishops, Saxon; see *Ælfric, Asser, Augustin* of Canterbury, *Chad, Deneulfus, Dunstan, Edelwald, Justus, Laurentius, Melitus, Oswald, Theodore, Wilfrid, Wulstan.* Ordained in the first instance by St. Augustin alone, see St. *Augustin* of Canterbury. Independence of the, upon the see of Rome; see *Church Saxon, Theodore, Wilfrid.* Not all derived their orders from St. Augustin; see *Church Saxon, Mercians, Northumbrians.*

———, *Scotch;* see *Aidan, Coleman, Dagamus, Finanus; Adamson, Leslie, Maxwell, Spottiswood.* Independence of the, upon the Saxon Bishops, upon the Archbishops of York, and how far abolished by the Scotch disciplinarians; see *Bishops, Church of Scotland, Superintendents.*

———, *Spanish,* supported the Divine right of Bishops against the Pope, at the Council of Trent, I. 189. 249; III. 530. Nomination and investiture of the, belonged to the Kings of Spain, V. 203.

———, *Welsh;* see *Bishops British, Church Britannic, Church of Wales.*

———' *Book,* see *Institution of a Christian Man.*

———, *Consecration of Protestant, Vindicated,* by Bp. Bramhall; see *Consecration of Protestant Bishops Vindicated.*

Bishoprics, often known by two names, II. 304. 540, 541.

Bishoprics, English, how far any were erected by the Pope in the reign of Edward the Elder, II. 138—140. How many vacant at the accession of Queen Elizabeth; see *Bishops, English.* Three, held at the time of his death by William Rufus, V. 232. a. The right to give in England, is the King's; see *Kings of England.* Dispute respecting the investitures of, see *Investiture.* Revenues of, in a vacancy, belonged not to the Pope but to the King, I. 139; II. 401. Royal letters patent necessary for conferring the benefice, but the office conferred by ordination of Bishops, V. 232. See *Bishops, Bishops English.* The legal forms for obtaining in England, how many they are and how closely connected, III. 64, 65. 156, 157. All of them necessary to give possession of, III. 65, 66. List of legal documents usually accompanying admission into, III. 231. See *Commission, Confirmation, Congè d'Eslire, Consecration, Election, Homage, Inthronization, Restitution of Temporalties.*

Bishoprics, Irish, dilapidated state of the, in 1633; see *Church of Ireland.*

Blackwell, George, made Archpriest of England by Pope Clement VIII, I. 184. See *Allen, William.*

Blake, David, a Scottish Presbyterian Minister in 1596, insolent treason of, III. 257—259.

Bleatings of Portugal; see *Balatus Ovium.*

Blesensis, Petrus; see *Petrus Blesensis.*

Blind man, the case of the, mentioned in St. John's Gospel, justified from Hobbes's perverse inferences, IV. 79.

Blondel, a French Reformed divine, translation and edition by, of Aubertin's work against Transubstantiation, I. 8. c. Admissions of, in favour of Episcopacy, III. 490. c. 535. Conclusion of the Apology for St. Jerome by, omitted in publishing the book, as favouring Episcopacy, III. 535. Mistaken argument of, from Bede, respecting ordination by Presbyters, I. 273—275.

Bluett, a Roman Catholic Priest, an alleged witness, at second hand, to the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f. 107. Imprisoned in Wisbeach Castle, III. 107.

Body, of the theory of necessity grounded upon the complexion and temperature of the, IV. 142. Spirits moved as well as bodies, IV. 407. Both bodies and spirits move themselves, IV. 408. Hobbes's contradictory assertions about, IV. 588.

Boethius, Hector; see *Hector Boethius.*

Bohemia, Kings of; see *Kings of Bohemia.*

———, *Queen of;* see *Elizabeth*, daughter of King James I.

Bohemi, Fratres, the first Reformers after the Waldenses, III. 531. Had the order of Bishops, although not the name, II. 62; III. 531. Not "unchurched" by the Episcopal divines of England, III. 517.

Boleyn, Anne, how far personally concerned with bringing about the divorce between Henry VIII. and Queen Katharine, II. 187. Calumnies of Sanders against, see *Sanders.*

Bolingbroke, see *Henry IV.* of England.

Bologna, University of; see *University of Bologna.*

Bolton, Sir Richard, Lord Chancellor of Ireland, impeached with Bramhall and others, in 1640, I. viii. h. lxxxviii.

Bonaventure, Cardinal; see *Buonaventura.*

Boniface I, Pope 419—422, succession to the Papacy between Eulalius and, determined by the Emperor Honorius, I. 173. Grounded a claim of supremacy upon counterfeit canons of the Council of Nice, II. 374. Resisted by the African Bishops, I. 99. l; II. 374.

——— *III*, Pope in 607, the first who assumed the title of Universal Bishop, I. 131. 158. 269. Received it from the Emperor Phocas, I. 158. 269; II. 302. 305. 537. See *Bishop, Universal.*

——— *VIII*, Pope 1295—1303, appeal from, by Philip IV. of France, to a General Council, I. 220. By the School of Sorbonne to the same, *ib.* Decretals of, II. 429. Address of the kingdom of England to, see *Edward I.* of England. Bull of, exempting the University of Oxford from the jurisdiction of the Archbishop of Canterbury, declared void by two succeeding kings, I. 168; II. 448. See *University of Oxford.*

——— *IX*, Pope 1389—1404, first made both tenths and first-fruits a certain annual revenue to the See of Rome, II. 424. Took away from the Romans the free choice of their Magistrates, *ib.* Claimed a concurrent power in the election of the Emperors of Germany; see *Wenceslaus.*

Boniface, appointed Archbishop of Mentz by Charlemagne, II. 414.

Bonner, Edmund, D.D., Bishop of London 1539—1559, first nominated and confirmed, but not consecrated, to the See of Hereford, III. Pref. 141. l. Close parallel between the several steps in the admission of, to his Bishoprics, and that of Bishop Barlow, *ib.*

Aided in giving the supremacy to Henry VIII., I. 121; II. 218; III. 114. Name of, as Archdeacon of Leicester, occurs among the signatures to the Bishops' Book, I. 122. c. Appealed from the Pope to a General Council, in the name of Henry VIII., respecting his divorce from Queen Katharine, II. 188. Boldness of, before Pope Clement VII., respecting the Regal supremacy, II. 128. 503; III. 54. Preface of, to Bp. Gardiner's book, 'De Verâ Obedientiâ,' I. 121; III. 114. Commission taken out by, from Henry VIII. in 1539, as deriving his spiritual jurisdiction from the King, V. 229. Character given of, by Sanders, as regards his compliance with the King, II. 505; III. 59, 60.

Said to have aided Gardiner in suppressing a letter from Calvin to Edward VI., making overtures to that King to become Defender of the Protestant Faith, and desiring to have Bishops, III. 483. a.

Conduct of, in Queen Mary's reign, with respect to the re-ordination of English clergy, III. 61. f. 70. s. 114. g. Recognition by, of Scory's Episcopacy, III. Pref. 70. s. 114. g.

Suit of, against Bishop Horne as being no Bishop, on what grounded, II. 274; III. 79. 113; V. 242—244. It is no argument against the validity of English orders, *ib.* Plea of, that Horne was no legal Bishop, stated in detail and discussed, III. 79. p. That plea, negatively a disproof of the Nag's Head fable, *ib.* Letter of, to Queen Elizabeth, containing similar evidence against that fable, III. 102. b. Is himself introduced, but very absurdly, as playing a part in that fable, III. 54. 102, 103.

When deprived, III. 232. Popular indignation against, III. 54. 114. Time of the death of, III. 232.

Book of Sports, account and defence of the, III. 577, 578.

Bossuet, Jacques Bénigne, Bishop of Meaux, acknowledged the validity of English Orders, in 1690, III. 115. g.

Bound, Nicholas, D.D., book of, upon the Sabbath, V. 16. n. 20. s. 72. l.

Bourges, University of; see *University of Bourges.*

Bourne, Gilbert, Bishop of Bath and Wells 1554—1559, named in the first commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, but did not act, III. 72. When deprived, III. 73. c. 232. Time of the death of, III. 232.

Bourshier, John, nominated by Queen Mary in 1558, but not consecrated, to the See of Gloucester, III. 232.

Boven or *Thevnen, Suffragan Bishop of*; see *King, Robert.*

Bow Church, confirmations of Bishops elect, for the Province of Canterbury, ordinarily celebrated at, III. 43. 54. 64. 83. 101. The Pall received at, by Cardinal Pole, for the Archbishopric of Canterbury, III. 149. Is not in the diocese of London, but a peculiar in the See of Canterbury, III. 54, 55.

Bowing, at the name of Jesus; see *Jesus.* To the Altar, see *Altar.*

Bowl, Hobbes's 'will,' no more than the bias of a, IV. 271.

Boyle, Richard, Earl of Cork, held the temporalties of the See of Lismore, in 1633, at a rent of 40s. by the year, I. lxxxi. Offensive tomb erected by, in the cathedral of St. Patrick in Dublin, I. lxxix, lxxx. Bramhall's successful efforts to have it removed, *ib.*

——, *Roger, Lord Broghill*, created Earl of Orrery, one of the Lords Justices of Ireland, December, 1660, V. 136, e. Was one of the supervisors of Archbishop Bramhall's will, I. cxii.

Brabant, Placaert of the Council of, May 12, 1653, prohibiting the citation of subjects out of the land by the Pope, or the execution of Papal censures and excommunications, without the king's leave, I. 236, 237; II. 443, 444. 512. See *Jansenius, United Provinces.*

Brabourne, Theophilus, who he was, V. 9. b. Books of, advocating the perpetual obligation of the Sabbath Day, *ib.* Summoned before Abp. Laud, in 1634, and compelled to conform, *ib.*

Bracara, Bishop of; see *Martin.*

Brachet, Théophile; see *Milletière.*

Bracton, doctrine of, respecting kingly power, III. 326. 329. 363, 364. the judicial power of the kings of England, III. 358. the prerogatives of the kings of England, III. 360. Form of the coronation oath of the kings of England, set forth by, III. 373, 374.

Braganza, John, Duke of; see *John IV.* King of Portugal.

Bramhall, John, D.D., Bishop of Derry 1634—1660, Archbishop of Armagh 1660—1663. Life of, I. iii.—xv. lvii—lxxvi; and see *Harris, Loftus, Morant, Taylor Jeremy, Vesey, Ware.* Appendix to the Life of, I. xvi—xxxviii.

Born at Pontefract in Yorkshire, I. iii. Not later than 1593, I. iii. a. cxiv. n. Descent of, I. xvi. Sent to Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge, under Mr. Hulet, I. iii. lvii. and during the Headship of Dr. Samuel Ward, III. 568. Took holy orders in 1616 or 1617, I. iv. Was ordained Priest by Tobias Matthews Archbishop of York, III. 132. Presented first to Kilburne School, near Kirklington in Yorkshire, I. cxiii. n. and, in 1617, to the Rectory of St. Martins, York, on the presentation of Thomas Tankerder, I. iv. lviii. (and Drake, Eboracum, p. 272.) Resigned it in 1618 (Drake, *ib.*). Then to the living of Elvington or Eterington in Yorkshire, by Sir C. Wandesford, I. iv. Married in 1618 a clergyman's widow of the name of Halley, I. iv. cxiv. n. Preached before a Synod of the Province of York (in 1620), I. xvii; III. 540. Thesis of, on that occasion, *ib.* Held in 1623 two public disputations with two Roman Catholic Priests, at North Allerton, I. iv. xvi. lviii. cxiv. n; III. 540. Was Chaplain to Archbishop Matthews, I. lviii. Took his degree of D.D. in 1630, I. v. xvii. Thesis of, on that occasion, out of Nilus, that the Papacy was the cause of the schisms in the Christian world, I. xvii. 97. 246. 248; II. 307. 323; III. 540. Appointed High Commissioner, I. v. Made Prebendary of York, and of Ripon, in 1633, I. iv. xvii. lviii; V. Pref. p.

Invited to Ireland by Lord Viscount Wentworth, I. v, vi. lviii, lix. And made his Chaplain, I. lviii. Resigned his Church preferment in England, I. vi. Made Archdeacon of

Meath, I. vi. cxiii. n. and Bishop of Londonderry, I. vi. lix. cxiii. n. Consecrated by Archbishop Ussher, III. 132. Received his Episcopal orders consequently (not through Rome but) through the ancient Scotch or Irish Bishops, II. 527. 530, 531. Treatment of the Irish Romanists by, during the Deputyship of Lord Strafford, II. 124, 125. Efforts of, in cooperation with Laud and Strafford, for the restoration of the Irish Church, I. v. q. vi. lix. lxxix—lxxxii. lxxxix, xc. Great services of, to the Irish Church, in the regaining to her of her temporalties, I. vi, vii. lix—lxii; II. 125. Cathedral of Derry rebuilt by, I. cxiii. n. Prevailed on the Church of Ireland in Convocation in 1634 to embrace the Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England, I. vii. xix, xx. xxxvi. lxii; V. 80—83. Failure of, in his attempt to establish the English canons likewise, I. vii. Account given by, of the Irish Convocation of 1634, V. 80—83. His own share in it, I. xxxvi; V. 82. Efforts of, against the Calvinistic doctrines then prevalent in the Irish Church, I. vi. xviii, xix. xxxvi. lxii. Visited England in 1637, I. viii. Informations against, in the Star Chamber, I. viii. xx. Charged with High Treason, and arrested, in 1640—41, I. viii. lxiv. lxxxviii. Letter of, upon the occasion, to Abp. Ussher, I. xxi. lxxxix. Ussher's reply, *ib.* His friendship for Bramhall, *ib.* Proceedings against, stopped by the King, I. ix. lxv. Obliged to flee into England, I. x. lxvi.

Joined the Marquis of Newcastle at York, about the middle of 1642, I. x. lxvii; III. Pref. Remained with him until the battle of Marston Moor, July 2, 1644, *ib.* Preached a funeral sermon in York Cathedral for Mr. Slingsby in January 164$\frac{2}{3}$, III. Pref. j. Penned a Declaration for the Marquis of Newcastle in answer to Fairfax, in February 164$\frac{2}{3}$, *ib.* Preached before the Marquis at York, January 164$\frac{3}{4}$, I. x. xxxiii; V. 87—110. Published his first work about this time, entitled Serpent Salve, in behalf of the royal cause, I. x. xxxi; III. Pref. After the battle of Marston Moor, fled from England to Brussels with the Marquis of Newcastle, I. x. Vehemence of the Parliament against, I. xxi, xxii. Styled by Cromwell the Irish Canterbury, I. xxii.

Landed at Hamburgh in 1644, I. x. xxi. Lived at Brussels from 1644 to 1648, with Sir Henry de Vic, ambassador to the States from Charles I., I. x; V. 167. 171. Aided by Lord Scudamore, I. x. t. Supported many Royalists during his exile, I. xi.

Returned to Ireland in 1648, I. x. xxii. lxvii; III. 540. Had several narrow escapes while there, from his enemies, *ib.* Anger of the Irish Romanists against, I. xxii; III. 540. Fled abroad again in the same year, I. x. xxii.

Went into Spain, I. xi. xxii. xxxvi. xciii. Danger of, while there, from the Inquisition, *ib.* At Paris in 1651, I. xi. u. xxvi, xxvii. 23. 78; V. 130. But mostly in Holland, from thence to 1660, I. xi. u. Labours of, at this time, against the Romanists, III. 540, 541. Answered La Milletière at this time; see *Bramhall Works of, Milletière.* Acted as prizemaster at Flushing for Charles II. during the war between the Dutch and English in 1653, I. v. l. xi. u. Controversy of, with Hobbes, at this time; see *Bramhall Works of, Hobbes.* Preaching of, at Bruges, in 1656, against Cromwell, III. 23, f. Nearly all the works of, written during this his second exile, I. xi. xxv. Negotiation of Dr. John Barwick with, respecting the preservation of the succession of English Bishops during the Rebellion; see Life of Dean Barwick as quoted I. xi. u.

Returned to England upon the restoration of Charles II., I. xi. a; V. Pref. p. And to Ireland, *ib.* At what time, V. Pref. p. Appointed Archbishop of Armagh, I. xx. xxiii. cxiv. n. Letter to, from the Queen of Bohemia, I. xxiii. And from Lord Charlemont, *ib.* Advice of, respecting the filling of the vacant English sees, I. cxvi. o. Consecrated two Irish Archbishops and ten Bishops, Jan. 27, 166$\frac{0}{1}$, I. xii. lxxi. Programme of the Procession and Service on that occasion drawn up by, V. Pref. p. Treatment by, at this time, of Ministers who had only Presbyterian orders, I. xxiv. xxxvii, xxxviii. Principles of, respecting the management of parties in the Church, at the Restoration, I. xiv. xxiv. xxxvii, xxxviii; V. 133. Visitation by, of his diocese, I. xii. Chosen Speaker of the House of Lords, I. xii. xxiv. Speeches of, in that ca-

pacity; see *Bramhall, Works of.* Acts of Convocation of the Irish Church in 1661, in recognition of the services of, I. cxiii—cxvi. Proposed measures of, respecting the temporalties of the Irish Church, rejected by the Parliament, I. xiii. cii, ciii. cv, cvi. Death of, June 25. 1663, of palsy, I. xiii. xxv. lxxiii.

Left a son and three daughters, I. xiii. Benefactions and character of, I. xiv. cviii, cix. Last will and testament of, I. cvii—cxii. Sermon preached at the funeral of, by Bishop Jeremy Taylor, I. xli—lxxvi. Funeral oration for, by Dudley Loftus, I. iii. cxiv. n. Character of, by Bp. Taylor, I. lxxiv, lxxv. Remarks on the conduct of, by Towers and Kippis, I. xxxvi—xxxviii. *Ὑπομνημόνευμα* to, I. cxviii.

Desire of, for truth and unity, II. 21. Submission of, to the judgment of the Catholic Church, to a free General Council, and to an English Synod respectively, in their several degrees of authority, II. 22. Submits his doctrine respecting unbaptized infants to the Church of England in the first place, and in a higher degree to the Catholic Church, V. 180. Ready to adhere to the Catholic Church in all things, fundamental or non-fundamental, credenda or agenda, II. 86. 212. Authority attributed by, to Universal Consent, II. 69. Honour paid by, to the Church of England, I. xiv; II. 21; V. Pref. in fin. 123. 186. Opinion of, respecting the Scotch Book of Common Prayer, I. lxxxvi. Groundless accusation brought against, of favouring Popery, by Baxter, I. xxxi; III. Pref. 503. 538—543. by Louis du Moulin, III. 503. b. by Robert Baillie, III. Pref. k. Of all Episcopal divines, the most unlikely to re-introduce Popery, III. 538—541. Acknowledged by Baxter to be no Papist, III. 543. Held the Church of Rome to be a true Church metaphysically, not morally; see *Church of Rome.* Terms of union proposed by, between the Churches of Rome and England, I. 80, 81. 278, 279; II. 277—280. 361; III. 545, 546; and see *Reconciliation.* Apostrophe of, to the English Romanists, II. 351—353. 460—462. Opinion of, respecting Monasteries, I. 118—120. respecting the law of Mortmain, see *Statute of Mortmain.* Dissented from Grotius in some points, III. 512. Refrained from passing censure upon foreign (Reformed) Churches, II. 42. Foreign (Reformed) Churches how far condemned by, for lack of Bishops, II. 25, 26. 69, 70; III. 280. 475, 476. 517, 518. Irish Presbyterian orders, in 1660, how far regarded by, I. xxiv. xxxvi—xxxviii. Labours of, against Calvinism, I. vi. xviii, xix. xxxvi. lxii.

See *Articles Irish, Baxter, Browne Sir Richard, Cavendish William, Church of Ireland, Graham Sir James, Mervyn, Radcliffe, Ussher, Vic Sir Henry de, Wandesford, Wentworth Thomas.*

Bramhall, Letters of, I. lxxix—cxvii. When Mr. Bramhall, to Christopher Wandesford Esq., June 18, 1628, V. at the end of Preface. When Archdeacon of Meath, to Archbishop Laud on the state of the Irish Church, I. vi. lxxix—lxxxii. When Bishop of Derry, to Lord Deputy Wentworth, I. lxxxiii—lxxxv. To John Spottiswood, Archbishop of St. Andrews, I. lxxxvi. To Dr. Coote, Dean of Down, I. lxxxvii. To Mrs. Bramhall, I. lxxxviii. ci. To the Lord Primate Ussher, I. lxxxix. xcv. To Sir Richard Browne, Ambassador of King Charles II. at Paris, I. cxvi. To King Charles II., I. xci. To his son, I. xcii. xciv. To Dr. Bernard on the observation of the Lord's Day, I. xcviii; and see *Sabbath and Lord's Day.* When Lord Primate, to Sir Edward Nicholas, I. civ. To King Charles II. about first-fruits, I. cv.

————, *Works of,* mostly written during his second exile, 1648—1660, I. xi. xxv. General table of, prefixed to vol. I. Account of, I. xxv—xxxv. Account of, by Jeremy Taylor, I. lxvii—lxx. Published together by Bp. Vesey, Dublin 1674—1677, in folio, I. xxv.

Part I. Discourses against the Romanists, viz.—Discourse i. Answer to La Milletière, see *Answer to La Milletière.* Discourse ii. Just Vindication of the Church of England from the Unjust Aspersion of Criminal Schism; see *Just Vindication* of the Church of England. Discourse iii. Replication to the Bishop of Chalcedon; see *Chalcedon Bishop of, Replication,* &c. Appendix to the Replication, in answer to S. W.; see *Appendix.* Discourse iv. Schism Guarded and Beaten back upon the Right Owners; see *Schism Guarded,*

Sergeant. Discourse v. Consecration and Succession of Protestant Bishops Justified; see *Barlow William, Consecration and Succession* &c., *Nag's Head Fable, Parker Matthew, Talbot.*

Part ii. Discourses against the English Sectaries, viz.—Discourse i. A Fair Warning to take heed of the Scottish Discipline, &c.; see *Baillie, Fair Warning, Spottiswood, Watson Richard.* Discourse ii. The Serpent Salve; or, A Remedy for the biting of an Asp; see *Parker Henry, Serpent-Salve.* Discourse iii. Vindication of (Bishop Bramhall) Himself, and the Episcopal Clergy, from the Presbyterian charge of Popery as managed by Mr. Baxter; see *Baxter, Grotius, Marvel, Parker Samuel, Vindication* &c.

Part iii. Discourses against Mr. Hobbes; see *Cavendish William, Hobbes, Liberty, Necessity.* Viz.—Discourse i. A Defence of True Liberty from Antecedent and Extrinsecal Necessity; see *Defence of True Liberty.* Discourse ii. Castigations of Mr. Hobbes his last Animadversions, in the case concerning Liberty and Universal Necessity; see *Castigations of Mr. Hobbes.* Discourse iii. The Catching of Leviathan or the Great Whale; see *Catching of Leviathan.*

Part iv. Discourses upon Miscellaneous Subjects; viz.—Discourse i. Controversies about the Sabbath and Lord's Day, with their respective obligations, stated, discussed, and determined; see *Sabbath and Lord's Day, Controversies about the.* Discourse ii. A Sermon preached in York Minster, before the Marquis of Newcastle, being ready to meet the Scotch Army, Jan. 28. 164¾; see *Sermon.* Discourse iii. A Sermon preached at Dublin, April 23, 1661, being the day appointed for the Coronation of Charles II.; see *Sermon.* Speech of, as Speaker of the Irish House of Lords, to the Speaker of the Irish House of Commons upon his appointment; see *Mervyn, Speech.* Second Speech of, to the same; see *Mervyn, Speech.* Discourse iv. A Sermon preached before the Irish House of Commons, at their solemn receiving of the Blessed Sacrament, entitled 'The Right Way to Safety after Shipwreck;' see *Repentance, Sermon, Sin.* Discourses v. and vi.—Occasional discourses written while in exile.—Discourse v. A Short Discourse to Sir Henry de Vic, of Persons dying without Baptism; see *Baptism, Of Persons dying without.* Discourse vi. Of Protestants' Ordination, an Answer to Two Papers brought by Capt. Steward; see *Ordination Of Protestants', Robinson.* Letter to Miss Cheubien, on Purgatory and Praying to the Saints; see *Cheubien.* Discourse vii. Protestants' Ordination Defended against the Objections of S. N.; see *Norris, Ordination Protestants' Defended.*

Programme of service at the Consecration of the Irish Bishops in 166⅘, drawn up by, V. Pref. p. Funeral Sermons preached by, III. Pref. j; V. Pref. See *Slingsby, Wandesford.* Many Sermons of, prepared by himself for publication, but accidentally destroyed, I. xxxiv; V. Pref. Criticism of Dean Comber upon the preaching of, V. Pref. Objections drawn up by, against Hobbes's book De Cive, I. xxxv; IV. 20. 252. 506. Discourse of, respecting the prescience and decrees of God in things contingent, IV. 153. 155. Defence by, of the Answer to La Milletière, III. 546. Short discourse of, on Transubstantiation, written between 1644 and 1648, I. xxxiv. Purposed treatise of, towards producing an understanding between Romanists and Protestants, by demonstrating the true nature and extent of the controversies between them, III. 539; IV. 514. Purposed parallel of, between the Liturgy of the Church of England and the Public Forms of Protestant Churches, I. xi. xxxvi; III. 280. History of Hull said to have been written by, but probably by a mistake, I. xxxiv. An Answer to Milton's Defensio Populi Anglicani erroneously attributed to, I. xxxv. And a book by Dr. Nalson against the Presbyterians, called the Countermine, *ib.* And three others against the Scotch Presbyterians, viz. the Ungirding of the Scottish Armour (by John Corbet), Lysimachus Nicanor (also by John Corbet), and the Burthen of Issachar (by Bishop Maxwell), I. xxxv; III. 241. a. See *Corbet, Maxwell, Milton, Nalson, Rowland.*

Bramhall, Anne, the Archbishop's youngest daughter, I. xiii. cxi.

————, *Ellen* or *Eleanor,* the Archbishop's wife, I. iv. cx. Two Letters

to, from Archbishop Bramhall, I. lxxxviii. ci. See *Halley, Ellen.*

Bramhall, Isabella, the Archbishop's eldest daughter, married to Sir James Graham, I. xiii. lxxxviii. cxi.

———, *Jane,* the Archbishop's second daughter, I. xiii. cxi.

———, *Peter,* the Archbishop's Father, I. cxiv. n.

———, *Sir Thomas,* the Archbishop's son, I. xiii. xcii. xciv. cii. cx. cxi.

———, *William,* Rector of Goldsborough, Yorkshire, 1665; a Sermon of, erroneously attributed to the Archbishop, V. Pref. b.

———, a sister of the Archbishop (married afterwards to Samuel Pulleyne Archbishop of Tuam—Whitaker, Duc. Leod., p. 209), I. lxxxviii, lxxxix.

Bread, leavened, used in the celebration of the Eucharist by some Churches in the primitive times, unleavened by others, yet without censures or animosities, I. 9.

Bread, Breaking of, that it means the celebration of the Lord's Supper in Luke xxiv, 30—35, of the disciples at Emmaus, V. 56, 57. And in Acts xx. 7. and elsewhere, V. 49, 50. 218.

Bremen, Bishopric of; see *Wilihade.*

Brentius, opinion of, about dispensing with the Cup in the Sacrament, II. 202.

Brerewood, Edward, explanation given by, of the imputation of heresy cast upon the Eutychians, II. 629, 630. Doctrine of, concerning the Sabbath, V. 36, h.

Brett, Thomas, LL.D., work of, upon English Orders, III. 40. f.

Breviary, Roman, extracts from the, respecting the Invocation of Saints, I. 46. b.

———, *Paris,* similar extracts from the, I. 46. b.

Bridges, John, D.D., Bishop of Oxford 1603—1618, affirmed the derivation of English from Roman Orders, in 1587, III. 135. t.

Bridgwater, John, or *Aquapontanus,* account given by, of the Roman Catholics who suffered death in England during Queen Elizabeth's reign, I. 124. i. Account by, of Creagh, Roman Catholic Archbishop of Armagh, III. 47. e.

Briefs, see *Bulls.*

Bristol, Bishop of; see *Holyman.*

Bristow, Richard, D.D., a Roman Catholic, determination of, against the validity of English Orders, without giving any reason, III. 124. Knew nothing of the Nag's Head fable, III. 46. 125. Addition made to the words of, by Worthington, in 1608, unfairly quoted as written by Bristow himself in 1567, III. 125, h.

Britain, said to have been Christianized by Joseph of Arimathæa; see *Church, British.* But a small portion of, Christianized by St. Augustin, I. 266—268; II. 133; and see St. *Augustin* of Canterbury, *Gregory I.* Pope. The Scots a part of, II. 527. See *Church of England, Church Saxon, Scots.* Answer to the Pope's claim of Patriarchal authority over; see *Bishop of Rome, Church British, Gregory I.* Pope, *Patriarchate of Rome.*

Britannic } *Churches;* see *Church, Bri-*
British } *tish* or *Britannic.*

——— *Islands,* see *Britain.*

British, number of, who remained among their Saxon conquerors, II. 300. 528, 529.

Brixia, Council of; see *Council of Brixia.*

Broghill, Lord; see *Boyle, Roger.*

Brook, Sir Robert, Novel Cases of, no authority against the legality of English Orders, III. 56. 58; V. 242, 243.

Brooke, Robert Greville, Lord; see *Greville, Robert, Lord Brooke.*

Brooks, James, D.D., Bishop of Gloucester 1554—1558, died shortly before the death of Queen Mary, see Table of Deprivations, III. 232. Conduct of, at Bp. Ridley's degradation, III. 115. g. It was no argument against English Orders, V. 242, 243.

Brompton, Johannes; see *Johannes Brompton.*

Browne, Sir Richard, Ambassador for King Charles II. at Paris, I. cxvi. Letter to, from Bramhall, *ib.* Church at the house of, in Paris, during the Rebellion, III. 513. 584. Was Evelyn's father-in-law, I. cxvi.

Browne, Rev. Thomas, book of, against the Nag's Head fable, III. 36. d. 40. f. 127. r. Transcript of the Record of Abp. Parker's Consecration preserved in the library of C.C.C., Cambridge, published by, with certificates, III. 210—215.

Brownists, The, have nothing to do with the Church of England, I. 36. Are the Church of Rome's best friends, see *Church of Rome.*

Bruce, Robert, a Presbyterian Minister, insolent speech of, to King James I. III. 279.

Bruce, a Roman Catholic Priest, com-

motion raised by, in Scotland, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, II. 114.

Brudenell, Thomas (Brudenell), Lord, afterwards Earl of Cardigan, disclaimed all knowledge of the speech respecting the Nag's Head fable, falsely attributed to Bishop Morton, III. 9.

Bruges, residence of Charles II. at, during his exile, I. xi. u; III. 23. f. Bramhall's preaching at, in 1656, III. 23. f.

Brussels, Bramhall's ordinary place of residence from 1644 to 1648, IV. 24. b. Charles II. resided at, from 1658, III. 23. f.

Brute Beasts, see *Beasts*.

Brutus, ancient British history so called; see *Caxton's Chronicle*.

——— *Stephanus Junius*; see *Languet*.

Bucer, Martin, temporary residence of Calvin with, at Strasburg, I. 38; III. 531. h. Body of, taken up and burned by order of Cardinal Pole, I. 48; III. 472. Episcopacy maintained by, III. 472. Maintained a necessity of sinning only in respect of our original corruption, IV. 398.

Buchanan, George, History of Scotland by, I. 74. z; V. 121. x. Seditious doctrine of, respecting the obedience of subjects, and the right of kings, III. 301. 303. 310. 316. 349.

Bulgaria; see *Ignatius* Patriarch of Constantinople, and *John VIII.* Pope.

Bulkely, Rev. Dr., Archdeacon of Dublin, dispute between, and Archbishop Bramhall, I. cix, cx.

Bull, Golden; see *Bulla Aurea*.

Bulls, Papal, cannot be executed in England, and never could, without the King's leave, I. 31. 147. 150. 214; II. 298. 441, 442. 514. Cannot be published in France without the approval of the Parliament, I. 226; II. 435. 443. and the permission of the King, I. 227; II. 512. May not be published in France if contrary to the liberties of the French Church, I. 227; II. 435. 443. Neglected and rejected by the Emperors and nation of Germany, I. 214, 215. Edict of Charles V. respecting, in Spain, I. 235.

———, ———, of Nicholas II. to Edward the Confessor, I. 137, 138. 230; II. 128. 145. Of Urban II., to Roger Earl of Sicily, I. 138. 229, 230; II. 145. 512. Of John XXII., respecting the right of election to the Empire, I. 203. 211. 215. Of Boniface VIII., respecting the University of Oxford, I. 168; II. 448. Of Boniface IX., respecting the election to the Empire, I. 203. Of Pius II. (Æneas Sylvius), called "Bulla Retractationum," I. 121. a. And against appeals to a General Council, I. 214. Of Sixtus IV., Innocent VIII., Alexander VI., Paul III., granting privileges to the Venetians, I. 243. Of Clement VII., in 1533, sent to James V. of Scotland, declaring Henry VIII. excommunicated and deposed, II. 105. Of Paul III., decreed in 1535, published in 1538, excommunicating Henry VIII., and interdicting England, I. 129. 257; II. 97, 98. 112. Of Pius IV., enforcing the Creed of the Tridentine Council as of Faith, I. 25; II. 40. 201. 241. 243. 325; III. 573. Of Pius V., entitled "Bulla Cœnæ;" see *Bulla Cœnæ*. And against Queen Elizabeth, I. 248; II. 112, 113. 245. Norton's book concerning the latter, called the Disclosing of the Great Bull that roared at My Lord Bishop's gate, II. 245. Of Clement VIII., two Briefs sent to James I. of England, excluding him from the throne of England unless he would take an oath to promote the Roman Catholic interest, II. 113. Of Paul V. against the Venetians, I. 240. Of Urban VIII., against Jansenius, I. 236, 237. Of Innocent X., in 1651, against the peace of Westphalia in 1648, I. 212.

Bulla Aurea, or *The Golden Bull*, determining the mode of election of the German Emperors, provisions and account of, IV. 287. See *Emperors*.

Bulla Cœnæ, account of the, II. 242. Heretics solemnly cursed and anathematized in the, on the Thursday in Passion week every year, by the Roman Church, I. 199; II. 242. 313. 570. 589. Contents of the, II. 243, 244.

Bullingham, Nicholas, Bishop of Lincoln $15\frac{53}{60}$—1570, of Worcester 1570—1576, III. 180. Commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 220. Evidence for the consecration of, III. 220. Signed the certificate of the legal validity of the second commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker, III. 180. Proctor for Archbishop Parker, at his confirmation, III. 43. 113. 176, 182. Alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.

Bullinger, held that the Church hath

authority to change the Lord's Day as it pleases, V. 10. d. How far Baptism thought necessary by, for the children of Christian parents, V. 173.

Buonaventura, Cardinal, admission of, against Transubstantiation, I. 13. Doctrine of, respecting additions to the Creed, I. 25. r. respecting the Divine authority of Shrift, V. 222. respecting the salvation of abortive infants, V. 176.

Burgundy, Duke of; see *Charles* Duke of Burgundy.

Burleigh, Lord; see *Cecil.*

Butler, James, Marquis (afterwards Duke) of Ormond, I. v. l. xci. One of the supervisors of Abp. Bramhall's will, I. cxii.

———, *Elizabeth,* Marchioness of Ormond, I. v. l. xci.

———, *John,* Canon of Canterbury, present at the election of Abp. Parker, III. 193.

———, book of, respecting English Orders, III. 131. Mistake of, with respect to Abp. Parker's Consecrators, *ib.*

Butler-a-bo, Irish statute against the cry of, II. 111.

C.

Cabilonense, Concilium; see *Council of Chalons.*

Cade, Jack, called himself "John Amend-all," III. 430.

Cæcilianus, an African Bishop, II. 106. 148. 226.

Caen, Abbey of St. Stephen's in, Lanfranc its abbot before he was raised to the See of Canterbury, I. 146.

Caerleon, the primacy of Wales originally attached to the See of, I. 162, 163. 201; II. 152. but removed to Llandaff by Dubritius in 512, and thence to St. David's or Menevia, in 516, by St. David, in the reign of King Arthur, fifty years before Dinoth, I. 163. 178; II. 172. 185. 540, 541. The name of, attached to the See after that removal, II. 303. 540, 541. Proof of this from Geoffrey of Monmouth, *ib.* and Giraldus Cambrensis, *ib.* Nothing improbable in its being called Caerleon-upon-Uske, by Dinoth, II. 541, 542. Bishoprics of Chester, Hereford, and Worcester, anciently suffragan sees of the Archbishopric of, II. 526. See *Dionothus, Menevia.*

Caerleon, Archbishops of; see St. *David, Dubritius, St. David's Archbishops of.*

Cæsar, Claudius, St. Peter said to have founded the Church of Rome in the second year of, I. 160.

——, *Julius,* vengeance inflicted upon the murderers of, III. 386. Anecdote concerning, quoted in illustration of free-will, IV. 147. 151.

——, *Tiberius,* alleged motion of, in the Roman Senate, to have Divine honour paid to Christ, V. 101. Britain said to have been Christianized in the reign of, by Joseph of Arimathæa; see *Church, British.*

Cæsarea, Archbishop of; see *Christopher de Capite Fontium.*

————, *Patriarchate of;* see *Patriarchate of Cæsarea.*

Cæsariensis, Maxima; see *York, City of.*

Cajetan, Thomas de Vio, Cardinal, distinction of, between "determinare de Fide formaliter," and "determinare de eo quod est Fidei materialiter," II. 483. 581. 592. Opinion of, that when Baptism cannot be actually applied to infants, the desire of their parents to have them baptized is sufficient for their salvation, V. 175. The passage erased by Pope Pius V. from the later editions of the works of, V. 175. o. Admits Confession to be of human institution, V. 223. r. Acknowledges, that kings are obliged to protect their subjects from the tyranny of ecclesiastical judges, I. 170.

Calais, grief of Queen Mary for the loss of, III. 345.

Calderwood, or *Didoclavius,* the Presbyterian, author of the Altare Damascenum, slanderous language of, respecting kings, III. 335.

Callistus (or *Calixtus*) *III.,* Pope 1455—1458, I. 204. Condemned investitures taken from a lay hand, in 1119, II. 404. 406. 418. Admitted, that Papal legates might not be sent to England unless at the king's express desire, II. 442.

Calvin, residence of, with Bucer 1538—1541, I. 38; III. 531. h. Belonged to the Council of Sixty at Geneva, although it was a civil office, III. 304. Asserted his Discipline, in the first instance, merely to "come near" or to be "not disagreeable" to the word of God, III. 565. Exacted subscription to articles of belief, III. 305. Administered the oath ex officio, by his own admission, *ib.* Subscribed the Augustan Confession, I. 38; II. 62; III. 482.

531. 533. The English Church has nothing to do with, II. 62.

Opinion of, in favour of Episcopacy, I. 38; II. 62—64; III. 468, 469. 482, 483. 492. 531. 533, 534. No enemy to Episcopacy in itself, II. 63. A beginning of unity required, according to, in all societies, by the law of nature, III. 469. 487—489. 534. 551. Approved the Patriarchal form of government in the Church, III. 553. Thought Episcopacy fittest for monarchies, III. 468. Separated from all the world in rejecting Episcopacy, II. 62. No one Church without Bishops from the beginning until the time of, II. 62; III. 531. Strype's account of the Letter of, to Edward VI., desiring to have Bishops, and of its suppression by Gardiner and Bonner, III. 483. a.

Doctrine of, respecting separation from the Church, II. 270. Condemned the Papacy, II. 64.

How far Baptism thought necessary by, for the children of Christian parents, V. 173. Held mission necessary for ministers, V. 259. Institution of lay elders by; see *Elders, Lay.* Opinion of, that the Lord's Day might be transferred to any other day of the week, and that the Church is not bound to the septenary number, but might (if it thought fit) set apart one day in eight or ten for the service of God, V. 10. d. e. 62. Actually deliberated, according to Barclay, about transferring the Lord's Day to Thursday, V. 10. Did not object to recreation on the Lord's Day, III. 576. Denunciation by, of dancing, III. 577. In favour of Liturgies and set Forms of Prayer, I. 38.

Professes agreement with St. Augustin respecting free-will, IV. 273. Supposed testimony of, for universal necessity, answered, IV. 397, 398. Confesseth the ancient Fathers, both Greek and Latin, to have been for liberty and against necessity, IV. 216. 397. Ignorant citation of, by Hobbes, IV. 382. 390.

Evasion of, to explain away St. Paul's precept of obedience to the civil magistrate, III. 364. Sounder doctrine of, elsewhere, upon the same subject, III. 365. Seditious conduct of, at Geneva, III. 303. 316.

Cambrensis, Giraldus; see *Giraldus Cambrensis.*

Cambridge, University of; see *University of Cambridge.*

Camden, William, testimony of, to the authenticity of the Archiepiscopal Register of Abp. Parker's consecration, III. 97. Account given by, of the number and principles of the Romanists deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, II. 246; III. Pref. a. And of the origin of the Recusants in the same reign, II. 245.

Campeius, Cardinal, legate of Clement VII. to England, I. 196.

Campian, Edmund, a Jesuit in Queen Elizabeth's reign, treasonable doctrine of, II. 114, 115. Letter of, to the Lords of the Queen's Council, II. 116.

Candidianus, deputy of Theodosius the Younger at the General Council of Ephesus, II. 228.

Canisius, expression of, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473.

Cannachi Rossi; see *Rossi, Cannachi.*

Canons, Apostolical, so called, I. 154. The thirty-third, respecting National Primates, I. 154; III. 553.

———, *The, of the ancient Catholic Church,* received in England, II. 427. Of the Church Universal, authority of, III. 521. Of the General Councils of Basle, Chalcedon, Constance, Constantinople, Ephesus, Florence, Lateran, Nice, Sardica; see *Council of Basle—of Chalcedon—of Constance — of Constantinople — of Ephesus—of Florence—of Lateran—of Nice—of Sardica.* Of the Church, Bishops proper judges of the, II. 428. Princes may reform new by old, I. 175.

———, *Papal,* acknowledge by implication the inferiority of the Pope to a General Council, I. 249.

Of no force in England further than they were received, I. 140; II. 298. 401. 429. 431—434. Sometimes rejected in plain terms, II. 432. Sometimes interpreted into a meaning the Pope never intended, *ib.* Sometimes roundly condemned, II. 432, 433. Instances of the rejection of, II. 431—433. The first obtruded upon the English Church was eleven hundred years after Christ, II. 429, 430. See *Bishop of Rome.* For the legitimation of children born before matrimony, rejected by the English Parliament, II. 432; and see *Legitimation.* Against Bigamists, received in England only with a legislative interpretation; see *Bigamists.*

———, *English,* confirmed by Royal authority, IV. 493. Not adopted with the English Articles by the Church

of Ireland in 1634; see *Bramhall John, Church of Ireland.*

The, of 1571, recognize the authority of the Primitive Church in matters of Faith, I. 52.

The, of 1603, declaration in, respecting the kind and degree of separation between the English and Foreign Churches, I. 197, 198. 257; II. 60. 200. 207. 561. respecting the Regal supremacy, I. 31. the interpretation of Scripture, I. 52. sermons, III. 581. Direct bowing at the name of Jesus, V. 77.

The, of 1640, recognize the Divine right of kings, and the Regal supremacy in ecclesiastical causes over ecclesiastical persons, I. 37. The &c. oath in the sixth canon of, III. 305. 396.

Canons, Irish, of 1634, the first, declaring the adoption by the Irish Church of the English Articles, V. 80. It was framed by Abp. Ussher, but rewritten by Lord Strafford, *ib.* how carried, *ib.* Do not direct bowing at the name of Jesus, V. 77. x. a. The omission claimed as a merit by Abp. Ussher, V. 77.

Canterbury, Archbishopric of, attempt on the part of King Offa to render Lichfield independent of the, II. 140. Wales, when subjected to the; see *Menevia.*

————, *Archbishop of,* sacerdotal Head of the Church of England, and as such subject to no legate of the Pope, II. 410. Called by Pope Urban II. "the Pope of another world," I. 164. Sole legate-a-latere allowed by the law in England, I. 140; V. 264. Letter of English Bishops to Pope Paschal II. in defence of the independence of the, II. 410. Bull of Boniface VIII. exempting the University of Oxford from the jurisdiction of the, as Visitor, set aside by two Kings of England; see *University of Oxford.*

————, *Archbishops of;* see *Anselm, Arundel, Augustin, Bancroft, Becket, Cranmer, Deane, Dunstan, Grindal, Lanfranc, Laud, Laurentius, Morton John, Parker Matthew, Pole Reginald, Rodolph, Stigand, Theodore, Warham, Whitgift.*

————, *Archdeacon of,* the right of installing Bishops within the province of Canterbury pertains to the, III. 231. See *Gest, Harpsfield.*

————, *Church of;* see *Augustin Abbey of St., Eadmer, Lanfranc.*

Canus, Melchior, admission of, respecting the Papal Supremacy, II. 376.

Canute, King of England 1016—1031, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413. Complained to Rome of the money exacted for palls, and had remedy promised, but in vain, I. 193. 264. Punishment inflicted by, upon Edric the traitor, III. 308.

Capitulars, see *Charlemagne.*

Capocius, John, censure by, on Innocent III., III. 438.

Capon or *Salcot, John,* Bishop of Bangor—of Salisbury, 1534—1557, death of, III. 232. The nominees of the Pope and of Queen Mary to the vacant See of, were never consecrated; see *Mallet, Peyto.* See of, consequently, still vacant upon Jewel's consecration to it in 1560, III. 232.

Capuans, story of the, from Livy, III. 406.

Cardinals, The, were but ordinary Parish Priests and Deacons of old, II. 617. Elect the Pope, *ib.* Gross simony in their elections laid to the charge of, see *Bishop of Rome.* Headship or Primacy affirmed by Mr. Serjeant to be in the College of, when the Papacy is vacant, II. 617.

————, see *Allen William, Bandini, Bellarmine, Buonaventura, Cajetan, Campeius, Cusanus, Eusebius, Fisher, Joyeuse, Monte, Noailles, Pandulphus, Panormitan, Perron, Pole Reginald, Richelieu, Tolet, Umbertus, Wolsey.*

————, Report of nine selected, to Pope Paul III. in 1538, respecting abuses in the Church, I. 208. 278; II. 385. 402. Remonstrance in it, respecting selling dispensations, II. 402. 445, 446. 448.

Carey, see *Cary.*

Carlisle, Bishops of; see *Best, Gilpin, Oglethorp, Sandys Edwyn, Senhouse, White Francis.*

————, *Statute of;* see *Statute of Carlisle.*

Carolus, see *Charles.*

Carrier, Benjamin, D.D., an English clergyman, who turned Romanist in 1613; English orders acknowledged in the case of, by the Pope, III. 115. g.

Cartenna, Church of, I. 109. 257.

Carthage, Church of; see *Patriarchate of Carthage.*

————, *Collation of;* see *Collation of Carthage.*

————, *Council of;* see *Council of Carthage.*

————, *Patriarchate of;* see *Patriarchate of Carthage.*

Cartwright, Thomas, extravagant expression of, respecting ecclesiastical supremacy, III. 302. Indignation expressed by, against those who sought to despoil the Church of her property under pretence of reformation, III. 435. Dangerous doctrine of respecting the conforming of the State to the regiment of the Church, III. 316. 468; IV. 596, 597.

Cary, Lucius, Viscount Falkland, possibly was not so deeply radicated in the Faith of the Church of England as others were, II. 563. Opinion of, respecting the certainty of Faith in the Church of England, *ib.* Hammond's reply to, II. 563. e.

Casaubon, Isaac, Epistle of, to Cardinal Perron, III. 568, 569.

Cashel, Archbishop of; see *Price.* Titular Archbishop of (R. C.), see *Walsh.*

———, *Council of;* see *Council of Cashel.*

Cassander, a moderate Roman Catholic Divine, born 1515, a true lover of peace, III. 511. Aimed at the reconciliation of Protestants with the Church of Rome, III. 505. 511. Doctrine of, respecting the worship of images and the crucifix, I. 46. z. Opinion of, that the faith of parents suffices for the salvation of infants unavoidably unbaptized, V. 175. m.

Cassiodorus, doctrine of, that kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384.

Castigations of Mr. Hobbes his last Animadversions in the case concerning Liberty and Universal Necessity, by Bp. Bramhall, Works Part iii. Discourse ii. IV. 197—506. Contents of, IV. 199—208. Account of the publication of, I. xxxii, xxxiii; IV. 213. Where written, IV. 213. 251.

Castile, Estates of, complaints of the, against Pope Urban VIII., in 1633, I. 196. 231—235. 246. 263. 278.

Castracan, Alexander, banished from Spain for publishing the Pope's Bulls there, I. 235.

Castro, Alphonsus à, assertion of, respecting the Greek Church, II. 330.

Catching of Leviathan, by Bp. Bramhall, Works Part iii. Discourse iii. IV. 507—597. Contents of, IV. 509. —511. Preface to, IV. 513—518. Account of. I. xxxii, xxxiii; IV. 513. a. Argument of, IV. 518.

Catechumeni, who they were, II. 479.

Catharine; see *Katherine.*

Catharinus, subtle distinctions of, explaining away the Romish doctrine of Intention, V. 212.

Catherine, see *Katherine.*

Catholic Church; see *Church, Catholic.*

Catholic, Roman; see *Roman-Catholic, Romanists.*

Catholics, to whom the name properly belongs, I. 24, 25. 111; II. 84. They are, who receive whatsoever the Holy Apostles, or the Nicene Fathers, or blessed Athanasius did set down as necessary to be believed, I. 24. 103; II. 352. 636, 637. See *Church Catholic, Creed.* The rest of Christendom Catholic as well as the Roman Obedience, II. 79. 574, 575. 599; and see *Church of Rome.* The name 'Catholic,' derived from universal communion, not from right belief, II. 213. Derive their name from no other than from Christ, III. 504. St. Augustine's touchstone of, II. 96. See *Donatists, Heretics, Schismatics.*

Cato, character given of, by Velleius Paterculus, IV. 87. 99, 100.

Caudrey, Case of, in Lord Coke's Reports, I. 31. 139. 151.

Caulfield, William (Caulfield), Lord, afterwards Earl of Charlemont; Letter of, to Abp. Bramhall, upon his promotion to the see of Armagh, I. xxiii.

Causa Efficiens, Voluntaria, Physica, distinguished, IV. 470.

Causes, The concatenation of, as a theory of fatalism, IV. 58—60. A necessary connection of, held by the Stoics, while Christian fatalists held God to be the one pervading Cause, IV. 116. Necessitarians distinguish between the First Cause, which necessitates all things, and second, which do not, IV. 117. The two parts of this distinction contradict each other, *ib.* The First Cause being necessary, the second must be so likewise, *ib.* The First, not a necessary cause of all effects, IV. 120. A necessary effect requires all necessary causes, IV. 468. Necessary, do not always act necessarily, IV. 449. See *Necessity.*

A sufficient, is not a necessary cause, IV. 453, 454. Singly insufficient, which jointly are sufficient, IV. 171. 180, 181. That cause properly sufficient, which produceth the effect intended, IV. 172. A cause sufficient in respect of its ability, not of its will to act, *ib.* Sufficient, inclusive of will, only hypothetically necessary, IV. 173. Sufficient, include not the actual determination of the will, IV. 174. And refer to the pro-

ducibility, not to the production, of the effect, *ib.* Free agency not a self-contradiction because it implies a sufficient cause without an actual effect, IV. 114. 173.

The will not a necessary, of its particular acts, IV. 450. Other, besides matter and power, concur with the will, IV. 448. See *Will.*

Nothing can begin without a, IV. 179. Hobbes's subtlety, that every thing is a cause of every thing, IV. 402.

Of contingent and free, IV. 269. Indetermination of, IV. 366. Remote, are not together with their effects, IV. 480.

Causes, Ecclesiastical, political supremacy of princes in; see *King.*

Cavendish, William, Marquis (afterwards Duke) of Newcastle, friendship of, for Bishop Bramhall, I. x. n. r. xxxi. Nearly shut up in York by Fairfax before the great victory of Atherton Moor, June 1643, V. 110. g. Bramhall with, from the summer of 1642 until the battle of Marston Moor in 1644; see *Bramhall, John.* Declaration of, in answer to Lord Fairfax, Feb. 2, 164$\frac{2}{3}$, penned by Bramhall, III. Pref. j. Sermon preached before, by Bp. Bramhall, being then ready to march from York in order to meet the Scotch army, Jan. 28, 164$\frac{3}{4}$, I. xxxiv; V. 87—110. Compelled to retreat without a battle before the Scotch army from Durham, V. 91. a. Quitted England, accompanied by Bramhall and others, upon the defeat at Marston Moor, July 2, 1644, I. x; III. Pref. Controversy of Bramhall with Hobbes respecting Liberty and Necessity, originated in the house of, at Paris, I. xxxi; IV. 26. Dedication to, of Bramhall's Defence of Liberty against Hobbes, IV. 17. 250.

———, *Sir Charles*, of Wallington, brother of the Marquis of Newcastle, IV. 155. b. Book of a French divine upon the Prescience of God, shewn by, to Bp. Bramhall, IV. 155.

Cawdrey, Daniel, and *Herbert Palmer*, two members of the Westminster Assembly, book of, upon the Sabbath, V. 18. p.

Cawdrey, Case of; see *Caudrey.*

Caxton's Chronicle, or *Fructus Temporum*, or *Brutus*, a British History so called, when printed, I. 201. b. Date of, *ib.* Testimony of, to the rejection of St. Augustin of Canterbury by the British Bishops, I. 201, 202; II. 543.

Ceadda, St.; see *Chad, St.*

Cecil, William, Lord Burleigh, tract of, in 1583, respecting the penal laws against Roman Catholics, I. 124. i.

Celestine I, Pope 422—432, grounded a claim of supremacy over the Church upon counterfeit canons of the Council of Nice, II. 374. Dispute of, with St. Augustin and the African Bishops respecting appeals to Rome, I. 99. 106; II. 374. Letter of African Bishops to, repelling his claim, II. 374. Said by St. Prosper to have sent St. German and Palladius in his own stead to aid the British and Scotch Christians respectively, I. 137; II. 170. 301. 536. But better authors correct St. Prosper, *ib.* And there was no act of jurisdiction if he were right, *ib.* See *Germanus, Palladius.*

Ceremonies, uses and advantages of, II. 35. When and how far good and useful, and when superfluous, III. 170; V. 123. 215. Conduce to the perfection of a Church, *ib.* Are not essentials of a Church, II. 27. The Church has power to ordain, V. 215; and see *Church Particular.* Rule of St. Augustin respecting the, of different Churches; see St. *Augustin.*

Certainty of Faith, in the Church of England; see *Church of England.*

Chad, St., Bishop of Lichfield 669—672; wonderful death of Robert Lord Brooke before St. Chad's Cathedral, upon St. Chad's day, III. 28.

Chair of St. Peter; see St. *Peter, Rome.*

Chalcedon, Titular Bishop of; see *Bishop William, Smith Richard.*

———, *Council of*; see *Council of Chalcedon.*

Chalcedonian Creed; see *Creed, Chalcedonian.*

Chalice, and Patin, delivered to the Priest in Romish Ordination; see *Ordination of Presbyters, Patin.*

Chalons-sur-Saône, Council of; see *Council of Chalons.*

Champney, an Anglo-Romanist writer, affirmed the fable of the Nag's Head consecration, in 1616, 1618, III. 39. f. 42, 43, 44. 55. 107. Named, as participating in it, precisely those Bishops (except Jewel) and none other, who succeeded to sees vacant by deprivation, III. 43. 228, 229.

Chance, is from accidental concurrence, not ignorance, IV. 259.

Change, in the Elements in the Holy Eucharist, disputes in the Roman schools respecting the time of the,

I. 14, 15. and the extent of the, I. 15. and the manner of the, I. 15—17. Such a change, how admitted by the Church of England; see *Lord's Supper, Transubstantiation.*

Chappell, William, Bishop of Cork and Ross 1638—1649, tutor to Milton at Christ's College, Cambridge, I. xciv.

Chapters, election of Bishops by Deans and; see *Bishops, Bishops English, Bishops Irish.*

Character, impressed in Holy Orders, indeleble, V. 209. 263. Not destroyed by heresy or by schism, V. 209. Would remain in a Bishop, according to the Roman Schools, even if he died and were raised again, V. 210.

Charenton, Calvinist Ministers at, in 1651, I. cxxxvii. See *Aubertin.*

———, *Synod of*; see *Synods, French Reformed.*

Charisius, wicked exposition of the Creed condemned by, at the Council of Ephesus, II. 481, 482.

Charlemont, Earl of; see *Caulfield.*

Charles I., King of England, eulogy upon, I. 27, 28. Sufferings of, no argument against his acts or character, I. 27.

Coronation oath of, III. 371, 372. 419. See *Oath Coronation of the Kings of England.*

Did not call himself Head of the Church, I. 31. See *Kings of England.*

Attachment of, to the Church of England, III. 171, 172. Died a martyr for the Church of England, II. 95; V. 122. No Romanist, I. 34. 78; II. 95. 550; III. 171, 172. 525—528; V. 122. Declaration of his adherence to the Church of England, made by, at his death, I. 78. Conference of, with the Marquis of Worcester respecting Romanism, III. 525. Speeches of, declaring his adherence to the Church of England, III. 525. p. The Spanish and French matches, III. 525, 526. Groundless fears of Popery while he was in Spain, III. 540. Letter of, to Pope Gregory XV., III. 526. That letter misrepresented and garbled by the Parliamentarians, III. 526. s. Choice by, of agents in Church and State, a poor argument to convict him of Romanism, III. 527. Residence of Papal Nuncios in England, an equally weak argument, I. 34; III. 527, 528. Jesuits in England, III. 528. So called 'innovations' introduced by, into the English Church, III. 520. 528. Gross impudence of La Milletière to feign that he died a Roman Catholic, I. 78. Idle calumnies respecting the defection of, to the Church of Rome, I. 34; II. 550. Groundless accusation of Popery brought against, by Baxter, III. 525—528.

Attachment of, to Episcopacy, III. 171, 172. Disputation of, concerning Episcopacy, with Alexander Henderson, III. 172; and see *Henderson.* Hatred of Episcopacy not the cause why the Parliament persecuted him, I. 33.

Statute respecting Knights revived by, in 1630, as a means of raising money, V. 79. Proclamation of, against the Covenant; see *Covenant, League and.* Account and defence of the Proclamation by, entitled the Book of Sports, III. 577, 578.

No cause of the Irish Rebellion, III. 455—460. Idle pretences for the calumny refuted, I. 34; III. 456—460. See *Ireland, O'Neil.*

Answers and Declarations of, to his subjects, in answer to the Remonstrances and other papers of the Parliament, III. 300. 392. 400. 413. which are known to have been mostly composed by Hyde (Lord Clarendon), III. 300. k. Exceptions of the Observator against them, answered, III. 392—400; and see *Parker, Henry.* Railing language of the Observator against, III. 335. Declarations of, unanswerable, III. 400. Declaration of, concerning the proceedings of the Parliament, August, 1642, III. 413.

Circumstances of the exclusion of, from Hull, by Sir John Hotham, April 23. 1642, III. 437—440. 446. Scandalous print of the affair published at the time, III. 439. See *Hotham Sir John, Hull.*

Malice of the Parliamentary forces against, at Edgehill, III. 308. 442. See *Henrietta Maria.*

The Parliament in Scotland enjoined the subjects to take up arms for the delivery of, in 1648, III. 264, 265. 273—275. But the General Assembly excommunicated those who obeyed, *ib.*

Sir Henry de Vic Ambassador for, to the United Provinces, 1644—1648, I. x; V. 167. 171.

Murdered by his subjects, V. 131. Death of, requited upon the regicides, *ib.* Intercession of, now in Heaven, for his son, I. 77. The

Εἰκὼν Βασιλικὴ, III. 525; V. 120, 121.

Concessions of, to the Parliament, were of grace, not of duty, III. 337; and see *Parliament.*

Charles II., King of England, character of, V. 121, 122. Was the 110th monarch of his line in Scotland, I. 74; V. 117. 121.

Wanderings of, during his exile, V. 117, 118. Invitation of, into Scotland, by the Presbyterians in 1649, III. Pref. b. How treated by the Scots in 1650, 1651, I. 74—76; V. 117. Escape of, from England, after the battle of Worcester, almost miraculous, I. cxlvi, cxlvii. 76. At Paris from 1651 to 1654, I. xi. u. 23. l. Entered Paris with Louis XIV. on the triumphant return of that King to his capital Oct. 21, 1651, V. 130. s. Removal of, from Cologne to Bruges in 1657, and from Bruges to Brussels in 1658, III. 23. f. Treaty of, at that time, with Spain, III. 23.

Attempt of La Milletière to convert, to Romanism, I. xxvi. 24; and see *Milletière.* Answer to La Milletière by Bramhall, written for the use of, probably, I. xxvi. 276; and see *Answer to La Milletière.* Had no need to turn Romanist in order to become a Catholic, I. 25. Outward stedfastness of, to the English Church, attested by Bramhall, V. 122. 124. But proved afterwards to have inclined in belief to Romanism, V. 122. b.

Hobbes at one time tutor to, IV. 561. g. The Leviathan written by Hobbes with a view to the use of, *ib.*

Sermon by Abp. Bramhall upon the Restoration of, V. 113—135. Had the affections of his subjects at the time of his Restoration, V. 125. Good title of, to the Crown of England, V. 120, 121. Abandoned the forfeitures to the Crown in Ireland upon his Restoration, in order to satisfy the claims of the Royalists without injury to the Adventurers; see *Adventurers.* Petition of the Clergy of Ireland to, at that time, respecting the property of the Irish Church, I. civ.

Two letters to, from Bramhall, I. xci. cv.

Charles Martel, usurpation of the throne of France by, with the aid of the Popes, I. 131.

Charlemagne, independence of, upon the Popes, I. 172. 206. 220; II. 231—233. 403. 414, 415; V. 230. No witness to Papal authority, II. 231—233. Evidence of the Capitulars of, to the ecclesiastical power exercised by him, I. 172. 206. Convented Pope Leo III. before him, I. 173. 220. Election of Popes and investiture of Bishops surrendered to, by Pope Adrian I, I. 213; II. 232. 403. Nominated Bishops within his own dominions, II. 232. 414; V. 203. Convocated synods within his own dominions, I. 172. 205, 206; II. 232. 414, 415. Presided in them, and confirmed their decrees, *ib.* Reformed the Church by the aid of Synods, I. 206; II. 232. See *Council of Arles* A.D. 813—*of Chalons-sur-Saône—of Frankfort—Germanic—of Tours* A.D. 813.

Charles, the Bald, King of France, 'Apologetic Answer' of, to Pope Adrian II. respecting Hincmar, I. 219, 220.

——— *VI.*, King of France, laws of, against the Pope, I. 221, 222.

——— *VII.*, King of France, Pragmatical Sanction made by, I. 222.

——— *VIII.*, King of France, Pragmatical Sanction confirmed by, I. 222.

——— *IX.*, King of France, present at the Colloquy of Poissy, I. 68. o. Protest of the Ambassador of, in 1563, against the Pope, in the Council of Trent, I. 221. 258; II. 640, 641.

——— *V.*, Emperor of Germany and King of Spain, endeavours of, to reform the Church within his dominions, I. 209. The Interim published by, I. 210. Reformation of the Clergy published by, in 1548, II. 215, 216. Declaration of, respecting first-fruits and annates, I. 216. Letter of, to Pope Adrian VI, against the payment of tenths, II. 425. Edict of, respecting Papal Bulls in Spain, I. 235. Appeal of, from Pope Clement VII. to a General Council, I. 215. Letter of Paul III. to, against the Council of Spires, II. 215.

———, Duke of Burgundy, distress of the Lancastrian family when in exile at the Court of, V. 118, 119.

Charta, Magna, penned by Bishops, III. 366. Does not warrant the assertion, that the King is bound to give consent to all laws passed by the Houses of Parliament as necessary laws, III. 367. See *Charters, The Great.*

Charters, The Great, of England, list of, II. 417. 1. Always the first article in, that the Church should enjoy her immunities, II. 417. 420.

Chaucer, testimony of, to the rapine and extortion of the Court of Rome, I. 183. to the corruptions in practice respecting Confession, before the Reformation, V. 160. 191. 224.

Chawney, Maurice, a Carthusian monk, quotation from a book of, published in 1550, respecting Sir Thomas More, I. 121.

Cheffontaines, Christopher de; see *Christopher de Capite Fontium.*

χειροθεσία } V. 216.
χειροτονία }

Cheregatus, Franciscus, nuncio of Pope Adrian VI. at the Diet of Nuremberg, II. 385.

Chester, Bishops of; see *Downham, Morton Thomas, Scot.*

———, *Bishopric of*, once a suffragan see to the Archbishopric of Caerleon, II. 526.

Cheubien, Miss, letter from Bishop Bramhall to, respecting Purgatory and Prayer to the Saints, V. 191. 192.

Chichester, Bishops of; see *Andrewes, Barlow William, Christopherson, Curtys, Day, Gunning, Montague, Sampson, Scory, Sherborne.*

———, *Bishopric of*; see *Selsey.*

Childeric, King of France, revolt of Pepin against, aided by the Popes Zachary I. and Stephen III., I. 131. z.

Children, how far they can deliberate, IV. 299, 300. Are not punishable with death, IV. 434. Hobbes's wicked doctrine respecting, that parents may adopt or expose them as they please, in a state of nature, IV. 434. 566. Contradictions of Hobbes concerning, IV. 568. 581.

Chillingworth, William, was possibly not so deeply radicated in the Faith of the Church of England as others were, II. 563. No 'champion' for the Church of England, *ib.* See *Lewgar.*

Way of unity proposed by, between the Churches of Rome and England, III. 568—571; and see *Reconciliation.*

Misquotation from the answer of, to Knott, to prove that Protestants have separated from all Christian Churches, II. 54. 66, 67. and differ substantially from the Church of Rome, II. 204. Another quotation from, respecting the grounds and certainty of Faith in the Church of England, II. 563.

Chorepiscopi, what meant by, in the ancient Church, III. 78. o. To be distinguished from the Suffragan Bishops in the medieval English Church, *ib.* How far truly Bishops, *ib.* When they ceased to exist, *ib.*

Christ, the Divinity of, and His Two Natures, no addition (properly so called) to the Creed, I. 25; II. 475. 597; and see *Creed.* Doctrine of the Eastern Churches respecting the Two Natures of; see *Churches Eastern, Eutychianism, Nestorianism.* Heresy of the Arians respecting, see *Arians.* Divine worship due, not to the Humanity of, but to His Whole Person, both God and Man, I. 21. 45. Descent of, into Hell, erroneous doctrine of the Puritans respecting the, II. 596. 619; and see *Bilson.* Descent of, into Hell, how contained in the Apostles' Creed, II. 596, 597. Is the Sacrifice wherewith we are reconciled to God, see *Sacrifice.* Of the Heavenly Priesthood of, V. 220. 226. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning the Priestly and Prophetical Offices of, IV. 528, 529. Spiritual Headship of, not denied by those who maintain the political Headship of the Magistrate, II. 565; and see *Head of the Church, King, Magistrate.* Is the source of all authoritative mission, which is derived from Him through the Church, V. 262. Hobbes's pernicious errors concerning, IV. 527—529. 539. 584.

Bowing at the Name of Jesus, see *Jesus.*

Christanovic, Stanislaus, a Polish author, asserts that the Crown of England is subject to the Pope, I. 185.

Christians, number of the, in early times, very considerable, I. 162. Testimony of Tertullian and St. Cyprian to this, *ib.* Evidence to it, of the early Councils, *ib.* See *Church, Primitive.*

Christopher de Capite Fontium (or *de Cheffontaines*), Archbishop of Cæsarea, decision by, in a book dedicated to Sixtus V. in 1568, respecting the time of the change in the elements at the Holy Eucharist, I. 15.

Christopherson, John, Bishop of Chichester 1557—1559, deprived, and when, upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 232. Died before his successor's translation, *ib.* See *Barlow, William.*

Chronicon, Scalæ; see *Graius, Johannes.*

Chrysippus, doctrine of, respecting des-

tiny and the prescience of God, IV. 116. 216. the freedom of the will, IV. 288.

Chrysostom, St., interference of Pope Innocent I. in behalf of, explained, II. 434. Quarrel of, with St. Epiphanius, did not presently render both schismatics, I. 98. Heroical mind of, under persecution, V. 124.

Quotation from, respecting the Catholic Church, I. 42. respecting the Apostles as Vicars of Christ, II. 152. Comparison drawn by, between a Bishop and a shepherd, II. 457. High expressions of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 11. x. y.

Commentary of, upon Acts ii. 1, V. 51.

Church, Catholic, or Universal, Holy, the Spouse of Christ, the Mother of Saints, II. 22. 610. What meant by the, I. 109; II. 83, 84. Definition of the, by Bellarmine, II. 596. That definition admitted by Bramhall, except the final clause respecting unity with the Pope, *ib.* Five or six several opinions of Romanists as to where the, is to be found, I. 63. 72, 73; II. 22. 314. 437. 599; V. 275, 276. Distinction of the, into 'Essential, Virtual, Representative,' I. 72. 247; II. 84. 212. 315. 437. 468; V. 276. A General Council is the Representative; see *Council, General.* Christ the Head of the, see *Head of the Church.* A General Council is the best Head of the, upon earth; see *Council General, Head of the Church.* Is no mere fancy, II. 22. Never denied by the Church of England, II. 594.

The Roman Church not the; see *Church of Rome, Donatists.*

All those belong to the, who receive the Primitive Creed as the rule of Faith, and submit to a General Council as the highest judge of controversies upon earth, II. 84. i. e. those who hold the Apostles' Creed as explicated by the first four General Councils, I. 103; II. 352. 636, 637. and who have not been cast out by a General Council, II. 636, 637. See *Creed.* Each member of the, is Catholic inclusively, I. 109. Wherein consists communion with the, I. 103—106; II. 78—80. External and internal communion with the, distinguished, *ib.* Distinction between being *in*, and *of* the, II. 590. See St. *Augustin, Catholics, Communion, Excommunication.*

Necessity of union with the, I. 61. Noah's ark a type of the, II. 269. Cannot give just cause of separation from itself, II. 32. Cannot give just cause to forsake any essential of Christian religion, II. 38. Schismatics do in part still remain in the, II. 80. 584, 585. 590. See *Schism, Schismatics, Separation.* How far heretics may be still within the pale of the, see *Heretics.* An implicit submission to the, sufficient for salvation, II. 211. See *Obedience to the Church.*

Cannot come to ruin, I. 42. Can never fail, I. 43. Cannot be guilty of idolatry, I. 42. or of tyranny, *ib.*

How far infallible, II. 334. 634. The promise of infallibility belongs to the, II. 82; V. 272. Cannot constitute new essentials of the Christian Faith, II. 40. Power of, to explain the Creed; see *Council General, Creed.* Is the ground and pillar of the truth, IV. 492. See *Faith, Rule of.* Romanists divided into five or six parties as to where this infallibility resides, see *Bishop of Rome.* The chief pastors of the, have a judgment of jurisdiction in the interpretation of Scripture; see *Bishops, Judgment of Jurisdiction, Scriptures.* Tradition of the, see *Tradition.* Tradition of the Church of Rome not that of the, see *Church of Rome.*

Is the channel, through which by succession the original mission of the Apostles from Christ is derived to the present clergy; see *Apostolical Succession, Mission, Orders.*

Not left by Christ without any provision for its government, III. 521. The regiment of the, conformed to that of the Commonwealth, II. 180, 181. 184. See *Bishops, Church Primitive, Patriarchs, Primates.*

Canons of the, their authority, III. 521. Adhered to by the Church of England, see *Canons of the Church.*

Protestants confess no separation from the, see *Separation.* The Church of England has not separated from the communion of the, see *Church of England.* The Church of England is ready to believe and practise what is believed and practised by the, see *Church of England.* English Bishops at the Reformation not revolters from the, V. 205. nor their authority suspended by the, V. 208. nor their power of transmitting holy orders, V. 209. 264. See *Bi-*

shops, English. Protestants have an implicit intention in conferring orders, to do what is done by the; see *Intention, Orders English.*

The Eastern Churches true parts of the; see *Churches, Eastern.*

Bramhall's doctrine submitted by him to the judgment of the; see *Bramhall, John.*

Hobbes's grievous errors concerning the, IV. 502. 531. He maketh Church and Commonwealth the same thing, IV. 531, 532. See *Hobbes.*

Church, Particular, or *National,* great difference between a true and a perfect, II. 25. Three essentials of a true, II. 24, 25. viz. Faith, Sacraments, Pastors, *ib.* Three things necessary and sufficient to the being of a, a pastor, a flock, and a dependence of the flock upon the pastor, I. 64; V. 199. Holy orders necessary to the being of a, I. 64; V. 186. 199. The ministry of reconciliation necessary to the being of a, V. 186. Saying of St. Jerom, that "it is no Church which hath no Priests;" see *Hieronymus.* Episcopacy not essential to the being of a, although essential to its perfection, II. 69; and see *Bishops.* An ordinary personal uninterrupted succession of pastors is of the integrity of a, III. 517. Particular rites, forms, opinions, no essentials of a, II. 27. Actual want of essentials not conclusive to God, II. 26. See *Essentials.*

A, is liable to degeneracy, V. 268. May fall into errors not fundamental without ceasing to be a Church, II. 312. May fall into fundamental errors, II. 312. 587. Yet an heretical, may be a true, II. 237. 590. 595. May be orthodox and Catholic, and yet contain within her communion sundry both heretics and schismatics, II. 48. May become such as to give just cause of separation, I. 167; II. 32. 65. 326. 588, 589. Yet cannot give just cause of criminous schism, *ib.* In what way a, may become schismatical, I. 100; II. 355. Differences may exist between particular Churches without violating unity, I. 106. See *Communion, Heretics, Schism, Schismatics, Separation.*

Promise of infallibility belongs not to a, II. 82; V. 272.

In what way a, might and has come to have authority over other Churches, I. 129, 130; II. 525; and see *Bishop of Rome, Patriarch, Primate.*

May lawfully prescribe rites and ceremonies, V. 215. St. Augustin's rule respecting compliance with the varying rites and ceremonies of, see St. *Augustin.*

A duty of every orthodox, to excommunicate formal heretics, II. 591. See *Excommunication, Heretics.*

Sovereign princes in some cases have power to change the external regiment of, see *King.* Conquerors may and do change the external polity of, II. 530. How far it belongs to the magistrate to reform; see *King, Reformation.* Scottish Disciplinarians profess to grant the civil magistrate a power of reforming, but really deprive him of all power in the Church; see *Disciplinarians.* Power of the magistrate in a; see *King, Magistrate.*

How far the Church of Rome is a true, see *Church of Rome.*

How far Foreign Reformed Churches (which want Bishops) are true; see *Bishops, Churches Foreign Protestant.*

Church, Ancient; see *Church, Primitive.*

———, *Apostolical,* great dignity of a, I. 129, 130; II. 525. The Churches of Alexandria, Antioch, Ephesus, Jerusalem, Rome, are; see *Church of Alexandria—of Antioch—of Ephesus—of Jerusalem—of Rome.*

———, *National;* see *Church, Particular.*

———, *Patriarchal;* see *Patriarchate.*

———, *Primitive,* the original government of the, aristocratical, and so neither monarchical nor democratical, II. 612. It was a government of Bishops under Primates or Patriarchs (which were two names for the same office), II. 614; and see *Patriarchs, Primates.* The conditions of a General Council required by the Church of England, the same as those required by the, II. 565. The Faith of the, sufficient, without any addition; see *Creed.* Held communion with Arians and Novatians, how; see *Arians, Novatians.* Opinion of the, concerning the necessity of Baptism, as gathered from its prevalent practice of delaying it, V. 177. Baptism, administered by the, only twice in the year, at Easter and at Whitsuntide, *ib.* The Romish doctrine of a double matter and form in Ordination contrary to the practice of the; see *Ordination of Deacons—of Presbyters.* Obeyed God rather than man, III.

342. 351. 356; IV. 390. 502. Yet failed not in the duty of passive obedience to the civil magistrate; see St. *Ambrose*, St. *Augustin*, St. *Chrysostom*, *Obedience*.

Doctrine of the, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, Merits, the authority of the Bishop of Rome, Free Will, the Apostles' Creed, the state of the soul after death, the Lord's Day, Invocation of Saints, Tradition; see *Fathers*, *The Primitive*.

Mode of observing the Lord's Day in the; see *Justin Martyr*, *Lord's Day*.

The Eastern Churches have a perfect concord with the, in essentials; see *Churches*, *Eastern*. The Church of England has not forsaken the, either in the rule of Faith or in things essential or in Sacraments; see *Church of England*. The Church of England has retained the form of government of the, see *Church of England*.

Authority allowed to the, by the Church of England; see *Canons English* of 1571.

Church, *Protestant*; see *Churches Foreign Protestant*, *Protestants*.

———, *Reformed*; see *Churches*, *Foreign Protestant*.

———, *Universal*; see *Church Catholic*.

——— *of Abyssinia*, communion of, with the Patriarch of Alexandria, II. 567. Excommunicated yearly in the Bulla Cœnæ by the Church of Rome, II. 242. See *Patriarch of Abyssinia*.

——— *of Æthiopia*, founded by St. Matthew or by the Eunuch, V. 34. Long subject to the Patriarch of Alexandria, III. 557. Admits the Patriarchal form of government, *ib*. The Papal supremacy denied by the, *ib*. Patriarchal power and a primacy of order allowed by the, to the Pope, *ib*. Submits to the Council of Nice and other Œcumenical Councils, *ib*. See *Albuna*, *Patriarchs of Æthiopia*.

——— *of Africa*, not subject to the Pope, I. 132; and see St. *Augustin*, *Bishops African*, St. *Cyprian*, *Collation—Councils—Patriarchate of Carthage*.

——— *of Alexandria*, founded by the Apostles themselves, I. 130. Authority thence derived to the, *ib*. See *Patriarchate of Alexandria*.

——— *of Antioch*, founded by an Apostle, I. 130. Authority thence derived to the, *ib*. See *Patriarchs of Antioch*, *Patriarchate of Antioch*.

Church of Armenia, excommunicated yearly (among other Churches) by the Church of Rome, II. 242. See *Eugenius IV*. Pope, *Patriarchs of Armenia*.

———, *Asiatic*; see *Churches*, *Eastern*,

———, *British* or *Britannic* (prior to the Saxons), supposed to have been founded in the reign of Tiberius by Joseph of Arimathæa, I. 160; II. 168. 299; V. 34. Whether St. Peter converted the Britons, II. 168. Probably owed her conversion to the Eastern Church, I. 268. More ancient than the Church of Rome, I. 160; II. 151. 526.

Sided with the Eastern Churches in the observation of Easter, against the Church of Rome, I. 130. 160. 163. 268; II. 176. 526; V. 46. Easter always kept by the, upon a Sunday, and this manner of keeping it derived by the, from St. John, II. 176, 177; V. 46. Never judged schismatics for this rule of keeping Easter, I. 106; II. 83. See *Easter*. Sided with the Eastern Churches in the administration of Baptism, I. 160. 163. 268. Always observed the Lord's Day, V. 34.

Never wanted Bishops, III. 532. See *Aristobulus*, *Bishops*. Bishops of the, present at the First Council of Arles, and possibly at the Council of Sardica; see *Bishops British*, *Council of Arles—of Sardica*.

Was ever independent; see Αὐτοκέφαλοι, Αὐτόνομοι. Rejected St. Augustin; see *Augustin* of Canterbury, *Bishops British*, *Dionothus*, *Synods British*. Always exempt from the jurisdiction of Rome for the first six hundred years, and so ought to continue, I. 152—164. 166. 201. 228. 259, 260; II. 149. 151. 166—174. 300. 525—527. 536. See *Pall*. Was not, nor ought to be, under the jurisdiction of the Roman Patriarch; see *Patriarchate of Rome*. Ordination of the Bishops of, ever at home, I. 161; II. 151. 526. 537. Enjoyed the Cyprian privilege, and were therefore free from the Patriarchal authority of the Bishop of Rome, I. 157, 158. 161. 201; II. 150, 151. 526. 569, 570; V. 209. Alleged instances of Papal jurisdiction over the, answered, II. 167—174. Exemption of the, from foreign jurisdiction, not disproved by

the canon of the Council of Sardica respecting appeals, II. 301. See *Cyprian Privilege.*

How the privileges of the, belong to the Church of England (which descends from the Saxon Church), II. 300. 526—531. Scotch and Irish included in the, *ib.* See *Church of England, Church Saxon, Church of Scotland, Scots.*

Church of Carthage, see *Patriarchate of Carthage, Primates of Carthage.*

——— *of Constantinople;* see *Patriarchs of Constantinople, Patriarchate of Constantinople.*

Churches, Eastern, are true parts of the Catholic Church, II. 259, 260. Have a perfect concord in essentials both with themselves and with the Primitive Church, II. 85.

Doctrine of the, respecting the Two Natures of our Lord, II. 61. How far the, are free from Eutychianism, II. 61. 260. 328. 628. 631. And from Nestorianism, *ib.* Doctrine of the, respecting the Procession of the Holy Spirit, II. 61. Contention of the, with the Western Churches, respecting the Procession of the Holy Spirit from the Son, probably a mere logomachy, II. 260. 597. 629. See *Jesu Thomas à, Laud, Peter Lombard, Tolet.*

Do not allow the Pope's supremacy, II. 61. Acknowledge no obedience to the Church of Rome, I. 200; II. 485. 510, 511. Excommunicate the Pope yearly for claiming a single supremacy of power over the Church by Christ's own ordination, II. 644.

Admit the Patriarchal form of Church government, III. 557.

How many General Councils allowed by the; see *Council, General.* Exclude the Council of Sardica from being a General Council, II. 533.

Doctrine of the, respecting Sacraments, II. 61. The British Church sided with the, against the Roman, respecting the administration of Baptism, I. 160. 163. 268. And the observation of Easter, I. 160. 163. 268; II. 74. 176. 526; V. 46. Did not observe Easter always on a Sunday, see *Easter.* Observed Saturday as a weekly festival, after the law of the Sabbath was utterly abrogated, out of indulgence to those Jews who had become Christians, V. 45. Doctrine of the, respecting Liturgies, II. 61. Have a Liturgy in a language understood, *ib.*

Have true Priests and a valid ordination even by the acknowledgment of the Church of Rome; see *Church, Greek.*

Excommunicated by Pope Victor respecting the observation of Easter, see *Victor I.* Pope. Excommunicated yearly in the Bulla Cœnæ, and by Pope Pius V., II. 242, 243. 570.

See *Church Greek, Church of Muscovy.*

Church of England, what is understood by the, I. 113; II. 93. 526. Includes the British and Scottish Churches, *ib.*

Grounds of the, for distinguishing true believers from false, II. 596, 597. The Scriptures interpreted according to the analogy of the Faith and the tradition of the Church, the ground of Faith in the, II. 575. 596. 630. Doctrine and practice of the, for interpreting Scripture, I. 49—52; II. 563; V. 270. See *Scriptures.* No enemy to Apostolical tradition, I. 53; II. 591. 634. Authority assigned by the, to Primitive tradition, I. 52; and see *Tradition.* Honour paid by the, to the first four General Councils; see *Council, General.* Gives the supreme judicature in controversies of Faith to a General Council, I. 176. 249; II. 84. 438; V. 270. Conditions required by the, for a General Council, the same as those required by the Primitive Church, II. 565. Joins in communion with all who hold the Apostles' Creed as expounded by the first four General Councils, I. 197; II. 564. Omits the Council of Sardica from her list of General Councils, II. 533. Is ready to believe and practise what the Catholic Church believes and practises, I. 200; II. 314. 594—599; V. 212. See *Creed, Council General.*

Certainty of the Faith of the, II. 563. Faith of the, not only probable, II. 463, 464. Great advantage of the, above the Romanists, in the choice of the foundation of Faith, I. 71; and see *Faith, The Rule of.* The XXXIX Articles of the, are no articles of Faith; see *Articles The XXXIX.* Negatives of the, no articles of Faith, II. 210. 313. 592, 593. See *Cary, Chillingworth, Hammond.* Double error of the Romanists in claiming infallibility for the Church of Rome and denying it to the, V. 274, 275. No obligation to censure every religion, much less every opinion, that is contrary to the, II. 586.

Justification by special Faith no article of the, II. 87. 209; and see *Justification.* Doctrine of the, respecting Merits, I. 56, 57. Has nothing to do with Nestorianism, II. 328, 329. 631, 632. or with Eutychianism, *ib.* Sacraments of the, I. 55. Doctrine of the, respecting Sacrifice in the Holy Eucharist, I. 54; II. 88. 276. 642; V. 186. 188. 190. 221; and see *Sacrifice.* Respecting the Adoration of the Sacrament of the Eucharist, see *Lord's Supper.* Acknowledges remission of sins in Baptism, V. 190. 213. and in Absolution, III. 167; V. 190. 213. Doctrine of the, respecting Confession, V. 158—160. 190, 191. 222. Intention, V. 212—214. Transubstantiation rejected by the; see *Lord's Supper, Transubstantiation.* And Half-Communion, see *Lord's Supper.* St. Augustin's doctrine respecting Baptism neither that of the Church of Rome nor of the, V. 178. What Romish errors are renounced by the, I. 54; II. 634; and see *Church of Rome.*

Is in favour of monarchy, I. 37; and see *Monarchy.* Allows no spiritual power to the King, II. 393. 453. 457—460. Does not derive any spiritual jurisdiction from the King, I. 272; II. 127, 128; V. 228—233. Acknowledges that Bishops are the proper judges of the canons, II. 428. See *Bishops, Jurisdiction, King, Kings of England.* Meaning and history of the title of Head of the, see *Kings of England.*

Has retained the primitive form of Church Government, II. 471. 585. Has the same subordination of government as the Primitive Church had, II. 598. The ecclesiastical form of government of the, no innovation, II. 564. See *Church, Primitive.* Discipline of the, not new because reformed, II. 498. Receives the ancient canons, II. 427. Holds mission necessary for pastors, V. 259, 260. The pastors of the, have due mission, V. 261. See *Mission.* Form of Episcopal Ordination in the, sufficient; see *Consecration of Bishops.* Bishops of the, not ordained by Presbyters, I. 272, 273; and see *Bishops, English.* Form of Priestly Ordination in the, sufficient; see *Ordination of Priests.* It does not give power to ordain or confirm, V. 189. Ordinations of the, valid, with respect to the ordainers, II. 642, 643; V. 201—209. And to the matter and form of ordination, I. 271; V. 187. 214—217. See *Ordinal, English.* Intends to give power, in her ordination, both of consecrating and of remitting sin, V. 213. Of the assurance of the, of her Holy Orders, III. 170. Priests of the, true Priests, V. 224. And have power to remit sins; see *Absolution, Baptism, Lord's Supper, Remission of Sins, Sin.* Objection answered, that there is no mention of sacrifice in the Ordination service of the, I. 271; II. 88. 275. 642; V. 188. 221; and see *Priests, Sacrifice.* Defence at length of the succession of the orders of the, III. 3—232. No doubt about the succession of the Pastors of the, V. 189. Of the orders of the, generally, V. 185—188. 200—278. The pleas of particular doctors used in behalf of foreign Churches no argument against the orders of the, V. 247. See *Orders, English.* Bishops of the, neither heretics nor schismatics nor revolters from the Catholic Church, V. 205, 206. Authority of the Bishops of the, not superseded by the Catholic Church, V. 208.

Doctrine of the, respecting the Lord's Day; see *Homily on the Place and Time of Prayer, Lord's Day.*

Has not separated herself from the Catholic Church, I. 197—199. 257; II. 54. 59. 257. 314. 573. 594. 628; V. 205. 271. Nor from any ancient Churches, II. 34. 39. 259. Either as regards the Rule of Faith, II. 34. Or things essential, *ib.* Or Sacraments, II. 35. 40. 259. Not separated from all the Christian Churches in the world, II. 59. 149. Does not challenge to herself either a new Church or a new religion or new holy orders, I. 199; II. 207. 313. 591—594; V. 260. Has not changed ancient doctrine or discipline, II. 287, 288. 498. Has altered no articles of religion nor sacred rites, nor violated charity, I. 167, 168. Nothing of Christ's institution abolished by the, II. 573, 574. Has not swerved from the law of nature or the positive laws of God, I. 168. Has not altered the doctrine or discipline of the Church of Christ by abstraction, but the Church of Rome by addition, II. 293. What sort of errors and of doctrines were reformed by the, V. 273, 274. Has not separated from the true principles of unity, II. 580. Did not break the true prin-

ciples of unity in the time of Henry VIII., II. 388. 394. Has not broken ecclesiastical communion for "temporal concernments," II. 562.

Moderation of the, towards other Churches, I. 198; II. 580. Forbears to judge other Churches, I. 197, 198; II. 311, 312. Denies not to other Churches the true being of Churches, I. 197; II. 580. 589. Nor possibility of salvation in them, I. 197; II. 311. 580. Papists acknowledge the possibility of salvation in the, as much as the Church of England doth for Papists, I. 79, 80. 198; II. 205. 254; V. 207, 208; and see *Clard, Patenson, Smith Richard.* The charity of the, freeth her from schism, II. 270; and see *Schism.* Holds communion with thrice as many Christians as the Church of Rome, II. 328. 564. But not with heretics, *ib.* Nor with schismatics, II. 46—49. How far Foreign (Reformed) Churches are unchurched by the; see *Bishops, Churches Foreign Protestant.*

Separation of the, from Rome, only from her errors, II. 54. 57. 200. 206. 593; V. 205. Does not differ in substance from the Roman Church, II. 40. 86—89. 204, 205. 604. 606, 607. Different expressions of Protestants in speaking of the separation between the, and the Church of Rome, II. 57. The Romish religion, and that of the, the same religion, II. 317. 604. No difference between the, and the Church of Rome, in articles of Faith, II. 34; V. 273, 274. What are the points really controverted between the, and the Church of Rome, III. 539. Has not separated from the Church of Rome in essentials, II. 34. 39. 203, 204. True case of the, against Rome, I. 166; II. 351—353. 364. How far the Church of Rome errs, in the judgment of the, as expressed in her 19th, 22nd, 28th, 31st, and 33rd Articles, II. 581, 582; and see *Church of Rome.* How far the Church of Rome continues a true Church, in the judgment of the; see *Church of Rome.*

Reformation of the, not a separation, I. 60. 81. It was necessary, I. 207; II. 179. 308. Was the same Church before and after her Reformation, I. 113; II. 207. 313. 591; V. 260. Plucked up weeds, not good plants, II. 313. 592, 593. Has reformed abuses, not divided herself from the Roman Church, II. 573. Extent of the Reformation of the, V. 271. See *Reformation.* The Romanists the right heirs of the Donatists, and not the, II. 106. 203. 256; and see *Donatists.*

Manner of the Reformation of the, V. 270. Left the Romanists reluctantly, II. 313. 589—591; V. 271. And with as much inward charity as possible, I. 199; V. 271. And with a desire of reunion, I. 199; II. 589—591; V. 205. Was chased away by the Pope's Bulls, II. 37. Does not pronounce the Pope to be Antichrist, II. 582. In what sense the, believeth the Pope to be an Antichrist, and in what sense not, V. 256. Is not answerable for the virulence of particular preachers, II. 582. Never excommunicated the Papists in gross quâ tales, II. 591. Prays for the Church of Rome, I. 199; II. 589. as *materially* heretical, II. 590. Reformation of the, was conducted with due moderation, I. 197—200; II. 189. 311. 580—599. Reformation of the, was not Calvinistical, I. 38. In what sense and with what feeling the Bishops of the, have separated from the Roman Church, V. 205. See *Separation.* Condemns not our fathers by her separation, I. 269. Is not chargeable with the excesses of her predecessors, II. 391.

Had sufficient authority to withdraw her obedience from the Church of Rome, I. 97. 165—178; II. 190. 305. 546. Authority of the Reformers of the, to interpret Scripture, V. 270. Subject of the Reformation of the, V. 271.

Had sufficient grounds to withdraw her obedience from Rome, I. 179—192; II. 199—201. 307—310. 552. Had better grounds of separation than the personal faults of Popes, II. 72. 148. Grounds of the, in casting out the Pope, sufficient for reforming, which was done, not for violating unity, which was not done, II. 571—573. How far the, was bound to free herself from known error in non-essentials, II. 587, 588. Excluded from communion with the Church of Rome by the detention of the cup from the laity and the adoration of the Sacrament, I. 110. Actual grounds of the separation of the, from the Church of Rome, II. 194. 236; and see *Separation.*

Separation of the, from the Church

of Rome, when and by whom made, I. 128. by Romanists not by Protestants, except in the one article of the supremacy of the Pope, I. 97. 113—124; II. 98. 293—295. 499, 500. 508. Is thereby acquitted even if the separators were guilty, I. 126; II. 294. 500. 504. 506. Double separation of the, from the Court, and from the Church, of Rome; see *Separation.* Impugns the Pope and Court, rather than the Church, of Rome, II. 604. Separated from the Court not from the Church of Rome, II. 257. 553. See *Court of Rome.*

Objection answered, that the, quitted her lawful Patriarch in quitting the Bishop of Rome, I. 152. 156. 158—164. 193. 259—265; II. 34. 151. 166. 641. The Church of Rome not the mother of the, II. 622; and see *Church British, Orders English.* Gregory the Great acquired no patriarchal right over the, by his conversion of England, I. 266—269; and see *Gregory I.* Pope. Not subject to Rome for the first six hundred years, I. 158; II. 34. 300—304; and see *Church British, Patriarchate of Rome, Primates British.* The power rejected by the, neither patriarchal nor canonical, I. 264; and see *Bishop of Rome.* How the privileges of the British Church belong to the, II. 300. 526—531; and see *Church British, Church Saxon.*

Was not alone in her separation from Rome, II. 574, 575. Did no more than Roman Catholic countries have either done or pleaded for, I. 97. 200—245; II. 315, 316. 600. Did no more in Henry VIII.'s time than had been threatened before, I. 96, 97; II. 310. 575, 576. Only did what previous generations threatened to do, II. 310. Made no new laws in her Reformation, but only vindicated her ancient liberties, I. 97. 129—151; II. 519. Papal canons as such not received by the, even in times acknowledged Catholic, II. 430. 434. See *Coke, Fitzherbert, Henry VIII., Statutes English.* Growth of the power of the Bishop of Rome over the, see *Bishop of Rome.* Judiciary, legislative, dispensative power, never rightfully possessed over the, and how far usurped, by the Bishop of Rome; see *Bishop of Rome, Kings of England.*

Has not hindered a General Council by renouncing the Papacy, II. 568. Reformation of the, was not contrary to the decrees of General Councils, II. 182—184. but in accordance with them, II. 185. Is not contumacious towards the Council of Trent, I. 257; II. 261—267. 635—641. Nor schismatically disobedient to it, *ib.* See *Council General, Council of Trent.*

Denies that Christ bequeathed a spiritual monarchy to St. Peter or to his successors in the see of Rome, II. 292; and see *Bishop of Rome.* Denies Papal power altogether, II. 520. What would be conceded, what denied by the, to the Pope; see *Bishop of Rome.* Was looked upon by the Popes with a very ill-will after her secession from the Court of Rome, II. 112.

Is accused of schism, I. 36. But nothing more unjustly, I. 95. 126. Is free from schism, V. 207. Not obstinately schismatical, V. 206—208. Was not schismatical in her Reformation, I. 207; and see *Schism.* Not doubtful whether the, be schismatical or not, II. 28. 43. Objections against the, in point of schism, *colourable,* not *forcible,* II. 50—52. Defence of the, at length, from the charge of schism, I. 83—279; II. 3—646; and see *Just Vindication, Replication, Schism Guarded.* Minor grounds for the accusation of schism against the, answered, I. 269—276. Not lawful or prudent, even if the Roman Church were free from schism, to quit the, and adhere to the Church of Rome, for fear of schism, II. 43, 44. Needless to clear the, from schism, in relation to other Churches than that of Rome, II. 71. Whether the religion of the, be the same or no with that of the Church of Rome, she is not schismatical, II. 208. See *Schism.*

Case of the, not to be perplexed with that of other Protestant Churches, II. 42. Has nothing to do with Luther, II. 236. 267. Nor with Calvin, I. 38; II. 62. Nor with the Huguenots, II. 552. Our forefathers were no Zuinglians, III. 168.

Terms of union between the Church of Rome and the, proposed by Baxter, Bramhall, Chillingworth, James I., Abp. Ussher; see *Baxter, Bramhall, Chillingworth, James I., Reconciliation, Ussher.*

What communion the, has with the Eastern and other Churches, II. 615. Has not separated from the

Eastern Churches, II. 60. Agreement of the, in doctrine, with the Greek Church; see *Church, Greek.*

Proposal to despoil the, of her temporalties, in the reign of Richard II., III. 433. and of Henry IV., III. 371. 419. 433. Immunities of the, invariably guaranteed by the Great Charters, II. 417. 420. Overrun by foreigners before the Reformation, I. 189; II. 405. Contentions in the, about vestments and rites, II. 75, 76. Was lawfully established in the reign of Edward VI., II. 94. And not lawfully suppressed by the Long Parliament, II. 95. Not dead, although under persecution, during the Great Rebellion, I. 63; II. 95, 96. Suffered more during the Great Rebellion than the Roman Catholics in England at the Reformation, II. 246; and see *Clergy, English.*

Patronage of the, in whom vested; see *Bishops English, Bishop of Rome, Kings of England.*

Canons, Constitutions, and Articles of the, confirmed by royal authority, IV. 493. See *Articles The XXXIX, Canons English.*

Liturgy of the; see *Ordinal, Prayer Book of Common.*

Synods of the; see *Synods, English.*

Polemic writers of the, I. 67. Grotius a sincere lover of the, III. 513. 583—586. Baxter's bitter invectives against the, III. 574. Archbishop Bramhall's sentiments respecting the, I. xiv; II. 21; V. Pref. 123. 186; and see *Bramhall, John.*

Enjoyed for many years the same liberties as the French Church, I. 148. 228; II. 426. 434. 443. 448; and see *Church, French.* And as the United Provinces, II. 443; and see *Brabant, United Provinces.*

Church of Ephesus, founded by an Apostle, I. 130. Authority thence derived to the, *ib.* That authority lost to the, by custom, *ib.*; and see *Patriarchate of Constantinople.* Independent, and how, I. 130. Polycrates Bishop of the, see *Polycrates.*

———, *Ethiopian*; see *Church of Æthiopia.*

Churches, Foreign Protestant, how far "unchurched" by the Church of England, III. 516—518. Are Churches not completely formed, II. 68, 69. How far to be condemned for want of Bishops, II. 68—70; III. 280. 475, 476. 517, 518. How far to be condemned for wanting an ordinary succession of Pastors, V. 258. See *Church, Particular.*

Episcopacy has the support of the majority of the, III. 479—481; and see *Bishops.* Many learned persons in the, desired Episcopacy, I. lxx. 38, 39; II. 70; and see *Diodati, Divines Foreign Reformed, Synod of Dort.* Were all desirous to retain Episcopacy if the Bishops would have joined in the Reformation, III. 491.

Not touched by the charges brought against the Scottish Disciplinarians, III. 242.

Have not cast out Free Will, IV. 218.

The case of the Church of England not to be perplexed with that of the, I. 38; II. 42. 62. 236. 265. 267. 552; V. 247; and see *Church of England.* Orders of the, how far acknowledged by the Church of England; see *Orders Presbyterian, Re-ordination.* The pleas of particular doctors, and in behalf of the, no argument against the orders of the Church of England, V. 247.

Churches, Foreign Protestant, Divines of the; see *Divines, Foreign Reformed.*

Church of France, liberties of, relatively to the Pope, I. 148. 225—228; II. 426. 434, 435. 443. 448, 449; and see *Bishop of Rome, Libertéz de l'Eglise Gallicane.* Supremacy of the King of France over the, see *Kings of France.* Met in a national Council at Tours, see *Council of Tours* A.D. 1510. Publicly proposed to restore the Patriarchate of, in the time of Cardinal Richelieu, I. 223, 224. 246.

———, *French Reformed*; see *Charenton.* Synods of the; see *Synods, French Reformed.* Divines of the; see *Divines, Foreign Reformed.*

———, *Gallican*; see *Church of France.*

———, *Greek*, doctrine of the, respecting the Procession of the Holy Spirit; see *Churches, Eastern.*

Agreement of the, in doctrine, with the Church of England, II. 265, 266. 632—634. Concerning the worship of Images, II. 632. and of the Virgin Mary, *ib.* The Invocation of Saints, II. 633. Justification, *ib.* Merits, *ib.* The Sacrifice of the Mass, *ib.* Purgatory, *ib.* Prayer for the dead, II. 633, 634. The authority of the Church, *ib.* The adoration of the Host, II. 634. Agreement of the, in rule of discipline, with the Church of England, *ib.* and in rule

of Faith, *ib.* Denies the additional articles of Pope Pius IV.'s Creed, *ib.* The Protestants not condemned by the modern Patriarchs of Constantinople, but the Romanists, II. 265, 266. Differences of the, from the Church of Rome, II. 634, 635. See *Cyril Lucar, Jeremiah, Joseph, Melancthon.* Confession of Faith of the, II. 266.

Acknowledges no subjection to the Church of Rome, I. 200. but only an honourable respect as to the Prime Patriarch and beginning of unity, *ib.* Rejects the sovereignty, and the legislative, judiciary, and dispensative powers claimed by the Pope, II. 634, 635. 644. Gerson's account of the words with which the, separated finally from the Pope, I. 200; II. 334, 335. 643—645; V. 272; and see *Nilus, Stewart.*

Form of Baptism in the, V. 218. It is allowed sufficient by the Romanists, *ib.*

Matter and form of the ordination of the, acknowledged sufficient by the Church of Rome, I. 271; II. 276; V. 187. 216. Romish doctrine of a double matter and form in ordination, contrary to the practice of the, V. 187. 216. Words of ordination in the, do not mention sacrifice, I. 271; II. 275, 276. Yet the orders of the, never denied by the Church of Rome, I. 271; II. 276; V. 187. 216.

Toleration of the doctrines of the, in Poland in 1595, II. 85. 213. 260. 275. Admitted by the Church of Rome to be orthodox in all other things than the Papal supremacy, II. 85. 213. And by the Bishop of Chalcedon, in all fundamental points, II. 213. Greek College at Rome, where the rites of the, are tolerated, II. 275, 276.

Is excommunicated annually in the Bulla Cœnæ by the Church of Rome, II. 242. 570.

Church of Hierusalem, see *Church of Jerusalem.*

——— *of Ireland*, the ancient, joined with the British, in refusing subjection to the see of Rome, II. 527.

Council of Cashel in 1172, to bring the, into conformity with the English Church, V. 82.

Filled with Puritans in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, I. cxiv. n. Consequent Calvinistical tone of the Irish Articles, I. xix. cxiv. n.

Miserable state of the, in 1633, when visited by Bramhall as Commissioner, I. vi. lxxix — lxxxii. lxxxiii—lxxxv. And of the Irish Bishoprics at the same time, I. vi. xviii. lxxx, lxxxi. lxxxix, xc; III. 47. Management and restoration of the, by Lord Strafford and Bramhall; see *Bramhall John, Wentworth Thomas.*

Convocation of the, in 1634, in which it accepted the English Articles but not the English Canons; see *Articles Irish, Bedell, Bramhall John, Convocation Irish, Ussher, Wentworth Thomas.*

Acts of Parliament relating to the, in Charles I.'s reign, I. vii. xix.

Overrun by Presbyterians in the time of Charles I. and of the Rebellion, I. xxiv. xxxv. lxxii.

Acts of Convocation of the, in 1661, in recognition of Abp. Bramhall's services, I. cxiii—cxvi. Petition of the clergy of the, to Charles II. on his Restoration, respecting their temporalties, I. cii—civ. Efforts of Abp. Bramhall on behalf of the, upon the Restoration, I. xii—xiv. cv — cvii. Conduct of Abp. Bramhall at the same time with respect to the re-ordination of clergy of the, who had only Presbyterian orders, I. xxiv. xxxvii. See *Bramhall, John.*

Bishops of the, nominated by Royal letters patent, without any election by Deans and Chapters, V. 200. See *Bishops, Irish.*

Church of Jerusalem, founded by the Apostles, I. 130. Authority thence derived to the, *ib.* Patriarchate of, how established; see *Patriarchate of Jerusalem.*

——— *of Muscovy*, or *Russia*, freed from obedience to the Patriarch of Constantinople, II. 181. Long continuance of the obedience of the, to that Patriarch, II. 567. Communion of the, with that Patriarch, *ib.* Excommunicated annually (among other Churches) by the Church of Rome in the Bulla Cœnæ, II. 242. Use of the Greek religion allowed to the, in Poland, by the Pope in 1595, II. 85. 213. 260. 275. See *Patriarchs of Moscow.*

——— *of Portugal*, distress of, during the war of independence between Spain and Portugal, 1640 — 1665, through the conduct of the Popes; see *Balatus Ovium, Bishops Portuguese, Lisbon, Lusitaniæ Gemitus, Portugal.* Liberties of the, asserted

against the Pope; see *Kings of Portugal.*

Church of Rome, how far the, is and is not a true Church, II. 38. 55. 563. 581. 590. Acknowledged by the Church of England to be a true Church metaphysically but not morally, *ib.* Acknowledged to be a true Church in this sense by Episcopal and even by Presbyterian divines, III. 518, 519. How far the, errs, in the judgment of the Church of England, II. 55—57. 581, 582.

Is not the Catholic Church, I. 25; II. 142. 212. 257, 258. 287. 369, 370; V. 180. 206. The Roman obedience is not the Catholic Church, II. 599. The rest of Christendom Catholic, as well as the Roman obedience, II. 79. 574, 575. 599. Catholic and Roman not convertible, I. 42; II. 79. The Catholic Church limited by the, to the Roman obedience, as by the Donatists to the Church of Cartenna in Africa; see *Donatists.* Is St. Peter's boat, not Noah's ark, II. 269. The grand imposture of the world is, to obtrude upon us the, for the Catholic Church, V. 206. The tradition of the, not the tradition of the Catholic Church, II. 383. Universal Roman Church a contradiction in adjecto, II. 34. Is the mother of some, but not the lady or mistress of all other Churches, I. 26. 232. 247; II. 200. 239. 325. 621; V. 207. 271, 272; and see St. *Bernard.* A mother to the Saxon, a sister to the British, but a mistress to no Church, II. 200. Claims to be a mistress, i. e. "domina vel magistra," not a teacher, of other Churches, II. 239. 621. How called a "Matrix Ecclesia" by St. Cyprian, I. 130; II. 175. and by King James I., II. 175. Is no foundation of Christians, II. 239, 240. 257. Can claim neither universality nor unity, II. 258. Whether the words attributed to certain ancient Councils—that "the first see cannot be judged,"—apply to the, alone, or to any of the Protopatriarchates, and what they mean, I. 255. See *Apostles, Bishop of Rome, Papacy,* St. *Peter.*

Being a Patriarchal Church, has usurped a power which the Church Universal did never own,—to constitute new essentials of Christian religion, II. 40.

Is an Apostolical Church, I. 130. Authority thence derived to the, *ib.* Supposed to have been founded by St. Peter, and at what time, I. 160; and see St. *Peter.*

Claims of the, to infallibility; see *Bishop of Rome, Church Catholic.* Hath no certainty of infallibility, II. 142. Infallibility claimed by the Romanists for the, and denied to the Protestants, I. 63; V. 274. His double error herein, V. 275. Is inconsistent with herself, II. 471. 598, 599. Many schisms in the, I. 126; II. 28. 86. 97. 258. Romanists cannot agree among themselves what is the Roman Church, to which this infallibility belongs, I. 63. 72, 73; II. 22. 314. 437. 599; V. 275, 276. See *Faith.*

Has not true Faith, I. 73; and see *Faith, Rule of.* Has altered the doctrine and discipline of the Church of Christ, II. 287, 288. by additions, II. 293. Has changed the Apostles' Creed, Apostolic succession, regiment. and communion, I. 72; and see *Pius IV.* Pope. Is materially heretical, II. 590. Yet retains not only essentials but many inferior truths, II. 55. Is not free from errors, II. 563. No difference between the Church of England and the, in substance, II. 40, 41. 86—89. 204. 604. 606, 607. or in articles of Faith, II. 34; V. 273, 274. or in Sacraments, II. 35. The religion of the, and of the Church of England, the same, II. 317. 604. 606. Questions between the, and the Church of England, in great part mere logomachies, III. 539. See *Church of England.* Enjoins as necessary sinful errors, II. 56, 57. And errors in matters of Faith, I. 72. 97. 247; II. 76. 241. 325. 622.

What articles of the new Creed of the, the Church of England has renounced, I. 54—61. Sacrifice of the Mass, I. 54; II. 88. 582. 633; and see *Sacrifice.* Transubstantiation, I. 8—22. 55; II. 581; and see *Lord's Supper, Transubstantiation.* Seven Sacraments, I. 55; II. 35; and see *Sacraments.* Adoration of the Host, see *Lord's Supper.* Justification and Merits as explained by the, I. 56, 57; II. 87. 633; and see *Justification.* Worship of the Blessed Virgin, see *Mary The Blessed Virgin.* Invocation of Saints, I. 57; II. 633; and see *Invocation of Saints.* Prayer for the Dead as joined with Purgatory, I. 59; II. 633, 634; and see *Prayer for the Dead, Purgatory.* Authority of the Pope, I. 60; and see *Bishop*

of Rome. Penance, I. 56. Indulgences, II. 37. Double matter and form in ordination, see *Ordination of Presbyters.* Liturgy in an unknown tongue, II. 35. 39. Private Masses, II. 634. Detention of the cup in the Sacrament from the laity, II. 35; and see *Lord's Supper.* Articles 28 and 31 of the Church of England, respecting Transubstantiation and the Sacrifice of the Mass, explained, II. 581, 582. Articles 19 and 22 of the Church of England respecting the errors of the, explained, II. 581. Article 33 of the Church of England, respecting excommunicated persons, does not apply to the Roman Catholics, II. 582. St. Augustin's doctrine respecting Baptism neither that of Protestants nor that of the, V. 178.

Teaching of the doctors of the, respecting Free Will, IV. 217. That teaching misrepresented by Hobbes, *ib.* Doctrines held by the, destructive to all civil societies; see *Bishop of Rome, Jesuits.*

Whether the, is guilty of idolatry, I. 43. 47; II. 28. 556. Is materially idolatrous, II. 86. Yet not absolutely fallen to ruin, I. 43. Many Churches in communion with the, have adhered to the doctrine of the Apostles, II. 329.

Why and how far schismatical, V. 207. Guilty of schism in four ways, I. 246. *Viz.* i. as seeking to usurp a higher place in the Church Catholic than is her due, I. 72. 247; II. 325. 620; V. 207. ii. as separating three parts of the Christian world from herself by her doctrines and censures, I. 72. 247; II. 325. 622; V. 207. Decrees other Churches Catholic or not, according to her own interest, II. 85. iii. as maintaining the Popes in their rebellion against General Councils, I. 246. 248; II. 326. 623—625. iv. for taking away all lines of Apostolical succession but her own, I. 72. 252—254; II. 327. 626, 627. See *Bishop of Rome, Council General.* Convinced of schism for enforcing the Creed of Pius IV. as necessary to salvation; see *Pius IV.* Pope. Obtrudes new articles of Faith and excommunicates for not receiving them, I. 72. 97. 247; II. 76. 241. Enjoins as necessary sinful errors, II. 56—58. Requires submission to herself as necessary to salvation, I. 63. 247. Errors and usurpations of the, which compelled a breach between her and the Church of England, not more than four hundred years old, III. 572. Some of them of older date, but not so obtruded until that time as to compel separation, III. 573. Not evident that the, is guiltless of schism, II. 43. Has departed out of the Catholic Church, II. 255. And the present, out of the ancient, Church of Rome, II. 44. 255. 329. Ought to look to the rock whence she is hewn, the true Catholic Œcumenical Church, II. 283. See *Bishop of Rome, Church of England, Court of Rome.*

Protestants confess no separation from the, but in her errors, II. 54. Protestants have not left the, in essentials, II. 39, 40. The Church of England in her Reformation hath not left the Catholic Church, but the, and that not absolutely, I. 197; II. 200. 257; V. 271. The English Church separated from the Court, not from the Church, of Rome; see *Church of England, Court of Rome.* The English Church reformed abuses, did not divide herself from the, II. 573. English penal laws more against the Court of Rome than against the, II. 117. See *Church of England, Laws Penal, Reformation, Separation.*

Terms of re-union between the Church of England and the, proposed by Bramhall; see *Bramhall, Reconciliation.* By Baxter, Chillingworth, James I., Archbishop Ussher; see *Baxter, Chillingworth, James I., Ussher.* How much the Church of England would concede to the, for the sake of peace, V. 271, 272; and see *Bishop of Rome.* How far the, is reconcileable with the Protestant Church; see *Reconciliation.*

Separation of the Greek Church from the; see *Church, Greek.* Orthodoxy of the Greek Church admitted by the; see *Church, Greek.* Never denied the Orders of the Greek Church, although there is no double matter and form in her ordination, I. 271; II. 276; V. 187. 216, 217.

Orders of the; see *Orders, Romish.* How far the orders of the Church of England are derived from those of the; see *Orders, English.*

Account of those in communion with the, in England, since the separation; see *Romanists, English.* Presbyterians and Brownists the best friends of the, in England, I. 36.

Expressions of the ancient Liturgies of the, respecting the Nicene

Creed, II. 480. Polemic writers of the, I. 67. Intrigues of the, in England during the great Rebellion; see *Jesuits, Moulin.*

Church of Russia, see *Church of Muscovy.*

——— *Saxon,* whence and when established in the several kingdoms of the Heptarchy, I. 267, 268; II. 133. Only a small portion of the, originated from St. Augustine, *ib.*; and see *Augustin* of Canterbury.

The Roman Church the mother but not the mistress of the, II. 200. 529, 530. But not entirely the mother of the, II. 300. 526. See *Church British, Gregory I.* Pope, *Scots.* Many British Christians remained in the, and transmitted their privileges, II. 300. 528, 529. The Mercians and Northumbrians had their orders from the Scots, not from Rome; see *Mercians, Northumbrians.* Not subject to the see of Rome; see *Kings, Saxon.*

Held the doctrine of the Real Presence, but not Transubstantiation; see *Ælfric.*

——— *of Scotland,* first planted in 203, according to Spottiswood, III. 247.

Refused to hold communion with St. Augustin's companions, II. 134. Independent of St. Augustin and of the Roman Church, I. 130; II. 176. 300. 527.

Freed from obedience to the Primate of York through the political independence of Scotland, II. 181. 530.

Episcopacy retained by the, until the Great Rebellion, although the Bishops' temporalties were taken from them, III. 246, 247. See *Bishops, Superintendents.*

Easter observed by the, at the same time with the British Church, I. 130; II. 176; and see *Easter.*

Church of Spain, Royal supremacy over the; see *Kings of Spain.* Nomination and investiture of Bishops in the, belongs to the Kings of Spain; see *Bishops Spanish, Kings of Spain.*

Protest of the Estates of Castile against Papal usurpations and extortions over the; see *Castile, Estates of.* Independence of the Bishops of the, on the Pope; see *Bishops, Spanish.*

Churches, Suburbicary; see *Patriarchate of Rome, Ruffinus.*

Church of Wales, Archbishop of Caerleon, and then of St. David's, primate of, until the reign of Henry I., and the jurisdiction then transferred to Canterbury; see *Caerleon, Canterbury Archbishopric of, Henry I.* King of England, *Menevia.* Independent of all other Churches up to that time; see *Church, British.*

Churches, Western, how many General Councils reckoned by the; see *Council, General.* Do not reckon the Council of Sardica a General Council, see *Council of Sardica.* Did not generally receive the Council of Trent, see *Council of Trent.*

Form of Ordination in the, and in the Eastern Churches, different; see *Ordination.*

Easter not observed in the, according to the Jewish accompt; see *Easter.*

Saturday, how observed of old in the; see *Saturday.*

Church Courts; see *Courts, Ecclesiastical.*

——— *Government;* see *Bishops, Church Catholic, Church Primitive, Patriarchs, Primates.*

——— *Property,* see *Temporalties.* Always held lawful to alienate, in certain cases, I. 119.

Cicero, Marcus Tullius, passages from, respecting the law of nature, IV. 329. 335; V. 19. The object of punishment, IV. 354. The religiousness of the Roman people, I. 191; IV. 520, 521.

Circumcision, not absolutely necessary without any qualification or exception under the Law, V. 176, 177. See *Peter Lombard.* Abrogated by the Apostles and elders in a Council, as regarded Gentile converts, V. 45. Analogy of Baptism to, V. 12. 176, 177.

Cistercians, statute of Henry IV. of England against those who brought or prosecuted Papal Bulls in favour of the, I. 139; II. 433. 441, 442.

Cive, De, Treatise of Hobbes so called; see *Bramhall John, Hobbes.*

Civil Magistrate; see *King, Magistrate.*

Clarâ, Franciscus a Sanctâ (i. e. *Christopher* or *Francis Davenport*), Chaplain to Queen Henrietta Maria, III. 524. A learned and ingenuous writer in Bramhall's judgment, I. 173; III. 524. Book of, against Bramhall and Hammond upon the question of schism, II. Pref. Paraphrastic Exposition of the XXXIX Articles by, I. 30. 125. 165. 170. 173—175; II. 221, 222. 582.

Allows withdrawal of obedience from the Pope in certain cases, I. 173, 174. Justifies the political jurisdiction of princes over ecclesiastical persons in ecclesiastical causes, I. 30.

125. 165. 170; II. 221, 222. Allows that princes are bound to protect their subjects from the tyranny of ecclesiastical judges, I. 170.

Extract from, respecting the invocation of Saints, I. 58. On Justification by Special Faith, II. 209. Judgment of, upon the 33rd of the XXXIX Articles, II. 582.

Allows possibility of salvation to Protestants, I. 80.

Acknowledged the validity of the English Ordinal, in 1634, III. 115. g.

Clarendon, Earl of; see *Hyde.*

——— *Statute* or *Assize* or *Constitutions of;* see *Statute of Clarendon.*

Clark, William, a Roman Catholic Priest, executed for treason against James I., although the act was committed prior to the King's coronation, III. 369.

Clarke, see *Clerke.*

Claudius Cæsar; see *Cæsar, Claudius.*

Claudius, Emperor of Æthiopia, refused to submit to the supremacy of the Pope, III. 557.

Clemens Alexandrinus, quotations from, respecting the Lord's Day, V. 43. Parallel drawn by, between the Lord's Day and certain heathenish festivals, V. 12. h. Held, that Kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384.

Clement, St., Bishop of Rome 91—100 (probably), contemporary with the Apostles, ordained by St. Peter, I. 162. Ordained himself only fifteen persons, *ib.* Patriarchate of, did not include Britain, *ib.* Expression from the Epistle attributed to, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 472. Name of Bishop of Bishops given to St. James the Great in the same Epistle, II. 154. Passage from the Epistle of, to the Corinthians, concerning the observance of the Lord's Day, V. 41. r. 42. s. 58.

——— *II.,* Pope 1046-1047, by name Syndeger Bishop of Bamberg, I. 173. Created Pope by Henry II. Emperor of Germany, *ib.*

——— *V.,* Pope 1305—1314, Decretals of, II. 429. Asserted the coronation oath of the German Emperors to be an oath of allegiance to himself, I. 150.

——— *VI.,* Pope 1342—1352, fruitless address of Edward III. of England to, for redress of grievances, in 1343, I. 195; II. 145.

——— *VII.,* Pope 1523—1534, appeal of the Emperor Charles V. from, to a General Council, I. 214, 215. Gave out a Bull privately condemning Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine, I. 196; II. 188. Excommunication of Henry VIII. by, II. 237. Threatened appeal of Henry VIII. from, to a General Council; see *Bonner, Henry VIII.* Bull of, sent to James V. of Scotland, II. 105. 113; and see *Bulls, Papal.*

Clement VIII., Pope 1592—1605, sent a Phœnix plume to Ter-Owen, to encourage him in his rebellion, II. 113. Sent two briefs to James I. to exclude him from the throne of England unless he would take an oath to promote the Roman Catholic interest, *ib.* Made Mr. Blackwell Archpriest of England, I. 184.

——— *XI.,* Pope 1700—1721, decided against the validity of English orders, and that English clergy should be re-ordained upon entering the Church of Rome, in 1704, III. 114. g.

Clergy; see *Bishops, Deacons, Orders, Ordination, Priests.*

——— *English,* have due mission, and due ordination; see *Orders English, Ordination of Presbyters.* Have a judgment of direction in the interpretation of Scripture; see *Judgment, Scriptures.*

Oath of allegiance due from the, to the King, not to the Pope, II. 416—422. Laws to that effect, II. 421. Prohibited to quit England without the King's leave, II. 421, 422; and see *Anselm.* Not exempted from secular judges, II. 140—142. Such delinquents as the King thought fit, excluded by him from benefit of clergy, II. 420, 421.

Re-ordination of the, by the Roman Church, no argument against the validity of their orders, III. 114. Practice of the Roman Church respecting the re-ordination of the; see *Bonner, Clement XI.* Pope, *Orders English, Paul IV.* Pope, *Pole Reginald.*

Presbyterians find fault with, being Privy Councillors, yet make ministers commissioners, III. 304.

Alleged Præmunire incurred by the, in Henry VIII.'s reign, on account of their consent to Cardinal Wolsey's legantine authority, I. 150. e. 118,840*l.* extorted from the, by Henry VIII. upon that pretext, I. 150.

Angry attack of the Observator upon the, of Charles I.'s time, III. 466. Impertinent railing of Mr. Baxter against the, at that time, III.

580—582. The Episcopal, not inferior to the Non-conformists, III. 581. The former suffered for faith, the latter for faction, III. 582. Sufferings of the, during the Rebellion, II. 49. 95, 96. 246; III. 509. 581, 582; V. 123, 124; and see *Martyrology of the City of London, Sequestrations.* Sufferings of the, in their exile at that time, I. x, xi. lxvii. 276, 277. Constancy of the, at that time, II. 49. 95. 246; V. 123. Some few, but not many, tempted by their sufferings to fall away from the Church, V. 123, 124.

Clergy, Articles of the; see *Articles of the Clergy.*

Clerk, John, Bishop of Bath and Wells 1523 — 1540, pronounced Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine invalid, II. 188.

Clerke, Francis, notary public at Abp. Parker's consecration, III. 98. n. 175. Probably connected with the person mentioned by Bramhall as a witness to the genuineness of the Register of it, III. 98.

———, or *Clarke, John,* proxy for the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury at Abp. Parker's Confirmation, III. 180. See III. 98.

———, *Mr.,* a witness to the genuineness of the Register of Abp. Parker's consecration, III. 98. See *Clerke, Francis.*

Cletus, see *Anacletus.*

Clogher, Bishop of; see *Leslie.*

Coarctation, see *Election.*

Code, see *Justinian.*

Cœlum Empyreum, the Heaven of the Blessed, existence of the, denied by Hobbes, IV. 535. See *Heaven.*

Cœnæ, Bulla; see *Bulla Cœnæ.*

Coke, Lord, testimony of, that Henry VIII.'s statutes against the Pope were declarative, not operative, i. e. did explain old laws, not enact new, I. 151; II. 296. 517: and see *Caudrey, Case of.*

Coleman, or *Colman,* a Scottish Bishop, dispute of, with Abp. Wilfrid, respecting the observation of Easter, II. 135. 176.

Collation of Carthage, A. D. 411, against the Donatists; little advantage gained by the, I. 68. Meaning of 'the Catholic Church,' sufficiently debated at the, I. 109. A civil officer presided at the, see *Marcellinus* Tribune.

Colleton, see *Collington.*

Collier, Jeremy, mistake of, respecting the date when Congés d'Eslire were first used, III. 66. k.

Collier's Creed, what is meant by the, I. 39.

Collington, or *Colleton, John,* Archpriest of the English Romanists in 1614, testimony of, to the genuineness of the register of Abp. Parker's Consecration, III. 101.

Collins, Robert, Canon of Canterbury in 1559, not present at Abp. Parker's election, III. 193. Deprived, III. 193. e.

———, *Samuel,* D.D., Regius Professor of Divinity at Cambridge, and Provost of King's College 1615—1644; cited by Mason as evidence to the authenticity of the Register of Abp. Parker's Consecration, III. 97.

Colloquy of Poissy, between the Gallican Church and the Reformers, in 1561, notice of the, I. 68. o. Little advantage gained by the, I. 68.

Colman, see *Coleman.*

Cologne, Archbishop of, answer of an, to Pope Nicolas I., I. 219.

———, *Council of;* see *Council of Metz.*

Columba, St., called by the Irish Columbkill, and why, I. 274. Converted the British Scots, and founded the Abbeys of Derry and of Iona and the Bishopric of the Isles, I. 274; II. 169. Confounded by Bede with Columbanus, I. 273, 274.

———, *Cathedral of,* at Derry, I. cxiii. n.

Columbanus, see *Columba.*

Columbkill, see *Columba.*

Comber, Thomas, D.D., Dean of Durham, criticism of, upon Abp. Bramhall's preaching, V. Pref.

Commandments, The Ten; see *Decalogue.*

Commandment, The Fourth; see *Fourth Commandment.*

———————, *The Eighth;* see *Eighth Commandment.*

Commission of Array; see *Array, Commission of.*

———, *or Royal Assent,* to confirm and consecrate Bishops in England, what is meant by the, III. 231.

Two, issued for Archbishop Parker, III. 72. The first, at length, from the Rolls, III. 72, 73. Which was first published by Bramhall, III. 74. And was unknown to Mason because not entered in the Archiepiscopal Register (not having been executed), III. 179. p. Not executed, and why, III. 73, 74. The first draught of the, in the State Paper Office, III. 179. p. The second, III. 52. At length, from the Rolls, III. 74, 75. from the Archi-

episcopal Register, III. 178, 179. Mistake in the name of Bp. Hodgkin in the, as entered on the Rolls, III. 76, 77. That mistake copied, and corrected by an interlineation, in the Register, III. 178. n. Certificate of six lawyers to the legal validity of the, III. 88, 89. 179, 180. Dispensative clause in the, what it was, III. 77. Why inserted in the, III. 77—82. 112; V. 239—242. Inserted to obviate certain technical objections to the legality (by English statute law) of the, *ib.* It had nothing to do with Bishop Coverdale's dress upon the occasion, III. 77. Nor with the fact that Bps. Barlow and Scory were not enthroned at the time in their Bishoprics, III. 78. It related solely to the statutes and ecclesiastical laws of England, and to no essential of ordination, III. 83. 112. 238. It could not possibly refer to the Nag's Head legend, III. 83. It was used only in the confirmation (and other political acts), and not in the consecration, of Abp. Parker, III. 83. 183. 185. 202, 203, 204. m. 206. It is limited by its very words, III. 112. It would not prove the consecration invalid, even had it been an undue assumption of power, V. 238, 239. See *Parker, Matthew.*

The, issued for Bishops Cox, Grindal, and Sandys, III. 93. 218, 219. For the other Bishops consecrated upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 219—229.

Commission, High, III. 337, 338. Presbyterians murmur against the, yet establish Presbyteries, III. 306. Bramhall a Commissioner of the; see *Bramhall, John.*

Commissioners, certain, sent into Scotland in 1643 by the English Parliament, to negotiate a treaty of assistance with the Scots, V. 104. i. Declaration of the, sent to Sir Thomas Glemham, V. 104. Answer to it by Bramhall, V. 104—109. Iniquitous treaty negociated by the, with the Scotch Covenanters, V. 108, 109.

Of the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland, in 1648, Declarations and Papers of the, III. 242. 262. 264, 265, 266. 274, 275. Treasonable and monstrous doctrines advanced by them, *ib.*

Common Prayer, Book of; see *Prayer, Book of Common.*

Commons, House of, English; see *Parliament, English.* Irish; see *Parliament, Irish.* Irish in 1661; see *Adventurers, Bramhall John, Domville, Mervyn, Sermon, Speech.*

Commonwealth, origin of the, not from fear, as Hobbes affirmeth, IV. 595. Pernicious doctrines of Hobbes respecting the, see *Hobbes.*

The new Scottish Discipline injurious to the, see *Discipline.*

The regiment of the Church conformed to that of the; see *Church Catholic, Emperors, Patriarchs, Primates.* Dangerous doctrine of Cartwright to the contrary, see *Cartwright.*

Communion, with the Christian Catholic Church, I. 103. Absolutely necessary; see *Church Catholic, Schism, Separation.* External and internal, distinguished, I. 103—105. Wherein internal, doth consist, I. 81. 103. Wherein external, doth consist, I. 104; II. 78. Internal may not, external may, be suspended, I. 104; II. 65. and this in different degrees, *ib.* And withdrawn, by and from particular Churches, I. 105. Not the like degree of obligation to an exact, in all externals, *ib.* Implies not unity in all opinions, I. 105. But sometimes commands separation, I. 106, 107. In all points of Faith, not necessary always, II. 78. In Sacraments, how far necessary, II. 79. And in rites and ceremonies, *ib.* In Faith, doth not acquit from schism, II. 78. See *Catholics, Church Catholic, Errors, Excommunication, Opinions, Separation.*

It is lawful to hold, in some things, with material idolaters, II. 311, 312. 583. And with heretics; see *Arians, Novatians.* And with schismatics, II. 46. The name 'Catholic' derived from universal, not from right belief, II. 213. More dangerous to exclude than to include others in our, *ib.*

The Church of England has not broken ecclesiastical, for 'temporal concernments;' nor separated itself from the, of the Catholic Church; see *Church of England.* But holds, with thrice so many Christians as the Church of Rome; and not with heretics, nor with schismatics; see *Church of England.* What, the Church of England has with the Eastern and other Churches, and with the Church of Rome itself; see *Church of England.*

It is lawful to hold, with the Eastern Churches; see *Churches, Eastern.*

Free and general, between the

whole Christian world, desired by the Church of England, and hindered principally by the Church of Rome, II. 471. See *Bishop of Rome.*

Communion, The; see *Lord's Supper.*

Comnenus, Emmanuel, Emperor of Constantinople 1143—1180, law of, limiting gifts to the Church, I. 142.

Compel, sense of the word, in Holy Scripture, IV. 378. See *Compulsion.*

Competentes, who they were, II. 479.

Compromise, election by, of a Bishop, what it means, III. 195. o. See *Election of Bishops.* Was the method followed in the election of Archbishop Parker to the see of Canterbury, III. 195, 196.

Compulsion, what is meant by, properly, IV. 378. 391. Proper, is extrinsecal, IV. 125. Election and, inconsistent, IV. 387. Actions proceeding from fear are not compulsory, IV. 124. Necessitarians distinguish between liberty from necessitation and liberty from, IV. 121. Antecedent necessity involves, *ib.* Necessitation and, both opposite to liberty, IV. 133. True liberty a freedom from necessity as well as from, IV. 395. Hobbes's contradictory assertions about, I. 589, 590. See *Liberty, Necessity, Spontaneity.*

Con, Rev. George, a Papal Nuncio in England during the reign of Charles I., I. 34. q; III. 527.

Concomitance, doctrine of; see *Cup.*

Concordats, of the German Emperors with the Popes, I. 210. 216. Of Francis I. with Leo X., I. 223.

Concupiscence, without consent, question between Romanists and Protestants whether it be a sin or no, IV. 439, 440. Hobbes's gross errors concerning, *ib.*

Conference; see *Collation, Colloquy.* A, proposed by La Milletière to King Charles II., between Roman Catholic Doctors and Ministers of the Reformed Church at Paris, under the authority of the King of France, I. cxxxvii. 65, 66. but not desired by the King of England, I. 67. nor fit to be granted by the King of France, I. 68. nor to be accepted by the Reformed Ministers, *ib.* nor could any success be hoped from it, *ib.*

Confession, what it is, V. 158. Not a Sacrament, V. 222. Confessed by many Roman doctors to be not of Divine institution, V. 222, 223. Antiquity and authority of, V. 158, 159. Great use of, V. 158, 159. 222.

Wrongly regarded by Roman doctors as absolutely necessary to salvation by Christ's own institution, V. 160. 223. And as meritorious, *ib.* And restrained to a plenary and particular enumeration of sins, *ib.* Grossly abused by the Romanists, V. 159, 160. 190, 191. 223. What the English Church dislikes in the Romish doctrine concerning, V. 190. 222. and in the Romish practice of, V. 191. 223.

Protestants have not pared away all manner of shrift or, V. 222; and see *Absolution, Keys Power of the.* Protestant, for the most part too general, V. 160.

Confession of Augsburg, A.D. 1530, is in favour of Episcopacy, I. 38; II. 63; III. 480. 482. 491. 517. 531, 532, 533. Was subscribed by Calvin, I. 38; II. 63; III. 482. 533. Was sanctioned in 1555 by the Emperor Ferdinand, I. 211.

——— *of the Greek Church,* a tract so called, by Cyril Lucar, II. 266. See *Church, Greek.*

——— *of Saxony,* doctrine of, respecting Bishops, III. 481. 532.

———, *The Suevic,* in favour of Episcopacy, III. 481. 532.

Confessions, Harmony of Protestant, proves, that the controversies between Protestants are neither so many nor of such moment as is imagined, II. 324. 618. The Observations at the end of the, upon the Confessions of Augsburg and of Saxony, make a triple division of Episcopacy and do not absolutely condemn all kinds, III. 481, 482.

Confirmation, Sacrament of, in what sense a Sacrament, V. 189. Balm the right matter of, according to the Roman Schools; see *Balm.* Held by the Roman Schools, that the Pope by delegation may authorize a Priest to bestow, II. 71; III. 26; V. 247. A Priest in the English Church has not power to bestow, by the English Ordinal, V. 189.

Confirmation of a Bishop Elect, what it is, III. 64, 65. Always performed in Bow Church for the Province of Canterbury, see *Bow Church.* Record of the, of Archbishop Parker, III. 83, 84. 175—203. Table of the, of the Bishops in the 2nd and 3rd of Elizabeth, III. 216—229.

Conformity, signifieth agreeableness as well as likeness, IV. 293, 294.

Congé d'Eslire, the King's license to choose a Bishop, III. 64. Grant of the, to the Chapter, proves that they

could not choose a Bishop without the Prince's leave, V. 202. Mistake of Collier respecting the date of the first use of the, in England, III. 66. k. Recognized by the Articles of the Clergy, in 9 Edw. II., I. 146. And by the Statute of Provisors, 25 Edw. III. *ib.* Abolished by a statute of 1 Edw. VI., III. Pref. 66. k; V. 200. Restored 1 Mary, V. 200. d. The universal practice in England ever since, *ib.* Not used in Ireland, V. 200. The, in the case of Archbishop Parker, at length, III. 71. 190.

Congregation De Propagandâ Fide, notice of the, I. 66. Founded by Gregory XV. in 1622, I. 66. h. Account of the component members of the, *ib.*

Conquest, a just, acquireth good right of dominion, III. 341. Law of, IV. 331.

Conscience, whether the, is bound by human laws; see *Laws*. An erroneous, obligeth first to reform it, then to follow it, IV. 413.

Consecration of the Elements in the Lord's Supper, Protestants intend to confer power of, in Priestly Ordination, V. 213. The interior intention of the consecrant not necessary in order to the, V. 212. See *Change, Lord's Supper, Priest.*

——— *of Bishops*, three Bishops necessary to perform, according to the canons of the Church, and of the English Church, III. 73. c. 77. Four, according to the English statute law, *ib.* Performed by St. Augustin of Canterbury alone, from necessity; see *Augustin* of Canterbury. A Bishop and two mitred Abbots by delegation from the Pope may perform, according to the Roman Schools, III. 106. Or a Bishop and two simple Presbyters, *ib.* Not performed by Presbyters of old in Britain, I. 273. Instances in Bede mistaken, I. 273—275. Not performed by Presbyters at the consecration of the Bishops upon the accession of Queen Elizabeth, I. 270, 271; and see *Bishops English, Nag's Head Fable, Parker Matthew.*

English Form of (Edward VI.th's), sufficient as regards the specification of the peculiar office of Bishops, III. 162—164. Matter and form of the English Form of, justified; see *Ordinal English, Orders English.*

Additions made to the Form of, in the Ordinal of 1662, III. 164. m. English Form of, legally valid at Queen Elizabeth's accession; see *Ordinal, English.*

Of Archbishop Parker; see *Parker, Matthew.* Of Bishop Barlow; see *Barlow, William.* In the 2nd and 3rd Elizabeth, Table of the, III. 216—231.

Consecration and Succession of Protestant Bishops Vindicated, by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part i. Discourse v, III. 21—172. Contents of, III. 15—20. Advertisement prefixed to, by the Publisher, written by Dr. John Barwick, III. 5—10. Postscript to the Publisher's Advertisement to, by Bramhall himself, III. 11—14. Occasion and editions of, I. xxix. xxx; III. Pref. Replies to, I. xxx. r; III. 22. e. Information and documents supplied to Bramhall for, by Dr. Barwick; see *Barwick, John.*

——— *at the Nag's Head*, lying fable of the; see *Nag's Head Fable.*

Consent, Universal; see *Vincentius Lirinensis.* Tertullian's saying respecting, II. 67. St. Augustin's, II. 67, 68. 383; V. 34. Bramhall's opinion of, II. 69.

Conservation, of the Body of Christ in the Elements at the Holy Eucharist, scholastic theory of, I. 17. 22.

Constable, Sir Henry, Viscount Dunbar, III. 449.

———, *Father H.*, an alleged witness (at third hand) to the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f. 42. 107.

Constance, Advices of; see *Advices of Constance.*

———, *Council of;* see *Council of Constance.*

Constantine the Great, where born, I., 159. Exercised the right of summoning Councils, I. 207. Called the Council of Arles, I. 159. No witness to Papal authority, II. 224—226. Exercised judiciary power over Bishops, *ib.* Epistle of, to the Nicomedians, II. 226.

——— *Copronymus*, Emperor at the time of the Seventh General Council (i. e. the Second Council of Nice), A. D. 787, II. 231.

Constantinople, Council of; see *Council of Constantinople.*

——— *Patriarchate of;* see *Patriarchate of Constantinople.*

———, *Patriarchs of;* see St. *Chrysostom, Cyril Lucar,* St. *Gregory Nazianzen, Ignatius, Jeremiah, John, Joseph, Menna, Nestorius.*

Constantinopolitan Creed; see *Creed, Constantinopolitan.*

Constantius, Emperor, unjustly banished Pope Liberius and as unjustly restored him, I. 173.

Constantius, in his Life of St. German, corrects Prosper's account of that Bishop's mission to England, II. 171. 536.

Constitution, The, of the kingdom, may not be superseded by privilege of Parliament, III. 415. See *Parliament.*

Constitutions, Apostolical, not merely human laws, V. 36. 38. Observation of the Lord's Day one of the, V. 37. and not a prudential constitution merely, *ib.* See *Canons, Apostolical.*

——————*of Clarendon*, see *Statute of Clarendon.*

Consubstantial, the thing, though not the word, in the Creed before the Nicene Council, II. 474.

Consubstantiation, is a presumptuous theory, I. 22. The doctrine of Pope Nicolas II. against Berengarius seems to favour, rather than Transubstantiation, I. 12.

Contactus Verus—Virtualis, explained, IV. 433.

Contingent events and actions explained, IV. 111. 183. There is more in contingencies than ignorance, IV. 365. Hobbes's definition of, *ib.* Of free and contingent causes, IV. 269. Denied by the Stoics, admitted by the Necessitarians, IV. 116. How reconcileable with the prescience of God and with His decrees, IV. 156. A man cannot predeliberate perfectly of, IV. 429. See *God, Foreknowledge of.* Question between Bramhall and Hobbes respecting freedom, is of human actions, not of natural contingencies, IV. 181.

Contradiction, Liberty of, } explained,
Contrariety, ————, } IV. 33. 36.

Controversies, against multiplying, I. 23. On the manner of the Presence in the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, I. 14—19. About the Sabbath and Lord's Day, see *Sabbath.*

Conversion, of a country to the Gospel, gives no just title to jurisdiction over it to the converters, II. 133. See *Gregory I.* Pope, *Patriarchs, Patriarchate of Rome.*

Convocation, English, origin of the, V. 229. Attributed to Cardinal Wolsey, *ib.* Sits always at the same time with the Parliament, *ib.* Differs from an ordinary Synod, II. 412. All English, always assembled by the King's writ to the Archbishop of Canterbury, II. 401. 409. 413—416; III. 244. And dissolved by the same, II. 413. Form of writ for assembling the, *ib.* for dissolving the, *ib.* Form of Procuration to the, II. 412. Convocations of 1530—1534; see *Synods, English.*

Convocation, Irish, of Cashel in 1172; see *Council of Cashel.* Of 1634, the first after the Earl of Strafford's coming to Ireland, debate in the, concerning the English and Irish Articles and Canons, I. vii. xix, xx. xxxvi. lxii; V. 80—82. 80. l. Of 1661, Acts of the, in recognition of the services of Abp. Bramhall; see *Bramhall, John.*

Coote, Dr., Dean of Down, Letter to, from Bishop Bramhall, I. lxxxvii.

——, *Sir Charles*, made Earl of Mountrath, and sworn in a Lord Justice of Ireland in December 1660, V. 136. e. Capture of Galway by, May 1652. V. 117. o.

C., R. (i. e. Richard Chalcedon); see *Smith, Richard.*

Corax, proverb concerning, from Sixtus Empiricus, IV. 83.

Corbet, John, book of, against the Presbyterians, erroneously attributed to Bramhall, I. xxxv.

Corbona, meaning of, V. 40.

Cordell, Sir William, Master of the Rolls in the reigns of Mary and Elizabeth, III. 179. p. Legatee and friend of Abp. Parker, *ib.* Meaning of the endorsement of the name of, upon Royal Letters Patent of that date, *ib.*

Corinth, schism in the Church of, in St. Paul's time, yet not about essentials, II. 27, 28. 48.

Cork and Ross, Bishop of; see *Chappell.*

Cork, Earl of; see *Boyle.*

Cornelius, Pope 251—252, reprehension of, by St. Cyprian, for receiving the complaint of Felicissimus, I. 61; II. 150.

Cornwall, Bishopric of, or *St. German's*, II. 139.

Coronation of King Charles II., Sermon preached by Bramhall upon the day of the, Works Part iv. Discourse iii, V. 113—135.

Corpus Christi Day, when and why instituted, I. 21. Not observed by the Greek any more than by the English Church, II. 634.

————— *College*, Cambridge, Abp. Parker a member of, III. 199. v. Record of Archbishop Parker's consecration preserved at, III. 210—213. Many other documents relating to the same subject also preserved there, III. 179. p. 216—231.

Corrario, Angelo de, Pope during the schism at Rome as Gregory XII; see *Gregory XII.*

Corsica, part of the original Patriarchate of Rome, I. 156.

Council, General, the best Head of the Church, I. 32; II. 156. 585. 616; and see *Head of the Church.* The representative Church, I. 72. 248, 249; II. 22. 92. 183. 212. 247. 315. 437. 468. 610. Successor of the Apostolical College in the government of the Church, II. 186. The supreme ecclesiastical power, I. 261. The highest tribunal of the Church, II. 73. 148. 247. To which Patriarchal power has been always subordinate, I. 261; II. 185, 186. Has erected and changed Patriarchates, I. 261; II. 185. The supreme judicature in controversies of Faith, I. 176. 249; II. 84. 438; V. 270. Alone can explicate the Creed, I. 26. Yet cannot add to or take away from the Creed, *ib.* Power of a, respecting Articles of Faith, II. 90. The promise of Christ's Presence where two or three are gathered together, applicable to a, II. 565. The proper remedy of schism, I. 254; II. 148; III. 521, 522. To give a primacy of order, rests with a, II. 609. Acquiescence in the decrees of a, necessary, II. 92, 93.

Is an extraordinary remedy, not the ordinary band of unity, II. 567, 568. No need for a, to sit always, because it is an ecclesiastical Head, II. 616.

Is above the Pope, according to the Gallican Church, I. 227. The Pope subjected to a, by the Councils of Pisa, Constance, Basle; see *Council of Basle—of Constance—of Pisa.* Complete without the Pope, II. 248—250. The Pope's confirmation adds nothing to a, I. 250; II. 91. Comparison between a, and a Parliament, II. 219, 250. 330, 331. 637, 638. The Pope hath not like authority over a, that a King hath over a Parliament, *ib.* See *Bishop of Rome.* Appeals from the Pope to a, see *Appeals to a General Council.*

Conditions of a, according to the Church of England, the same as those required by the Primitive Church, II. 565, 566. Conditions of a, according to Bellarmine, II. 330. 532. 568. The summons to a, ought to be general, II. 330. 565. 635. The great Patriarchs ought to be summoned to a, II. 330. 532. 565. 635, 636. Presence of the five Proto-patriarchs, either in person or by proxy, ever required to complete a, by Bellarmine's confession, II. 249. 532, 533. 565. General admittance of all persons capable, a necessary condition of a, II. 565.

What part in a, belongs to laymen, II. 231.

Assembled by Emperors, II. 568; III. 244. With the consent and advice of the Pope according to Bellarmine, II. 568. The power of assembling a, so far as it rightly belongs to the Pope, not taken away from him by the Church of England, II. 568, 569. Cannot be assembled without the consent of princes, II. 568; and see *Kings.* Confirmed by Emperors, see *Emperors.*

Seven admitted by the Eastern Churches, II. 533. Eight by the Western, *ib.* Lists of those received, *ib.* The first five incorporated into the laws of England, *ib.* The first four received with peculiar reverence by the Church of England, II. 427. 564; and see *Creed.* And by St. Gregory the Great, I. 97. 157; II. 249. 427. 489. And by King James I., II. 427. And by the Pope himself at his election by a decree of the Council of Constance, *ib.* And interwoven in the laws of England, *ib.* The Council of Sardica not a, and why; see *Council of Sardica.* The Council of Trent not a, and why; see *Council of Trent.*

Possible in Bramhall's time by means of proxies, I. 81; II. 566. Yet so hindered by the power of the Turk in the East and of the Pope in the West, that a free, were hardly possible, I. 262; II. 566. Oath of allegiance taken by Bishops to the Pope inconsistent with a free, II. 438. The Church of England has not hindered a, by renouncing the Papacy, II. 568, 569. All since those of Constance and Basle and the two Pisan Councils have wanted conciliary freedom, II. 625.

English Reformation not contrary to the decrees of a, II. 182—185. but in pursuance of them, II. 185—187. Jurisdiction of a, in England, not denied by the Oath of Supremacy, II. 221.

The Popes rebel against, I. 248. 261, 262. and are maintained in their rebellion by the Court of Rome, II. 326. 623—625. The Court of Rome rebels against, I. 248, 249; II. 247. Romish doctrines cannot be proved out of the first four, I. 65.

See *Bishop of Rome, Church Catho-*

lic—of England—of Rome, Council of Basle—of Constance—of Florence—of Lateran the Fifth—of Pisa.

Council, Apostolic, at Jerusalem, A.D. 47, the Sabbath abrogated by the, V. 36—38.

———, *National,* called and governed by Christian monarchs in their own dominions, III. 244. By English Kings and Bishops in England, I. 133. 205; and see *Kings of England.* May remedy the encroachments of the Roman Court with the consent of sovereign princes, I. 176. And exclude new Creeds and Articles of Faith, *ib.* Never could be called in England by the Pope without the King's leave, I. 179; II. 411—414. Nor in France, I. 226; II. 426; III. 244. Nor in other countries, III. 244. See *Synods.*

———, *Œcumenical;* see *Council, General.*

———, *Provincial,* the proper remedy of schism, I. 254. Reduced from twice to once a year, and afterwards to once in three years, and why, I. 265. See *Council National, Synods.*

——— *of Aix la Chapelle* (or *Aquisgrane*), the Third, A.D. 816; called by Louis IX. of France, I. 206.

———, the Fifth, A.D. 836; investitures allowed to Kings by, II. 418. Confined the homage of Bishops to Kings, *ib.*

——— *of Alexandria,* A.D. 430, testimony of the Synodical Epistle of, to Nestorius (misquoted as of the General Council of Ephesus), respecting the equality of the Apostles among themselves, I. 153. k; II. 469.

——— *of Ariminum,* A.D. 359, deceived into giving assent to Arianism, and rejecting the word Homoousios, and how, II. 91; III. 403.

——— *of Arles,* the First, A.D. 314; consisted of two hundred, some say of six hundred, Bishops, I. 159. Convocated by Constantine the Great respecting the Donatists, *ib.* British Patriarchs or Primates subscribed the, I. 159; III. 339. 467. and in what order of precedence, I. 159.

———, commonly called the Sixth, A.D. 813; assembled by Charlemagne for the reformation of the Church and its decrees confirmed by him, II. 414, 415.

——— *of Barre,* A.D. 1097, honourable reception of Archbishop Anselm at the, by Pope Urban II., I. 164.

——— *of Basle,* A.D. 1431-1442, was regulated by the equal votes of all Christian nations, II. 566. Was free, II. 625. Claimed power to reform the Church, "tam in capite quam in membris," II. 510.

Confirmed the decree of the Council of Constance respecting the completeness of a General Council without the Pope, and the subjection of the Pope to a General Council, I. 249, 250. 262; II. 43. 56. 250. 264. 280. 375. 492. And respecting withdrawal of obedience from Popes in certain cases, I. 174. Rejected the doctrine of the Pope's absolute universal monarchy by Christ's own ordination, II. 511. Commentary upon the Synodal Answer of, containing similar doctrine respecting the Papal Supremacy, II. 375, 376. See *Pragmatic Sanction.*

Prohibited the payment of tenths and first-fruits to the Court of Rome, II. 401. 424.

Council of Becancelde, the First, A.D. 694; did not admit the Papal Supremacy, II. 142. King Withred presided in the, II. 142. 414.

——— *of Brixia,* A.D. 1080, of German and Italian Bishops, against Pope Gregory VII., summoned by the Emperor Henry IV., I. 206.

——— *of Carthage,* the Second A.D. 251 — the Third A.D. 252 — the Fourth A.D. 253—the Fifth A.D. 254; held by St. Cyprian independently of the Bishop of Rome, I. 61. z. 99. Essentials of Ordination according to the Fourth, III. 126. 129.

———, the Sixth A.D. 255 —the Seventh A.D. 256—the Eighth A.D. 256; held by St. Cyprian in opposition to Stephen Bishop of Rome respecting rebaptization of persons heretically baptized, I. 61. 99. Charitable language of St. Cyprian at the Eighth, I. 197; II. 311. 583.

——— *of Cashel,* A.D. 1172, to bring the Irish Church into conformity with the English, V. 82.

——— *of Chalons-sur-Saône* (or *Cabilonense*), the First, A.D. 813; held by Charlemagne for the reformation of the Church, and its decrees confirmed by him, II. 415.

——— *of Chalcedon,* the Fourth General, A.D. 451; not so many as five clergy from the Western Churches personally present at the, yet the Council a General Council, II. 567.

Canon of the, respecting Metropolitan sees, II. 180. Respecting appeals, II. 301. 534. That canon inconsistent

with the canon of the Council of Sardica, *ib.* and with the ecclesiastical monarchy of the Bishops of Rome, II. 534. Bellarmine's silly evasions to get rid of it, II. 534, 535.

Canon of the, respecting the Primacy or Patriarchate of the Bishop of Rome, I. 155. 261; II. 374. Gave equal privileges to the Patriarch of Constantinople with the Bishop of Rome, I. 130. 177. 261; II. 184. 249. 488. 534. 640; III. 553. And that upon the ground of the imperial dignity of the two cities, I. 155. 177; II. 290. 374. 488. and notwithstanding the protest of the Pope's legates, II. 249. 640. The canon of the, to this effect, of good authority, II. 489, 490. And confirmed by the Emperors, I. 177; II. 184. Divine right of the Papacy contrary to the, II. 487, 488. Oath of the Pope at his election to keep the faith of the, "to the least tittle," II. 427, 428. What that Faith was, respecting the Papacy, II. 428. 487—490.

Condemned Acacius, I. 261; II. 433. Anathematized Nestorius, II. 629. Creed of the; see *Creed, Chalcedonian.*

Council of Cologne, I. 219: so called by mistake for the Council of Metz. See *Council of Metz.*

——— *of Constance*, A.D. 1412—1416, was a continuation of the First Council of Pisa, I. 218. Was regulated by the equal votes of all Christian nations, II. 566. Deputies of the Nations at the, I. 251; II. 251. 263. Was free, II. 625. Claimed power to reform the Church "tam in capite quam in membris," II. 510.

Decree of the, confirmed by the Council of Basle, that the Pope is subject to a General Council, I. 249, 250. 262; II. 43. 56. 249, 250. 264. 280. 375. 492. This decree objected to, as unconfirmed by the Pope, I. 250. Answer to the objection, I. 251; II. 251, 252. This decree lawful, *ib.* and conciliarly made, *ib.* and not to be understood of dubious Popes only, *ib.* Of no consequence whether it were confirmed by the Pope or no, *ib.* Decree of, respecting withdrawing obedience from supposed Popes, I. 174. Turned out all pretenders to the Papacy, the right Pope and Antipopes all together, I. 252; II. 251. Some by persuasion, one (Benedict XIII.) by plain power, I. 252. Rejected the doctrine of the Pope's absolute universal monarchy by Christ's own ordination, II. 511. The condemnation of Wickliffe and Huss by the, qualified, as regarded the article of the Papal Supremacy, by reservations, I. 250; II. 387.

Decree of the, prohibiting the payment of first-fruits and tenths to the Court of Rome, II. 401. 424.

Decree of the, respecting the solemn profession of Faith by the Pope at his election, II. 427.

Decreed the detention of the Cup from the laity in the Holy Eucharist, I. 47. And that with an express non-obstante to the institution of Christ and to primitive practice, *ib.* See *Cup, Lord's Supper.*

Council of Constantinople, the Fourth (the Second General), A.D. 381; no clergy from the Western Churches personally present at the, yet was a General Council, II. 567. Canon of the, decreeing the establishment of the Patriarchate of Constantinople; see *Patriarchate of Constantinople.* Ratified by the Emperors, I. 177; II. 184.

———————, the Nineteenth, A.D. 536; confirmation of the decrees of the, by the Emperor Justinian, but with due regard to the spiritual authority of the Bishops, II. 428.

———————, the Twenty-second (the Fifth General), A.D. 553; esteemed a complete Council although Pope Vigilius refused to be present, II. 249.

———————, the Twenty-fifth (the Sixth General), A.D. 680; condemned Pope Honorius as a Monothelite, I. 254.

———————, or the Trullan, A.D. 692; see *Council, The Trullan.*

———————, the Twenty-eighth (the Eighth General, according to Cave), A.D. 754; condemned Images, II. 532. Judged to be no General Council by the Seventh Synod (i. e. the Second Council of Nice), because it had not Patriarchs enough present, II. 532, 533.

———————, the Thirty-sixth (the Eighth General), A.D. 869, 870; canon of the, respecting separation, I. 103. Counterfeit canon of the, prohibiting the interference of laymen in the election of Bishops, II. 451, 452. Speech of the Emperor Basilius at the, upon the same subject, II. 231.

Council of Ephesus, the Third General, A.D. 431; no clergy from the Western Churches present at the, yet was a General Council, II. 567. See *Theodosius the Younger*.

Canon of the, in the case of the Cyprian Bishops, freeing them from the jurisdiction of the Antiochene Patriarchs, I. 156—158. 176. 201; II. 34. 56. 526, 527. 641; and see *Cyprian Privilege*. This canon inconsistent with the Papacy as now asserted, I. 157; II. 529, 530. 547. 569. But not with a primacy of order or beginning of unity, II. 569. This canon inconsistent with the Pope's claim of supremacy over the Church of England, I. 157, 158. 192. 201; II. 34. 308, 309. 526. 528. 569, 570; and see *Church of England*.

Canon of the, explained, which forbids any man to compose or publish any other Creed than the Nicene, I. 25; II. 39. 278. 324. 478—481. Mr. Serjeant's falsifying of this canon, II. 481, 482.

An Epistle of Cyril and a Synod of Alexandria mistaken by Bramhall from Crabbe to have been the work of the, I. 153; II. 469; and see *Council of Alexandria*.

——— *of Florence*, A.D. 1438, 1439; language of the Greeks at the, respecting the Creed, I. 25. Question debated at the, respecting additions to the Creed, *ib.* Defines (though not expressly), that the Pope is above a General Council, II. 327. 624. Requires only an implicit intention as necessary in the ministration of Sacraments, V. 211. Double matter and form of Romish ordination determined by the, V. 214. 219. Determination of the, that the Episcopal character is indeleble, V. 209.

——— *Francica*, see *Council Germanic the First*.

——— *of Frankfort*, A.D. 794, summoned by Charlemagne, I. 205. Against the Elipandians and Fælicians, *ib.* Against Images, II. 382.

——— *Germanic the First*, A.D. 742, called by Bramhall from Crabbe Synodus Francica; summoned by Charlemagne, II. 414.

——— *of Halfield*, or *Hedtfeld*, A.D. 680, did not reckon the Council of Sardica as a General Council, II. 533.

——— *of Hertford*, A.D. 673, decree of the, respecting Bishops, I. 275.

——— *of Lateran*, the Fourth General, A.D. 1215, I. 14. The first determination of the manner of the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, was in the, I. 14; III. 573. Various (so called) decrees of the, never received in England, II. 431. Those decrees not the work of the, but of Pope Innocent III., or of one of his successors, *ib.* Alleged decree of the, for the Pope's deposing power, a mere private decree of Pope Innocent III., II. 116. Decree of the, that Confession is necessary to salvation by Divine institution, V. 222.

Council of Lateran, the Fifth General, A.D. 1512; expressly determined, that "the Bishop of Rome alone hath authority over all Councils," II. 327. 557. 624, 625. Attempted to reimpose tenths and first-fruits, II. 425.

——— *of Lyons*, the First General, A.D. 1246; unanimous complaint of Henry III. and the whole Commonwealth of England to the, I. 194, 195; II. 448.

———————, the Second General, A.D. 1274; canon of the, respecting Bigamists, partially received in England, I. 140; II. 432.

——— *of Metz*, A.D. 863, miscalled by Bramhall the Council of Cologne; angry answer of the, with the Archbishops of Triers and Cologne, to Pope Nicolas I., I. 219.

——— *of Milevum* (in Africa), the Second, A.D. 416; canon of the, respecting appeals to the Emperor from Bishops and Church Courts, I. 116.

——— *of Nice*, the First (the First General), A.D. 325; Hosius President of the, and not a Papal legate, I. 138. Only five clergy from the Western Churches personally present at the, yet was a General Council, II. 566.

Canon of the, confirming Patriarchal power to the Bishops of Rome, I. 155. 261; II. 488. 539; III. 553. Ground of this canon, that "old customs might prevail," II. 446. Counterfeit canons of the, urged in support of the Papal supremacy, II. 374.

Expression from the Acts of the, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. t.

Decree of the, respecting the celibacy of the clergy, III. 407; and see *Paphnutius*. And against Συνείσακτοι, III. 145, 146.

————————, the Second (the Seventh General, so called), A.D. 787, II. 231. In favour of Images, II. 382. Condemned the Council of Constantinople (in 754), because it

had not Patriarchs enough to be a General Council, II. 532, 533.

Council of Nidd, A.D. 705, respecting Archbishop Wilfrid, I. 135. g; II. 131.

——— *of Papia* or *Pavia*, A.D. 1160, called by the Emperor Frederic I. to settle Victor III. in the Papacy, I. 206, 207.

——— *of Pisa*, the First General, A.D. 1409; was a free Council, II. 625. Withdrew obedience from two supposed Popes, Benedict XIII. and Gregory XII., I. 218. Decrees of the, respecting the Papal Supremacy, subjecting the Pope to a General Council, II. 376. Rejected the doctrine of the Pope's absolute universal monarchy by Christ's own ordination, II. 376. 511. 625. The Council of Constance a continuation of the, I. 218.

———————, the Second General, A.D. 1511; suspended Julius II. from the Papacy, I. 218. Decrees of the, against the Pope, II. 376. 625.

——— *of Rome*, A.D. 324; what is meant by the saying of the, that "the first see cannot be judged," I. 255.

———————, A.D. 963, summoned by the Emperor Otho I.; deposed John XII. from the Papacy and elected Leo VIII. in his place, I. 206.

——— ———, A.D. 1059, under Pope Nicolas II.; condemnation of Berengarius by the, I. 12.

——— *of Sardica*, A.D. 347, Hosius President of the, I. 155; II. 374.

Was not a General Council, II. 440. Why not, II. 532, 533. Never received as a General Council by either the Eastern or the Western Churches, II. 533. Nor by St. Gregory the Great, Isidore, Bede, St. Augustin, Alypius, *ib.* Nor by the Church of England, *ib.*; and see *Council of Hatfield*.

Whether British Bishops were at the, is questionable, II. 532; and see St. *Athanasius*.

Canon of the, respecting appeals to the see of Rome, I. 155; II. 165, 166. 301. 440, 441. That canon inconsistent with the Divine right of the Papacy, II. 165, 166. 301. 374. 531, 532. British exemption from foreign jurisdiction not disproved by it, II. 301. It was never received in England, II. 301. 533, 534. And is contradicted by the General Council of Chalcedon, *ib.* It does not bind the Church of England, II. 301. 440, 441. 533, 534. As it did not the Church of Africa, II. 374. 440. Canons of the, falsely attributed by three successive Popes to the Council of Nice, II. 374.

Council of Sens, A.D. 1528, confirmed the doctrine of the septenary number of the Sacraments, I. 55.

——— *of Sinuessa*, A.D. 303; testimony of the, to the lapse of Pope Marcellinus into idolatry, I. 254. What is meant by the saying of the, that "the first see cannot be judged," I. 255.

——— *of Toledo* (*Toletanum*), the Second (Cave), commonly the Fourth, A.D. 633—the Third (Cave), commonly the Fifth, A.D. 636—the Fourth (Cave), commonly the Sixth, A.D. 638—the Eighth (Cave), commonly the Tenth, A.D. 656; confined the homage of Bishops to Kings, II. 418.

———————, the Tenth (Cave), commonly the Twelfth, A.D. 681; patronage of the Church in Spain allowed by the, to the Spanish Kings, II. 403.

——— *of Tours*, the Fourth (Cave), commonly the Third, A.D. 813; assembled by Charlemagne and its decrees confirmed by him, II. 415.

——— ———, the Fourteenth, A.D. 1510, convocated by Louis XII. of France; allows withdrawal of obedience from the Pope in certain cases, I. 173—175; II. 197, 198. Remonstrance of the, to the Pope, I. 192, 193. Confirmed the Pragmatic Sanction, I. 222.

——— *of Trent*, the Eighteenth General Council (so called), A.D. 1543—1563; was not a General nor yet a Patriarchal Council, and why, I. 258; II. 261. 330. 635, 636; V. 208.

Was not free, I. 258; II. 262. 332. 566. 640. The Bishops at the, the Pope's ministers, II. 267; V. 208. And pensioners, II. 331. And said to have been guided by "the Holy Spirit sent from Rome in a mail," I. 259; II. 262. 566. 625. 640; V. 208. And the legates to have given "auricular votes," I. 259; II. 262. Not enough Bishops at the, I. 258; II. 330. 638, 639; V. 208. Number of Bishops, and proportion of Italians, at the different sessions of the, from Sleidan, I. 258. g. 331. l. Too many Italian Bishops at the, I. 258; II. 566. 625. 639. 643; V. 208. Bishops and Bishoprics created during the sessions of the, to enable the Pa-

palins to outvote the Tramontanes, I. 259; II. 262. 640, 641.

Summons to the, not general, II. 330. 635. The great Patriarchs not present at the, II. 330. 635, 636. They had a right to be summoned to the, and being four parts of the Christian world, could not be condemned at the, by the fifth, II. 636. They ought to have been summoned to the, even had they been heretics, II. 261. 330. 566. 637, 638. Titular Archbishops of Upsala and Armagh present at the, as the only representatives of the Northern Churches, I. 258.

Was not lawful, I. 259; II. 263. As not being in Germany, *ib.*

Was not generally received even by the Occidental Churches, I. 258; II. 261, 262. 640. Not received at once in France, II. 640. Protest of King Charles IX. of France against the, I. 221. 258; II. 640, 641.

The two main ends of the, according to Cardinal Pole, were the reconciling of the Lutherans, and the considering how the principal or rather almost all the members of the Church might be reduced to their ancient discipline, I. 208. Earnest complaints at the, of the need of a reformation, I. 40; II. 510.

Styles the Apostles' Creed the 'unwritten word of God,' II. 473.

Question of the Divine right of Bishops ventilated in the, I. 189; III. 492. 530, 531. And that, and the question of the residence of Bishops, would have been carried in the, against the Pope, had the number of Bishops of other countries been proportioned to that of the Italian Bishops, II. 625. 639; III. 530, 531. The judgment of almost all the Cisalpine Bishops, Spanish, French, Dutch, assembled at the, was in favour of the Divine right of Bishops, against the Pope, I. 189. 249; III. 530. Determination of the, that the Episcopal character is indeleble, V. 209.

Requires only an implicit intention on the part of the minister in order to the validity of his ministerial acts, V. 211.

Decreed the septenary number of the Sacraments, I. 55. Accepts desire of Baptism for Baptism itself where Baptism could not be had, V. 174. Enjoins not only the adoration of Christ in the Sacrament, but the adoration of the Sacrament itself of the Holy Eucharist, I. 21. 45; II. 87. Decreed, that Confession is necessary to salvation jure Divino, V. 222. And that plenary and particular confession is necessary, V. 223. and meritorious, *ib.*

Creed of, see *Pius IV.* Pope.

The Church of England not contumacious towards the, and does not schismatically disobey the, I. 257; II. 261. 330. 635; and see *Church of England.*

Council, The Trullan, A.D. 692; canon of the, for the Patriarchate of Constantinople, I. 130. 261.

——— *of Vienne,* the Fourth, A.D. 1311, instituted the Feast of Corpus Christi, I. 21.

——— *of Worms,* A.D. 1076, called by the Emperor Henry IV., against Pope Gregory VII., I. 206.

Courayer, Pierre François de la, Works of, upon Anglican Orders, III. 40. f. Fidelity of, in citing documents, III. Pref. l. Argument of, with Le Quien, respecting Lord Audley's tale about Bishop Morton, III. 35. d. Inaccuracies in it, *ib.*

Court, jurisdiction in the exterior—in the interior; see *Jurisdiction.*

—— *of Rome,* is to be distinguished from the Church of Rome, III. 520. The, and not the Church of Rome (nor yet that of England), made the separation of England from the communion of the Church of Rome, I. 128. 257; II. 257. The Pope and the, are most guilty of the schism, I. 246—256; II. 235—253. 324—327. 620—626. The Church of England separated from (not the Church of Rome but) the, II. 248. 351. 553. The Church of England impugns the tenets of the Pope and the, II. 604. The bonds of unity broken by the, and not by the Church of England, II. 394. Penal laws in England were made more against the, than against the Church of Rome, II. 117. A double separation of the Church of England, from the Church of Rome and from the; see *Separation.*

Was most tyrannical, I. 47. 170. Extortions and rapine of the, one cause of the separation between Rome and England, I. 180; II. 459. Testimony to them, of Matthew Paris, I. 181, 182. of Grosthead Bishop of Lincoln, I. 182. 185. of Sewalus Archbishop of York, I. 183. of Chaucer, *ib.* The usurpations and violations by the, of all sorts of rights, another cause, I.

183—190. 263, 264; II. 459. See *Separation.* Foul practice of the, with respect to dispensations, II. 445, 446. Profits of the, I. 149, 150. 216; II. 402. 405. Interest makes Catholics with the, II. 85. Reformation not agreeable to the, I. 40. Is an Antichrist, III. 520.

Obtrudes new Creeds, I. 247; II. 241. 325. 476. 509; and see *Pius IV.* Enforces the doctrine of the Papal supremacy by excommunication, II. 317.

Is guilty of schism, i. e. is causally schismatical, in four ways; i. in engrossing a higher place in the body ecclesiastical than is its due, ii. in separating three parts of the Christian world from communion with the Church of Rome by its doctrines and by its censures, iii. by rebelling against the representative Church, a General Council, iv. in challenging to itself all Episcopal jurisdiction and so breaking all lines of Apostolical succession but its own; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome.*

No obedience to the, acknowledged by the French and German Emperors, I. 201. The French no vassals of the, I. 219. See *Emperors, Kings of France.*

Courts, Ecclesiastical, styled the King's Courts in England, I. 151. Writs of the, run in the Bishop's name; see *Bishops English, Jurisdiction.* Presbyterians complain of the, of the Church, yet go beyond them in the very points complained of, III. 305.

———, *Temporal,* in what sense the, are the King's Courts, in England; see *Kings of England.* Kings sat personally in the, in England; see *Kings of England, Edward IV., Henry IV., Henry V., Henry VIII., Richard III.* The King's authority not limited to his, III. 357. The Parliament not merely a, see *Parliament.*

Covarruvias, allows it would be "nimis indecorum" to change the Lord's Day, yet affirms that the Church has power to change it, V. 62. s.

Covenant, Hobbes teaches, that an oath doth not bind more than a "naked," IV. 550.

Covenant, The Solemn League and, account of, III. 283. t. Distinct from the National Covenant, III. 283.

Was a void and wicked oath, III. 282. Imposed upon the subscribers from without, and undertaken through ignorance and error, *ib.* Disposes of the rights of a third party, viz. the King, without his consent, III. 283. Is an oath to commit sin, III. 284. Is invalidated by a prior and inconsistent oath, that of supremacy, III. 285.

Proclamation of King Charles I. against, Oct. 9. 1643, III. 284.

One probable cause of the Irish Rebellion (in the time of Charles I.), was the example of the Scottish Covenant, III. 461.

Covenant, The National; see *Covenant, The Solemn League and.*

Coventry, Bishops of Lichfield and; see *Lichfield and Coventry, Bishops of.*

Coverdale, Miles, Bishop of Exeter 1551—1553, when consecrated, III. 56. y. Record of the consecration of, vindicated, III. Pref. in fin. Evidence for the consecration of, III. Pref. 78. n.

Refused to accept a Bishopric upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 204. l. 476.

Named in the second commission for confirming and consecrating Archbishop Parker, III. 52. 74. 178. Joined in confirming Archbishop Parker, III. 83, 84. 174, 175. 178. 182, 183. 185, 186. 200—203. And in consecrating him, III. Pref. 56. y. 86. 174. 204. 211, 212. Dress of, at Archbishop Parker's Consecration, III. 77. 99. 204. Probable reasons of it, III. 204. l. It had nothing to do with the dispensative clauses in the Royal Commission, III. 77, 78.

Cox, Richard, D.D., Bishop of Ely 1559—1581, joined in repressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans at Frankfort, in 1554, III. 317.

Evidence for the consecration of, at the time recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 93. 218. Commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 93. 218. One of the Bishops alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s. Present at Abp. Parker's consecration, III. 206. 213.

Cowel, John, L.L.D., form of the Coronation Oath of the Kings of England, set forth by, III. 372.

C., R; see *Smith, Richard,* titular Bishop of Chalcedon.

Cranmer, Thomas, D. D., Archbishop of Canterbury 1533—1555, how first introduced to the notice of Henry VIII., II. 102.

Took the oath to the Pope as Arch-

bishop with a protestation, I. 149. Paid the Court of Rome nine hundred ducats for the Bulls of his Consecration and for his Pall, I. 181.

Advice of, about Queen Katherine's divorce, II. 103. Of R. C.'s reflections upon it, *ib.* Condemned Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine, II. 188.

What part was taken by, in the secession of the Church of England from that of Rome, II. 102—104. Confessed to have been a Romanist in opinion, and a great patron and prosecutor of the Six Articles, at the time when Papal power was first cast out of England, II. 500.

Opinion of, against the necessity of ordination and consecration, III. Pref. 137. a. 139. d. Extreme carelessness with which the Archiepiscopal Register of, was kept, *ib.*

Milton's severe language respecting, III. 476.

Creagh, Richard, titular Archbishop of Armagh 1563—1587, ignorantly alleged to have refused to consecrate Archbishop Parker and his fellow Bishops, in 1559, III. 47. True account of, III. 47. e.

Creation, a free act of God, "extra Deum," IV. 375. See *God, Immanent and Transient Acts of.*

Credinton, Bishopric of, II. 139.

Creed, "Faith," in Holy Scripture, Councils, and Fathers, ordinarily taken for the, II. 478. 481.

The old rule of Faith, II. 470. 597. 618. 635. An Apostolical Tradition both materially and formally, II. 494. 618. How related to the Scriptures as a rule of Faith, II. 597. Deposited with the Church as a rule of Faith before the canon of the New Testament was completed, *ib.* See *Faith Rule of, Scriptures.*

Is a summary of all particular points of saving Faith, that are necessary to be believed, II. 471. 474. 597. 618. Is a sufficient rule of Faith, II. 84. 277. 476. 597. But not of practice, II. 471. 597. 'No one will say the, is insufficient, unless they be mad,' according to the Greeks at the Council of Florence, I. 25. Is a list of all fundamentals, II. 618. Contains all articles of Faith, II. 314. Cannot be wrested to heresy, as explicated by the first four General Councils, II. 597. 619. How much is necessary to be believed in order to salvation ordinarily, II. 278. See *Creed The Apostles', Fundamentals.*

Not lawful to add to the old, I. 25. What are additions, and what only explications, *ib.* Additions to the, De Symbolo, Contra Symbolum, Præter Symbolum, I. 25, 26; II. 474—476. Passages from Vincentius Lirinensis respecting a growth of Faith without a change, II. 477. By whom alone the, may lawfully be explicated; see *Bishop of Rome, Church Catholic, Council General.*

They are not heretics, who hold the, as explicated by the first four General Councils; see *Heretics.* The Church of England joins in communion with all who hold the, as so explicated, and with none other; see *Church of England.* The Eastern Churches hold the Apostolic, Nicene, and Athanasian, with the explication of the General Councils of Ephesus, Constantinople, and Chalcedon, II. 61.

Profession of the, required of all persons at their Baptism by the Church Catholic from the beginning, II. 291. 479; and see *Baptism.*

The Court and Church of Rome obtrude a new; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Court of Rome, Pius IV.* Pope.

The XXXIX Articles of the Church of England are no points of Faith; see *Articles, The XXXIX.*

Creed, The Apostles', is a genuine universal Apostolical Tradition, I. 53; II. 291. A rule of the Catholic Faith, I. 103; II. 596. 618. A rule of credenda, not agenda, II. 471. 597. The foundation of Faith, II. 472—474. The old Faith, II. 509. i. e. as explicated by the Nicene, Constantinopolitan, Ephesine, and Chalcedonian Fathers, II. 479. Composed before the canon of Scripture was perfected, II. 635.

St. Augustine's opinion of the, II. 472, 473. Expressions of the Fathers concerning the, *ib.* Of Bellarmine, II. 473. Of Canisius, *ib.* Of the Council of Trent, II. 473, 474. Of the Catechism of Trêves, II. 477. Styled by the Council of Trent "the unwritten word of God," II. 473. and "the firm and only foundation of Faith," II. 474. Is a more authentic rule of Faith than Pope Pius IV.'s, II. 575.

Was not imperfect before "Filioque" was added; see *Creed, Nicene.* No heresy but might be condemned by the, II. 476, 477. How the doc-

trines of the Procession of the Holy Spirit, the Two Natures of Christ, the Descent into Hell, the Sacraments, the Scriptures, are contained in the; see *Christ, God the Holy Ghost, Sacraments, Scriptures.* Of additions to the, see *Creed.*

The Church of Rome has changed the; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Court of Rome, Pius IV.* Pope.

The Church of England joins in communion with no heretics but with all who hold the, as explicated by the first four General Councils; see *Church of England.*

Creed, The Athanasian, is part of the Catholic Faith, I. 24. 103. Is only an explication of the Apostles' Creed, II. 476.

——, *The Chalcedonian,* only an explication of the Apostles' Creed, II. 476. Solemnly sworn to, by the Popes at their election, II. 427.

——, *The Constantinopolitan,* an explication of the Apostles' Creed, II. 476.

——, *The Ephesian,* only an explication of the Apostles' Creed, II. 476.

——, *The Nicene,* is part of the Catholic Faith, I. 24. 103. The very same with the Apostles' Creed, II. 480. Is an explication of it, II. 476. The word Consubstantial in, no addition to the previous Creed, II. 474. Not imperfect until "Filioque" was added to it, II. 474. 597. The Ephesian canon, that none should compose or publish another Faith or Creed than, explained, II. 478—481. Expressions of the Roman Liturgy respecting, II. 480.

——, *of Pius IV.*; see *Pius IV.* Pope.

——, *The Collier's*; see *Collier's Creed.*

Creighton, a Roman Catholic Priest, commotions raised by, in Scotland, in the time of Queen Elizabeth, II. 114.

Cremensis, Johannes; see *Johannes Cremensis.*

Crespet, a monk of the order of the Celestines at Paris, died 1594, IV. 53. e. Fanciful assertion of, respecting bees, IV. 53.

Cromwell, Oliver, Protector, Letters of, to the Scotch Ministers in 1650, after the battle of Dunbar, I. cxlvi. h. Bramhall's violent preaching against, when in exile at Bruges, III. 23. f. Styled Bramhall "the Irish Canterbury;" see *Bramhall, John.*

——, *Thomas, Lord,* share of, in the separation of England from Rome, II. 104. Joined in the suppression of religious houses, *ib.* Was no Protestant, *ib.* Henry VIII.'s commission to, no proof that secular persons primarily conferred English orders, V. 232. Patronage of Barlow by, III. 227.

Cross, Sacrifice of the; see *Sacrifice.*

Crosses, or *Afflictions,* are not always punishments, but sometimes corrections or trials, I. 27. Just to afflict innocent persons for their good, IV. 318. Are not by chance, I. 27. Temporal promises always made with an implicit exception of the Cross, I. 74. Our prayers granted "ad salutem etsi non ad voluntatem," according to St. Augustin, I. 77.

Crowland, Abbey of, churches appropriated to the, by the Saxon kings of their own authority, I. 139.

Crown, right of the, and right to the, distinguished, III. 321. Right of the, explained, *ib.* See *King.*

Croxton, Rev. Mr., I. lxxxiii.

Croyland, see *Crowland.*

Crozier, when given up in England, III. 205. p.

Crucifix, worship of the, I. 45, 46. Λατρεία asserted to be due to the, by the Church of Rome, *ib.* But whether terminatively or transeuntly, is disputed by Roman doctors, I. 46. z. Even the latter indefensible, I. 46. See Λατρεία.

Crum-a-bo, Irish statute against the cry of, II. 111.

Cudsemius, a Jesuit, affirmed the validity of English orders in 1609, III. 115. g.

Cumberland, rebellion in; see *England.*

Cup, detention of the, from the laity, by the Church of Rome, when first decreed, I. 20. 47; and see *Council of Constance.* The practice flowed from the doctrine of Transubstantiation, I. 20. And is justified by the doctrine of Concomitance, *ib.* It is a just cause of separation, I. 167; II. 201. See *Lord's Supper.* The Manichees did forbear the, in the Sacrament, and why, I. 8. See *Wine.*

Curtys, Richard, D.D., Bishop of Chichester 1570—1582, minute record of the consecration of, in Archbishop Parker's Register, III. 86. g. 203. i.

Curwyn, Hugh, L.L.D., Archbishop of Dublin, Bishop of Oxford, 1555—1568, translated from Dublin to Oxford, Oct. 14. 1567, III. 232.

Cusanus, Cardinal, admission of, respecting the Papal Supremacy, II. 376, 377.

Cynewulf, see *Kinulfus.*

Cyprian, St., said Amen to the sentence of his own condemnation, V. 97. Reverence of, for Tertullian, I. 130.

Gives a principality of order to the Chair of St. Peter as "principium unitatis," I. 32. 61; II. 371; III. 550, 551. Calls Rome a "Matrix Ecclesia," I. 130; II. 175. and a "root," I. 130. Dislikes the swelling title of "Episcopus Episcoporum," I. 61. Opposed to the Bishops of Rome respecting the rebaptization of persons heretically baptized, I. 60, 61. 99; III. 550. Yet not schismatically, I. 99. 197; II. 311. Appeals from Africa to Rome condemned by, I. 61. II. 444. Bellarmine's evasion respecting this, answered, II. 150. 444. Complained of the Bishop of Rome for receiving complaints from African Bishops, I. 61; II. 150; III. 550.

Asserts the equality of the Apostles, I. 153. k. Doctrine of, respecting the "Unus Episcopatus," whereof every Bishop hath an entire part, I. 61. 153, 154; II. 371, 372.

Doctrine of, respecting the necessity of union with the Church, I. 61; V. 207. 251. And that there is no salvation out of the Church, II. 31, 32. Yet judges no man for difference of opinion, I. 197; II. 311. 583. 585. Charitable saying of, respecting sins of ignorance or simplicity against true doctrine, III. 475. Passage from, respecting unjust excommunications, V. 209.

Passage from, respecting Tradition, V. 267. 270. Taxeth the omission of almsgiving on the Lord's Day as a fault, V. 40.

Expressions of, respecting the presence of Christ in the Eucharist, I. 11. x.

High expressions respecting the Holy Eucharist, in the tract De Cœnâ Domini falsely attributed to, I. 10. u. 11. y; V. 164. z. Expressions from the tract De Spiritu Sancto, falsely attributed to, do not imply the perpetual morality of the Sabbath from the beginning, V. 24, 25. Both tracts really the work of Arnoldus, I. 10. u; V. 24. c.

Testimony of, to the number of Christians in early times, I. 162.

See *Bishops African*, *Church of Africa*, *Cornelius* Pope, *Councils of Carthage*, *Stephen I.* Pope.

Cyprian Bishops, see *Cyprian Privilege.*

——— *Privilege*, what it is, I. 156, 157; II. 148. 151. Independence of the Cyprian Bishops upon the Patriarch of Antioch, guaranteed by the, according to a canon of the Council of Ephesus, *ib.* That canon inconsistent with the Papal claim of supremacy over the English Church, I. 157, 158. 161. 192. 201; II. 34. 151. 301. 309. 526—528. 569, 570. See *Church of England*, *Gregory I.* Pope, *Patriarchate of Rome.* The Britannic Isles partakers of the, de jure, V. 209. And acknowledged to be so by Dr. Barnes a Roman Catholic; see *Barnes, John.*

Cyril, St., of Jerusalem, passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. s.

———, *Patriarch of Alexandria*, passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. s. Quotation from, concerning the Apostles, II. 152. Epistle of, and of the Synod of Alexandria, to Nestorius, wherein St. Peter and St. John are expressly declared to be equal, I. 153; II. 469. This Epistle mistaken by Bramhall from Crabbe to have been the work of the first General Council of Ephesus, II. 469. z.

——— *Lucar, Patriarch of Constantinople* in the beginning of the 17th century, notice of, II. 265—267. Opinions of, in most points conformable to the doctrines of the Church of England, shewn at length, *ib.* Protestants not condemned by, but Romanists, II. 265. Opinion of, concerning the worship of Images, II. 632. Justification, II. 633. Denied the Papal Supremacy, II. 644.

D.

Dagamus, a Scotch Bishop, refused to hold intercourse with St. Augustin's companions, II. 134.

Damascenus, Johannes; see *Johannes Damascenus.*

Damianus, a Priest sent by Pope Eleutherius into Britain, II. 168.

Damned, The, punishments of, are eternal, IV. 246. 354. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning this, IV. 538. 585.

Dancing, all sorts of, not lawful, III. 577. Condemned altogether at Geneva and by Calvin, *ib.* How far allowable upon Sundays, *ib.* Texts of Scripture relating to, *ib.*

Darbyshire, Thomas, D.D., sometime Archdeacon of Essex, but deprived in 1559, a nephew of Bishop Bonner, III. 117. l. Alleged testimony of, to the Nag's Head fable, *ib.*

Dardania, Bishops of; see *Gelasius* Pope.

Darrell, William, Canon of Canterbury, present at Archbishop Parker's election, III. 193. Proxy for the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury at Archbishop Parker's Confirmation, III. 180. 197. 199.

Davenant, John, D.D., Bishop of Salisbury 1621-1641, held the Church of Rome to be a true Church, III. 519.

Davenport, Christopher, or *Francis;* see *Clarâ, Franciscus a Sanctâ.*

David, case of, and Uriah, IV. 74. 312. Of Shimei's cursing of, IV. 230.

——, *St.,* Archbishop of St. David's or Menevia, succeeded Dubritius, II. 172. Elected and consecrated independently of the Pope, II. 151. Removed the Archbishopric, and the Primacy of Wales, from Llandaff to Menevia, or St. David's, in 516, I. 163. r; II. 172. by licence of King Arthur, not of the Pope, II. 172. See of, called Caerleon up to the time of his death, II. 303, 304. 541; and see *Caerleon.* Said to have died the same day as St. Gregory the Great, II. 303. 540.

David's, St.; see *Menevia.* Archbishops of, Bishops of; see *St. David's, Archbishops of, Bishops of.*

Davis, Richard, Bishop of St. Asaph—of St. David's, $15\frac{59}{60}$—1581, proof of the consecration of, III. 221. One of the Bishops alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s. Commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 221.

Davys, Sir Paul, father-in-law of Sir Thomas Bramhall, I. xiii.

Day, different length of the, in different countries, proves the Sabbath to be no law of nature, V. 14, 15. Natural reason dictateth not the holiness of one day in the week more than another, V. 14—16. See *Anabaptists, Sabbath.*

—— *of Judgment;* see *Judgment, Day of.*

Day, George, D.D., Bishop of Chichester 1543—1556, proof of the consecration of, III. Pref. 140. d.

De Hales, see *Alexander Alensis.*

De Vic, see *Devic.*

Deacons, Order of, an Apostolical institution, II. 455. Have no power to consecrate the Holy Eucharist, III. 168. Double matter and form in the ordination of the, in the Roman Church, V. 215; and see *Ordination of Deacons.* It was established in the Council of Florence, V. 219.

Dead, meaning of the word as used in Holy Scripture, IV. 233. How sinners are said to be, *ib.*

——, *Prayer for the;* see *Prayer for the Dead.*

Deane, Henry, Bishop of Bangor—of Salisbury, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1496—1502; the immediate predecessor of Archbishop Warham, II. 557. u. Form of the oath taken by, to the Pope, II. 556, 557.

Deans and Chapters, election of Bishops by, neither essential to Episcopacy nor evermore used in the Church, V. 201. either in England, *ib.* or elsewhere, V. 203. See *Bishops, Bishops English.* Not in use in Ireland; see *Bishops, Irish.*

Decalogue, first four Commandments of the, accommodated by Hobbes to sovereign princes, IV. 560.

Declaration of Scotch Commissioners, see *Commissioners.*

Decrees, and foreknowledge, of God, as a cause of necessity; see *God, Foreknowledge of.*

——— *of General Councils;* see *Councils, General.* Of the Council of Arles, see *Council of Arles.* Of the Council of Basle, see *Council of Basle.* Of the Council of Chalcedon, see *Council of Chalcedon.* Of the Council of Constance, see *Council of Constance.* Of the Council of Constantinople, see *Council of Constantinople.* Of the Council of Florence, see *Council of Florence.* Of the Council of Lateran, see *Council of Lateran.* Of the Council of Trent, see *Council of Trent.*

———, *Papal;* see *Canons, Papal.*

Decretals of Popes, of what authority in England, II. 429. 560; and see *Bishop of Rome, Canons Papal.*

Defence of True Liberty from Antecedent and Extrinsecal Necessity, in answer to Hobbes; by Bishop Bramhall, Works, Part iii. Discourse i, IV. 3—196. Contents of, IV. 5—15. Dedication of, to the Marquis of Newcastle, IV. 17. Account of, I. xxxi, xxxii; IV. Pref. 20. 23. a. When written, IV. 23, 24.

Definitions, exact, are not frequent, IV. 262. Hobbes's silly, IV. 279, 280.

De Hales, Alexander; see *Alexander Alensis.*

Deliberate Acts, see *Actions.*

Deliberation, what it is, from Aristotle, IV. 164. 178. Possible in children, IV. 299. Irrational beings incapable

of, IV. 50. Hobbes's, is not deliberation at all, IV. 441—444. What Hobbes's is, IV. 461. Of actions done with, IV. 163, 164; and see *Actions*. Of actions done without present, IV. 162. Reply to Hobbes's assertion, that voluntary acts are free, only until the end of, IV. 165, 166. There may be impediments before it be done, IV. 431. And liberty when it is ended, *ib.* Of virtual, IV. 433.

Deneulfus, or *Œnewulphus*, made Bishop of Winchester by King Alfred, I. 146.

Denmark, Episcopacy retained (by the Lutherans) in, II. 69. 564; III. 480. 517. 532. The Lutherans of, not "unchurched" by the Episcopal divines of England, III. 517. Anecdote of a King of, III. 438, 439.

'*Deo, In*,' what is said to be, and what 'extra Deum;' see *God, Immanent and Transient Acts of.*

Deodate, see *Diodati.*

Derrimagh, Abbey of; see *Derry, Abbey of.*

Derry, Abbey and Bishopric of, or Derrimagh, by whom founded, I. 274. Confounded with the Abbey of Iona by Blondel, *ib.*

——, *Bishop of;* see *Bramhall, John.*

——, *Cathedral of*, when built, I. cxiii. n.

——-, *Dean of;* see *Coote.*

Desmond, Earl of; see *Fitzgerald.*

Destiny, see *Fate.*

Determination of the Will; see *Actions of inanimate creatures, Diversion, Election, Liberty, Will.*

'*Deum, Extra*,' what is said to be, and what 'in Deo;' see *God, Immanent and Transient Acts of.*

De Vic, Anne Charlotte, daughter of Sir Henry de Vic, tract of Bramhall's, written upon occasion of the Baptism of; see *Baptism.*

———, *Sir Henry*, Ambassador from King Charles I. to the States, 1644—1648, Bramhall resided with, during that time, I. x.; V. 167. 171; and see *Bramhall, John.* A short Discourse addressed to, by Bramhall, about a passage at his table after the christening of his daughter, Anne Charlotte, of persons dying without Baptism: see *Baptism.*

Devils, texts of Scripture concerning, IV. 351. Hobbes's errors concerning, IV. 351. 536. 538.

Devolution, meaning of, I. Pref. c. 180.

Diamond, of Hobbes's speculation whether a feather's weight makes a, yield, IV. 402.

Dice, Hobbes's instance of throwing amb's ace with the, answered; see *Amb's Ace.*

Dictamnum, or Dittany, IV. 55. 518.

Didoclavius, see *Calderwood.*

Diet of Augsburg, A.D. 1548, the Interim accepted by the, I. 210.

—— *of Frankfort*, A.D. 1338, decided against the Papal claim of concurrence in the election of the Emperor of Germany, I. 211. 215.

—— *of Nuremberg*, A.D. 1466, sequestered certain ecclesiastical revenues towards the defence of the empire against the Turks, I. 217.

————————, A.D. 1522, decree of the, respecting annates, I. 216. Letter to the, from Pope Adrian VI., respecting the reformation of the Church, I. 216; II. 385.

—— *of Spires*, A.D. 1544, vain indignation of Pope Paul III. against the, II. 215. Exhortation of Calvin to the, respecting the Reformation of the Church, III. 483. 534.

Dietericus, opinion of, respecting the morality of the Sabbath, V. 16. n.

Dinoth, see *Dionothus.*

Dioclesian, edict of, and of Maximian, to destroy churches and burn the Scriptures and enfranchise the apostate slaves of Christians, III. 356.

Diodati, opinion of, respecting Episcopacy, I. 39; III. 486. l. Letter of, to the Westminster Assembly, *ib.*

Dionothus, Abbot of Bangor, professed canonical obedience to the Archbishop of Caerleon and none other, II. 302. 540. Answer of, to St. Augustin of Canterbury, concerning obedience to the Pope, I. 162; II. 152. 302. 540—545. It was confirmed by two British Synods, I. 163. 201; II. 152. 542, 543. Exceptions of Mr. Serjeant against it, answered, II. 302—304. 540—545. Historical evidence for the story of, II. 542—545. Viz. of Pitseus, II. 542. Bede, *ib.* The ancient history called Brutus, I. 201; II. 543. Graius, I. 202; II. 543. Gocelinus, *ib.* Geoffrey of Monmouth, II. 541. 543. Giraldus Cambrensis, II. 541. 544. Nicolas Trevet, II. 544. Bale, *ib.* The Life of St. Austin in Sir Henry Spelman, *ib.*

Dionysius the Areopagite, high expressions respecting the Eucharist in the book falsely attributed to, V. 164. z.

———— *of Corinth*, a witness that the Lord's Day was kept holy by all Christians throughout the universal Church immediately after the age of the Apostles, V. 42.

Dioscorus, Patriarch of Alexandria, deposed before the Council of Chalcedon, II. 490.

Direction, Judgment of; see *Judgment.*

Disabilities for Holy Orders, what are, V. 238.

Discipline of the Church, the ancient, changed by the Church of Rome not by the Church of England, II. 287. 293. 498. Retained by the Church of England; see *Church Primitive, Church of England.* Of the Church of England, not new because reformed, II. 498; and see *Church of England.*

————, *Genevan*, Bishops abolished by the; see *Bishops.* Was a fancied imitation of the Jewish synagogue, III. 309. Adapted solely to the politic state of the city of Geneva, *ib.* Yielded subjection to the civil Magistrate, see *Geneva.* Calvin's, is both human and new, III. 565; and see *Calvin.* Lay elders established by the; see *Elders, Lay.*

————, *Scotch Presbyterian*, doth utterly overthrow the right of magistrates to convocate synods, to confirm their acts, to order ecclesiastical affairs, and reform the Church within their dominions, and this both in practice and by doctrine, III. 243—254. Robs the magistrate of the last appeal of his subjects, III. 255. And of his dispensative power, III. 260—262. Subjects the supreme magistrate to its censures, III. 259. The king hath not so much as the place of a lay elder according to the, unless he be chosen, III. 467. Exempts ministers from due punishment, III. 256, 257.

Makes a monster of the Commonwealth, III. 271. Is injurious to the Commonwealth, by establishing an 'imperium in imperio,' III. 272. Is injurious to the Parliament by placing Presbyteries above it, in authority, in power, in privileges, III. 273—276.

Is oppressive to particular persons, III. 276. In inflicting censures for slight faults, *ib.* and excessive punishments for greater faults, III. 277. In the extreme rigour of its excommunication, III. 278, 279. Is hurtful to all orders of men, III. 279. 477, 478. To the nobility and gentry, III. 279. To the clergy, III. 280. To parents, *ib.* To lawyers, III. 281. To masters of families, *ib.* To the commonalty, *ib.*

Rebellious nature of the, III. 307. Arrogancy and tyranny of the, III. 241.

Foreign Protestant Churches not touched by the charges here brought against the, III. 242.

See *Discipline Books of, Disciplinarians, Presbyterians.*

Discipline, First Book of, established in Scotland, A.D. 1560, III. 246. z. Doctrine of, respecting the authority of the Church in civil causes, III. 263. Bishops, III. 246, 247; and see *Superintendents.* Excommunication, III. 278. Church revenues, III. 247, 248. All the Church festivals abolished by the, III. 246. 272.

————, *Second Book of*, established in Scotland, A.D. 1578—1581, III. 247. h. Doctrine of the, respecting the power of ecclesiastical synods, III. 249, 250. And of the king or magistrate in things ecclesiastical, III. 253. Subjects even the supreme magistrate to kirk censures, III. 259. Condemns all appeals from the Kirk, III. 256. And the subjection of ministers to lay courts, *ib.* Doctrine of the, respecting tythes, III. 247.

Disciplinarians, The Scottish, both the practice and the doctrine of, to assert an absolute uncontrolled independence, both in the exterior and in the interior court, of the Church upon the State, III. 245—250. Exorbitant claim advanced by, of no less than papal authority, III. 269. 271. A claim never heard of, until fifteen hundred years after Christ, III. 270. Claim it by Divine right, III. 269. 271. 477; V. 117. Have thrust out the Pope but retained the Papacy, III. 254. 261, 262. 285. Encroachments of, upon the civil power, III. 263. Jesuitical pretence of, that those encroachments are made 'in ordine ad spiritualia,' III. 263—265. Vain pretences of, that they grant the civil magistrate a political presidency in synods, III. 251, 252. And a power of reforming the Church, III. 252—254. Justify rebellion, in doctrine, III. 268. And in practice, III. 265. See *Buchanan, Knox.*

Abolished Bishops upon their own authority, III. 246. 272; and see *Bishops, Superintendents.* Impunity claimed by, for the pulpit, even in cases of treason, III. 256—259. Remission of capital punishment forbidden by, to the magistrate, where the judicial law enjoins the penalty of death, III. 260. 304. Other en-

croachments of the, III. 261. Abolished Church festivals upon their own authority, III. 246. 272.

See *Discipline, Presbyterians.*

Discipline, a Fair Warning to take heed of the Scottish, by Bishop Bramhall; see *Fair Warning.*

Discretion, Judgment of; see *Judgment.*

Dispensations, commonly called "Vulnera legum," II. 448. Different theories concerning the mode of, from oaths and vows, II. 444, 445.

Power of, in England, rested in the Kings and Bishops of England from the beginning, II. 447, 448. First instance of Papal, in England, was in 1138, II. 446, 447. Of the Pope's dispensing with English laws, in the exterior court, II. 446—448. Instance of Papal, in England, in the Bulls for Cranmer's consecration to the see of Canterbury, III. 77. l. 112. See *Bishops English, Kings of England.* English liberties the same as the Gallican on this point, II. 448.

Papal, from vows, oaths, laws, sins, censures, punishments, foul doctrine of Roman canonists concerning, II. 444, 445. Were prostituted to avaricious ends, II. 445, 446. 448. See *Bishops of Rome, Court of Rome.* Of the, granted by Pope Julius II. to Henry VIII., to marry Katherine his brother's wife; see *Henry VIII.*

Dispensative Clause, in the second Royal Commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker; see *Commission or Royal Assent.*

Dittany, see *Dictamnum.*

Diversion, difference between the, and the determination, of the will, IV. 253; and see *Will.*

Divine Law, see *Law.*

Divine Right, Patriarchal power not of, I. 260; and see *Patriarchs.*

——— of Bishops, see *Bishops.*

——— of the Papacy, as now maintained; see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy, St. Peter.* The chair of St. Peter not fixed at Rome by; see *Bishop of Rome, Rome.*

———, claim of the Scottish Disciplinarians to; see *Disciplinarians.*

——— of Kings, stated and explained, III. 317—320. 321, 322. 348—353. 382—384; and see *Dominion, King, Obedience.*

Divines, Episcopal; see *Episcopal Divines.*

———, *Foreign Reformed*, testimony of, in favour of Episcopacy; see *Amyraut, Bishops, Beza, Blondel, Calvin, Diodati, Farellus, Melanchthon, Moulin, Rivet, Salmasius, Spanheim, Vossius, Zanchy, Zuingle.*

Doctors of the Church, Hobbes's presumptuous censure of the, IV. 128. 130. 486; and see *Schoolmen.* Hobbes's contradictions respecting the authority of the, IV. 386. 390; and see *Hobbes.*

The pleas of particular, and in behalf of foreign Churches, no argument against the orders of the Church of England, III. 134—136; V. 247. The Church of England not answerable for the virulence of particular, against the Pope, II. 582.

See *Clergy, Fathers, Writers.*

———, *The Merciful;* see *Merciful Doctors.*

Doleman, see *Parsons.*

Domingo Pimentel; see *Pimentel, Domingo.*

Dominion, lawful, in the abstract, derived from God, applied by man, III. 318. The people cannot grant it in general, and have not granted it in England, III. 318, 319. Supreme, immediately from God, subordinate, mediately so, III. 319. See *King, Kings of England, Monarchy, Parliament, People.*

Usurped, not from God, in the same sense as is hereditary, III. 320. See *God.*

Is not founded upon grace, V. 120. Just conquest acquireth good right of, III. 341.

Domvile, Sir William, Irish Attorney General in 1661, intended for Speaker of the Irish House of Commons, but the King dissuaded from his designed recommendation, in favour of Sir Audley Mervyn, V. 136. d.

Donat-o-Teig, titular Archbishop of Armagh 1558—1563, had no connection with the Nag's Head story, III. 47. e.

Donatists, origin of the schism of the, II. 75. Account given by Optatus of the origin of the schism of the, I. 110. Council of Arles held in 314 respecting the appeal of the, from the Imperial delegates, whereof Pope Melchiades was one, I. 159. Collation of Carthage in 411, between the Catholics and the, with little success, I. 68.

Why schismatical, V. 206. The schism of the, consisted in their want of charity, II. 270. Restrained the Catholic Church to themselves, I. 109. 257; II. 42. 106. 255, 256; V. 205. Refused to call the Catholics brethren, II. 106. 312. Although the

Catholics called them so, II. 312. 585. St. Augustin's opinion of the, II. 30, 31. 33. 41. 148. 256. 271. Saying of Optatus concerning the, II. 106.

Papists are the right heirs of the, and not Protestants, II. 106. 203. The Romanists are the true, I. 109. 257; II. 42. 256. And are worse than the, II. 255, 256.

Dorobernensis, Gervasius; see *Gervasius Dorobernensis.*

Dort, Synod of; see *Synod of Dort.*

D'Osma, Peter; see *Petrus Oxomensis.*

Douay, Foreign Seminary at, for English Priests; see *Seminaries, Foreign.*

Douglas, William, Earl of Angus, violence of the Scotch Kirk against, as being a Romanist, III. 260, 261. 268; and see *Assembly General of Edinburgh*, A.D. 1593, 1594, 1596.

Δουλεία, see Λατρεία.

Down, Bishop of; see St. *Malachi.*

Down, Connor, and Dromore, Bishop of; see *Taylor, Jeremy.*

Down-Derry, title of a book against Bramhall by Mr. Serjeant; see *Serjeant.*

Downham, William, Bishop of Chester 1561—1577, proof of the consecration of, III. 226. One of the Bishops alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.

Downing, Calybute, L.L.D., a Presbyterian minister, absolved the released prisoners of the Parliamentarian army in the Great Rebellion, from the oath they had taken, not to serve against the king, III. 306.

Doxology, Arian perversion of the, I. 110; II. 46.

Draw, meaning of the term in Holy Scripture, IV. 231, 232. 400.

Driedo, admission of, respecting the Papal Supremacy, II. 376.

Drogheda, or *Tredagh*, Sir H. Tichburne governor of, from 1641 through the Rebellion, V. 147. Storm of, and massacre, in September 1649, by Cromwell, V. 117. o. 122.

Drop, of Hobbes's speculation, whether a falling, moves the whole world, IV. 404.

Du Bellay, Eustache, Bishop of Paris, owned the doctrine of the Divine right of Bishops to be the doctrine of the Sorbonne, at the Council of Trent, I. 189. Saying attributed to Lanssac or to, respecting the intrigues of the Papal legates at that Council, I. 259; and see *Council of Trent.*

Dublin, Archbishops of; see *Curwyn, Lawrence, Margetson.* Titular Archbishop of (R. C.), see *Talbot.*

Dubritius, Archbishop of Caerleon and Primate of Britain, in the time of King Arthur, died 522; whether or no a Papal legate, II. 172; and see St. *David.* Was elected and consecrated independently of the Pope, II. 151. Removed the primacy of Wales from Caerleon to Llandaff, see *Caerleon.*

Dudley, John, Duke of Northumberland, executed for treason against Queen Mary although the act was committed before the proclamation of her accession to the throne, III. 369.

Dunbar, Battle of, September 1650, I. cxlv, cxlvi; V. 117. p.

Dundee, General Assembly of; see *Assembly General of Dundee.*

Dunlavan, Prebend of, in St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin, never held by Bishop Bramhall, I. vi. v.

Duns Scotus, Johannes; see *Johannes Duns Scotus.*

Dunstan, St., Bishop of Worcester—of London, Archbishop of Canterbury, died 988; refused compliance with a Papal dispensation, II. 447.

———, *Antony;* see *Kitchin.*

Du Puy, Pierre and *Jacques;* see *Libertez de l'Eglise Gallicane.*

Durandus, saying of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 22.

Duration, see *Eternity.*

Durell, John, D.D., Minister of the French Church in London, 1661—1683, book of, in favour of Episcopacy, II. 64. k; III. 485. h.

Durham, Bishops of; see *Fox Richard, Morton Thomas, Neil, Pilkington, Tunstall, Wolsey.*

Dury, a Scotch Presbyterian Minister, saucy and seditious expressions of, against King James I., III. 257.

E.

Eadmer, the chaplain and biographer of Archbishop Anselm, placed over Anselm at the Archbishop's own entreaty, to exercise his obedience, II. 456.

Testimony of, that the exterior jurisdiction of English Bishops proceeded from the King, II. 456, 457. To the investiture of Anselm by William Rufus, II. 406. That the rights of the Church of Canterbury had been granted by the English Kings, II. 456, 457; and see *Augustine, Ab-*

bey of St. Admission of, that Bishops of old always paid homage to laymen, II. 417. That Papal legates were admitted into England only at the King's request, and to determine great quarrels, II. 442. See *Anselm, Investiture, Legates.*

Ealred, held communion with the see of Rome essential, II. 142, 143.

Earbery, Rev. Matthias, book of, against the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f.

Earcombert, King of Kent in 640, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413.

East Angles, kingdom of the, vain efforts of King Ethelbert of Kent to convert it to Christianity, I. 267. Converted from France in the days of King Sigibert, I. 268.

Easter, observed differently in the Eastern and Western Churches, II. 382; V. 46. Different traditions respecting the observance of, from St. John and St. Peter, II. 176, 177; V. 44. St. John's tradition about the observance of, explained, V. 35. Time of observation of, by the Bishops of Rome and of Ephesus, differed, I. 130.

Schism respecting the time of observing, between the Roman and the Asiatic Churches, II. 28. That schism not about essentials, *ib.* and founded upon very small grounds, V. 46. It was caused by the arrogance of the Bishop of Rome; see *Irenæus, Polycarp, Polycrates, Victor I.* Pope.

The British and Scottish Bishops adhered to the Eastern Church as regards the observance of, I. 130. 160. 163. 268; II. 176. 526; V. 46. Yet not entirely, II. 176. Kept by the British Churches on a Sunday but not the same Sunday as the Church of Rome, II. 176; V. 46. By the Asiatics upon any day in the week, *ib.* See *Church British, Church of Scotland.* The British Church never judged schismatical for its mode of observing; see *Church, British.*

Of the Judaico-Christian observance of, and of the Jewish Sabbath or Saturday, V. 44—46. In the Jewish manner of observing, it might fall upon any day of the week, *ib.* Not kept according to the Jewish account in the Western Churches, II. 176; V. 46. See *Quarto-decimans.*

Was one of the two ordinary seasons of Baptism in the primitive Church, V. 177.

Eastern Churches; see *Churches, Eastern.*

Eberhard I., Duke of Wirtemberg, anecdote of, V. 125.

Ebionites, The, heresy of, respecting the Holy Eucharist, I. 9. Thought the law of the Sabbath continued still in force, V. 43. So much offended with St. Paul on account of his manifest declaration against the Sabbath, that they refused to admit his writings into the Canon, I. c; V. 59. Calumnious account given by, of St. Paul, V. 59.

Ecclesiastical Persons; see *Bishops, Clergy, Doctors of the Church, Hobbes.*

Ecclesia Virtualis, Representativa, Essentialis; see *Church, Catholic.*

Edelwald, Bishop of Winchester in the reign of Edgar, II. 141.

Edelwalk, or *Ethelwolf,* King of the South Saxons 595—620, made Wilfrid Bishop of the South Saxons, now Chichester, then Selsey, I. 146.

Edgar, King of England 959—975, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413. Had power as political Head, and used it, to govern the Church by ecclesiastical delegates, II. 141. 234. Granted the election of the Abbot of Glastonbury to the monks of the Abbey, but reserved to himself the investiture, II. 407.

Edinburgh, General Assembly of; see *Assembly General of Edinburgh.*

Edmund the Elder, King of England 941—946, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413.

——— *Ironside,* King of England 1016, murdered by Edric, III. 308.

Edric, the murderer of Edmund Ironside, how punished by Canute, III. 308.

Eduensis, Stephen; see *Stephen Eduensis.*

Edward the Elder, King of England 901—924, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413. Excommunicated by Pope Formosus, II. 138, 139. English Bishoprics divided by the Pope in the reign of, *ib.* but by Edward's authority, *ib.* Assembled a Synod, and confirmed its decrees by his regal authority, II. 139. 413.

——— *the Confessor,* King of England 1042—1066, Bull granted to, by Pope Nicolas II., I. 137. 230; II. 128. 145. as an artifice of the Pope's to secure authority over him, I. 138. Was political Head of the Church, I. 138. 230; II. 128. 145. both by Pope Nicolas's Bull and by the law of the land, *ib.* Ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413. Laws of, confirmed by William the Conqueror, I. 136. Appointed to Bishoprics, see *Robertus Gemeticensis.* Superscrip-

tion of letter of, to Pope Nicolas II., II. 143—145.

Edward I., King of England, was styled "the First Conqueror after the Conqueror," because he improved the regal power, III. 388. Of the form of Summons to Parliament in the 23rd year of, III. 388—390. Claimed the allegiance of all Bishops to himself, II. 421. Protest of the whole kingdom against the Pope's citation of, in 1301, I. 148; III. 384.

——— *II.*, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 373, 374. Ambiguous verse concerning, from Stow, III. 438.

——— *III.*, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 373, 374. Limitation of the power of Parliament in the time of, III. 390—392. Revoked a statute on his own authority, III. 376. Independence of, upon the Pope, II. 145, 146. Fruitless complaint of, to Pope Clement VI. in 1343, I. 195; II. 145. Consulted the Pope as a private person, about his right to the crown of France, II. 146. 234.

——— *IV.*, King of England, sat personally in the Court of King's Bench, III. 358.

——— *VI.*, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 372. 376. Title of Head of the Church in England and Ireland, continued to, I. 29. y. Statutes passed in the reign of, attributing spiritual power to him as its source, V. 228, 229. Childhood of, no argument against the Reformation, II. 94. Acts for authorizing the Book of Common Prayer, passed in the reign of; see *Prayer, Book of Common.* Mode of nominating Bishops changed in the reign of, but the ancient method restored by Queen Mary; see *Bishops, English, Congé d'Eslire, Election of Bishops.* Statutes passed in the reign of; see *Statutes, English.*

Effect, see *Cause.*

Efficacy, theory of necessity grounded upon the physical and moral, of outward objects; see *Objects.* Difference between natural and moral, IV. 220. Theory of necessity grounded upon the, of the last dictate of the understanding; see *Reason, Understanding.* Of the, of prayer, and of confidence in prayer; see *Prayer.* Of the, of the Holy Sacraments; see *Sacraments.*

Egbert, King of Kent 664—673, conduct of, towards Archbishop Theodore, II. 135.

Egfrid, King of Northumbria 671—686, half brother of Alfred his successor, called by Bramhall erroneously Egbert, and father of Alfred; treatment by, of Archbishop Wilfrid, I. 133; II. 132.

Eighth Commandment, the most dangerous of the Decalogue, for it obligeth not to repentance only but to restitution, III. 510, 511.

Εἰκὼν Βασιλικὴ, III. 525; V. 119, 120.

Elders, Lay, exercising ecclesiastical jurisdiction, no such thing in Christendom before Calvin, II. 62; III. 469. 531. Calvin's borrowed from the Waldenses, II. 62. But those of the Waldenses were merely a kind of Churchwardens, and had no ecclesiastical jurisdiction, II. 63.

Elect, The, belong invisibly to the Church before they are converted, I. 78; and see St. *Augustin.*

Elect, Bishop; see *Bishops.*

Election, as a term of moral philosophy, definition of, IV. 284. Definition of, from Aristotle, IV. 285. 293. Is of more than one, IV. 300. Of one out of more, inconsistent with determination to one, IV. 389. Is only of alternatives conceived possible, IV. 38.

Necessity and, inconsistent in the same act, IV. 49. Is opposed to coarctation as well as to coaction, IV. 130. Compulsion and, inconsistent, IV. 387. Doth not necessarily follow the last judgment of the practical reason; see *Reason, Understanding.* Reply to Hobbes's assertion that election as well as action is necessary, IV. 59. 131.

Irrational beings are incapable of, IV. 50—52. See *Actions of Brute Beasts, Beasts.*

Argument from Holy Scripture, that men have power of, and therefore true liberty, IV. 37. 41. 283. The same truth proved by universal consent, IV. 39. Resolution proveth liberty and, IV. 254.

See *Liberty, Necessity.*

——— *of Bishops*, by Deans and Chapters, neither essential to Episcopacy nor evermore used in the Church, V. 201. Either in England, *ib.* Or elsewhere, V. 203. Form of, by compromise, what it means, III. 195. o. Three modes of, of which that is one, *ib.*

Ancient mode of, in England, by Congé d'Eslire, and Deans and Chapters; see *Bishops English, Congé*

d'Estire. Change in the mode of, to a simple nomination by the King, made by statute of Edward VI. in 154⅞, III. 66. k; V. 200. d. The old practice resumed by Queen Mary, and retained by Queen Elizabeth and ever since, *ib.* Corresponding changes in the form of recording Confirmations and Consecrations in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. Pref. To be carefully distinguished from the change in the Ordinal in April 1550, *ib.*

Mode of, in Ireland, by simple letters patent of the King; see *Bishops, Irish.*

The, of Archbishop Parker to the Archbishopric of Canterbury, III. 72. And at length from the Register, III. 189—197. It was effected by compromise, III. 195. Evidence, that the Canons mentioned in the Register as present at it, were those possessed of and retaining their Canonries at the time, and that those mentioned as absent were those who were afterwards deprived, III. 193. z—j.

Elements, in the Holy Eucharist; see *Λατρεία, Lord's Supper.*

Eleutherius, Pope 176—192, letter of, to King Lucius of Britain, of dubious faith, I. 164; II. 535. That letter far from proving the Papal supremacy, even if it were genuine, I. 164; II. 301. 535. Speaks of Lucius as 'the Vicar of Christ in his kingdom,' I. 164. And refers the legislative part of the matter to him, II. 301. 535. Of the sending of Priests by, into Britain, to baptize King Lucius, II. 168. 301.

Elias, Patriarch of Muzal, judged orthodox by the Bishop of Rome, II. 85. 275.

Elicit Acts, see *Actions of Free-Agents.*

Elipandus, see *Elipandians.*

Elipandians, The, heresy of, that Christ is but the Adoptive Son of God, condemned by the Council of Frankfort, I. 205. See *Fæliciaus.*

Elizabeth, Queen of England, did not style herself Head of the Church in England, I. 29. 31; II. 119. Injunction of, disclaiming all spiritual power, II. 399. 458; and see *Articles, The XXXIX.* Statute of 1 Eliz. c. 1. gave no spiritual power to, V. 233, 234. See *Whitgift.*

Bull of Pius V. against, I. 248; II. 112. 245. Ill will of the Popes to, II. 112. Negotiations of Pius V. for the murder of, II. 112. 114. Treasons of Papists against, II. 112. 114—116. Conduct and words of, explained, with respect to the Popish Priests put to death in her reign, II. 121—124; and see *Romanists.* No Popish recusants known in England until the eleventh year (1570) of the reign of, I. 248; II. 117. 245; and see *Recusants, Romanists.* Penal laws of, against the Court more than the Church of Rome, II. 117; and see *Laws, Penal.*

Offer of Pope Pius IV. to, to admit the English Liturgy; see *Parpalia, Pius IV.* Pope.

Refused the Emperor's intercession for the Bishops displaced at her accession, and on what ground, II. 100. 505. First Commission of, for the Confirmation and Consecration of Archbishop Parker, III. 72. Second, III. 52. 74. 77. 178, 179. Dispensative Clause in the second Commission; see *Commission or Royal Assent, Parker Matthew.* Table of the several acts relating to the Bishops consecrated in the second and third years of, III. 216—231; and see *Bishops, English.* Was as rapacious of Church property as Henry VIII. himself, V. 232. a.

Authority claimed by, over Parliament, III. 327, 328. 395. Committed a member of the House of Commons to the Tower (the Parliament sitting), for proposing to advise her in a matter beyond the cognizance of the House, III. 392. 394; and see *Wentworth, Peter.*

Statutes passed in the reign of; see *Statutes, English.*

Matched by the Puritans with Ahab and Jeroboam, III. 378.

Elizabeth, daughter of James I., Queen of Bohemia, Christening of, III. 258. Letter of, to Archbishop Bramhall upon his appointment to the see of Armagh, I. xxiii.

Elrington, Thomas, D.D., book of, respecting the Nag's Head fable, against Mr. Gandolphy, III. 40. f.

Elvanus, Avalonius, of Glastonbury, an eminent divine, sent by King Lucius on an embassy to Rome, II. 168, 169.

Elvington, or *Eterington*; see *Bramhall, John.*

Ely, Bishops of; see *Andrewes, Cox, Gunning, Laney, Morton John, Thirlby, White Francis.*

Emmanuel, see *Comnenus.*

Emmaus, journey of the two disciples to, was upon the Lord's Day, V. 56—58. Yet was no profanation of that day, *ib.* Heylin's argument respecting

it answered, *ib.* The Holy Eucharist, or at the least a figure of it, celebrated by our Lord Himself upon that occasion, *ib.* Evidence of the Fathers to this, V. 57.

Emperor; see *Church, King, Patriarch.*

Emperors, Christian, Roman and *Greek,* were political Heads of the Churches within their dominions, I. 30—32. 172. 176; II. 224—231. 233, 234. Exercised every conceivable external act of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, by fit delegates, I. 171, 172. that is, under civil pains, I. 172. Evidence of the Code, and the Authentics or Novels of the Emperor Justinian, to the ecclesiastical power exercised by the, I. 172; II. 234. Alleged instances to the contrary answered, II. 224—231. Patriarchal power subject to imperial, I. 176; and see *Patriarchs.* Have changed Patriarchs and Patriarchates by their own authority, I. 177, 178; and see *Patriarchate of Carthage—of Constantinople—of Justiniana Prima.* Wherever they newly founded a metropolis, gave the Bishop thereof a proportionable ecclesiastical pre-eminence, II. 184. Have convented, imprisoned, and deposed Popes, I. 172, 173. Challenged the power of summoning and presiding over General Councils, I. 171. 207; II. 184; III. 244. And of ratifying them; see *Council of Chalcedon—of Constantinople.* Investiture and nomination of Bishops within their own dominions always belonged to the, V. 201. 203; and see *Investiture.* That of the Pope himself belonged to the, see *Bishop of Rome.* See St. *Ambrose, Gregory I.* Pope, *Justinian, Marcian, Theodosius, Valentinian.*

———, *Western* and *German,* how the, were elected, IV. 39, 40. 287. Election of the, claimed at one time by the Popes; see *Boniface IX., John XXII.* Mode of election of the, determined by the Bulla Aurea, IV. 287. The, were elective, and thus more in the power of the Popes than the Kings of England, I. 202. Oath of the, at their Coronation; see *Oath Coronation of the German Emperors.*

Were political Heads of the Church within their own dominions, I. 30—32; II. 216, 217. 315. 600. Alleged instances to the contrary, answered, II. 231—233. Evidence of the Capitulars of Charlemagne and his successors, to the ecclesiastical power exercised by the, I. 172. 205, 206. Have convented, imprisoned, and deposed Popes, I. 172, 173. 217. Have convocated and confirmed synods within their own dominions, I. 205, 206; II. 414—416. And so reformed the Church, *ib.* Have made themselves the last judges of their own liberties and necessities, and of those of their subjects, I. 211. Have appealed to a General Council against Popes, I. 203. 217. Have excluded legates, I. 214. Have neglected the Pope's Bulls, *ib.* Have seized upon Papal pretended rights, I. 215. Have imposed oaths of allegiance against Popes, to themselves, I. 216. Have declared against Pardons and Indulgences, *ib.* Investiture and nomination of Bishops in their own dominions always belonged to the, I. 213; V. 201. 203. And of the Pope himself at one time, see *Bishop of Rome.* From the time of Charlemagne, II. 232. 414. See *Charlemagne, Charles V., Ferdinand, Frederic, Henry II.* and *IV.* Emperors of Germany.

Did not only desire, but in some measure effect, a reformation in the Church, I. 209. Have done as much in relation to the Court of Rome as the Kings of England, I. 205. No contradiction to say, that the, and other princes of the Roman Communion, have done the same thing in effect as the kings of England, towards the Pope, II. 222—224. 577—579. The case of the, different from that of the kings of England, as regards the Bishops of Rome, inasmuch as they were more in his power, I. 201—204. The kings of England as sovereign as the, I. 178.

Empyreum, Cœlum; see *Cœlum.*

Encroachments, of the Pope; see *Bishop of Rome.* Of the Scottish Disciplinarians, see *Disciplinarians.*

England, description of, by a French author as "a great animal that can only be destroyed by its own strength," V. 110.

Styled by Pope Innocent IV., in 1246, his "garden of delight," and "inexhaustible well," I. 131; II. 309. More than a third part of, asserted to be in ecclesiastical hands in 1527, I. 118. n. Other countries not equally oppressed by the Court of Rome, II. 309. Complaint of the whole Commonwealth of, to the Pope and Council of Lyons, I. 194; II. 448. Oppression and pillage of, by the Popes; see *Bishop of Rome, Court of Rome.*

Was first separated from the com-

munion of the Church of Rome by the Court of Rome, I. 128. 257; and see *Court of Rome, Separation.* Was unanimous in casting out the Pope, I. 121; II. 501. And this not through fear of Henry VIII., II. 502—504. How far the Pope hath been cast off by; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of England.* The Pope hath no power in, either legislative, judiciary, or dispensative; see *Bishop of Rome.* How far a part of the Roman Patriarchate; see *Church British, Church of England, Patriarchate of Rome.*

Rebellions in Lincolnshire, Cumberland, and the Northern Counties of, in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., Elizabeth, in behalf of Romanism, III. 307. 343.

Rebellion in, in 1641—1660, true causes of it, I. 33, 34. First blood shed in it, III. 451. At Anlaby near Hull, *ib.* Sufferings of the clergy in it; see *Clergy English, Martyrology.* Comparison between the English and Irish Rebellions, see *Ireland.* See *Charles I., Hotham, Hull, Parker Henry, Serpent-Salve.*

Laws of; see *Statutes, English.*

Hath bred as many able polemic writers on both sides since the Reformation as any nation in Europe, I. 67; and see *Writers.*

England, Church of; see *Church of England.*

———, *Clergy of;* see *Clergy, English.*

———, *Kings of;* see *Kings of England.*

English, The, outnumbered the Normans after the Norman Conquest, II. 529. Foreign caricature of, deriding their newfangledness in attire, III. 298.

——— *Reformation;* see *Church of England, Separation.*

——— *Writers,* see *Writers.*

Ephesus, Church of; see *Church of Ephesus.*

———, *Council of;* see *Council of Ephesus.*

———, *Creed of;* see *Creed, Ephesian.*

———, *Patriarchate of;* see *Patriarchate of Ephesus.*

Ephræm, Patriarch of Antioch, expression of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. s.

——— *Syrus,* expressions of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r. 11. x.

Epicharmus, saying of, from Cicero; I. 39; II. 360. 630.

Epictetus, quotation from, respecting boasting, IV. 26. 261. 281. 466. Lucian's opinion of, IV. 261.

Epiphanius, quarrel of, with St. Chrysostom, did not presently render them schismatics, I. 98. Passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. s. Opinion of, concerning the Jewish Sabbaths, V. 26, 27. Testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath before the time of Moses, V. 22. 27. And to the Divine institution of the Lord's Day, V. 33.

Episcopacy, see *Bishops.* Book against, by Lord Brooke; see *Greville.*

Episcopacy, i. e. the collective body of Bishops, as represented in a General Council, is the Head of the Church Catholic, upon earth, I. 104; and see *Council General, Head of the Church.*

Episcopal Divines, a term of Baxter's, who groundlessly distinguishes between 'old' and 'new,' III. 523. 536. Of all divines, are the least likely to re-introduce Popery, III. 529. And Bramhall least likely of all, III. 538. Principles of, are inconsistent with Popery, III. 529, 530; and see *Bishops.* The Church of Rome, how far held a true Church by, III. 519; and see *Bramhall, Church of Rome.* Succession of Bishops, how far held essential by, III. 517; and see *Bishops, Churches Foreign Reformed.* Not inferior to the Nonconformists, III. 581. Mr. Baxter's impertinent railing against, III. 580. See *Bishops English, Clergy English, Doctors of the Church, Reconciliation, Writers.*

Episcopus Episcoporum; see *Bishop of Bishops, Bishop of Rome,* St. *Cyprian.* A title given to St. James the Great, II. 154.

Episcopus Universalis, or Head of the Catholic Church upon earth; see *Bishop Universal, Bishop of Rome, Gregory I.* Pope, *Head of the Church.*

Epistle of M. de la Milletiére, to Charles II.; see *Milletiére, Victory of Truth.*

Erasmus, makes the original of Shrift human, V. 223. Satirical tract of, entitled Μωρίας Ἐγκώμιον, IV. 336.

Erastianism, see *Erastus.* Grotius too much inclined to, in Bramhall's judgment; see *Grotius.*

Erastus, doctrines of, III. 242. Violence of the Scotch Presbyterians against them, III. 242, 243.

——— *Senior,* } see *Lewgar.*
——— *Junior,* }

Ercombert, see *Earcombert.*

Errol, Earl of; see *Hay.*

Errors, necessary to salvation to forsake

known, II. 59. Are not all in essentials, II. 312. 587. How far we are bound to free ourselves from known, in non-essentials, I. 101; II. 312. 587, 588. Some, are merely excesses without guilt, II. 56. Some, are just cause of reformation but not of separation, II. 55. Obtruded, justify a separation, I. 101, 102; II. 76. See *Fundamentals, Schism, Schismatics, Separation.*

The Church of England acknowledges no separation from the Roman Church but only in her, II. 54. 57. 200. 206. 593; V. 205. What and how old are the, and the usurpations of the Church of Rome, which compelled a separation; see *Church of England, Church of Rome, Separation.* The Church of Rome enjoins sinful, as necessary, II. 56.

Esau, how Jacob was loved and Esau hated, IV. 68. 75. St. Paul's allegorical application of the rejection of, explained, IV. 67—78.

Essence of God; see *God, Essence of.*

Essentials, all revealed truths are not, II. 279. Particular rites, forms, opinions, are not, II. 27. Actual want of, not conclusive to God, II. 26. See *Creed, Fundamentals, Heretics, Opinions, Schismatics.*

Schism is not always about, see *Schism.*

Three, of a true Church, II. 24. 37, 38. What are the, of the being of a Church; see *Church, Particular.*

Protestants and Papists do not differ in, II. 203. Protestants have forsaken no ancient Churches in, II. 34. And have not left the Roman Church in, II. 39. 259. See *Articles of Faith, Church of England, Church of Rome, Protestants.*

The Eastern Churches have a perfect concord both with themselves and with the primitive Church in; see *Churches, Eastern.*

Estates of Castile; see *Castile, Estates of.*

——— *of France*, at Tours, in 1483, I. 222.

———, *German*; see *Diet.*

——— *of Portugal*, see *University of Lisbon.*

Estrange, see *L'Estrange.*

Eterington, or *Elvington*; see *Bramhall, John.*

Eternal Punishment, see *Punishment.*

Eternity, is not a succession or successive duration, but an indivisible point, IV. 153, 154. 157. 424. Defined by St. Thomas Aquinas to be a "Nunc Stans," IV. 154. 175. 427. 481. Hobbes's gross mistakes about, IV. 460; and see *Hobbes.*

Eternity of God; see *God, Essence of, Eternity of.*

Ethelbert, King of Kent 568—616, converted to Christianity by St. Augustin, I. 267; II. 542. Conduct of, towards St. Augustin, no ground for the claim of Papal supremacy, II. 133. Slaughtered Dinoth and the Monks of Bangor, according to Geoffrey of Monmouth, II. 543, 544. Endeavoured to convert the kingdoms of Northumberland and the East Angles to Christianity, but without lasting success, I. 267.

Ethelred, King of England 978—1016, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413.

Ethelwolf, see *Edelwalk.*

Ethiopia, see *Æthiopia.*

Evaristus, Pope 100—109, ordained but five persons, I. 162. Patriarchate of, therefore, hardly large enough to include Britain, *ib.* Said to have introduced the institution of parishes, III. 490.

Eucharist, The Holy; see *Lord's Supper.*

Eucharistic Sacrifice, see *Sacrifice.*

Eugenius IV., Pope 1431—1447, was the first to devise the septenary number of the Sacraments, I. 55. Passage from the letter of, to the Armenians at the Council of Florence, respecting the double matter and form of Romish Ordination, I. 272; V. 219. Confesseth, that the sentence of a General Council is to be attended to rather than that of the Pope, II. 400. Complaints of St. Bernard to, respecting the corruption of the Church; see St. *Bernard.*

Eulalius, see *Boniface I.* Pope.

Eunomius, Arian Bishop of Samosata in 370, quitted by his flock, I. 102.

Euphemius, II. 433.

Euripides, doctrine of, respecting destiny, IV. 116.

Eusebius, Bishop of Cæsarea, parallel drawn by, between certain heathenish festivals and the Jewish Sabbatical periods, V. 12. h. Testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath before the time of Moses, V. 22.

———, *Cardinal of St.*, legate to Pope Martin V., protested against by King Henry VI. of England, I. 148; II. 442.

Eustace, Sir Maurice, Chancellor of Ireland 1660, sworn in as one of the Lords Justices December 1660, V. 136. e.

Euthymius, held that kings are responsible to God alone, III. 384.
Eutychians, explanation of the imputation of heresy upon the, given by Thomas à Jesu, II. 629. And by Brerewood, II. 629, 630. See *Eutychianism*.
Eutychianism, what it is, II. 329. How far the Eastern Churches are free from; see *Churches, Eastern*. The Church of England free from, see *Church of England*.
Evelyn, John, was a friend of Archbishop Bramhall, I. xi. a. xxiii. i. cxvi, cxvii. Married the daughter of Sir Richard Browne, I. cxvii. s.
Evil, God's agency in; see *Actions of Free Agents, God Agency of*. Law of good and, see *Law*. Hobbes maketh the civil laws the ultimate standard of good and; see *Hobbes, Law*.
Exarch of Ravenna, I. 173.
Excombert, I. 137; a mistake for *Earcombert*.
Excommunicated Persons, the 33rd Article of the Church of England respecting, explained, II. 582. Sancta Clara's opinion of that Article, *ib*.
Excommunication, sentence of, not declarative merely, but also operative, and how, II. 454. To exclude by, and to declare excluded, the same thing, II. 244. Terrible nature of, in the judgment of the Fathers, II. 454. Unjust sentence of, is unloosed by God, II. 237; V. 209; and see St. *Augustin*, St. *Cyprian*. Communion in desire, sufficient to save a person unjustly excommunicated, II. 65.

A duty of every orthodox Church to pass sentence of, against formal heretics, II. 591. No duty to pass sentence of, against material heretics, *ib*. Doctrine of some Romanists, that "a prince or a multitude ought not to be excommunicated," II. 238.

The Pope and Court of Rome proved schismatical for obtruding new Articles of Faith under penalty of; see *Bishop of Rome, Court of Rome, Pius IV*. Pope.

Papal, cannot be executed in England without the King's leave, I. 139, 140, 141. 147. 150; II. 298. 441, 442. 514; V. 264. Laws to this effect always in force in England from the earliest times, II. 441, 442. See *Bishop of Rome, Kings of England*. The, of Henry VIII., unjust, and therefore not conclusive, II. 237; and see *Henry VIII*.

Extreme rigour of the Scottish Disciplinarians with respect to; see *Discipline, Discipline Books of, Disciplinarians*.
Exercise, Liberty of, only, or of contradiction, distinguished from liberty of exercise and specification also, which is termed liberty of contrariety, IV. 33. 36. Liberty of, not necessarily accompanied by liberty of specification, IV. 123. 278. Liberty of God, and of good Angels, a liberty of, without specification, IV. 121. See *Liberty*.
Exeter, Bishops of; see *Alley, Coverdale, Fox Richard, Hall, Turberville*.
Exiles, English Royalist, hard condition of, in the time of the Rebellion, I. x, xi. lxvii. xci. xciii. xcv. 35. 276, 277; II. 49. 96. 124. 246, 247; III. 509. 581, 582; V. 122. 130; and see *Clergy, English*.
Exode, The, happened on the first day of the week, V. 60. n.
Experience, meditation little worth without making use of other men's, IV. 281. Theory insufficient without, IV. 549. See *Hobbes*.
Exterior Court, jurisdiction in the; see *Jurisdiction*.
External Communion; Externals, Communion in; see *Communion*.
Extra Deum; see *God, Immanent Acts of*.
Extreme Unction, I. 56. Passage of St. James respecting unction explained, *ib*.
Extrinsecal Causes, see *Causes*.
——— *Necessity*, see *Necessity*.

F.

Faculty, the, of willing, is the will, IV. 438. The same, willeth and nilleth, IV. 448. See *Will*.

God hath no faculties; see *God, Essence of*.
Fœlicians, The, heresy of, that Christ is but the Adoptive Son of God, condemned by the Council of Frankfort, I. 205; and see *Elipandians*.
Fahan, see *Fawne*.
Faircloth, a Jesuit, admitted the genuineness of the Register of Archbishop Parker's Consecration, in 1614, III. 101. 153, 154, 155. Unworthy shift of, in order to nullify his admission, *ib*. Alleged testimony of, to the Nag's Head fable, III. 117. l.
Fair Warning, to take heed of the Scottish Discipline, by Bishop Bramhall, Works, Part ii. Discourse i, III. 235—287. Contents of, III. 236—240. Occasion, editions, and account of,

I. xxx; III. Pref. b. Translated into Dutch, III. Pref. See *Baillie Robert, Watson Richard.* Spottiswood's History supplied the facts for, see *Spottiswood.*

Faith, grounds of; see *Church Catholic, Creed, Faith Rule of, Scripture, Tradition.* Certainty of the, of the Church of England; see *Cary, Chillingworth, Church of England, Hammond, Infallibility.* The Romanists, not the Protestants, have turned opinion into; see *Articles of Faith, Church of Rome, Creed, Faith Rule of, Pius IV.* Pope.

——, *The*, usually taken in Scripture, Fathers, and Councils, for the Creed, II. 478. 481.

——, *The Catholic*, fundamentals of, II. 277. How much is necessary to be believed in order to salvation ordinarily, II. 278. See *Creed, Fundamentals.*

Communion in, doth not acquit from schism, II. 78. Communion in all points of, not necessary always, *ib.* Errors in, obtruded, justify a separation, II. 76. See *Communion, Schism, Separation.*

The Pope's new Articles of, a just cause of separation, II. 200. The Church of Rome obtrudeth new Articles of, and excommunicateth for not receiving them, I. 247; II. 241. 325. 592, 593. 622. The Papacy made by Romanists an essential article of, II. 243. The Pope's new Articles of, prove the Church of Rome schismatical; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Pius IV.* Pope.

The Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England no points of, II. 201. 476. 593. Negatives of the Church of England no Articles of, II. 210. 313. 592. See *Articles of Faith, Articles The XXXIX., Church of England.*

No difference in points of, between the Churches of Rome and England; see *Church of England—of Rome.*

——, *Justifying*, what is, II. 87; and see *Justification.*

——, *Special*, what is meant by, II. 87. Justification by, is no Article of the Church of England, II. 87. 209. Although held by some particular persons in England, II. 209. Sancta Clara's acknowledgment of this, II. 209, 210.

——, *Articles of*; see *Articles of Faith.*

Faith, Confessions of; see *Confession, Creed.*

——, *The Guide of*, a book so called; see *Norris, Sylvester.*

——, *Public*, loans raised in London upon the security of the, by the Parliament in 1640, V. 108.

——, *The Rule of*, I. 49, 50. The Holy Scriptures interpreted by the Catholic Church, the infallible, II. 22. 596; III. 542. The Scriptures a, of supernatural truths necessary to salvation, I. 49; V. 269. The Scriptures interpreted according to the analogy of Faith and the tradition of the Church, the, of the Church of England, II. 575. 596. 630. See *Scriptures.*

The Creed the old, II. 470. 597. 630. 635. The Creed a sufficient, as expounded by the first four General Councils; see *Creed.* The Creed the same, as the Scriptures, but dilated in the Scriptures, contracted in the Creed, II. 597. 630. See *Creed, Scriptures.*

How far the Church Catholic is; see *Church, Catholic.*

How far Tradition is, see *Tradition.*

No negatives in, II. 210, 211; and see *Articles of Faith.*

Protestants have not forsaken, nor the Church of England, II. 34. 370; and see *Church of England, Protestants.*

S. N.'s argument answered, that English clergy have only private interpretation of Scripture and therefore no infallible or authoritative, V. 265, 266.

The Roman, cannot be proved out of the first four General Councils or by universal tradition, I. 65. The Roman, composed of uncertainties, I. 71, 72; II. 315. And resolved into human infallibility, I. 72. Great advantage of the Protestant over the Roman Catholic in the choice of his foundation of Faith, I. 71. The Apostles' Creed a more authentic, than Pius IV.'s, and the Holy Scriptures a more infallible ground than particular supposititious tradition, II. 575. See *Bishop of Rome, Church of England—of Rome.*

Faithful, The, technical meaning of the term in the primitive Church, I. 104; II. 479.

Falkenberch, book of, condemned by the Council of Constance, I. 251.

Falkland, Viscount; see *Cary.*

Farellus, a Genevan Protestant divine,

favoured Episcopacy, III. 535. Letter of Calvin to, III. 305.

Farrer, or *Ferrar*, *Robert*, Bishop of St. David's 1548—1554, Episcopal ordination of, declared null at his degradation in 1555, III. 115. g. Consecrated according to the old Ordinal, *ib.* Form of entry of the Consecration of, in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. Pref. in fin.

Fast, of Lent; see *Lent*. Of Wednesday, Friday, Saturday; see *Friday*, *Saturday*, *Wednesday*.

Fate, or *Destiny*, divided by Lipsius into four kinds, IV. 119. Definitions of, IV. 116. Distinctions between Stoical and Christian necessity, *ib.* See *God Foreknowledge of*, *Necessity*; *Apuleius*, *Chrysippus*, *Euripides*, *Lipsius*, *Seneca*, *Stoics*, *Virgil*.

Fathers, *The Primitive*, authority assigned to, by the Church of England, I. 52. Degree and kind of weight to be attributed to, II. 161, 162.

Expressions of, concerning the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10, 11. How those expressions are to be explained, I. 13, 14. Knew nothing of Transubstantiation, word or thing, I. 24. Expressions of, concerning the Holy Eucharist as an efficacious means of obtaining forgiveness of sins, V. 163. z. Explained the "Breaking of Bread" at Emmaus, to be the Holy Eucharist, V. 56, 57.

Interpretation by, of the eternal Priesthood of Melchisedek, V. 226.

Equality of the Apostles among themselves maintained by, I. 153. k. Papal Headship rejected by, II. 10.

What understood by, in the word 'Merits,' I. 57; II. 632, 633. Expressions of, respecting Repentance and Confession, V. 158. Free-will maintained by, IV. 192. n. 216.

Opinions of, respecting the state of the soul after death and before the Judgment, I. 59; and see St. *Augustin*. Respecting the Invocation of Saints, I. 58.

Expressions of, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 472, 473. Tradition, V. 266, 267.

Expressions of, respecting the Jewish Sabbath, V. 22. The Lord's Day, V. 42, 43.

Expressions of, respecting the sin of Judas, II. 28. Passive obedience to Kings, III. 384. The Anthropomorphites, IV. 489.

Fawcett, *Richard*, Canon of Canterbury in 1559, but not present at Archbishop Parker's election, III. 193. Deprived, and when, III. 193. c.

Fawne, a residence of the Bishop of Derry, I. lxxxv. lxxxviii.

Fear, definition of, by Aristotle, IV. 51. Inconsistent with deliberation, *ib.* The five causes of, according to Aristotle, I. 40; IV. 134, 390. Actions which proceed from, may or may not be spontaneous, IV. 48. Actions proceeding from, are not compulsory actions, IV. 124. Of, and other passions, how far they determine the will, IV. 134, 135. Doth not abrogate a law, IV. 392. Origin of commonwealths not from mutual fear, as Hobbes affirmeth, IV. 595.

Feather, sophism of the assertion, that the last, breaketh the horse's back, IV. 62. 149, 150. Of Hobbes's speculation, whether a, makes a diamond yield, IV. 402.

Feckenham, *John*, Abbot of Westminster, deprived in 1559; Archbishopric of Canterbury said to have been offered to, by Queen Elizabeth in 1559, and refused, III. 187. m. Book of, admitting Horne to be Bishop of Winchester, III. 225. Imprisoned in Wisbeach Castle, III. 107. p.

"*Fel Principum Tenebrarum*," or "Gall of the Dragon," name given by the Manichees to wine, which they held to be a creature of the Evil Deity, I. 9.

Felicians, *The*; see *Fœlicians*.

Felicissimus, an African Priest, motive of, for raising a schism in the Church of Carthage, II. 75. Excommunicated by St. Cyprian, II. 150. Complained to the Bishop of Rome, *ib.* St. Cyprian's reprehension of the Bishop of Rome for receiving the complaint of, I. 61; II. 150.

Felix, Pope 269—274, a martyr, I. 255.

Ferdinand I., Emperor of Germany, declaration of, in favour of the Confession of Augsburg in 1555, I. 211.

——— *III.*, Emperor of Germany, dispute of, with Innocent X., respecting the Peace of Westphalia in 1648, I. 212. Paid no regard to the Papal Bulls, *ib.*

Fermo, *Archbishop of*; see *Rinuccini*.

Ferrar, see *Farrar*.

Ferus, account of, III. 520. x. Baxter's admiration of, III. 520.

Festivals, of the Church, rest upon a genuine universal Apostolical tradition, I. 53. Scotch Disciplinarians abolished all, III. 246. 272. Of

Corpus Christi; see *Corpus Christi, Festival of.*
Fide, Congregation De Propagandâ; see *Congregation.*
Fideles; see *Faithful, The.*
Fides, taken for the Creed; see *Faith.*
Field, John, a coadjutor of the Puritan Thomas Cartwright, violent and seditious expression of, III. 302.
———, *Richard, D.D.*, Dean of Gloucester (1609—1616), an able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67. Admission of, respecting the Church of Rome, II. 271. Quotation from, concerning inferior truths, V. 31. Traditions, *ib.* Interpretation of Scripture, I. 48—52.
Fiennes, William, Viscount Say and Sele, disbelief of, in the tale respecting Bishop Morton and the Nag's Head Consecration, propagated by Lord Audley, III. 9. Was an enemy to Bishops, *ib.*
Finanus, a Scottish Bishop, converted Penda King of Mercia, I. 268.
Finite, nothing, begins to be of itself, IV. 169.
Fire, Hobbes's impertinent instance of, to illustrate necessity, IV. 266—268.
First Cause, IV. 117. 120. See *Cause.*
First Day of the Week, great stress laid upon the, in the Gospels, V. 55, 56. Apostolical practice upon the, V. 48. The Day of Pentecost did fall upon the, in the year of our Lord's Crucifixion, V. 51, 52. u. And Easter also, V. 53. Different passages in the Gospels concerning the, V. 55. Israelites crossed the Red Sea upon the, V. 60, n. Whether the Lord's Day may be changed by the authority of the Church from the, to another, V. 61. See *Lord's Day, Sunday.*
First Fruits, Tenths, and Annates, taken away from the Pope in England by Henry VIII., I. 215; II. 401. 422—425. 449. And in Germany by the Advices of Mentz and the Council of Basle, I. 215. By the Diet of Nuremberg, the Hundred Grievances, I. 216; II. 425. By Charles V., I. 216. Annates originally given for maintenance of the war against the Turks, I. 216; II. 423. Condemned by the Councils of Constance and Basle, II. 401. 424. And by a law of Henry IV. of England, II. 450. See *Tenths.*
First Movership; see *Movership, First.*
First See; see *Church of Rome, Patriarchs The Five Great.*
Fisher, John, Cardinal, Bishop of Rochester 1504—1535; said to have inclined at one time to take the Oath of Supremacy, I. 121. Consented to the title of Head of the Church in England, with a qualification, II. 189. Imprisoned for denying Henry VIII.'s marriage, and opposing the Act of Succession, not for refusing the Oath of Supremacy, I. 121; II. 99. 189. 501.
Fitzgerald, Gerald, Earl of Desmond, hallowed banner sent to, by the Pope, by the hands of two Romish Priests, Allen and Sanders, to encourage him in rebellion, II. 112.
Fitzherbert, Sir Anthony, a Judge in the reign of Henry VIII., whether or no he was a Papist, II. 517. Testimony of, that Henry VIII.'s statutes against the Pope, were declarative not operative, I. 151; II. 296, 517.
———, *Thomas*, an Anglo-Romanist writer, affirmed the fable of the Nag's Head Consecration, in 1612, 1613, III. 39. f. 42, 43. "Suspicions" of, relating to the genuineness of the Register of Archbishop Parker's Consecration, III. 118. Presumptuous language of, concerning Bp. Andrewes, III. 119.
Fitz-Simon, Henry, an Anglo-Romanist writer, affirmed the fable of the Nag's Head Consecration in 1614, III. 39. f. 42, 43.
Flanders; see *Brabant.*
Fleming, Richard, Bishop of Lincoln 1420—1430, translated by Pope Martin V. to the see of York in 1424 (misdated 1420 by Bramhall), but forced to return to his old see by King Henry V., I. 141. 195.
Fleta, doctrine of, respecting kingly power, III. 328.
Florence, happier state of, under the Dukes of Tuscany, than when it was a republic, III. 427, 428.
———, *Council of;* see *Council of Florence.*
——— *of Worcester*, affords unquestionable testimony, that the nomination and investiture of Bishops in England doth belong to the Imperial Crown, by law and custom immemorial, V. 202.
Florentius Wigorniensis, see *Florence of Worcester.*
Fludd, or *Floyd, John*, an Anglo-Romanist writer, affirmed the fable of the Nag's Head Consecration in 1613, III. 39. f.
Folliott, Gilbert, Bishop of London 1163—1187, statute of Clarendon enforced against, by Henry II., for

publishing a Papal excommunication without the King's licence, II. 442.

Foreign Protestant or *Reformed Churches*; see *Churches, Foreign Protestant.*

———————, *Divines*; see *Divines, Foreign Reformed.*

Foreknowledge of God; see *God Foreknowledge of, Liberty, Necessity.*

Forgiveness of Sins, see *Sin.* By Absolution, Baptism, the Lord's Supper; see *Absolution, Baptism, Lord's Supper, Priest.*

Formosus, Pope, died 896, I. 255. Excommunicated Edward the Elder, II. 138, 139. How far authority was exercised by, in England, in the erection of Bishoprics, *ib.* Orders conferred by, declared invalid by succeeding Popes, I. 255; III. 151. 154. 171. Treatment of the dead body of, by his successor Stephen VI., II. 92; III. 431.

Forms of Prayer; see *Prayer, Forms of.*

Fortunatus, an African Priest, excommunicated by St. Cyprian, II. 150. Complaint of, to the Bishop of Rome, *ib.* St. Cyprian's reprehension of the Bishop of Rome for receiving it, *ib.*

Foundation of Faith; see *Church Catholic, Creed, Faith Rule of, Scriptures, Tradition.*

Fourth Commandment, how far a positive law, I. xcviii, xcix; V. 28. How far mutable, I. xcix; V. 28, 29. 71. And by whom, *ib.* Is now abrogated, V. 80. In what way actually changed, I. xcix, c; V. 71. How binding upon Christians, V. 29, 30. 68, 69. Enjoined the observance of *the* seventh, not of *a* seventh, day, V. 29. Doth oblige all Christians to the observance of the Lord's Day, but analogically, not directly, V. 68, 69. See *Lord's Day, Sabbath.*

Fox, Edward, Bishop of Hereford 1535—1538, no regular record of the consecration of, in the Archiepiscopal Register, but it is recorded in his own diocesan Register, III. Pref. 137. a. 140. d. Other evidence for the consecration of, III. Pref. Cranmer's alleged conference with, at Waltham, II. 102. Sent to Oxford to procure the sanction of that University for the King's divorce, II. 188. Book of, De Verâ Differentiâ Regiæ et Ecclesiasticæ Potestatis, commonly called The King's Book, I. 122.

——, *Richard*, Bishop of Exeter—of Bath and Wells—of Durham—of Winchester, 1487—1528, negociated the marriage of James IV. of Scotland with Margaret, daughter of Henry VII., III. 476.

Foxe, John, author of the Book of Martyrs, improbable story in, of Archbishop Warham, I. 120. u; II. 100. 503. Account by, of Henry VIII.'s commission to Cromwell, V. 232, 233. And of the Article of Queen Mary sent by her to Bishop Bonner respecting the re-ordination of English clergy, V. 242. Evil character given by, of the Britons, II. 545.

France, Kingdom of, no vassals of the Roman Court, I. 219. Doctrine of lawyers of the, respecting the title of Head of the Church, as given to the King, II. 409. Laws of the, respecting the legislative power in France of the King and Pope respectively, II. 434, 435. Papal legates, Bulls, and excommunications, II. 443. 512. Papal dispensations, II. 448, 449.

Laws of the, agreeing with those of England, respecting the patronage of the Church, II. 426. Synods, II. 426; III. 244. The departure of French prelates and clergy from the kingdom without the King's license, II. 426. The conventing of clerks before secular judges, *ib.* Homage of prelates, *ib.* Provisions, *ib.* The entrance of clergy into the kingdom with forbidden orders, I. 125. No one can build a new church in the, without the King's license, verified in Parliament, I. 143; II. 521.

Proposed publicly to restore the Patriarchate in the, in the time of Cardinal Richelieu, I. 223, 224.

Parliaments of the, when established and by whom, III. 379. Remonstrance of the Parliament of Paris, Pro Libertate Ecclesiæ Gallicanæ, offered to Louis XI., against the Pope, I. 222. 225.

Troubles in the, in the early part of Louis XIV.'s reign, I. 23. They were a just retribution for the fostering of the troubles in England by Richelieu in the time of Charles I., I. 35; V. 156. See *Bishops French, Church French, Kings of France.*

———, *Church of*; see *Church, French.*

———, *Estates of*; see *Estates of France.*

———, *Kings of*; see *Kings of France.*

Francica Synodus, see *Council Germanic the First.*

Francis I., King of France, Concordat of, with Pope Leo X., I. 223.

——— *de Paula, St.*, monks of the

monastery of, in Madrid, prohibited from building a church without the king's license, I. 143.

Franciscans, order of the, absurd contentions among, respecting the colour of their monastic dress, II. 76; III. 169. 277. 496.

Frankfort, seditious proceedings of the English Puritans at, abetted by John Knox, in 1554, III. 317.

———, *Council of*; see *Council of Frankfort*.

———, *Diet of*; see *Diet of Frankfort*.

Fratres Bohemi, see *Bohemi*.

Freake, Edmund, Bishop of Rochester —of Norwich—of Winchester, 157½ —1590, consecration of, from Archbishop Parker's Register, III. 99. 173. a.

Frederic I., surnamed Barbarossa, Emperor of Germany, vindicated the independence of his crown against the Popes, I. 202. Imposed an oath of allegiance upon his subjects without excepting the Papal authority, I. 216. Called the Council of Pavia to settle the right succession to the Papacy, I. 206. Arrogant letter of Pope Adrian IV. to, respecting the homage of Bishops, I. 202. 213; II. 404, 405. 418. Reply of, to Pope Adrian IV., I. 202, 203. 213, 214. Saying of, respecting the Papal claim to dispose of the Imperial Crown, that it began with painting, proceeded to poetry or writing, and ended in downright maxims of theology, I. 202, 203; II. 491, 492.

——— *III.*, Emperor of Germany, moved by his people to make a Pragmatical Sanction for Germany, but dissuaded by Æneas Sylvius, I. 204. Agreement of, with Pope Nicolas V., restraining the Papal usurpations, I. 210. Sequestered certain Papal revenues in the Diet of Nuremberg, I. 217.

Free, man is ordinarily, not always, IV. 125; and see *Actions, Liberty, Will*. Of Hobbes's silly distinction between free to will and free to do; see *Hobbes, Liberty*.

Freedom, of God; see *God*. Of good Angels, see *Angels*. Of man; see *God Foreknowledge of, Liberty*.

Free Will, the term and the thing both in St. Paul's writings, IV. 217. Maintained by the Fathers, IV. 216, 217. Definition of, from Bellarmine, IV. 285. Texts proving, IV. 224, 225. See *Liberty, Will*.

French, The; see *France*. Expelled from Scotland by the troops and fleet of Queen Elizabeth, in 1560, V. 89. a. Thanksgiving in the Scotch Directory for that expulsion, and gratitude expressed in it to the English, V. 89, 90. See *Kirk of Scotland*.

French Church; Clergy; see *Church French, France, Kings of France, Liberties of the French Church*.

——— *Reformed Divines*; see *Divines, French Reformed*.

——— ——— *Synods*; see *Synods, French Reformed*.

Friday, always esteemed in the Church as a fast, V. 12.

Frith, John, opinion of, that the Church might change the Lord's Day to any other day of the week than the first, V. 10. d.

Fructus Temporum, see *Caxton's Chronicle*.

Fugatius, a Priest sent into England by Pope Eleutherius, II. 168.

Fulke, William, D.D., account of, III. 134. p.

Defence by, of English orders, III. 131. e. Defence of the doctrine of, with respect to English orders, III. 135, 136; V. 249, 250. Episcopacy not oppugned by, III. 169. 473. Direct testimony of, to the actual succession of English Bishops, III. 135. t. Testimony of, to the fact of Archbishop Parker's consecration as recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, *ib.* Esteems Romish Orders to be unlawful in England, V. 249.

Answer of, to the Rhemish Testament, III. 130. e. 169. To Gregory Martin's attack upon the English Version of the Scriptures, III. 151. r. Other books of, III. 135. t.

Fundamentals, distinction between, and non-fundamentals, a well founded distinction, II. 277, 278. All revealed truths are not, II. 279. Evident consequences of, are as necessary to be believed as themselves, II. 90. See *Creed, Errors, Essentials, Faith The Catholic, Heretics, Ignorance, Opinions*.

Futurity, ever present to God; see *God, Foreknowledge of*.

G.

Gabriel Biel, admission of, respecting Transubstantiation, I. 13. Maintains, that when Baptism cannot be actually applied to infants, the desire of their parents to have them baptized is sufficient for their salvation, V. 175.

Admits Shrift to be of human institution, V. 223. r. Opinion of, respecting the knowledge possessed by the Saints in Heaven of things on earth, I. 58. l.

Γάγγραινα, what meant by, in 2 Tim. ii. 17, II. 31.

Galfridus Monumetensis, testimony of, to the story of Dionothus, II. 541. 543.

'*Gall of the Dragon*,' see '*Fel Principum Tenebrarum*.'

Gallican Church; see *Church, French*.

——— *Liberties*; see *Church French, Libertéz*.

Galloway, Bishop of; see *Gordon, John*.

Gandolphy, Rev. Peter, an Irish Romanist, revived the Nag's Head fable in 1815, III. 40. f.

Gardiner, Stephen, D.D., Bishop of Winchester 1531—1555, alleged kindred of, to Henry VIII., I. 121. No regular record of the consecration of, any more than of Bishop Barlow's, III. Pref., 158. Consecration of, recorded in his own diocesan Register, III. Pref.

Passages from the book of, On True Obedience, denying the jurisdiction of the Pope in England, I. 121, 122; II. 97. 100, 101. 192. 502, 503, 504. Justified the Regal supremacy, I. 120; II. 100. 192. 218. 504, 505; III. 59; V. 233. 235. Wrote polemic books in defence of the Regal supremacy, I. 120; II. 191. 503. Was the chief framer of the Oath of Supremacy, *ib.* Defence by, of his change of opinion respecting the Regal supremacy, II. 190. Character given of, by Sanders, in respect of that change, II. 505, 506; III. 59.

Opinion of, upon Henry VIII.'s divorce, II. 188. Was employed to gain the consent of Cambridge University to that measure, *ib.* Pronounced sentence against Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine, *ib.*

Speech of, in 1549, in defence of the liberties of the House of Parliament, III. 415.

Impeached Bishop Barlow's doctrine, yet did not deny his consecration, III. 141. i.

Garnet, Henry, a Roman Catholic Priest, dangerous doctrine of, respecting murder, III. 465.

Gaudentius, expressions of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r.

Gelasius, Pope 492—496, challenged, (in condemning Acacius) only to be "executor" of ecclesiastical laws, not single lawmaker, I. 261; II. 433. Epistle of, to the Bishops of Dardania, upon this subject, explained, II. 433, 434. Expressions of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r. s.

Gemitus Lusitaniæ, see *Lusitaniæ Gemitus*.

Geneva, no national nor provincial Church throughout the world before that of, that wanted Bishops; see *Bishops, Calvin*. Ecclesiastical supremacy allowed in, to the civil magistrate, III. 245. 256. 269. 305. 467. See *Discipline, Genevan*. Pastors and lawyers of, allowed Episcopacy to be lawful, I. 39; III. 485; and see *Beza, Calvin, Diodati, Farellus, Lectius, Spanheim*.

Genoa, law of the state of, that any new monastery built without license is to be confiscated, I. 143.

Geoffrey of Monmouth, see *Galfridus Monumetensis*.

German, see *Germany*.

Germans, St., Bishopric of; see *St. Germans, Bishopric of*.

Germanus, Bishop of Auxerre, sent to England and Ireland, with Lupus, Bishop of Troyes, by the French Church (some say, by Pope Celestine), to extirpate Pelagianism, I. 137; II. 170. 301. 536. Whether, and how far, they were Papal legates, *ib.* See *Bede, Constantius, Prosper*.

Germany, laws in the Empire of, similar to the Statute of Mortmain, I. 143; II. 521.

———, *Bishops of*; see *Bishops, Herman*.

———, *Emperors of*; see *Emperors, Western and German*.

Gerson, John, Chancellor of the University of Paris, allows the lawfulness of resisting the Pope, in certain cases, I. 106, 107. 174. Position of, concerning the Church of Rome and the Popes, II. 335. Distinguisheth Papal rights into three sorts, Divine, canonical, civil, whereof the first alone are immutable, II. 376. 626. Doctrine of, respecting the removing of the Papacy from Rome, II. 610. Fixes the primacy to the Chair of St. Peter and to his successors for ever, III. 550. Joined in condemning the heresy of Pope John XXII., I. 254. Argument of, in favour of the decree of the Councils of Constance and Basle for the superiority of a General Council above the Pope, I. 251.

Advises the Church to reform itself, without waiting for a Council, I. 262.

Maintains, that when Baptism cannot actually be applied to infants, the desire of their parents to have them baptized, is sufficient for their salvation, V. 175.

Account given by, of the words with which the Greek (or rather the Eastern) Church separated from that of Rome, I. 200; II. 334, 335. 643; V. 272.

Gervasius Dorobernensis, testimony of, that the investiture of Bishops was in the King's hands in the time of William the Conqueror, II. 406. Account given by, of the first Synod holden in England by a Papal legate, II. 412.

Gest, Gheast, or *Guest, Edmund, D.D.*, Bishop of Rochester—of Salisbury, 1559—1576; proof of the consecration of, III. 222. Mandate to, as Archdeacon of Canterbury, to enthrone Archbishop Parker, III. 206, 207. Mandate of, appointing certain others to enthrone in his stead, III. 207, 208. Mandates to, to enthrone other Bishops at the same period, III. 218. 220.

Gheast, see *Gest.*

Ghost, The Holy; see *God the Holy Ghost.*

Gibson, James, a Scottish Minister, treason in a sermon of, unpunished, III. 257.

Gilby, John, seditious proceedings of, at Frankfort, III. 317.

Gildas, composed his history from transmarine relations, II. 166. Lived about the age of Dubritius, II. 172. Evil character given of the Britons by, II. 545. Affirms, that Britain was first Christianized by Joseph of Arimathæa; see *Joseph of Arimathæa.* But without probability, I. 160. g.

Gilpin, Bernard, Bishopric of Carlisle offered to, but refused, in 1559, III. 226. Was a kinsman of Archbishop Sandys, *ib.*

Giraldus Cambrensis, defence by, of the independence of the British or Welsh Church against Henry I., II. 151, 152. 544. Testimony of, to the story of Dionothus, II. 541.

Glasgow, General Assembly of; see *Assembly, General, of Glasgow.*

'*Glass of the Trinity*,' see '*Trinitatis Speculum.*'

Glastonbury, Abbey of, Church of the, built by King Ina, II. 135. Abbot of the, elected by the monks, by grant of King Edgar, but the investiture reserved for the King, II. 407.

Glemham, Sir Thomas, summoned to surrender Newcastle by the Scots in vain, Jan. 164¾, V. 91. a. Letter to, of the English Parliamentary Commissioners sent to Scotland, Jan. 20, 164¾, and his answer, V. 104, 105.

Glory of God; see *God, Glory of.*

Gloss, The, upon Gratian; see *Semeca, Johannes.*

Gloucester, Humphrey, Duke of, Protector of Henry VI., protested against Pope Martin and his legate, I. 148; II. 442.

Gloucester, Bishops of; see *Brooks, Bourshier, Goodman, Hooper.*

———, *Statute of;* see *Statute of Gloucester.*

Glyn, William, D.D., Bishop of Bangor 1555—1558, died shortly before Queen Mary, III. 232.

Goar, acknowledges the validity of Greek Orders, although not conferred by the Romish Ordinal, V. 216, 217.

Gocelinus, Life of St. Augustin of Canterbury by, I. 202. c. Testimony of, that St. Augustin was rejected by the British Bishops, I. 202; II. 543.

God, Agency of, in good and evil actions, IV. 238. How He is the cause of the act, yet not of the sin of the act, IV. 74. It is blasphemy to say that He is the cause of sin, or to say that sin is efficaciously decreed by, IV. 308. Is no cause of irregularity, IV. 319. Hobbes's theory of universal necessity makes Him inevitably the cause of sin, IV. 81. Makes Him hypocritical, IV. 302—304. See *God, Immanent and Transient Acts of.*

Aspect of ('intuitus Dei'), what meant by the, IV. 156.

Attributes of, argumentative, IV. 228. In what way attributed to, IV. 193—195. Not all included in the omnipotence of, IV. 352. Destroyed by absolute necessity, IV. 104.

Corporal motions are from the general influence of, the specifical determination of them is from the free agent, IV. 237.

Decrees of; see *God, Foreknowledge of.*

Essence of, most simple ('actus simplicissimus'), IV. 158, 159. 427. 488. 524. Performeth all things by itself, which reasonable creatures do perform by distinct faculties, IV. 194. The saying of the Schoolmen, that, 'whatever is in God, is God,'

IV. 153. 159. 489. Hath no faculties, IV. 487, 488. Is justice itself, and why said to be so, IV. 153. 425. Is eternity itself, IV. 153. 425. 427. 523. Is indivisible, IV. 426. Is incomprehensible, IV. 489.

Eternity of, Hobbes's opinions destroy the, IV. 523. See *Eternity, God Essence of.*

Existence of, a dictate of nature, IV. 519. Hobbes's opinions destroy the, IV. 525.

Foreknowledge of, and decrees of, as a supposed cause of necessity, IV. 58. 60. 153. 190—192. How liberty may consist with the, IV. 153. Things are not because they are foreknown, but are foreknown because they shall be, IV. 236; V. 54. Our ignorance a sufficient answer, IV. 153. Futurity ever present to, *ib.* In what way contingent events are reconcileable with the decrees and prescience of, IV. 156. Necessity not identical with the decrees of, IV. 157. 422. Freedom of man not inconsistent with the eternal decrees of, IV. 190. Nor with the eternal prescience of, IV. 191. Liberty to will more reconcileable with the prescience of, than liberty to do, IV. 421. The prescience of, doth not necessitate, yet is infallible, IV. 236. 246—249. Two modes of the foreknowledge of, in the causes of a thing, or as the thing is in itself, IV. 247. Decrees of, to be taken in two ways, actively and passively, IV. 476, 477. Knows all future possibilities, IV. 477. Stoical doctrine respecting the power of, over destiny, IV. 116. Doctrine of Christian fatalists on the same subject, *ib.* See *God, Will of.*

Freedom of, and of the good Angels, explained, IV. 33. 36. 121. 127.

Glory of, in what sense it is either the end or the consequence of man's sin, IV. 69.

Goodness of, Hobbes's opinions destroy the, IV. 353.

Grace of, man's concurrence with the, established, IV. 360, 361. Proof of this from Scripture, IV. 361. How men are the workmanship of, IV. 232. Texts attributing the will to do good works to, *ib.*

Heart of man said to be hardened by, in what sense, IV. 69, 70. 230. 237. Hardness of heart not derived from the permission of, IV. 237.

Hobbes's contradictions relative to, IV. 577. 581. 584. The admission of the infinity of, enough to confute Hobbes, IV. 490. A right Hobbist cannot praise, IV. 356. See *God Agency of—Eternity of—Goodness of—Justice of—Omnipotence of—Simplicity of—Truth of—Ubiquity of, Hobbes.*

'Immanent' and *'Transient' Acts of*, distinguished, IV. 121. Distinction between the acts of, in Deo and extra Deum, IV. 374. Creation and government free acts of, extra Deum, IV. 375.

Justice of, not measured by His power, but by His will, and that the will of one that is perfect, IV. 75—78. Hobbes's opinions destroy the justice of, IV. 354. See *God Essence of, Justice.*

Liberty of; see *God, Freedom of.*

Man permitted to sin by, though He had power to withhold him from sinning, and why, IV. 244—246. Man not made impeccable by, and why, *ib.*

Mercy of, free, IV. 68. Must not be limited to time or means of deliverance, I. 76.

Omnipotence of, doth not include all His attributes, IV. 352. Or supersede His justice and goodness, *ib.* May oblige Himself, IV. 315. Cannot do any unrighteous thing, *ib.* Texts relating to the omnipotence of, IV. 77, 78. Distinction between the absolute and the ordinate power of, IV. 245. Hobbes's doctrine destroys the omnipotence of, by making Him the cause of sin, IV. 355. 396. 581.

Power regal, in the abstract, derived from, III. 318. Supreme command immediately from, subordinate, command mediately so, III. 319. Usurped dominion not from, in the same sense as is hereditary, III. 320. Active obedience against the law of, or of nature, not due to kings, III. 351; IV. 502. See *King, Monarchy, Obedience, People.*

Prescience of; see *God, Foreknowledge of.*

Quality infused by, as well as body or substance, IV. 408.

Simplicity of, Hobbes's opinions destroy the, IV. 524. See *God, Essence of.*

Transient Acts of; see *God, 'Immanent' Acts of.*

Truth of, Hobbes's opinions destroy the, IV. 352, 353.

Ubiquity of, Hobbes's opinions destroy the, IV. 523.

God, Will of, is Himself, V. 15. Is unchangeable, IV. 108; V. 15. Distinction of St. Thomas Aquinas concerning the will of, *ib.* The operative and permissive will of, distinguished, IV. 71. Permission of, no naked permission, IV. 310. To permit barely and to permit only, in, distinguished, IV. 423. To will and to do, in, the same thing, IV. 376. Willeth not all He could will, *ib.* How the will of, is the necessity of all things, IV. 157. 422. Revealed and secret will of ('voluntas signi' —'voluntas bene placiti'), not contrary though distinct, IV. 56, 57. 238. 304. Doth not hinder privately, what He commands openly, IV. 352. See *God, Justice of.* Doth often will a change, but doth never change His will, IV. 108; V. 15.

Worship of, a dictate of nature, IV. 519. What it is to honour, IV. 350. To search too boldly into the nature of, is a fault, IV. 380. But a still greater fault is, to neglect to search into His nature at all, *ib.* So far as we can, we are obliged to search after Him, IV. 489.

God the Son, see *Christ.*

God the Holy Ghost, Procession of the, from the Son, in what way the article respecting this was an addition to the Creed, I. 25, 26. 25. r; II. 470. 474. 597. It was no addition properly so called, but only an explication, II. 475. Contention concerning it between the Eastern and Western Churches, probably a mere logomachy, II. 61. 597. 629. And confessed to be so by Peter Lombard, II. 629. Thomas à Jesu, *ib.* Cardinal Tolet, *ib.* Brerewood, II. 629, 630. Archbishop Laud, II. 629. s. See *Churches Eastern, Creed, Creed The Apostles'.*

What meant by the cloven tongues of fire, in which the Holy Spirit descended upon the Day of Pentecost, V. 51, 52.

Hobbes's grievous errors concerning, IV. 529—531; and see *Hobbes.*

Godwin, Francis, D.D, Bishop of Llandaff —of Hereford, 1601—1633, cited by Mason as evidence of the authority of the Archiepiscopal Register of Archbishop Parker's consecration, III. 97. Testimony of, to Bishop Barlow's consecration, III. 144, 145. But is mistaken in the date, III. 145. b. Mistakes in the original edition of the work of, De Præsulibus &c., III. 131. f. 230. h.

Golbourn, William, Bishop of Kildare 1644—1650, held the Prebend of Dunlavan in St. Patrick's Cathedral Dublin, and not Bishop Bramhall, as has been erroneously supposed, I. vi. v.

Golden Bull, see *Bulla Aurea.*

Goldwell, Thomas, Bishop of St. Asaph 1555—1558, nominated to the see of Oxford but not translated, in 1558, III. 232. Deprived, and when, *ib.* Fled abroad upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, II. 246; III. Pref. a. 232. Date of the death of, III. 232.

Gomarus, misinterpretations by, of the term of "The Lord's Day," as used in the Book of Revelations, V. 43, 44. And of the words "ἐν τῇ μιᾷ τῶν Σαββάτων," in Acts xx. 7, V. 48, 49. Dissertations of Rivet in answer to, V. 78.

Gondi, see *Retz.*

Good, see *Goodness.*

—— *Works*, see *Works.*

Goodman, Christopher, a Puritan, author of the Book of Obedience, treasonable doctrine of, III. 303. 317.

————, *Godfrey, D.D.*, Bishop of Gloucester 1624—1640, died 1655, censured by the Church of England for his attachment to Romish errors, III. 516.

————, *John, D.D.*, Dean of Wells 1548—1550, quarrel of, with Bishop Barlow, III. 141. i. 228. Yet never disputed Barlow's consecration, *ib.*

Goodness of God; see *God, Goodness of.*

Moral, what is meant by, IV. 345—347. Hobbes maketh the civil laws the ultimate standard of moral; see *Hobbes, Law.*

Gordon, George, Earl of Huntley, forfeited for treason in 1593, III. 260. Violence of the Scotch Kirk against, III. 260, 261. 268. 279; and see *Assembly General of Edinburgh*, A.D. 1593, 1594, 1596.

———, *John*, Bishop of Galloway, became a Romanist in 1704, III. 114. g. Re-ordination of Anglican clergy ruled by Pope Clement XI. in the case of, *ib.*

Government, the, of the Providence of God; see *God, Immanent Acts of.*

————, *Civil*, what is meant by a mixed form of, IV. 564, 565. All lawful, is from God, but monarchy so in the highest degree of eminency, II. 551; and see *Monarchy.* Of the final cause of, III. 332. See *Dominion, God, King, Magistrate, People.*

————, *Ecclesiastical*, of the Primitive Church; see *Church, Primitive.*

Of the Church of England, see *Church of England.* Protestants have not destroyed the subordination of, II. 598; and see *Protestants.* Evils of other forms of, than Episcopacy; see *Bishops.* The Æthiopian and other Eastern Churches admit the patriarchal form of, III. 557; and see *Patriarch, Primates.*

Gough, Stephen, D.D., English orders of, acknowledged by the Sorbonne, although denied by the Pope, at the time of the Rebellion, III. 115. g.

Gowry Conspiracy, The, III. 439.

Grace, of God, man's concurrence with; see *God, Grace of.* Baptismal; see *Baptism, Infants.* Of the Sacraments, see *Sacraments.* Dominion is not founded upon, see *Dominion.*

Graham, James, Marquis of Montrose, hanged by the Scots in a most base and barbarous manner, I. 75.

———, *Sir James*, son of the Earl of Monteith, I. cii, ciii. Married Isabella eldest daughter of Archbishop Bramhall, I. xiii, xiv. n. Was Member for Armagh in the Irish Parliament of 1661, I. cvii. i. Letter of Abp. Bramhall to Charles II. in favour of, I. cvi, cvii. Was one of the executors of Abp. Bramhall's Will, I. cxii.

———, *Sir Richard*, I. xx.

Graius, Johannes, author of the Scalæ Chronicon, testimony of, to the rejection of St. Augustin by the British Bishops, I. 202; II. 543.

Granada, Archbishop of, speech of the, at the Council of Trent, for the Divine right of Bishops, III. 530.

Gratian, alleged decree of Pope Anacletus in; see *Anacletus* Pope. Leaves the Divine institution of Shrift an undetermined question, V. 222. Glosser upon; see *Semeca, Johannes.*

Gray, see *Grey.*

Greek Church; see *Church, Greek.*

Gregory Nazianzen, St., passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. s. Doctrine of, respecting obedience to the civil magistrate, III. 352. Repentance, V. 158. r. Testimony of, concerning the law of the Sabbath, V. 25. Saying from, that the Devil cannot compel the will to sin, IV. 91; V. 153.

——— *of Nyssa, St.*, passage from, concerning the Sabbath, erroneously attributed to St. Basil, V. 25.

——— *of Tours*, doctrine of, that kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384.

Gregory I., or the Great, Pope 590—604, said to have died the same day as St. David, II. 303. 540.

Protest of, against the assumption by the Patriarch of Constantinople of the title of Universal Bishop, I. 32. 249. 253; II. 609. Calls it an Antichristian title, I. 32. 253; II. 134; V. 252. Makes it schismatical in the Pope to challenge a Headship of Power, II. 248. See *Bishop Universal, Bishop of Rome, Boniface III.* Pope, *John* Patriarch of Constantinople, *Phocas.*

Obedience of, to the Emperor Maurice in an ecclesiastical matter, I. 176; II. 199. 219. 548. Conduct of, towards the Emperor Phocas, I. 131. Oath of Bishops mentioned by, no oath of allegiance to the Pope, as Bellarmine maintains, II. 419. Made no question that the patronage of Bishoprics belonged to the Emperors, II. 403. The Pall a free gift in the time of, II. 459.

Artifice of, to secure authority over the new Patriarchate of Justiniana Prima, I. 138. 178.

Acquired no patriarchal right in England by the conversion of it, I. 266—268; II. 133; and see *Church of England, Patriarchate of Rome.* Half of Britain, and all the Scottish and Irish Churches, not converted by, I. 266; II. 133. 300. Many British Christians remained among the Saxons before St. Augustin came, I. 266, 267; II. 300; and see *Luidhardus.* A large portion of the Saxons not converted by, I. 267, 268; II. 133; and see St. *Augustin* of Canterbury, *Church Saxon.* Conversion does not immediately confer Patriarchal rights, I. 268; II. 133. And those rights, if conferred, have been since forfeited, I. 268, 269. See *Bishop of Rome, Church British—of England, Cyprian Privilege.*

Sanctioned the consecration of Bishops in England by a single Bishop, as a case of necessity; see St. *Augustin* of Canterbury.

Honour paid by, to the first four General Councils, as next to the Four Gospels, I. 97. 157; II. 249. 427. 489. Omits the Council of Sardica from his list of General Councils, II. 533.

Definition of Repentance from, IV. 359. Opinion of, concerning the salvation of unbaptized infants, V. 177. Doctrine of, that the Saints in Heaven see all things in God, I. 58. l. No public invocation of Saints in

the Liturgies of the Church until the time of, I. 58.

Said to have written the Hymn sung at the Benediction of the Wax Tapers upon Easter Eve in the Roman Church, V. 131. t. Hyperbolical expression in it respecting the sin of Adam, V. 131.

Legend mentioned by, of St. Peter's returning to Rome, II. 161, 162.

Gregory V., Pope 996—999, succession to the Papacy between John XVII. and, determined by the Emperor Otho III., I. 173.

——— *VI.*, Pope in 1016, deposed as a "most filthy monster," by Henry II., Emperor of Germany, I. 173.

——— *VII.*, or *Hildebrand*, Pope 1073—1085, originated the claim of the Popes to temporal power, I. 256. Arrogant expressions of, respecting the temporal authority of the Popes, I. 184; V. 257. And wrongly attributed to Pope Boniface, II. 416. Spoiled Christian kings of the patronage and allegiance of the Church, II. 404. 418. Professed to follow the old ecclesiastical laws in his condemnation of homage and investitures, but no such old laws to be found, II. 451, 452.

Called Antichrist by Norbert Archbishop of Magdeburg and by the Waldenses and others, II. 451. Character given of, by Bellarmine, II. 450.

Councils against, of Brixia and Worms, summoned by Henry IV. of Germany, I. 206. Resolutions of the Archbishop of Trèves and the German Bishops against, I. 217. Character given of, by the Clergy of Liège in their letter against Paschal II., II. 450, 451.

——— *IX.*, Pope 1227—1241, canon of Paschal II. recorded by, respecting the oath of Bishops to the Popes, II. 418. That oath extended by, from Archbishops to all prelates, II. 419, 420. Decretals of, II. 429.

——— *XII.*, or *Angelo de Corrario*, Pope at Rome during the schism, in 1406, deposed by the First Council of Pisa, I. 218.

——— *XIII.*, Pope 1572—1585, Concordat of the German Nation with, in 1576, I. 210. Edition by, of the canon of Paschal II. respecting the oath of Bishops to the Pope, II. 417; and see *Oath of Bishops to the Pope.*

——— *XIV.*, Pope 1590—1591. Appeal from, by Henry IV. of France, to a General Council, I. 220.

Gregory XV., Pope 1621—1623, founded the Congregation de Propagandâ Fide, in 1622, I. 66. Founded a Greek College at Rome, wherein all Greek rites were tolerated, II. 275, 276. Letter of, to King Charles I., with the latter's reply, III. 526; and see *Charles I.*

———, *Bishop of Ostium*, sent to England as Papal legate in 787, being the first from the time of St. Augustin of Canterbury, I. 136.

Greville, Fulke, Lord Brooke, book of, against Episcopacy, III. 26. 28. Had his coachman for his preacher, III. 28. Seditious Speech of, in the House of Lords, Dec. 19, 1642, III. 303, 304. 306. 308. 310. 312. 314. 411. 496. Was killed on St. Chad's Day while besieging St. Chad's Cathedral at Lichfield, III. 28.

Grey, Lady Jane, title of Head of the Church in England given to, in proclaiming her Queen, I. 29. y.

———, *Leonard Grey, Lord*, afterwards Viscount Garney; Lord Deputy of Ireland in Henry VIII.'s reign, in 1536, I. 118.

——— *de Wilton, Thomas Grey, Baron;* treason of, against James I., III. 437.

Grievances, Hundred, of the German Nation, proposed by them to the Pope's legate in 1522, I. 209. 211. 214. 216. 263. Were against Tenths, I. 216; II. 425. And Pardons and Indulgences, I. 216; II. 237.

Griffith, Maurice, B.D., Bishop of Rochester 1554—1559, died three days after Queen Elizabeth's accession, and consequently before his successor was even nominated, III. 232. See *Gest, Edmund.*

Grindal, Edmund, D.D., Bishop of London, Archbishop of York—of Canterbury, 1559—1583; commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 93. 218. Evidence for the consecration of, at the time recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 218. One of the Bishops alleged by Fitzherbert, Fitzsimon, and Champney, to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. Present at Abp. Parker's consecration, III. 206, 213.

Allowed Scotch Presbyterian Orders in 1582, III. 135. t.

Joined in repressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans at Frankfort, in 1554, III. 317.

Grostête, see *Grosthead.*
Grosthead, or *Grouthead, Robert*, Bishop of Lincoln 1235—1254, reclamation of, against the tyranny and rapine of the Court of Rome, I. 182. 185. Opposition of, to the Pope, III. 492. Styled "Romanorum Malleus," and why, I. 182; III. 492. Anger of the Popes against, I. 182. Said to have appeared to Pope Innocent IV. after his death and to have deterred him from his intention of disinterring his corpse, I. 182, 183.
Grotians, i. e. persons designing to effect a reconciliation with the Pope, as Grotius did, according to Baxter; see *Baxter, Bishops English, Grotius, Reconciliation.*
Grotius, to what communion he belonged, III. 511. 585. Was no Papist, III. 512. But a sincere lover of the Church of England, III. 513. 583—586. Evidence of the wife of, to her husband's attachment to the Church of England, III. 513. 584—586. Of his own letters, III. 583. Of his son, III. 584. Of Mr. Matthias Turner, III. 583, 584. Of Henry Newton, III. 584, 585. Of others, *ib.* Was too near an Erastian in some points according to Bramhall's judgment, III. 512. Bramhall dissents from, in some points, *ib.*
Was a true lover of peace, III. 511. Reconciliation of the Christian world with itself the object of the labours of, III. 505. 511. 514, 515. 523.
Probable, that changes were wrongfully introduced into the writings of, III. 512. Hammond's defence of, III. 513. m. Had been less open to attack, had his genius been less critical and more scholastic, III. 513.
Of Mr. Baxter's treatise against, called "The Grotian Religion Discovered," I. xxxi; III. 503. Scope of it, III. 504. Defence of, against Baxter, III. 511—514. See *Baxter.* Bramhall's treatise in vindication (partly) of, I. xxxi; III. 503—582; and see *Vindication.*
No design of the followers of, in England, to lead Protestants back to Popery; see *Baxter, Bishops English, Bramhall John, Reconciliation.* Such a "Grotian design," as Baxter styles it, no cause of the English civil wars, III. 523.
Account of the death of, III. 585.
Grounds, of the separation between England and Rome; see *Church of England—of Rome, Court of Rome, Schism, Separation.*
Grouthead, see *Grosthead.*
Guest, see *Gest.*
Guide of Faith; see *Norris, Sylvester.*
Guido the Carmelite, condemns the Greeks as heretics, II. 330. Condemned for so doing by Leo Allatius, *ib.*
Guitmund, opinion expressed by, in his book De Veritate Corporis et Sanguinis Christi in Eucharistiâ, respecting Berengarius, I. 11. Quotation from, I. 15.
Gulielmus, see *William.*
——— *Malmesburiensis*, see *William of Malmesbury.*
——— *Neubrigensis*, see *William of Newbrigg.*
Gunning, Peter, D.D., afterwards Bishop of Chichester—of Ely, 1669-1684; letter to, from Bishop Morton, respecting the alleged admission of the Nag's Head fable by the latter, III. 28. s.
Gunpowder Plot, The, III. 331.
Guuthrun, King of the Danes in England, laws of, and of Alured, conjointly, dispensing with ecclesiastical crimes by the sole authority of the King and Church of England, II. 447. See *Alfred* King of England.
Guy, Archbishop of Vienna, sent as Papal legate into England, but not received, II. 410.

H.

Haberley, a Roman Catholic Priest, an alleged witness at second hand to the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f. Imprisoned with other Romanists in Wisbeach Castle, III. 40. f. 107. p.
Habert, acknowledges the validity of Greek Orders, although not conferred by the Romish Ordinal, V. 217.
Habits, *Habitual Actions*, } see *Actions of Free Agents.*
Hadrian, see *Adrian.*
Hæretici—Hæreticis Credentes; see St. *Augustin, Heretics.*
Half, more than the whole, a truth in ethics, II. 484.
Hall, Joseph, D.D., Bishop of Exeter—of Norwich, 1627-1656, held the Church of Rome to be a true Church, III. 519. Books of, in defence of Episcopacy, III. 485. h. Cited by Mason as a witness to the authenticity of the Archiepiscopal Register of Archbishop Parker's consecration, III. 97.

Halley, Ellen, or *Eleanor*, married to Archbishop Bramhall, in 1618, I. iv. lxxxviii, lxxxix. ci, cii. cxiv. n. See *Bramhall, Ellen.*

———, *Thomas*, I. lxxxviii, lxxxix.

Hamilton, Claud, Baron Strabane, I. lxxxiv.

———, *Sir Frederick*, opposed to the Irish Rebellion, III. 457.

———, *Sir George*, I. lxxxiv. Opposed to the Irish Rebellion, III. 457.

———, *John*, I. lxxxiii.

Hammond, Henry, D.D., passage from, explained, attributing the casting out of the Papal supremacy from England to fear of Henry VIII., II. 502, 503. And respecting the casting out of the Papal power by Henry VIII., II. 522, 523.

Opinion of, respecting the possibility of a General Council in his own times, II. 566.

Defence by, of Sir Henry Spelman's account of Dinoth's conference with St. Augustin, I. 164. y; II. 545.

Reply of, to Viscount Falkland, respecting infallibility and the ground of Faith, II. 563. c.

Defence of Grotius by, III. 513. m.

Treatise of Mr. Serjeant against Bramhall and, IV. 213. Hobbes's censure upon, IV. 502, 503.

Hampden, John, the Parliamentarian, impeached of treason by King Charles I., III. 413, 414.

Harden, in what sense God is said to, men's hearts, IV. 69. Of God's hardening the heart, IV. 230. See *God, Hardness.*

Hardness of heart not derived from God's permission, IV. 237. See *God, Harden.*

Harding, Richard, saying of Hobbes (probably) addressed to, respecting the martyrs, IV. 330. 497.

———, *Thomas, D.D.*, an able Romish divine, I. 67. Objections of, against Jewel's and Horne's Episcopal ordination, answered, II. 273, 274; III. 128—130. Relation of, concerning Bp. Kitchin, III. 55. Says nothing of the Nag's Head Consecration, III. 39. f. 46. 128; V. 246. n. Account of the attack of, upon Jewel's orders, shewing that he had never heard of the Nag's Head fable, III. 128. u. Re-ordained at his own request upon joining the Church of Rome, III. 115. g.

Hardouin, Father, foolish books of, in defence of the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f.

Harmony of Confessions; see *Confessions, Harmony of.*

Harpsfeld, Nicolas, Archdeacon of Canterbury 1554—1559, deprived and imprisoned in 1559, III. 193. i. Composed his History of the Church of England while imprisoned, and partly by Abp. Parker's assistance, *ib.* Canon of Canterbury in 1559, but not present at Abp. Parker's election, III. 193.

Harris, Father Paul, a violent Romanist in Dublin, saying of, to Bramhall, respecting Edward VI.'s Liturgy, I. 248; III. 570.

———, *Walter*, Life of Abp. Bramhall by, in his edition of Sir James Ware's Comment. de Præsul. Hiberniæ, I. Pref. iii.

Hart, John, a Roman Catholic, controversy of, with Dr. Reynolds, III. 99. Was convinced of the truth of Archbishop Parker's consecration, *ib.*

Hartstong, Standish, married Anne third daughter of Archbishop Bramhall, I. xiii.

Harvey, Henry, L.L.D., Master of Trinity Hall, Cambridge, 1560—1584; account of, III. 180. u. Signed the certificate of the legal validity of the second Commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, III. 180.

Haselrigge, Sir Arthur, one of the five Members impeached of treason by Charles I., III. 413, 414.

Hate, Hatred, sometimes used in Holy Scripture for at most a negation of love or a less degree of love, IV. 68.

Hawk, silly illustration of his doctrine of necessity advanced by Hobbes, that a, is free to fly when her wings are plucked, IV. 463.

Hay, Francis, Earl of Errol, excommunicated by the Scotch Kirk and forfeited for high treason, III. 260. See *Assembly General of Edinburgh*, A.D. 1593, 1594, 1596.

Hayes, a Roman Catholic, commotions raised in Scotland by, in the time of Queen Elizabeth, II. 114.

Head of the Church, Christ the, II. 565. Upon earth, title of the, belongs to several parties in several senses, II. 564, 565. Cardinal Pole's distinction between a Regal and a Sacerdotal, I. 115; II. 218. 409. Distinction between a, of order and of power; see *Primacy.*

A General Council may best pretend to the title of the; see *Council, General.* Episcopacy, i. c. a General Council or Œcumenical Assembly of

Bishops, is the, of the Universal Church, I. 104.

Title of the, claimed by the Popes, in what sense due to them, in what sense not; see *Bishop of Rome*, *Papacy*, St. *Peter*, *Primacy*.

The King is the political; see *Emperors*, *Kings*, *Kings of England—of France—of Israel—of Judah—of Spain*. Title of the, in England, given to some few kings of England; see *Kings of England*.

The, is an Antichristian title, according to Gregory the Great; see *Gregory I.* Pope.

Headship, of order and power distinguished, II. 496; and see *Primacy*. The Papal claim of a, of absolute monarchical power over the whole Church by Christ's own ordination; see *Bishop of Rome*, *Primacy*.

Heart, hardening of the; see *God*, *Harden*.

Heath, *Nicholas*, Bishop of Rochester—of Worcester, Archbishop of York, 1540—1559; joined in granting the supremacy to Henry VIII., I. 120; II. 218. Deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, and when, III. 232. Date of the death of, *ib.*

Heaven, see *Cœlum*. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning, IV. 535.

Hector Boethius, legend from, respecting a law of Maccabæus King of Scotland, II. 422.

Hegesippus, legend in, respecting St. Peter's returning to Rome, I. 154; II. 380. By what other evidence supported, II. 161, 162. 380.

Heidelberg, great tun of, IV. 404.

Ἑκούσιον, Τὸ, distinguished from τὸ προαιρετὸν, IV. 293. 295. And from τὸ αὐτόματον, IV. 294, 295.

Hell, Descent of Christ into; see *Christ*. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning, IV. 537.

Henderson, *Alexander*, a Scotch Commissioner in the treaty of 1640, III. 304. q. Dispute of, with Charles I., on the subject of Episcopacy, III. 172. Alleged cause of the death of, *ib.*

Hengesthilldean, see *Hexham*.

Henrietta Maria, Queen of Charles I., outrage of the Parliamentarian forces against, at Burlington, III. 308. Sanctâ Clarâ chaplain of, III. 524.

Henry I., King of England, contest of, with Archbishop Anselm, respecting appeals to the Pope, I. 135, 136. 263. Laws of, against appeals to the Pope, II. 439. See *Appeals to the Pope*.

Enjoyed the patronage and investiture of Bishoprics in the English Church, II. 404. 417; V. 202. Claim to the patronage of the English Church first made by the Popes in the days of, I. 146. 187. Resolute protest of the agent of, to Pope Paschal II. respecting investitures, I. 263; II. 406. Compromise between, and Anselm, that the king should surrender the right of investiture but retain his claim to homage, I. 263; V. 202. m. See *Anselm*, *Investiture*, *Kings of England*.

Subjected the see of St. David's to Canterbury, I. 178, 179; II. 151, 152. 185. See *Giraldus Cambrensis*, *Menevia*.

First English Parliament was in the time of, according to Stow, III. 379, 380; and see *Parliament*, *English*.

Henry II., King of England, alleged accord of, with Pope Alexander III. in 1171, when absolved for the murder of Abp. Becket, submitting the Crown of England to the Popes, I. 184. It is utterly misrepresented by Cardinal Allen, *ib.* by the acknowledgment of Archpriest Blackwell, I. 184. 186.

Disputes of, with Archbishop Becket; see *Becket*.

Constitutions of Clarendon passed in the reign of; see *Becket*, *Statute of Clarendon*. Statute of Clarendon enforced by, against the Bishops of London and Norwich, for publishing Papal excommunications without the king's license, II. 442.

Nominated to Bishoprics, V. 203. o.

Visited Ireland in person in 1172, to receive its submission, V. 82. s; and see *Council of Cashel*, *Ireland*.

—— *III.*, King of England, bitter complaint of, with the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the whole Commonwealth of England, against Pope Innocent IV., in 1246, addressed both to the Pope himself and to the Council of Lyons, I. 194, 195; II. 448.

—— *IV.*, King of England, an usurper, III. 385, 386. 431. The posterity of, and the whole English nation, smarted for King Richard's blood, III. 386.

Coronation oath of, III. 370. 372, 373. 419. Held himself bound by his Coronation Oath to protect the Church property against the Parliament, III. 419. 433.

Statute of, against those who

brought or prosecuted the Papal Bulls in favour of the Cistercians, I. 139; II. 433. 441, 442. Set aside a Bull of Boniface VIII., exempting the University of Oxford from the jurisdiction of the Archbishop of Canterbury; see *University of Oxford.*

Laws of, against Tenths and First-fruits, II. 449, 450.

Sat personally in his Courts of Justice, III. 358.

Henry V., King of England, reversed the translation of Bishop Fleming by Pope Martin V. from Lincoln to York; see *Fleming, Richard.* Sat personally in his Courts of Justice, III. 358.

—— *VI.*, King of England, protest of, by counsel of Humphrey Duke of Gloucester, then Protector, against Pope Martin V. and his legate, I. 148; II. 442. Submissive conduct of his Parliament to, III. 422.

—— *VII.*, King of England; see *Fox Richard, Margaret, Morton John.*

—— *VIII.*, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 371, 372. Corrected it with his own hands, *ib.*

Limited and restrained the exercise of the Papal power and the daily encroachments of the Roman Court, I. 96. Deprived the Pope of his pretended rights in England, I. 215. Abolished the usurped jurisdiction of the Bishop of Rome within his own dominions, I. 217. Did not deprive the Pope of any jurisdiction purely spiritual, II. 392—394. 438. 458. 464; and see *Jurisdiction.* What branches of Papal power were cast out of England by, I. 150, 151; II. 396—403. Deprived the Pope of Annates, Tenths, and First-fruits, I. 215. Took away Popish pardons and indulgences, I. 216. The Church of England did not break the bonds of unity in the time of, II. 388; and see *Church of England, Separation.*

Did no more than his predecessors against the Popes, I. 96. 148. 150; II. 125—128. Statutes of, respecting the separation of England from Rome, were declarative not operative, II. 296. 516—519. And declarative of ancient laws, II. 299. Made no new law in casting out the Pope, but only vindicated the ancient liberties of England, II. 296. 449. 513, 514. 575, 576. Testimony to this of the statutes themselves, II. 518, 519. and of Fitzherbert and Coke, I. 151; II. 296. 517. Mr. Serjeant's objections to it answered, II. 522—525. In taking away the Pope's legislative power in England, deprived him of an usurped, not an inherited right, II. 430—434. The first breach was before the birth of, II. 389, 390. See *Kings of England.*

Did no more in effect than all Roman Catholic princes and states have done, I. 96, 97. 200—245; II. 214—217. 222—224. 299. 600. See *Brabant, Emperors, France, Kings of France—of Portugal—of Spain, Venice.*

Supremacy of, was given to him by Romanists; see *Bishop of Rome, Gardiner, Kings of England, Oath of Supremacy, Romanists, Stokesly, Thirlby, Warham.*

Assumed the title of Head of the Church in England and Ireland, I. 29. y; II. 104. Mistaken as to the true meaning of that title, II. 409. See *Kings of England.* Was not exempt from the power of the Keys, II. 130. 149. Commission of, to Cromwell, no proof that English orders were primarily conferred by secular persons, V. 232. Nor the commissions taken out from, wherein spiritual jurisdiction was attributed to him as its fountain and source, V. 228. Those commissions not defensible, *ib.* By whom they were taken out, V. 229. p. Statutes of, not the beginning of our religion, II. 299. See *Church of England, Separation, Statutes English.*

Had sufficient authority to reform the Church of England, I. 178; II. 190; and see *Church of England, Kings of England.* Exercised a power of convocating and confirming synods, within his own dominions, I. 205. Challenged to himself the patronage of Bishoprics and investiture of Bishops, I. 213. Imposed an oath of fidelity on all his subjects, I. 216. Contradictory oaths of Bishops in the reign of, see *Oath of Bishops to the Pope.* Extorted £118,000 from the English clergy upon an alleged premunire, I. 150: and see *Clergy English, Wolsey.*

Was no friend to Protestants, I. 117. Was not a Protestant himself, II. 108. Book of, against Luther, II. 189. Was a Romanist in all points except that of the Papal supremacy, by the confession of Cardinal Allen, II. 500. Cruel statute of the Six Articles passed by, against the Protestants, I. 120. 129; II. 98.

130. The monasteries suppressed by, and why, I. 118—120. How far active, how far passive, in the separation between England and Rome, II. 242. Did not act against his conscience in casting out the Popes, II. 191—193.

Divorce of, lawful, but no ground of the Reformation, II. 187—189. Dispensation to marry his brother's wife, given to, by Pope Julius II., unlawful, I. 123. 196. And judged so by both English and foreign Universities, I. 123. 196; II. 188; and see *Universities*. It was privately revoked by Clement VII., in 1527, I. 196; II. 188. See *Gardiner, Katherine*.

Humours of, no cause of the separation between England and Rome, II. 306. Pretended crimes of, no blemish to the Reformation, I. 122. Had no intention of making concessions in order to a reconciliation with Rome, II. 192, 193.

Excommunication of, by Clement VII., II. 237, 238. Bull of Clement VII. to James V. of Scotland, against; see *Bulls, Papal*. Bull of Paul III. against; see *Bulls, Papal*. Had been an unsuccessful suitor to Clement VII. before he took the law into his own hands, I. 196. Threatened appeal of, from Clement VII. to a General Council; see *Bonner*.

The Parliament of 1534, which cast out the Pope, not merely the ministers of, II. 267. England not moved merely by fear of, to cast out the Pope, II. 189. 306. 580; and see *Church of England, England, Hammond*.

Sat personally in Guildhall, as it is said, to administer justice, III. 358.

Henry II., King of France, celebration of the obsequies of, September 8, 9, 1559, in St. Paul's Cathedral London, III. 150. Evidence from Stow's account of them, for Archbishop Parker's consecration as recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, *ib.* Similar evidence in the minute of them preserved in the College of Arms, III. 150. p.

——— *IV.*, King of France, came over to the Church of Rome, I. 69. 223. Gained his crown by so changing his religion as to turn himself towards his people, I. 77. Yet not saved from a bloody end by his change to the Roman Catholic Faith, I. 79. Appeal of, from Pope Gregory XIV. to a General Council, I. 220.

Henry II., Emperor of Germany, deposed three Popes, Benedict IX., Sylvester III., Gregory VI., I. 173. And created Syndeger Bishop of Bamberg Pope in their room, *ib.*

——— *IV.*, Emperor of Germany, practices of Pope Gregory VII. against, I. 256. Convoked synods to depose Gregory VII. from the Papacy, I. 206. And confirmed their sentence, I. 206. 218. See *Council of Brixia—of Worms*.

——— *V.*, Emperor of Germany, remonstrance of, to Paschal II., respecting investitures, I. 213.

Heraclea, Constantinople freed from the jurisdiction of the Bishop of, and why, I. 177; and see *Patriarchate of Constantinople*.

Herbert, Lord, of Cherbury, account given by, of Henry VIII.'s negotiations with the Pope respecting his divorce, II. 193.

Hereditary Kingdom, see *Monarchy*.

Hereford, Bishops of; see *Bonner, Fox Edward, Godwin, Reynolds Thomas, Scory, Skyp, Wharton*.

———, *Bishopric of*, once a suffragan see to the Archbishopric of Caerleon, II. 526.

Heresy, difference between, and schism, I. 103. Floweth from the corruption of Faith, *ib.* Destroys unity and order, I. 110. Four ways of incurring, I. 110, 111; II. 89, 90. Instances of, I. 8. 102. Nothing judged to be, de novo, in England, unless by the High Court of Parliament with the assent of the clergy in their convocation, I. 272. Heresies impeach not the perpetuity of tradition, II. 352, 353. 493; and see *Tradition*. Hobbes alloweth compliance with, IV. 539; and see *Hobbes*.

See *Church Catholic—Particular, Creed, Faith, Fundamentals, Heretics, Schism*.

Heretics, who ought to be reputed, II. 566; V. 206; and see *Catholic, Church Catholic*. "Pacem cum omnibus miscent," according to Tertullian, II. 213. Invincible ignorance frees men from being formal, I. 111, 112. 127. 269; II. 205. 294. 390. 507. 584; V. 208. Distinction of St. Augustin between "Hæretici" and "Hæreticis credentes;" see St. *Augustin*. How far they are still within the pale of the Church, II. 584—586. 590; and see St. *Augustin*.

Those are not, who hold the Apo-

stles' Creed as expounded by the first four General Councils, II. 564; V. 206; and see *Catholics, Creed, Essentials, Heresy.*

How far it is a duty to excommunicate formal; see *Church Particular, Excommunication.* No duty to excommunicate material, II. 591. Catholics in the primitive Church held communion with, and how; see *Arians, Novatians.*

The Church of England holds no communion with, II. 328. 564; V. 206; and see *Church of England.*

The Church of England prays for the Romanists as materially heretical, II. 590; and see *Church of Rome.*

English Bishops are not; see *Bishops, English.* The Church of England is not, see *Church of England.* Protestants are not, see *Protestants.* That Romanists hold Protestants generally to be, is denied by Dr. Matthew Patenson, V. 206. Protestants not held to be formally, if invincibly ignorant, by Sancta Clara; see *Clará.* By the Bishop of Chalcedon; see *Smith, Richard.*

If the Patriarchs of the Eastern Church were, at the Council of Trent, they ought the more to have been summoned to it; see *Council of Trent.*

Heretical Baptism; see *Baptism,* St. *Cyprian.*

——— *Ordination;* see St. *Athanasius, Ordination.*

——— *Pravity,* see *Heresy.*

Hertford, Council of; see *Council of Hertford.*

———, *Earl of;* see *Seymour.*

Hewlet, see *Parsons.*

Hexham, or *Hengesthilldean, Abbey of,* restored to Archbishop Wilfrid by the Synod of Nidd in 705, I. 135. g; II. 131.

Heylin, Peter, D.D., treatise of, upon the Sabbath Day and the Irish Articles against Dean Bernard, V. Pref. Book of, of the History of the Sabbath, V. 11. 75. p.

Is mentioned angrily by Archbishop Ussher in some posthumous tracts upon the same subjects, V. 76. Censures Ussher for his approval of the Irish Articles, V. 81. p. Groundless accusation of, against Ussher, as accessary to the murder of Lord Strafford, V. 85.

Interpretation by, of Acts xx. 7, in relation to the observance of the Lord's Day, answered, V. 48—51. And of Acts ii. 1, V. 52, 53. And of the journey of the disciples to Emmaus on the Lord's Day, V. 56.

Hide, Gilbert, Registrar of the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury, a witness to Abp. Parker's election, III. 194.

Hieremy, see *Jeremiah.*

Hieronymus, or *Jerom, St.,* quarrel of, with Ruffinus, did not presently render them both schismatics, I. 98.

Quotation from, respecting the foreknowledge of God, IV. 236; V. 54.

Quotation from, respecting a Head of the Church as a remedy of schism, II. 155. 281. Respecting the origin of Bishops, mistaken, III. 470. That it is "no Church which hath no Priests," III. 98. 128. which is adopted by Bramhall, III. 128. That a Priest can do all that a Bishop doth except ordain, III. 143. 475.

Passage from, respecting the sense of Holy Scripture, that it is "in medullâ non in superficie," I. 49; IV. 236; V. 266. 269. The Apostles' Creed, II. 473.

Saying of, that it is a sign of Antichrist not of Catholic Christians, to be denominated from another person than from Christ, III. 504.

Passages from, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r. Affirms the Breaking of Bread at Emmaus to have been the Holy Eucharist, V. 57.

Language of, respecting Repentance, V. 158. q.

Testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath before the time of Moscs, V. 23. a.

Held, that kings are responsible to God only, III. 384. Complaint of, respecting a law of Valentinian limiting gifts to the Church, I. 142; II. 230.

Comment of, upon Acts ii. 1, V. 51. s. Proverb from, II. 23.

Hierusalem, Church of; see *Church of Jerusalem.*

———, *Patriarchate of;* see *Patriarchate of Jerusalem.*

Higgins, Mr., a Roman Catholic, satisfied of the truth of Archbishop Parker's consecration, III. 99.

High Commission; see *Commission, High.*

Hilary of Poitiers, passages from, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r. The Apostles' Creed, II. 473. s.

Hildebrand, see *Gregory VII.* Pope.

Hilsey, John, D.D., Bishop of Rochester 1535—1539, no regular record of the consecration of, III. Pref. 137. a. 139. d. It is recorded in his own

Diocesan Register, III. Pref. 137. a. Other evidence for the consecration of, III. Pref.

Hilton, Mr., Baron of the Irish Exchequer and Judge of the Prerogative, joined with Bramhall in a Regal visitation of the Church of Ireland, I. vi; V. 84. Brother-in-law to Archbishop Ussher, V. 84.

Hincmar, case of, with the Pope, in 871, I. 219, 220.

Hismael, Bishop of St. David's, consecrated by St. Telaus without any resort to Rome, I. 161.

Hobbes, Thomas, of Malmesbury (or T. H.), account of the controversy of, with Bramhall, I. xxxi — xxxiii. Conversation of, with Bramhall, at the Marquis of Newcastle's in Paris, whence it arose, IV. 26. List of the publications connected with it, IV. Pref. Letter of, to the Marquis of Newcastle, which commenced it, date of the, IV. Pref. a. b. 24. b. Editions of that letter, IV. 19. b. It was printed without Hobbes's consent, IV. 19. 251. and with a scurrilous and ridiculous preface, by a third person unnamed, IV. 20. 251, 252. and with an erroneous date, IV. 19. Account of the Reply of, to Bramhall's Defence, entitled Questions concerning Liberty and Necessity, &c., IV. 209. a. When published, IV. 597. Reply of, to the first chapter of the Catching of Leviathan, written after Bramhall's death and published after the author's, IV. Pref. Probably written to shield its author from legal penalties, *ib.* Bramhall's Castigations, and the remainder of the Catching of Leviathan, never answered, and probably unseen by, *ib.* Desire of, that the controversy between himself and Bramhall should be kept secret, IV. 19. 59. 85. 102. 192. 252. 483. Little harm in the publication of the arguments of, IV. 192. 483.

Treatise of, De Cive, objections to it sent to, by Bramhall, in 1645, IV. 20. 252. 506. Editions of it prior to 1658, IV. 597. False doctrine of, in it, respecting sovereign magistrates, IV. 78. 130. 196. 386. And obedience to Princes, IV. 493—498. And to the law, IV. 392, 393. False doctrines of, in it, confuted and exposed in the 'Catching of Leviathan,' IV. 519—597.

Treatise of, entitled 'Leviathan,' affords much more matter of exception than the treatise 'De Cive,' IV. 20. When published, IV. 597. Answers to it, by others, IV. 20. 252. 515. Bramhall braved by, to reply to it, IV. 515. Erroneous doctrines advanced by, in it, respecting obedience to the civil magistrate, IV. 492—497. Erroneous doctrines in it, refuted and exposed at length in the 'Catching of Leviathan;' see *Catching of Leviathan.*

Resided in France from 1641 to 1651, IV. 493. k. Returned to England in 1651, and continued thenceforward to reside there, IV. 252. a. Was tutor at one time to Charles II., IV. 561. g. And wrote his Leviathan with a view to his use, *ib.*

Presumptuous denunciations by, of scholastic terms and distinctions, IV. 34, 35. 123. 128—130. 159. 209, 210. 239. 260. 265. 280. 289. 306. 457. 459. 503. 505. 516. Presumptuous censure passed by, on the doctors of the Church, IV. 128—130. 486. Invectives of, against unsignificant words, IV. 249. Affectation by, of new terms of art, IV. 44. Deep skill of, in logic, IV. 279. Silly definitions of, IV. 279—281. Presumption of, IV. 227. Absurd presumption of, IV. 272. Most ridiculous presumption of, IV. 306. Boastful conclusion of the letter of, to the Marquis of Newcastle, IV. 159. Boasts and blunders of, IV. 466. Flourish of, IV. 226. 506. Shew of confidence of, IV. 425. Question of liberty wholly mistaken by, IV. 28. 209. 271. 364. 405; and passim, in vol. IV. Eleven gross mistakes of, in a few lines, IV. 215. Inconsistencies of, IV. 93. Contradictions of, IV. 296, 575—592. Reduced to an absurdity, IV. 307. A litter of the absurdities of, IV. 344. Impertinencies of, IV. 348. Reiterated paradoxes of, IV. 409. Mistakes of, IV. 455. Gross mistakes of, about eternity, IV. 460. Self-convicted, IV. 464—466. Blundering "parode" of, upon Prudentius, IV. 502.

Atheistical expressions of, IV. 516. Errors of, in religion, IV. 520—544. No friend to religion, IV. 520. Excuseth atheism, IV. 522. Denieth prayer to be either a cause or a means of God's blessings, IV. 107. Out of a hatred to true liberty, makes God hypocritical, IV. 302. Makes God the cause of sin, IV. 396. Heretical opinions of, IV. 523—547. Irreverent expression of, respecting the Martyrs, IV. 330. 497. Grievous

errors of, concerning the nature of God, IV. 523—526. 584; and see *God*. Concerning the Holy Trinity, IV. 526. Concerning God the Son, IV. 527—529. 584. The Priestly Office of Christ, IV. 528. The prophetical Office of Christ, IV. 528, 529. Concerning God the Holy Ghost, IV. 529—531. Concerning the Holy Catholic Church, IV. 502. 531, 532. The Holy Scriptures, IV. 327, 328, 532. 578. The efficacy of the Holy Sacraments, IV. 533. Holy Orders, IV. 533, 534. Heaven, IV. 535. Angels, IV. 407. 535. The immortality of the soul, IV. 536. Hell, IV. 537. The Devils, IV. 351. 536, 537, 538. The damned spirits, IV. 538. Eternal punishment, IV. 246. 354. 538. 585. Alloweth outward compliance with heresy, IV. 539. And outward denial of Christ, *ib.* And licence to commit idolatry under fear of death, *ib.* Denieth the natural supremacy of Divine Law, IV. 540. Makes the civil magistrate supreme arbiter of theological truth, IV. 330. 370. 386. 528, 529. 534. 540. 578. 590. Yet confesseth that ecclesiastical doctors have a privilege above himself, IV. 500. And holdeth the magistrate obliged to make use of ecclesiastical doctors duly ordained, IV. 590. Holds, that the civil magistrate has a right as man to kill, but no right as magistrate to punish, a guilty subject, IV. 561, 562. 582; and see *Nature, State of.* Maketh the civil or municipal laws the ultimate standard of good and evil, IV. 541; and see *Law.* A bundle of the religious errors of, IV. 544—547.

A fit catechist for disloyal and unnatural persons, IV. 331. Commonwealth of, confessedly a novelty, IV. 547. Political principles of, IV. 547—575. Destructive to public peace, IV. 550. Teacheth, that confidence between princes and states, is impossible, IV. 551. That unconfederate states are as enemies and in a "state of nature," *ib.* And may make war upon each other without any warning, IV. 552. That no man is bound to warfare, IV. 553. Many errors of, against the authority of monarchs, IV. 559. Ten times grosser errors of, in favour of monarchs, IV. 559—563. First four Commandments of the Decalogue accommodated by, to sovereign princes, IV. 560. Admitteth resistance to the sovereign in deed, though he denies it in words, IV. 555. Grudge of, against the nobility, IV. 563. Œconomics of, no better than his politics, IV. 566. Teacheth that parents may kill their children, IV. 434. 566. Yet have no natural right over them, IV. 568. Principles of, destroy the natural subordination of a wife to her husband, IV. 569. And justify adultery, IV. 570. And overthrow the relation of a servant to his master, IV. 571. Poisonous doctrine of, respecting oaths, war, and allegiance to sovereigns, IV. 550—557. Groundless and mischievous fancy of, that a state of nature is a state of war of all with all, IV. 334. 594. Dream of, of a state of mere nature, IV. 334. 562. 566. 572. 582. 593. Gross mistake of, respecting the laws of nature, IV. 594. Origin of commonwealths not from mutual fear as he affirmeth, IV. 595. Device of, of absolute sovereignty, IV. 596. Strange doctrine of, respecting the brute beasts, and their subordination to man, IV. 339—341. Acts the attorney-general for the brute beasts, IV. 339. A bundle of the political errors of, IV. 572—575. America the fit place for, where he saith his state of mere nature really exists, IV. 597. The causes and grounds of the errors of, IV. 592—596.

Theory of, of universal necessity, stated, IV. 58. 159. 173. Proofs advanced by, for it, IV. 175—189. Empty argument to prove it answered, IV. 478, 479. The first words of, convict his own theory of falsehood, IV. 24—26. Silly distinction taken by, between liberty to will and liberty to act, between freedom to do if one will, and freedom to will, IV. 27. 30. 32. 38. 41, 42. 44. 55. 211. 221—223. 234. 274. 284—287. 371. 421. 462. 467. It maketh him a degree worse than the Stoics, IV. 287. Confounds liberty with spontaneity, IV. 28. And hypothetical with antecedent necessity, IV. 29. 122. 184. 271. 364. 405. Ignorant account by, of hypothetical necessity, IV. 122. Of liberty of exercise and of specification, IV. 123. Silly definition by, of liberty, IV. 166. 280, 281. 430. 443. The true question between, and Bramhall, stated, IV. 313. Doctrine of, that the last act of the reason necessitates the will, IV. 41. 58. 148, 149. 288. 410, 411. In this alone seconded by good authors, IV. 42. Distinction taken by, between spontaneous and volun-

tary actions, IV. 45, 46. Makes election necessary as well as action, IV. 59. Confusion of, between willing and thinking, IV. 249. Will, according to, is no more than the bias of a bowl, IV. 271. Maketh himself no better than a wooden top, IV. 277. Definition by, of contingents, IV. 365. Maketh the will to be compelled, IV. 377. Liberty, according to, omnipotence in show, in deed nothing, IV. 381. No true liberty, IV. 442. And deliberation, no true deliberation, IV. 441. 461. Instance given by, to illustrate his theory, of a man that strikes, IV. 151. Of a civil judge, IV. 370. Of a stone falling, IV. 387. 411, 412. Of a shower of rain, IV. 181. 185. 473—476. Of casting amb's ace, IV. 180. 185. 270. 471. By his definition of liberty, a stone is as free to ascend as it is to descend, IV. 446. 462. Asserts that the opinion of necessity neither involves impiety nor excludes repentance or prayer, IV. 103. Mistaketh piety to be an act of the judgment, and to respect God's power only, IV. 104. Opinion of, inconsistent with the moral attributes of God, *ib.* And with the worship of God, IV. 105. And with repentance, *ib.* Destroyeth the truth of God, IV. 352. And His justice, IV. 354. And His goodness, IV. 352, 353. And His omnipotence, by making Him the cause of sin, IV. 355. And His ubiquity, IV. 523. And His simplicity, IV. 524. And His eternity, IV. 523. To admit that God is infinite, enough to confute, IV. 490. Theory of, makes God inevitably the cause of sin, IV. 81. 396. 581. Perversion by, of St. Paul's argument in the Epistle to the Romans respecting the justice of God in rewarding and punishing necessitated acts, IV. 64—66. Argument of, from the case of Job, IV. 65. And from that of David and Uriah, IV. 66. And from that of the blind man in St. John, IV. 65. Punishment, consultation, praise, the use of means, affirmed by, to be consistent with the theory of necessity, IV. 86—88. Answer of, concerning the injustice of an action, both irrelevant and untrue, IV. 88. Confession of, that no man is justly punished, but for crimes he might have shunned, IV. 242. According to the principles of, all persuasions are vain, IV. 275. Men's experience contrary to the conclusions of, IV. 177. Principles of, refuted by his practice, IV. 210. St. Austin more to be credited than, IV. 273. Dares not refer himself to his own witnesses, IV. 382. All the contention of is about terms, not things, IV. 292. Universal practice against, IV. 499. Treatises of Bramhall against, upon the question of Liberty and Necessity; see *Castigations, Defence.*

Subtlety of, that every thing is a cause of every thing, IV. 402. Hearing and speaking all one with, IV. 406. 'Universals' nothing but words according to, IV. 424. Knoweth no reason but imagination, IV. 435, 436. Possible or impossible all one with, IV. 479. Admitteth no absurdities but impossibilities, IV. 482. Is zealous for human justice yet regardeth not Divine, IV. 582. Censure passed by, on self-contradictions, IV. 575. His own self-contradictions, respecting sin, IV. 585. And the power of the Keys, *ib.* Denieth yet alloweth inspiration, IV. 588. Contradictory assertions of, respecting body, *ib.* And the power of the law over the will, IV. 589. And necessity, *ib.* And compulsion, *ib.* Summary of the contradictions of, IV. 591, 592. Is himself the true Leviathan, IV. 517.

Hobbist, a right, cannot praise God, IV. 356. Nor hear the Word, or receive the Sacrament, worthily, IV. 357. Nor vow as he ought, IV. 358. Nor repent of his misdeeds, *ib.*

Hodgkin, John, suffragan Bishop of Bedford, consecrated 1537, III. Pref. 56. y. Named in the second commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker, III. 52. 74. 178. Actually joined in so doing, III. Pref. 56. y. 83, 84. 86. 174. 204, 211. 212. Christian name of, entered by mistake as Richard in that commission, as endorsed in the Rolls, III. 75, 76. And thence in the De Antiq. Brit. Eccl., III. 96. d. And thence also in the Archiepiscopal Register, where the corrected name is interlined, III. 178. Argument thence drawn for the genuineness of the Register, III. 178. n.

Holcroft, Thomas, ambassador with Bishop Barlow to James V. of Scotland, in 1534, III. 141. m. 227.

Holden, Henry, D.D., a Roman Catholic, book De Resolutione Fidei, published by, in 1652, partly the occasion of Bramhall's Just Vindication of the Church of England, I. xxvii. Opinion of, on schism, I. 99. Resistance

to the Court of Rome, I. 108. The power of sovereigns to alter what is of human institution in ecclesiastical discipline, I. 165—168. That nothing ought to be received for revealed truth but what has been handed down in perpetual succession from the Apostles, I. 176.

Holder, Tobias, attestation of, as notary, to Bishop Morton's Protestation respecting the Nag's Head fable, III. 31.

Holinshed, account of Bishop Tunstall's death, given by, supports instead of contradicting the Record of Archbishop Parker's Consecration in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 86. f. 198. s. Testimony of, to the truth of that record, III. Pref. 229. g; and see *Bishops English, Thynne.* Alleged as a witness to the Nag's Head fable, upon hearsay gossip, III. 117. l.

Hollis, Denzil (*Hollis*), *Lord*, the Parliamentarian, one of the five members impeached of treason by Charles I., III. 413, 414. Came by a rich widow for a wife through serving the Parliamentarians, III. 409.

Holy Ghost; see *God the Holy Ghost.*

Holyman, John, Bishop of Bristol 1554—1558, died shortly after Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 232.

Holywood, or *a Sacrobosco, Christopher*, an English Roman Catholic, first published the Nag's Head fable, abroad, in 1604, III. 39. f. 42, 43. 55. 107. How far the inventor of it, III. 39. f; V. 246. n.

Homage of Bishops; see *Bishops, Bishops English, Kings, Kings of England.*

Homily, of the Place and Time of Prayer, doctrine of, concerning the Sabbath and Lord's Day, explained, V. 55. 68—73. Concerning the Sacrament, high expressions of, respecting the Holy Eucharist, V. 164. z.

Ὁμοούσιος, see *Council of Ariminum.*

Honnywood, Michael, D.D., afterwards Prebendary of Durham, a friend of Bishop Bramhall, I. xcviii; III. 12.

Honorius, Emperor, summoned the Collation of Carthage in 411, at the request of the Catholic Bishops, against the Donatists, I. 68. Settled the succession to the Papacy between Boniface I. and Eulalius, I. 173.

——— *I.*, Pope 625—638, condemned as a Monothelite by the Sixth General Council in 680, I. 254.

Honour paid to God, see *God.*

Hooper, John, Bishop of Gloucester—of Worcester, 1550—1554; Episcopal orders of, denied at his degradation in 1554, III. 115. g. Was consecrated by the new ordinal, *ib.* Contumacy of, respecting vestments, III. Pref. 139. d. Milton's severe language against, III. 476.

Hopton, John, D.D., Bishop of Norwich 1554—1559, died shortly after Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 232.

Horne, Robert, D.D., Bishop of Winchester 1560—1580; proof of the consecration of, III. 224. Commission to confirm and consecrate, III. 68. 224. One of the Bishops alleged by Fitzherbert, Fitzsimon, Champney, to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. Answer to the charge brought against, by Harding and Stapleton, that he is no consecrated Bishop, II. 273; III. 79. 126—128. That charge had not the remotest connection with the Nag's Head fable, *ib.;* and see *Harding Thomas, Stapleton.* Suit of Bonner against, as being no Bishop, upon what grounded, II. 274; III. 79. 113. It had nothing to do with the Nag's Head fable, see *Bonner.* It affords no argument against English orders, V. 242—244.

Horse, illustration of his doctrine of necessity, advanced by Hobbes, that the last feather in the load breaks the back of the, IV. 150. 416.

Hosius, Bishop in the province of Bœtica in Spain; President of the Council of Nice, falsely claimed as a Papal legate, I. 138. President also of the Council of Sardica, I. 155; II. 374. See *Council of Nice the First—of Sardica.*

Host, The, I. 70. Adoration of, see *Lord's Supper.*

Hotham, Sir John, conduct of, at Hull, discussed, III. 436—449. 456. Probable motives of, in shutting the gates of Hull against the King, III. 437. q. Scandalous picture of King Charles I. and, III. 439. Hull men accuse, as a prime occasion of the then distempers, III. 448—451. Severe shrievalty of, III. 449. See *Hull.*

———, *John*, the younger, treasonable conduct of, at Hull, III. 449. Crossed thence into Lincolnshire and was defeated, III. 451.

Houghton, a secular Priest, disputation of, with Bramhall in 1623, I. iv. xvi. lviii. cxiv. m; III. 540.

House of Commons, English; see *Parliament, English.* Irish; see *Parliament, Irish.* Irish in 1661; see *Adventurers, Bramhall John, Domville, Mervyn, Sermon, Speech.*

Hoveden, testimony of, that Bishops of old paid homage to laymen, II. 417.
Howard, Charles, Earl of Nottingham, account of, III. 151. t. Testimony of, against the Nag's Head fable, III. 105. 151. A kinsman of Archbishop Parker, and invited to his consecration at Lambeth, III. 151.
———, *Lord William*, colleague of Bishop Barlow as ambassador to Scotland in 1535, 1536, III. Pref. 141. m. 227.
Howlett, see *Hulet*.
H., T.; see *Hobbes, Thomas*.
Huguenots, The, case of, nothing to the Church of England, II. 552. 564.
Hulet, or *Howlett, Rev. Mr.*, Bramhall's tutor at Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge, I. iii. xvi. lvii. Provided for by Bramhall in Ireland, *ib.*
Hull, built by Edward III. and fortified by Henry VIII., III. 443. Oath of the burgesses at, III. 451, 452. Bramhall said to have written a history of, but this probably a mistake, I. xxxiv.
A nest of sedition prior to the civil war, III. 444. First blood shed at Anlaby near, in the civil war, III. 451. All evils of the civil war began at, III. 450, 451. Severe proverb concerning, III. 445.
Conduct of Sir John Hotham at; see *Hotham, Sir John*.
Human Laws, see *Laws*.
Humble Motion, for reform of ecclesiastical discipline, in 1598, petitioned for the admission of Ministers into Parliament instead of Bishops, III. 304. Denunciation by, of the greediness of the Puritans after Church property, III. 435.
Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester; see *Gloucester, Humphrey Duke of*.
———, *Lawrence, D.D.*, President of Magdalen College, Oxford, 1561—1590; Life of Bishop Jewel by, III. 220. Testimony of, in his Preface, to the succession of English clergy, in answer to Osorius, III. 130. e.
Hundred Grievances; see *Grievances, Hundred*.
Hungary, Protestant bodies in, not "unchurched" by English Episcopal divines, III. 517. See *Kings of Hungary*.
Hungate, a Jesuit, disputation of, with Bramhall in 1623, I. iv. xvi. lviii. cxiv. n; III. 540.
Huntley, Earl of; see *Gordon, George*.
Ὑπερδουλεία, see Λατρεία.
Ὑπομνημονεῦμα, to Archbishop Bramhall, I. cxviii.
Husband, Hobbes's principles destroy the subordination of a wife to her, IV. 569, 570; and see *Hobbes*.
Huse, Antony, President of the Court of Admiralty in the reign of Edward VI., III. Pref. n. Registrar to Cardinal Pole and Archbishop Parker, III. 41. 88. 175.
Hy, see *Iona*.
Hyde, Edward, Earl of Clarendon, known to be the author of the earlier Answers of Charles I. to the Remonstrances &c. of the Parliament, III. 300. k. Remark of, upon Charles I.'s Letter to Gregory XV., III. 526. s.
Hypothetical Necessity, see *Necessity*.

I.

Iconomachi, opinion of the, on the Presence of Christ in the Sacrament, I. 9. The first who denied the Real Presence according to Bellarmine, but not so in truth, *ib.*
Idolaters, lawful to communicate with material, in some things, II. 311, 312. 583. How far lawful to do so, II. 584, 585. See *Communion*.
Idolatry, whether the Church of Rome be guilty of; see *Church of Rome*. Peril of, from the doctrine of Transubstantiation, I. 44, 45. Schism not a greater sin than, II. 28—31; and see *Schism*. Hobbes allowed licence to commit for fear of death, IV. 539; and see *Hobbes*.
Ignatius, St., a witness that the Lord's Day was observed throughout the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age, V. 42. High expressions of, respecting the Holy Eucharist, V. 163. z.
———, Patriarch of Constantinople, resistance of, to Pope John VIII., respecting the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of Bulgaria, I. 107. 268; II. 75.
Ignorance, our, a sufficient answer, how liberty may consist with the prescience and decrees of God, IV. 153. Chance is from accidental concurrence, not from, IV. 259. 342. See *Liberty, Necessity*. Invincible, frees men from being formal heretics or schismatics; see *Heretics, Schismatics*.
Images, the worship of, in what way an addition to the Creed, I. 26. No old article of the Faith, II. 241. 494. 581.

Made so by the Church of Rome, II. 241. 494. Condemned by the 22nd article, as *besides*, not *contrary to*, Scripture, II. 581. Passages from St. Augustin and Lactantius concerning, I. 46; II. 619. Vain distinction between the worship due to, terminatively and transeuntly, I. 45, 46. Different opinions respecting the worship of, in the Roman Schools themselves, I. 46. z. The worship of, cannot be proved out of the first four General Councils or the universal tradition of the Church, I. 65. The worship of, condemned by the Greek Church, II. 632. 634. Worship of, condemned, and how, by the Church of England, I. 54; II. 494. 634. Agreement of the Greek and English Churches concerning the worship of, II. 632.

Immanent acts, the, distinguished from the transient acts, of God, IV. 121. And from the imperate acts, of the will, IV. 125. See *Actions of Free Agents*, *God*, *Will*.

Immortality of the soul, see *Soul*.

Immutability, necessity of; see *Luther*.

Impanation, what it is, I. 15.

Imperate Acts, IV. 125. 130. 138. 395. 399. 432; and see *Actions of Free Agents*.

Imposition of Hands, the ordinary word for Ordination in the primitive Church, V. 216. The only form there recognized of ordination, *ib.* See Χειροθεσία, Χειροτονία, *Orders*, *Ordination*.

Impossibilities, made by ourselves, may be justly imposed by law, but not impossibilities in themselves, IV. 322, 323. To command, is unjust, IV. 369. Hobbes admitteth no absurdities except, IV. 482.

Ina, King of the West Saxons 688—726, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413. Built a Church at Glastonbury, II. 135.

Incent, *John*, notary public, one of the witnesses to Abp. Parker's consecration, III. 88. 206. 213. Proctor of the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury at Abp. Parker's confirmation, III.175,176.197. Succeeded Antony Huse as Abp. Parker's registrar, III. 175.

Incomprehensible, God is, IV. 489. Yet so far as we can, we are obliged to search after Him, *ib.* See *God*.

Indeliberate Acts, IV. 162. 432; and see *Actions of Free Agents*.

Independents; see *Presbyterians*, *English*. The Church of England has nothing to do with the, I. 36. Anarchy introduced by the, into the Church, III. 475. 477.

Indetermination of Causes, IV. 366; and see *Causes*.

Indian Christians, substitute used by some, for wine in the Eucharist, II. 202. Converted by St. Thomas, V. 34.

Indivisible, God is, IV. 426; and see *God*, *Essence of*.

Indulgences, Romish doctrine of, erroneous, II. 36. In what way an addition to the Creed, I. 26. No old article of the Faith, II. 241. 581. Made so by the Church of Rome, II. 241.

Condemned by the 22nd article, of the XXXIX., not as *contrary to*, but as *besides* Scripture, II. 581. Condemned by the Greek as well as by the English Church, II. 634. Denounced by the Hundred Grievances of the German Nation, I. 216.

Impious and flagitious sale of, I. 180. Blasphemy of Tetzel respecting, I. 180; II. 237.

One cause of the separation of Foreign Protestants from Rome, II. 36. 236; and see *Separation*.

Infallibility, of God, His prescience proveth the, and not necessity, IV. 246—249; and see *God*, *Foreknowledge of*. Of the Catholic Church; see *Church*, *Catholic*. Of the Pope, see *Bishop of Rome*. Necessity of, see *Synod of Dort*.

Infanta, see *Maria*.

Infants, Baptism of, not contained in the Creed; see *Baptism*, *Creed*.

Desire of the Baptism of, how accepted for Baptism itself, V. 174. Baptismal Grace more probably conferred upon unbaptized, than upon unbaptized adults, V. 172, 173. Analogy of Martyrdom, V. 173, 174. Analogy of Circumcision, which was not absolutely necessary under the Law, V. 176. Opinion of the primitive Church as gathered from their practice of delaying Baptism, V. 177. Doctrine of the Roman Schools respecting the salvation of abortive, V. 175. See St. *Bernard*, *Bullinger*, *Cajetan*, *Calvin*, *Cassander*, *Council of Trent*, *Gabriel Biel*, *Gerson*, *Gregory I.* Pope.

Admitted to Communion in the Lord's Supper by some Churches, not admitted by others, in primitive times, yet without controversies, censure, or animosity, I. 9.

Of Limbus Infantum, see *Limbus Infantum*.

Infidel Sovereigns, Bellarmine's doctrine that allegiance is not due to; see *Bellarmine*. Hobbes's self-contradictions respecting the obedience due to, IV. 587.

Infinity, of God; see *God*.

Influence, occult virtue or, of the stars, IV. 306; and see *Stars*. Difference between special and general, IV. 237. 311, 312.

Infusion, and *Effusion*, meaning of, IV. 408, 409.

Ingulph, Abbot of Crowland, testimony of, that investiture of Bishoprics in the time of William the Conqueror belonged to the king, II. 407.

Inherent justice, or righteousness; see *Justice Inherent*, *Justification*.

Injunctions of Queen Elizabeth, see *Elizabeth* Queen of England.

Innocent, The; see *Crosses*.

Innocent I., Pope 402—417, interference of, in behalf of St. Chrysostom, II. 434.

——— *III.*, Pope 1198—1216, first determination of the manner of the Presence of Christ in the Sacrament in the days of, after the year 1200, I. 14; III. 573. Excommunicated King John, I. 188. Alleged donation of the Crown of England to, by King John, *ib.* Letter of German ecclesiastical lords to, about homage to the Emperor, I. 213. Sharp censure passed upon, by John Capocius, III. 438. And see *Council of Lateran the Fourth*.

——— *IV.*, Pope 1243—1254; see *Grosthead, Robert*, Bishop of Lincoln. Insolent expressions of, towards the Kings of England, I. 185. Bitter complaints against, of Henry III. and the whole commonwealth of England to the Council of Lyons in 1246, I. 194, 195; II. 448.

——— *VIII.*, Pope 1484—1492, Bull of, granting certain privileges to the Venetians, I. 243.

——— *X.*, Pope 1644—1655, book concerning the simony of, I. 180. Nuncio sent by, into Ireland in 1645, I. 33. o. Bull of, contemned by the Emperor Ferdinand, I. 212. Treatment by, of the Portuguese Bishops, in 1651, I. 224. 239.

Inquisitors, cruelty of the, I. 48.

Inspiration, Hobbes denieth, yet alloweth, IV. 588.

Installation, see *Inthronization*.

Instant, all time doth not make one, IV. 481. See *Eternity*.

Institution of a Christian Man, commonly called the Bishops' Book, set forth by the English Convocation of 1537, I. 122. Justified the Regal supremacy, I. 122; II. 189. 503. Signed by all the Bishops of the English Church (viz. 21) and by eight Archdeacons, including Bonner, I. 122. c. Argument from the signatures to, for the date of Bp. Barlow's consecration, III. 142. o.

Intellectual Appetite, see *Appetite*.

Intention, definition of, from St. Thomas Aquinas, IV. 164.

———, dangerous consequences of the Romish doctrine of, V. 210. As regards Holy Baptism, *ib.* The Holy Eucharist, I. 44; V. 211. Ordination, I. 44; III. 126; V. 211. The nice distinctions by which it is explained away, *ib.* The interior, of the consecrant, not necessary, V. 212. Protestants have an implicit, to do what the Catholic Church doth, *ib.* Protestants intend to confer, in Ordination, power both of consecrating and of remitting sin, V. 213.

Intercession of Saints, see *Saints*.

Interim, The, a declaration of Religion made by the Emperor Charles V., I. 210.

Interior Court, jurisdiction in the; see *Jurisdiction*.

Internal Communion, see *Communion*.

Interpretation of Scripture; see *Church*, *Council General*, *Creed*, *Scripture*.

Interpreter, Hobbes maketh the sovereign prince the only, of Scripture, yet obliged to make use of ecclesiastical doctors duly ordained, IV. 590; and see *Hobbes*.

Inthronization of Bishops, in the Province of Canterbury, pertains of right to the Archdeacon of Canterbury, III. 231.

Of Archbishop Parker, in the Archbishopric of Canterbury, original instrument of the, described by Browne, III. Pref. n. Mandate to the Archdeacon of Canterbury for the, from the Register, III. 207, 208. Of other Bishops consecrated in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, III. 218—227. Of Bishop Barlow, III. 139. d. 227.

'*Intuitus Dei*'—'The Aspect of God,' what it means, IV. 156.

Investiture of Bishops, whence the name is derived, II. 418. Manner of Anselm's in the Archbishopric of Canterbury, II. 406.

The, and the nomination, of Bishops in England, belongs to the Crown from time immemorial, I. 135. 137. 139. 141. 144. 146. 150.

263; II. 404—409. 418. 425. 465; V. 202, 203. Was in the king's hand until the time of Anselm, II. 404—407. 465. During the reigns of William the Conqueror, William Rufus, Henry I., II. 404. Testimony of Gervasius Dorobernensis to this, II. 406. Of Eadmer, *ib.* Of Anselm himself, II. 407. Of Ingulph of Crowland, *ib.* Of William of Malmesbury, II. 407; V. 202. Of Matthew of Westminster, V. 202. Of Florence of Worcester, *ib.* Of William of Newbrigg, V. 203. Of Molinæus and other foreign lawyers, *ib.* Of the Assise of Clarendon, II. 407, 408. Of the Statute of Carlisle, II. 408. Of the Statute of Provisors, II. 408, 409. See *Bishops, Bishops English.*

First condemned (in lay hands) by Pope Gregory VII., and Pope Calixtus, II. 404. Upon what grounds, II. 404, 405. Taken away for fear of simony, II. 404. 491. Yet simony increased by its abrogation, II. 491. Compromise between the king and Pope respecting, II. 560. The king robbed of, by the Pope, I. 263.

Belonged to the king in other countries, and to the Emperors, V. 203. Belonged to the German Emperors from the time of Charlemagne to Henry V., I. 213; II. 232. 403. See *Emperors, Kings of Apulia —of France—of Hungary—of Spain.*

Invocation of Saints, see *Saints.*

Involuntary Acts, see *Actions of Free Agents.*

Iona, or *Hy*, The Abbey of, founded by Columba, I. 274.

——, The Abbot of, challenges no Episcopal jurisdiction, being merely a Presbyter, I. 273—275.

Ireland, anciently called Scotland, II. 169. 527. Converted by St. Patrick, see St. *Patrick.* Deservedly called the Island of Saints, II. 545. St. Bernard's severe censure of, *ib.* See *Scots.*

Not one kingdom with England (in the time of Bramhall) in the same manner with Wales, III. 463. Visited by Henry II. in person in 1172, to receive its submission, V. 82. s. Synod of Cashel in, in the same year; see *Church Irish, Council of Cashel.*

Was unanimous in casting out the Pope, I. 122; II. 501, 502. Treatment of Roman Catholics in, during Lord Strafford's deputy-ship, by Lord Strafford and Bp. Bramhall, II. 124.

Rebellion in, in 1641—1651, II. 529; III. 454—463. The Earl of Strafford no cause of it, III. 455. Nor Charles I., I. 34; III. 455. Active measures of Charles I. to suppress it, III. 457—460. Act for Undertakers in, in 1641, III. 459. Treacherous and dishonest conduct of the Parliament respecting the suppression of the rebellion in, *ib.* Royal commissions forged by the rebels in, I. 34; III. 456. The probable causes of the rebellion in, III. 460. Viz. the example of the Scotch Covenant, and the apprehension of losing their civil and religious liberty, III. 461. Comparison between the rebellion in, and that in England, III. 462.

Conquest of, by Cromwell, completed by the capture of Limerick in 1651, V. 117. o. Inclination of, to Charles II. in 1649, V. 117.

Settlement of, upon the Restoration; see *Adventurers, Bramhall John, Charles II.* King of England.

Ireland, Church of; see *Church of Ireland.*

Irene, Empress at the time of the Seventh General Council, A.D. 887, II. 231.

Irenæus, condemned Pope Victor for the dispute between him and the Eastern Churches respecting the observation of Easter, II. 75. 591. 636. Testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath before the time of Moses, V. 22. Concerning St. John's tradition of the observance of Easter, V. 35. High expressions of, concerning the Holy Eucharist, V. 163. z. Expressions of, respecting Tradition, V. 267.

Irish, The; see *Ireland, Scots.*

Irish Bishops; see *Bishops, Irish.*

—— *Church*, see *Church of Ireland.*

—— *Rebellion*, see *Ireland.*

Ironside, Edmund; see *Edmund Ironside.*

———, *Gilbert*, book of, upon the Sabbath, V. 37. k. 62. t.

Irrational beings, neither deliberate nor elect, IV. 50. See *Actions of Brute Beasts, Beasts.*

Irregularity, sin is properly, IV. 318; and see *Sin.* God no cause of, IV. 319, 320; and see *God.*

Isidore of Pelusium, doctrine of, that kings are accountable to God alone, III. 384.

——— *of Seville*, omits the Council of Sardica from his list of General Councils, II. 533.

Islands, British, see *Britain.*

Isles, Bishopric of the, in Scotland, by whom founded, I. 274.
——, *Bishop of the*; see *Leslie.*
Israel, Kings of; see *Kings of Israel.*
Isychius, affirms the breaking of Bread at Emmaus to have been the Holy Eucharist, V. 57. d.
Italians, many beneficed at one time in England, I. 189; II. 405.
Italy, only part of, within the original Patriarchate of Rome, I. 156. Number of Bishops in, in early times, I. 162. See *Patriarchate of Rome.*
Iva, see *Ina.*

J.

Jackson, Ralph, Canon of Canterbury in 1559, but not present at Abp. Parker's election, III. 193. Apparently deprived, and when, III. 193. d. One of the witnesses to Parker's consent to his election, III. 199.
Jacob, how Jacob was loved and Esau hated, IV. 68.
Jamaica, conquered by Cromwell's fleet under Pen and Venables, in 1655, V. 117. n.
James, St., the Greater, called "Episcopus Episcoporum," II. 154.
—— *I.*, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 371, 372. Was not styled Head of the Church, I. 31. Professes, that the Kings of England are invested with no spiritual power, II. 458. Proclamation of, for Uniformity, in 1603, III. 472. Proclamation of, called The Book of Sports, III. 577.
How far he would condescend to the Bishop of Rome for peace' sake, II. 175. Calls the Church of Rome a "Matrix Ecclesia," *ib.* Quotation from the Apology of, for the Oath of Allegiance, II. 120. Does not say, that Popish Priests in England died for religion, II. 121. Denies that they did so, I. 124. i. 125; II. 121. Terms of re-union between the Churches of Rome and England proposed by, III. 565. 568, 569.
Episcopacy maintained by, III. 472. Reverence paid by, to the first four General Councils, II. 427.
Declaration of, concerning Church government, made in Scotland in 1584, III. 256. Fifty-five Questions put forth by, in 1596, concerning the Scottish discipline, to the great discomfiture of the Disciplinarians, III. 270, 271. 279. Treasonable conduct towards, of Scotch Ministers, III. 256—259; and see *Assembly General of Aberdeen—St. Andrews—Dundee—Edinburgh.*
Wonderful escape of, in the Gowry Conspiracy, III. 439.
James IV., King of Scotland, marriage of, with Margaret daughter of King Henry VII., III. 476.
——— *V.*, King of Scotland, Bishop Barlow ambassador to, with Holcroft and Lord W. Howard successively, in 1534—1536, to induce him to join Henry VIII. in throwing off the Papal supremacy, III. Pref. 141. 227.
Jansenius, Cornelius, Bishop of Ghent, affirms the Breaking of Bread at Emmaus, to have been at least a figure of the Holy Eucharist, V. 57. Admits Shrift to be of human institution, V. 223. r.
———, ———, Bishop of Ypres, Bull of Pope Urban VIII. against the book of, called "Augustinus," I. 236; II. 443. Reception of that Bull in Brabant, *ib.* Bramhall does not meddle with the justice or injustice of the condemnation of, I. 236.
Jeremiah, Patriarch of Constantinople 1576, 1581; intercourse of, with Melancthon and the divines of Tubingen, respecting the controversy between Papists and Protestants, II. 265. Opinion of, respecting Justification, II. 633. Denied the Papal supremacy in the name of the Greek Church, II. 635. 644.
Jerome, see *Hieronymus.*
Jerusalem, Church of; see *Church of Jerusalem.*
———, *Patriarch of*; see St. *Cyril.*
———, *Patriarchate of*; see *Patriarchate of Jerusalem.*
Jesu, Thomas a, held the controversy between the Eastern and Western Churches respecting the Procession of the Holy Ghost from the Son, to be a mere logomachy, II. 629. Explanation given by, of the imputation of heresy cast upon the Eutychians, *ib.*
Jesuits, The, admission of, in England, respecting the novelty of Transubstantiation, in 1601, I. 24. Doctrines of, subversive of all civil society; see *Bellarmine, Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Mariana, Simancas.* Presbyterian doctrines respecting the ecclesiastical and civil powers, parallel with those of, III. 300. 301. 349; and see *Disciplinarians, Presbyterians.* College of, suppressed in England by Charles I., III. 528.

Jesus, see *Christ*. Bowing at the name of, as ancient as the Gospel, and universal among all Churches, V. 76, 77. And acknowledged even by the three or four petty modern Churches opposed to it, to be a 'pious civility,' V. 77. It is directed in Queen Elizabeth's Injunctions in 1559, V. 77. a. And established, and proved to be no innovation, in the 18th canon (of 1603) of the Church of England, V. 77. But omitted to be prescribed in the Irish Canons, ib. See *Canons English—Irish, Ussher*.

Jewel, John, D.D., Bishop of Salisbury 1559—1571, an able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67.

Proofs of the consecration of, III. 220, 221. Commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 220. Peculiarity in the form of it, III. 221. One of the Bishops alleged by Fitzherbert to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. Defence of, against the charge of Drs. Harding and Stapleton, that he was no consecrated Bishop, II. 273, 274; III. 128—130. That charge had nothing whatever to do with the Nag's Head fable, *ib*.

Cited by Mason as justifying English Orders, III. 97. Quotations from, asserting the actual succession of English Bishops, III. 129. c. The Apology of, for the Church of England, asserts the three orders of the ministry, III. 472.

Joined in repressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans at Frankfort, in 1554, III. 317.

Jewish Sabbath, see *Sabbath*.

Jews, of the unbelieving, spoken of by St. Paul in Rom. ix., IV. 76, 77. The, might recover their former estate, IV. 314. Mode derived from the, among some Christians, of observing Easter; see *Easter*.

Joan, Pope; see *John VIII*. Pope.

Job, the affliction of, justified against Hobbes's perverse inference from it, IV. 78. Example of (as quoted in a tract wrongly attributed to Origen), had no relation to the weekly Sabbath, V. 23, 24.

Jocelyn, John, secretary to Archbishop Parker, III. 12. d. Probably the author of two Latin Lives of Abp. Parker, III. 121. z. Probable share of, in the composition of the De Antiquitate Brit. Ecclesiæ, III. 12. d. 123. e.

Johannes Brompton, Abbas Jorvalensis, testimony of, that Bishops of old paid homage to laymen, II. 417.

Johannes Cremensis, the first Papal legate who held a synod in England, in 1125, and that by leave of the King, and to the no small indignation of England, II. 412. 429.

——— *Damascenus*, testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath before the time of Moses, V. 23. a. Language of, respecting Repentance, V. 158. r.

——— *Duns Scotus*, admission of, respecting the novelty of Transubstantiation, I. 14. Doctrine of, respecting the knowledge of things on earth possessed by the Saints in Heaven, I. 58. l. Respecting the salvation of abortive infants, V. 176. Inclines to think the original of Shrift an universal tradition, V. 222. Ignorant citation of, by Hobbes, IV. 382.

——— *Major*, maligns the honour of Edward I., in his Chronicle, III. 388.

John, St., expressly declared to be equal with St. Peter, by the first General Council of Ephesus, II. 469. z; and see *Council of Alexandria—of Ephesus*, St. *Peter*. Passage from St. Jerom respecting the equality of St. Peter and, II. 155. Tradition from, respecting Easter; see *Easter*.

—— *I.*, Pope 523—526, imprisoned by Theodoric, I. 173.

—— *II.*, Pope 532—535, letter from Justinian to, no proof of Papal authority, II. 233.

—— *VIII.*, Pope 872—892, I. 255. Excommunicated Ignatius Patriarch of Constantinople for claiming jurisdiction over Bulgaria, I. 107. 268; II. 75. Story of Pope Joan, relating to, V. 277. which is not denied by Platina in the first edition of his Lives of the Popes, *ib*.

—— *IX.*, Pope 898—900, I. 255.

—— *XII.*, Pope in 963, deposed by the Emperor Otho the Great, I. 173. 206.

—— *XVII.*, Pope, succession determined between Gregory V. and, by the Emperor Otho III., I. 173.

—— *XXII.*, Pope 1316—1334, condemned for heresy by the University of Paris, I. 254. Claimed a vote in the election of the Emperors of Germany, I. 203. 211. 215. Appeal of Louis IV. of Germany from, to a General Council, I. 215.

—— *XXIII.*, Pope 1410—1414, called the Council of Constance, II. 424. Was deposed by it for grievous

crimes, *ib.* First made Tenths and First-fruits a certain annual revenue of the See of Rome, *ib.* But they were abolished again by the Council of Constance in the time of, *ib.* See *Boniface IX.* Pope.

John, Patriarch of Constantinople, protest of Gregory the Great against the assumption by, of the title of 'Episcopus Universalis,' I. 32. 249. 253; II. 609; and see *Bishop Universal, Gregory I.* Pope.

—— *the Precentor*, pretended legate of Pope Agatho in the time of Theodore Archbishop of Canterbury, II. 137.

——, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 374. Charter of, in 1214, ratifies freedom of election to Bishoprics, I. 146. m. Infamous donation by, of his kingdom, to the Pope, I. 132. 184. 188. The kingdom of, given away by the Pope to Philip of France, I. 191. Said to have made an overture to dispose of the sovereignty of England to the Turk, IV. 560, 561.

—— *IV.*, King of Portugal, previously Duke of Braganza, at what time placed upon the throne of Portugal, IV. 574. x. The Pope refused to acknowledge the title of, I. 224; and see *Bishops, Portuguese.*

Jones, Sir Theophilus, one of the Members of the Irish House of Commons in 1661, V. 146. A leader of the party of the Adventurers, V. 147. a.

Jorvalensis, see *Johannes Brompton.*

Joscelyn, see *Jocelyn.*

Joseph, the brethren of, IV. 236.

——— *of Arimathæa*, Britain first Christianized by, according to Gildas (whose account Bramhall adopts), I. 160; II. 168. 299; V. 34. Preached Christianity, and therefore the observance of the Lord's Day, in Britain in the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, V. 34.

———, Patriarch of Constantinople, in 1559, intercourse of Melancthon and the divines of Tubingen with, respecting the controversy between Papists and Protestants, II. 265.

Josephus, opinion of, respecting obedience to the powers that be, III. 342.

Joyeuse, Cardinal, urged the Venetians to submit to the Pope, in vain, I. 245.

Judah, Kings of; see *Kings of Judah.*

Judas, opinion of some of the Fathers concerning, that he sinned more in despairing than in betraying Christ, and why, II. 28.

Judge, in what sense the Scriptures are a, of supernatural truths; see *Scriptures.*

———, Hobbes's instance of a civil, answered, IV. 370. 428, 429.

Judgment, The Last, tradition that it will happen on Sunday, V. 54. 60.

———, *of Discretion, Direction, Jurisdiction*, in the interpretation of Scripture, I. 49, 50; V. 270. Private men have a, of discretion, *ib.* Pastors of the Church, of direction, *ib.* Bishops, of jurisdiction, *ib.* A, of discretion, does not make men judges of their superiors, I. 102. A, of discretion, II. 148. See *Bishops, Church, Scriptures.*

———, *The Practical*, definition of, from Aristotle, IV. 290. How the will followeth the, of reason, IV. 288. Voluntariness doth not depend on the, of others, IV. 297. Election doth not necessarily follow the last, IV. 411. See *Election, Judicium, Liberty, Necessity, Reason.* Hobbes mistaketh piety to be an act of the judgment, IV. 104; and see *Hobbes.*

"*Judicium Practice Practicum*," IV. 43. Explained, IV. 289—291. Defended, IV. 432.

Julian, Emperor, blasphemous saying of, retorted upon himself, I. 64. Violence of, against the Church, III. 335.

Julius I., Pope 337—352, II. 534. Interference of, for the restitution of St. Athanasius, II. 434. It was disliked by the Eastern Bishops, II. 149. Excommunicated Novatus, II. 150. Passage from, respecting heretical ordination, V. 204.

——— *II.*, Pope 1503—1513, dispensation of, for Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine, unlawful; see *Henry VIII.* Anathematized the Emperor Maximilian, Louis XII. of France, and others, I. 193. 222. Appeal by them, from him to a General Council, I. 193. Suspended from the Papacy by the second Council of Pisa, I. 218.

——— *III.*, Pope 1550—1555, powers conferred by, upon Cardinal Pole, for the reconciliation of England to the Church of Rome, III. 63. 115. g. 129. 146.

——— *Cæsar*; see *Cæsar, Julius.*

Junius Brutus, see *Languet.*

Jurisdiction of Bishops, a distinct thing from holy orders, V. 230. Habitual and actual, distinguished, II. 129; V. 230, 231. Is from ordination, but princes apply the matter, I. 171.

272; II. 129. Enlarged and fortified with coercive power by princes, *ib.* Exterior and interior, distinguished, II. 129. 453. Exterior, is entirely political, and proceedeth originally from the sovereign, II. 429. 455—457. See *Bishops, Kings.*

All, is not derived from the Pope, II. 160. 327. The Pope doth not derive his, alone, from Christ immediately, and all other Bishops mediately through him, II. 156—159. 327. 453, 454. See *Bishops, Bishop of Rome.*

How the right of, follows the right of ordination, I. 159, 160; II. 151. 528. 536, 537. Conversion of a people gives the converter no title to, II. 133; and see *Gregory I.* Pope.

No controversy concerning interior, with Romanists, II. 453. but with English innovators, II. 454. See *Keys, Power of the.* The question with the Romanists is concerning coactive, in the exterior court of the Church, II. 437, 438. 452, 453. 464. No question in the case between Henry VIII. and the Pope concerning spiritual, II. 438. 464. The English laws meddle not with spiritual, II. 452. The Pope deprived of exterior, only, in England, II. 457—460. 520, 521. See *Bishop of Rome, Church of England, Henry VIII.*

Of the, of the Pope in Britain, in sending legates, II. 171; and see *Legates.* No act of Papal, in Britain, for the first six hundred years; see *Bishop of Rome, Church British—of England, Cyprian Privilege, Patriarchate of Rome.* Foreign, is destructive of the right end of ecclesiastical discipline, I. 190.

English kings do not challenge all, in spiritual causes, II. 127, 128. 393. 453. 457—460. What kind of ecclesiastical, is attributed to the kings of England, V. 230, 231. English Bishops derive no spiritual, from the king, I. 272; V. 228—235. See *Bishops English, Henry VIII., Kings of England, Supremacy.*

What kind of ecclesiastical, is possessed by the Emperors, the Kings of France, of Portugal, of Spain, and other states; see *Brabant, Emperors Roman — Western, Kings of France — of Portugal — of Spain, Venice.*

Jurisdiction, Judgment of; see *Judgment of Jurisdiction.*

Just Vindication, of the Church of England, from the Unjust Aspersion of Criminous Schism, by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part i. Discourse ii, I. 83—279. Contents of, I. 85—93. Sum and scope of, I. 95—98. Method observed in, I. 96—98. Recapitulation of, I. 277, 278. Replies and rejoinders that followed its publication, II. Pref. Occasion, editions, and account of, I. Pref. xxvii, xxviii. Subject of, a favourite topic with its author, I. xvii.

Justice, definition of, from St. Thomas Aquinas, IV. 81. Public and private, distinguished, IV. 435. Many things lawful in public, that are not lawful in private, or particular, II. 110.

What is meant by the maxim, that the Will of God is the rule of, IV. 80. The, of God, not measured by His power, but by His will, and that the will of a perfect Being, IV. 75. Why God is said to be Justice itself, IV. 425. See *God.*

Power is to be regulated by, and not justice by power, IV. 80. A just law justly executed is a cause of, IV. 333.

Hobbes's opinions destroy the, of God, IV. 354. Hobbes zealous for human, yet regardeth not Divine, IV. 582.

———, *Inherent,* really exists in all good Christians, although not perfect, I. 56; II. 87. See *Justification, Merits.*

Justification, not of inherent righteousness but by the free grace of God for the merits of Jesus Christ, I. 56; II. 87. Yet all good Christians have inherent righteousness although not perfect, *ib.*

By special faith, no article of the Church of England, II. 87. 209. Although held by some particular persons in England as a private opinion, II. 209. See *Faith, Justifying.*

Agreement of the Greek Church with the Church of England concerning, II. 633; and see *Church, Greek.*

Justin Martyr, testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath before the time of Moses, V. 22. That the Lord's Day was kept holy by all Christians through the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age, V. 42. x. That collections and oblations are a Lord's Day duty, V. 39, 40. 66. That the primitive Christians spent the Lord's Day in assembling to read the Holy Scriptures, preach, hear, meditate,

pray, and make charitable collections for the poor, V. 66.

Justinian, Emperor, evidence of the first book of the Code and of the Authentics or Novels of, to the ecclesiastical power exercised by him, I. 172; II. 234. Is no witness to Papal power, II. 233, 234. Privilege conferred on clerks by, I. 172. Established the Patriarchate of Justiniana Prima by his own authority, I. 178; II. 234. And that of Carthage, *ib.* See *Patriarchate of Carthage—of Justiniana Prima.* Held the nomination and investiture of Bishops, V. 203. Exercised the right of summoning ecclesiastical synods, I. 207. Summoned the Fifth General Council, II. 249. And confirmed it, but with due regard to the spiritual authority of Bishops, II. 428. Banished Pope Vigilius for refusing to assist at it, II. 249. Banished Pope Sylverius, I. 173; II. 234. See *Emperors.*

Justiniana Prima, Patriarchate of; see *Justinian, Patriarchate of Justiniana Prima.*

Justus, first Bishop of Rochester, one of St. Augustin's companions, II. 132.

K.

Katherine, Queen of Henry VIII., dispensation for the marriage of, with Henry VIII., unlawful; see *Henry VIII.* Henry VIII.'s divorce from, lawful, but no ground of the Reformation, II. 187—189. 193. From whom that divorce originated, II. 187. Who supported it, II. 187, 188.

——— *de Medici*, Queen of France, present at the Colloquy of Poissy, I. 68. o.

Kellison, Matthew, an Anglo-Romanist writer, affirmed the Nag's Head fable in 1608 (and 1616), although ignorant of it in 1603, and 1605, III. 39. f. 43.

Ken, Thomas, D.D., Bishop of Bath and Wells 1684—1691, quotation from Archbishop Bramhall in a posthumous work attributed to, respecting the Church of England, V. Pref.

Kenrick, Peter Richard, Roman Catholic Bishop of St. Louis in America, work of, upon English orders, III. Pref. m.

Kent, converted to Christianity by St. Augustin, I. 267. By the Pope's endeavours but the king's authority, II. 133. See *Ethelbert.*

Kentish Longtails, saying concerning, III. 21.

Keys, Power of the, not a declarative power only, but operative, and how, II. 244. 454, 455; V. 221. Not original or absolute, but derivative, ministerial, conditional, II. 455; V. 190; and see *Absolution, Excommunication, Priests, Sacraments.* Derived by ordination, II. 159. As exercised in the court of conscience, derived solely from ordination, I. 171. 272; II. 129, 130. Fortified with coercive power by princes, *ib.* Evidently given by Christ in Scripture to His Apostles and their successors, not to sovereign princes, II. 393. See *Jurisdiction.*

Henry VIII. not exempt from the, II. 130. Was not intermeddled with, by Henry VIII. or his Parliament, II. 392, 393. 453; and see *Henry VIII.* Nor by the Kings of England; see *Articles The XXXIX, Elizabeth* Queen of England, *Jurisdiction, Kings of England.*

Hobbes's contradictions relative to the, IV. 585—587; and see *Hobbes.*

Kildare, Bishops of; see *Golbourn, Price.*

Kill, it was never lawful for private men ordinarily to kill one another, IV. 335—339; and see *Hobbes, Nature State of.* The magistrate, according to Hobbes, hath a right as a man to kill, but no right as a magistrate to punish, a guilty subject, IV. 582.

Killala, Bishop of; see *Maxwell.*

Kilmore and Ardagh, Bishop of; see *Bedell.*

Kimbolton, Lord; see *Montague, Edward.*

King, authority of the, is from God, I. 37; II. 198. 307; and see *Divine Right of Kings, Dominion, God, Monarchy.* Is a servant to his subjects, yet his Crown not therefore a donation from the people, III. 345. Power of the, not from the people, III. 318. 324. See *People.*

Of the power of the, III. 260. 317, 318. 332. 335. 348. 351. 359. 364. 384; IV. 449. 499. 543. 561. 587. Is greater than his people collectively as well as singly, III. 325. 395; and see *Languet.* Both by Scripture and by law, III. 326—329. "Post Deum secundus," and "Solo Deo minor," according to Tertullian, III. 326. "Vicarius Dei," according to Bracton, III. 326. 329. 363.

Obedience to the, enjoined by the

Scriptures, III. 348. The Scriptures specify the King as the 'highest power,' III. 349. St. Paul's injunction respecting obedience to the, a precept and not a counsel, *ib.* Evasions of that precept, by Bellarmine, *ib.* By Buchanan, *ib.* By the English and Scotch Presbyterians, III. 349—364. By Calvin, III. 364. By Beza, *ib.* By Languet, *ib.* Tertullian's doctrine respecting obedience to the, III. 350. Active obedience against the law of God or nature, not due to the, I. 168; III. 351; IV. 502. Proofs from Scripture, the Fathers, the laws of England, III. 351, 352; and see St. *Ambrose*, St. *Augustin*, St. *Chrysostom*. Passive obedience due to the, without limitation, I. 37; III. 352. Proofs from the Fathers, III. 356. 384; and see St. *Augustin*. Pernicious doctrine of the Observator to the contrary, III. 353. May not be disobeyed in doubtful cases, I. 169. See *Obedience; Beza, Calvin, Languet, Parker Henry, Presbyterians*.

Seditious doctrines of the Jesuits respecting obedience to the, see *Jesuits*. And of the English Puritans; see *Cartwright, Field John, Goodman Christopher, Martin Marprelate*. And of the Scotch Presbyterians; see *Buchanan, Discipline, Disciplinarians, Knox, Presbyterians*. Allegiance not due to infidel kings, according to Bellarmine; see *Bellarmine*. Hobbes's mischievous doctrines and self-contradictions respecting the sovereign prince, IV. 555. 580. 583. 587. 590, 591; and see *Hobbes*.

Has no right to disfranchise his subjects by force, III. 343. Dissolution of the government of the, not in the power of the subject, III. 330. See *Subjects*.

Is political Head of the Church within his own dominions, I. 29. 115; II. 128. 218. 409; and see *Head of the Church*. By admission of many Roman doctors, II. 221, 222; and see *Gardiner*. Supremacy of the, in ecclesiastical causes, a necessary part of civil sovereignty, II. 105; III. 243, 244. Political supremacy of the, in ecclesiastical causes, II. 214, 215. 217—222; and see *Kings of England, Supremacy of the King*. In what sense ecclesiastical jurisdiction is from the, II. 129, 130. All external coactive jurisdiction in ecclesiastical matters is from the, II. 429. 456, 457. See *Bishops, Jurisdiction*. May exercise external acts of ecclesiastical jurisdiction by fit delegates, I. 170, 171; II. 141. 196. that is, under civil pains, I. 172. Is the keeper of both Tables of the Law, I. 30; II. 118. 428. But the Bishops ought to be his interpreters for the first, II. 428. See *Bishops*. Has all power needful for the preservation of his kingdom, I. 165. 171; II. 178. Is obliged to protect his subjects from the tyranny of ecclesiastical judges, I. 169, 170; II. 196. By the confession of Romanists themselves, *ib.* Is bound to provide for the security of his subjects, even against ecclesiastical powers, II. 148. Is the last judge of the injuries done to his subjects by Popes, II. 198; and see *Bishops of Rome*. May reform new canons by old, I. 175. Has power to alter whatever is of human institution in ecclesiastical discipline, I. 165; II. 177. 546. Has power in some cases to change the external regiment of the Church, I. 177. Patriarchs not wholly independent of the, in ecclesiastical affairs, I. 176—178; II. 548. See *Church Particular, Emperors, Patriarchs*. The power of convocating synods in his own dominions belongs to the, II. 414, 415; III. 244; and see *Synod*. A General Council may not be assembled without the consent of kings, II. 568; and see *Council General, Synods*. Oath of allegiance due to the, from clerks, not to the Pope, II. 416; and see *Oath of Allegiance*. Bellarmine's seditious doctrine, that the, is not king of clerks; see *Bellarmine*.

Parliament subordinate to the; see *Parliament, English*.

Sovereigns may be taken away for the sins of their subjects, I. 29. Afflictions of a, no argument against his acts or character, I. 27.

King, John, D.D., Bishop of London 1611—1621, idle story of the apostacy of, to the Church of Rome, II. 550.

——, *Robert, D.D.*, Suffragan Bishop of Boven or Thevnen, afterwards (the first) Bishop of Oxford, 1539—1557; proof of the consecration of, III. Pref. Death of, III. 232.

King's Book, The; see *Fox, Edward*.

Kings of Apulia, investiture and nomination of Bishops in their own dominions belonged to the, V. 203.

—— *of Arragon*, conditions exacted at the election of the, III. 330.

Kings of Bohemia, had a casting voice in the election of the German Emperors, IV. 40.

—— *of England*, power of the, from God; see *God, King*. Not from the people, see *People*.

Are equally kings before and after their coronation oath, III. 369; and see *Oath Coronation of the Kings of England*.

Are supreme Heads of the realm of England, according to the Common Law, III. 328. 384. And by statute, I. 115; II. 296. 517; III. 328. 395. 493; V. 231. 234. Are Kings of England, collectively, not merely of individual Englishmen severally, III. 493, 494.

Authority of the, not tied absolutely to their laws, III. 359. Have power to go against particular laws in cases of evident necessity, for the safety of the kingdom, III. 360—362. Whether and how far the, are under the law, III. 363.

Of the maxim that the, can do no wrong, III. 383. Of the distinction between the person and the authority of the, III. 350—359. Many errors to be avoided in making this distinction, III. 355—359. Person and authority of the, not actually divided, III. 355. A good man may be a bad king and vice versâ, III. 351. To levy arms against the authority of the, in the absence of their persons, is to war against them, III. 355.

Of the false doctrine, that the request of the people ought to be granted by the, although hurtful to themselves, III. 421. Too great latitude of judgment over their sovereign, not to be allowed to subjects, III. 356. See *Subjects*.

Are political, but only political, Heads of the Church in England, I. 29; II. 140, 141. 219, 220. 398, 399. 617; V. 231. Always so, de facto, I. 29, 30. 131—150; II. 125, 126. 128. 141. 145. 234. 409. 413. 421. 617. Assumed as much power in ecclesiastical affairs at all times as Henry VIII. did, I. 148. 150, 151; II. 126—128. 514. Do not challenge all jurisdiction in spiritual causes, I. 150; II. 127—129. 393, 394; V. 228, 229. 231. What kind of jurisdiction in things ecclesiastical is attributed to the, I. 29, 30; II. 219—222. 231. 234; V. 230, 231. The English who maintain the, to be political Heads of the Church in England, do not deny the spiritual Headship of Christ, nor the due power of ecclesiastical authorities, II. 565. Never claimed or exercised spiritual power properly so called, V. 234; and see *Articles The XXXIX, Elizabeth* Queen of England. Not above two or three ever assumed the title of Head of the Church in England, I. 29; II. 119. History of that title, I. 29. y. It was first given to Henry VIII., I. 29. y; II. 104. And dropped since the reign of Philip and Mary, V. 231. y. It was not assumed by Elizabeth, James I., Charles I., I. 31. Or by any subsequent King of England, I. 29. y; V. 231. y. It was first given to the, by Romanists, I. 115. 125. And laid aside by the, out of reverence to Christ, II. 222. True meaning of the title, II. 409; V. 231, 232. Henry VIII. was under a great mistake respecting the meaning of it, II. 409. Pope Paul III. equally in error, *ib.* It was a gaudy title, that survived not Henry VIII. long, II. 449. Supremacy of the, over the Church, as "the Vicars of God," allowed to Edward the Confessor both by the law of the land and by a Bull of Pope Nicolas II., I. 137. 164. 230; II. 128. 145. Titles given to the, by the law, at all times, equivalent to that of Head of the Church in England, II. 409. 421. Similar titles given to the French Kings, II. 409, 410; and see *Emperors, Kings of France*. High expressions in the statutes concerning the power of the, in all matters ecclesiastical and temporal, I. 115, 116. Have power in ecclesiastical causes over ecclesiastical persons, I. 150; V. 234. Never did use to determine ecclesiastical causes in their own persons, but by fit delegates, II. 141; V. 233. Deprived the Pope of, and assumed to themselves, only political power, II. 392. 399. 458, 459. The acts of the, prove what they thought to be their rights, II. 126. 560. See *Bishops English, Bishop of Rome, Church of England, Jurisdiction, Oath of Supremacy, Supremacy*.

Made themselves the last judges of the liberties, grievances, and necessities of their people, in things ecclesiastical, I. 211; II. 514. Suffered no appeals to Rome out of their kingdom, I. 141. 144. 147. 150. 213; II. 298. 438. 514; V. 264; and see *Appeals to the Pope*. Legislative

power in England has always belonged to the, and not to the Pope, II. 430. 514; and see *Bishop of Rome.* Have the power of convocating and confirming synods in England, I. 205; II. 409—411; III. 244. in point of right, II. 411—414. in point of fact, *ib.* foreign precedents, II. 414—416. Are right patrons of the English Church, I. 137. 139. 141. 144. 146. 150; II. 298. 404—409. 425; V. 263, 264. Nomination and investiture of English Bishops belongs to the, by law and custom immemorial, V. 202—204. Authorities and precedents for this, *ib.* The privilege noticed by foreign lawyers, V. 203. Styled by the laws "Advowees Paramount of all churches in the realm," II. 409. 421. Revenues of a Bishopric in a vacancy belong to the, not to the Pope, I. 139; II. 401. Ecclesiastical preferments upon lapse accrue to the, not to the Pope, I. 139. See *Bishops English, Investiture.* Oath of Allegiance due to the, from clerks, not to the Pope, II. 416—422; and see *Oath of Allegiance.* Suffered no Papal legates to enter their dominions without their license, I. 148. 213; II. 442, 443. Decrees of Papal legates, when approved, confirmed by the, II. 431. 442. See *Legates.* Declared the Pope's Bulls void, I. 214; II. 441, 442. and suffered none to enter the realm without their license, see *Bulls.* Did not suffer excommunications from Rome without their own privity and consent, I. 139. 141; II. 298. 442. 514. Instances in which the, possessed power in England which the Pope did not, I. 31. 138—141. 150; II. 298. 433; V. 264. See *Henry I.* King of England, *Henry II.* King of England, *William the Conqueror, William Rufus; Statutes of Clarendon—of Premunire—of Provisors.*

Had sufficient authority, with the Church of England, to withdraw their obedience from the Roman Patriarch, I. 97. 165—178; II. 305. 546. And to reform the English Church, II. 546. Had sufficient grounds to withdraw their obedience to the Church of Rome, I. 179—192; II. 199. 307. 552—575. Proceeded with due moderation in their reformation, I. 197—200; II. 311—313. 580—598. See *Church of England, Separation.* Rights of the, violated by the Pope and Court of Rome, I. 183—189; V. 230. That none can be admitted to the throne without the Pope's leave, refuted, I. 184—189. Cases of Henry II. and John, I. 132. 185. 186—188. None, did ever make any obliging submission to the Pope, I. 131, 132. See *Court of Rome, Henry II.* King of England, *John* King of England. In their separation from Rome, did make no new law, but vindicated the ancient laws of the land, I. 150, 151; II. 125; and see *Henry VIII.*

Did no more in the separation from Rome, than sovereign princes, states, and Churches of the Roman Communion do practise, I. 97. 200—246; II. 315. 600; and see *Church of England, Separation; Brabant, Emperors Western and German, Kings of France—of Portugal—of Spain, Venice.* Enjoyed as great liberties as the Kings of France, I. 148. 228. Are as sovereign as the Emperors were, I. 178. Are in a better position as regards the Popes, than the German Emperors; see *Emperors, Western and German.*

Parliament not above but subordinate to the, III. 378. 386. Parliament hath no power to call the, to account, III. 382. Or to depose the, III. 384. Have a prerogative of dissolving Parliaments, III. 392. Parliaments without the consent of the, are no Parliaments, III. 398, 399. Are the source of the privileges of Parliament, III. 415. A question, whether the legislative power rest in the, alone (as some old forms insinuate), or in the King and Parliament jointly, III. 375. See *Edward I.* King of England, *Edward III.* King of England, *Parliament English.* Are not bound by their coronation oath to assent to all Bills tendered to them by Parliament, III. 369. Confessedly not bound to consent to such Bills in all cases, and their consent requisite to make a valid law, in all, III. 371. See *Oath Coronation of the Kings of England.*

Did sometimes sit personally in their Courts of Justice, III. 358; and see *Edward IV., Henry IV.* King of England, *Henry V.* King of England, *Henry VIII., Richard III.*

Right and interest of the, in their own fortresses, III. 441, 442. To exclude the, from their own fortresses, confessed by the Observator himself to be treason, III. 437. See *Hotham Sir John, Parker Henry.*

Kings of France, coronation oath of the, taken at Rheims, I. 149.

Political supremacy of the, in ecclesiastical causes, I. 31. 220—223; II. 409. 426. 512; III. 244; V. 234. Are called by French divines "the Terrene Heads of the Church of their realm," II. 409. Nomination and investiture of the Bishops within their own dominions belonged to the, V. 203. 234. No synods convoked within their dominions by either Romanist or Protestant without their sanction, III. 244. Convoked and confirmed synods within their own dominions, I. 226; II. 426. See *Bishops French*, *Church of France*, *France*.

Are no vassals of the Roman Court, I. 219. Deny the Pope's temporal power within their own dominions, I. 225; II. 512. Have convented Popes before them, I. 220. Have appealed from Popes to a General Council, *ib.* Have protested against Papal decrees, I. 221. Have made laws to repress the insolencies and exorbitances of the Papal Court, I. 221—225. See *Bishop of Rome*, *Court of Rome*, *Libertéz de l'Eglise Gallicane*. Protest of the French Ambassador in the name of the, against the Council of Trent; see *Charles IX.* King of France, *Council of Trent*.

—— *of Hungary*, nomination and investiture of Bishops in their own dominions belonged to the, V. 203.

—— *of Israel*, *of Judah*, were political Heads of the Church within their own dominions, I. 29. 32; V. 234; and see *Saul*, *Solomon*.

—— *Norman*, of England, made ecclesiastical laws, I. 138; II. 430—433. Appointed Bishops, I. 146; V. 203. None ever made any obliging submission to the Pope, I. 131, 132. See *Kings of England*; *Henry I.*, King of England, *Henry II.* King of England, *William the Conqueror*, *William Rufus*.

—— *of Poland*, conditions exacted at the election of the, to the throne, III. 330.

—— *of Portugal*, assert the liberties of their Church against the Pope, I. 237—239; and see *Bishops Portuguese*, *John IV.* King of Portugal, *University of Lisbon*. Nomination of Bishops in their own dominions belongs to the, of right, I. 239, 240.

—— *Saxon*, when and whence converted to Christianity, I. 267, 268; and see St. *Augustin* of Canterbury, *Church Saxon*, *Gregory I.* Pope. Made ecclesiastical laws, I. 137; II. 413; and see *Alfred* King of England, *Athelstan*, *Canute*, *Earcombert*, *Edgar*, *Edmund the Elder*, *Edward the Elder*, *Edward the Confessor*, *Gunthrun*, *Ina*, *Withred*. Appointed Bishops, I. 146; and see *Alfred* King of England. None, ever made any obliging submission to the Pope, I. 131, 132. See *Kings of England*.

Kings of Scotland, had investiture of Bishops in their own dominions, V. 203. Refused to admit Papal legates into Scotland, II. 151. See *Charles II.*, *Scotland*, *Scots*.

—— *of Spain*, styled Catholic, in what sense, I. 109.

Exercise all manner of ecclesiastical jurisdiction by fit delegates, II. 217. 221. Nomination and investiture of Bishops in Spain belonged to the, V. 203. Imposed pensions upon ecclesiastical preferments even to the fourth part of their value, I. 235, 236. See *Bishops*, *Spanish*.

Assert the liberties of their own Church against the Pope, I. 229—236; II. 220. Both in their other dominions, *ib.* And in Sicily, I. 138. 229; II. 217. 221. 512. Made 'legati nati' of the Pope in Sicily by a Bull of Pope Urban II., as an artifice to secure authority over them, I. 138. 229, 230; II. 145. 512. See *Castile*, *Estates of*.

Kingdom, an hereditary, the best form of government; see *Monarchy*. Hobbes's self-contradictions respecting, IV. 576; and see *Hobbes*.

Kingils, King of the West and South Saxons 612—643, when and by whom converted to Christianity, I. 267.

Kinulphus, or *Cynewulf*, King of Wessex 755—784, desired to have the Archbishopric settled at Canterbury as it was formerly, not at Lichfield, II. 140. Admitted legates of the Pope into England, II. 137. 140. See *Adrian II.* Pope.

Kirk of Scotland, Form of Prayer and Ministration of the Sacraments used in the, printed in 1575, and downwards to 1635, V. Pref. f. 89. Prayer quoted from it by Bramhall, respecting gratitude to England, III. 283; V. 89, 90. And by the Covenanters themselves, with an opposite inference, V. Pref. f. Discipline of the;

see *Disciplinarians, Discipline Scottish, Presbyterians.* Some passages from the Liturgy (so called) of the, quoted in Bramhall's Fair Warning, III. 278, 279.

Kitchin, alias *Dunstan, Anthony*, Bishop of Llandaff 1545—1563, when consecrated, III. 56. y. Named in the first commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker, III. 72. And in the second, III. 52. 74. 178. Did not actually join either in the confirmation or consecration of Abp. Parker, III. 83, 84. 174, 175. 202. 205. 212. Addicted to Roman doctrine, III. 53. p. 55. But conformed to the Reformation in 1559, III. 53. 55. 178. m. Took the oath of supremacy, III. 53. 178. m. Disgraceful conduct of, upon the occasion, III. 178. m. Conduct of, on the accession of Queen Elizabeth, and connection of, with the Nag's Head fable, discussed at length, III. 53—55. Testimony of Sanders concerning, III. 55. and of Dr. Harding, *ib.* Ignorantly mixed up by S. N. with the Nag's Head fable, V. 244. Died in 1563, III. 56. x. 229. a. 232.

Knight, John, Canon of Canterbury in 1559, but not present at Abp. Parker's election, III. 193. Deprived, III. 193. f.

Knights, by a statute of Edward II., all persons worth 20*l.* a-year were bound to be made, V. 79. i. This statute revived by Charles I., substituting 40*l.* for 20*l.*, as a means of raising money, in 1630, *ib.*

Knott, Edmund, by his proper name, Matthew Wilson, a Jesuit; account of, I. 198. x. Book of, entitled Infidelity Unmasked, I. xxvii. e. 99. 101. 128. Another entitled Charity Mistaken, I. 198. Argument of, answered, that the Roman Catholic religion is safer than the Protestant, *ib.* Opinion of, respecting the guilt of separation, with whom it lies, II. 33. Reply of Chillingworth to, II. 66.

Knowledge, of vision and of approbation, distinguished, IV. 60. It is possible to possess a knowledge of a truth without a knowledge of the manner of it, IV. 419.

Knox, John, mutinous conduct of, at Frankfort in 1554, III. 317. And at Edinburgh, in 1562, III. 268. Seditious doctrine of, III. 302. Letter of the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland, sent by, in 1566, fraternizing with the English Bishops, III. 243.

L.

Lactantius, passage from, respecting idolatry, I. 46; II. 619. Argument from, to prove the impossibility of the world being spherical, III. 416; IV. 176.

Lainez, Father, General of the Jesuits, admitted the doctrine of the Papal supremacy to be inconsistent with the Divine right of Bishops, at the Council of Trent, III. 530.

Lamotte, M., Ambassador from France into Scotland in 1582, violence of the Scotch Kirk against, III. 272.

Lancastrian Family, deplorable condition of the, when in exile at the Court of Charles Duke of Burgundy, V. 118, 119.

Laney, Benjamin, D.D., Bishop of Peterborough — of Lincoln — of Ely, 1660—1674; Hobbes's Letter in defence of Necessity, republished in 1676 with an answer by, IV. 19. b.

Lanfranc, Archbishop of Canterbury 1070—1089, previously Abbot of St. Stephen's in Caen; elected to the Archbishopric by William the Conqueror, I. 146; II. 406. Oath of allegiance taken by, to the King, without scruple, II. 465. Investitures were in the hands of the King in the time of, II. 406. Dispensations granted in the time of, to nuns who had taken the veil through fear of the French, by the sole authority of the King and Church of England, II. 447, 448. Benefits conferred by, on the Church of Canterbury, II. 456, 457.

Languet, seditious book of, under the name of Stephanus Junius Brutus, respecting the rights of the civil magistrate, III. 301. 325. 364. Evasion by, of St. Paul's precept respecting obedience to kings, III. 364. Device of, that the king is (in regard of his subjects) "singulis major, universis minor," III. 325. 395.

Lapsi, who they were, II. 75.

La Rochelle, see *Rochelle.*

Lateran, Council of; see *Council of Lateran.*

Latimer, Hugh, Bishop of Worcester 1535—1539, proof of the consecration of, III. Pref. Milton's severe language against, III. 476.

Λατρεία, Δουλεία, Ὑπερδουλεία, distinction between, I. 44, 45. Λατρεία due, according to the Church of Rome, to the Elements in the Holy Eucharist, I. 45. And to the Crucifix, I. 45,

46. See *Adoration, Crucifix, Elements, Worship.*

Laud, William, D.D., Bishop of St. David's—of Bath and Wells—of London, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1621—1644; a martyr for the Church of England, I. 28. An able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67. Opinion of, that the controversy between the Eastern and Western Churches, respecting the Procession of the Holy Spirit from the Son, was a logomachy, II. 629. s. Idle story about, that he admitted the English Church to be in schism, II. 550. Another idle fancy respecting, III. 169. Defence of, against La Milletière, I. 28. Speech of, arguing that Roman Catholics in England were put to death for treason, not for religion, I. 124. i. Rule of, respecting the appointment of Bishops above a certain age, I. iii. a. Letter of, to Bramhall, I. viii. e. Letter to, from Bramhall, I. vi. lxxix—lxxxii.

Laurence, St., Archbishop of Dublin, I. lxxii.

Laurentius, successor to St. Augustin in the see of Canterbury, II. 132. Letter of, with the other English Bishops, to the Bishops of Scotland, respecting the Irish Scots, II. 527, 528.

————, see *Symmachus* Pope.

Law, the eternal and the participated, distinguished, IV. 81. And defined, *ib.* The eternal, of God, always in the world, IV. 368. See *God.*

The, of nature, always in the world, IV. 368, 369. Definition of the, of nature, from Reginaldus, IV. 329. What is meant by the, of nature, V. 13. Different meanings attached to the, of nature, V. 14. 79. Account of the, of nature, from Philo Judæus, IV. 329. 368. From Cicero, IV. 329. 335; V. 19. The, of nature, cannot be dispensed with, V. 15. But may be limited by the laws of the land, III. 348. How it is promulged, V. 19. It is coincident with the Scriptures, IV. 328. Definition of the, of nations, as used technically for the, of nature, V. 72. i. Law of the Sabbath not a, of nature; see *Sabbath.*

What is meant by the moral, V. 13. Moral upon supposition a contradiction, V. 18.

Civil or municipal, mankind never without, IV. 334. 368, 369; and see *Hobbes, Nature State of.* The civil, is not the ultimate standard of good and evil, as Hobbes asserts, IV. 541—543. Right and wrong are antecedent to human pacts, IV. 94. 540. Sin in the world before the civil, IV. 368. The civil, may de facto be unjust, IV. 89. 321. 565. Is unjust when it commands impossibilities, IV. 88. 322. 325—327.

Human, whether binding to the conscience, and how, I. 61, 62; V. 67.

How the Scriptures are a, to man, IV. 328; and see *Scriptures.*

The, of conquest, IV. 331. Authority of the, not always derived from the consent of those subject to it, IV. 90. Fear of hurt doth not abrogate a, IV. 392. Useless upon the theory of necessity, IV. 92. Active obedience against the, of God and of nature, not due to kings, III. 351. Passive obedience due to them without limitation; see *Magistrate, Obedience.* An unjust law may be justly obeyed, I. 169; and see St. *Augustin.*

Question, whether the, or the magistrate, be prior in time, III. 422, 423.

Sin, to be sin at all, must be the act of a free will against a just, IV. 114, 115. A just, justly executed, is a cause of justice, IV. 333. See *Liberty, Sin.*

Hobbes denieth the natural supremacy of the Divine, IV. 540. His self-contradictions respecting the priority of the Divine over the human, IV. 576. and respecting the, of nature, whether it be God's law or any law at all, IV. 577. 594. and respecting the power of the, over the will, IV. 589. His error, that the civil, is the ultimate standard of good and evil, III. 541—543.

Laws, English, whether and how far the king is under the, of the land, III. 363; and see *Kings of England.* The king's consent requisite to make a valid, in England, III. 371; and see *Kings of England, Parliament English.* Privileges of Parliament must be measured by the, of the land, III. 417; and see *Parliament English.* Positive, of a kingdom the just measure of the subject's liberties, III. 366; and see *Subjects.* The, of prerogative, not contrary to but grounded upon the law of 'salus populi,' III. 339. To raise arms to change the established, is flat rebellion, III. 341.

Of the Pope's dispensing with the, in the exterior court, II. 446; and

see *Dispensations*. Papal decrees as such have never been received as, in England, II. 431—434; and see *Canons, Papal*. Papal authority not limited but denied by the, II. 298. The, were opposed to the oath of fidelity to the Pope, II. 420—422; and see *Oath of Bishops to the Pope*. Parallel laws to the, in France, I. 225—228; II. 426. 434. 443. 448. The, meddled not with spiritual jurisdiction, in casting out the Pope, II. 452. 502; and see *Jurisdiction, Henry VIII.* Henry VIII.'s statutes, which cast out the Pope, declarative of ancient, not enactive of new, II. 299; and see *Henry VIII., Statutes English*.

Episcopacy woven and riveted into the body of the, III. 468; and see *Bishops*.

The, of the land, superseded by the Presbyterians as of "man's invention," III. 303; and see *Presbyterians, Statutes English*.

Laws of Mortmain, see *Statutes of Mortmain*.

——, *Penal*, against Roman Catholics, justification of the English, I. 124—126; II. 109—124. 246. 317. 333, 334. Laws should not be made for the ruin of particular subjects, II. 109. Prohibitory, under whatsoever penalty, so it be proportionable to the danger, justified by necessity, II. 111. There was a real necessity for the, II. 112—116. The, were more against the Court than against the Church of Rome, II. 117. List of the, *ib*. See *Cecil, Elizabeth* Queen of England, *James I., Laud, Romanists*.

Lawgiver, see *Legislator*.

Lawrence; see *Laurence, Laurentius*.

Lay Elders; see *Elders, Lay*.

—— *Parliament;* see *Parliament, Lay*.

—— *Persons*, what sort of authority attributable to, in ecclesiastical causes over ecclesiastical persons, I. 170; II. 220, 221; and see *King, Magistrate*. What part belongs to, in a General Council, II. 231. What power is possessed by, to baptize, III. 167. Have no power of Absolution, *ib*. Nor to consecrate the Holy Eucharist, *ib*.

Laythwayte, Thomas, a Jesuit, admitted the genuineness of the Register of Archbishop Parker's consecration in 1614, III. 101.

League, see *Covenant*.

Leake, a secular Priest, admitted the genuineness of the Register of Archbishop Parker's consecration, in 1614. III. 101.

Leaver, see *Lever*.

Lectius, Jacobus, a Genevese civilian in 1607, affirmed the English Bishops to be "veri et legitimi Episcopi," III. 486. l.

Lee, Edward, D.D., Archbishop of York 1531—1544, sent with others to persuade Queen Katherine to lay aside the title of Queen, II. 188.

Leedes, Edward, L.L.D., Master of Clare Hall Cambridge $155\frac{8}{9}$—1571, and one of Archbishop Parker's chaplains; account of, III. 180. t. Signed the certificate of the legal validity of the second commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker, III. 180.

Legates, Papal, of the sending of, into Britain by the Popes, I. 135. 137; II. 168—174. The early, were merely messengers or ambassadors, I. 137; II. 137. 167. None could enter the realm of England or continue there without the king's leave, I. 31. 150; II. 127. 140. 298. 413. 442, 443. 514. And took an oath, if admitted, to do nothing derogatory to the king and his crown, I. 140, 141; II. 298. 442; V. 264. Inhibited by the kings of England from decreeing any thing contrary to the king's crown and dignity, II. 431. Decrees of, if approved, confirmed by the kings of England, II. 431. 442. No appeal could be made to, in England, without the king's leave, II. 442, 443. None de latere allowed in England except the Archbishop of Canterbury, I. 140; V. 264. See *Kings of England; Callistus III.* Pope, *Otho, Othobone*.

The first sent to England, Guy Archbishop of Vienne, not received there, II. 410; and see *Gregory of Ostium, Guy* Abp. of Vienna, *Legations*. The, of Pope Martin V., excluded the realm by Henry VI., I. 148; II. 442. And of Paul IV. by Queen Mary, II. 216. 442, 443; and see *Peyto*. Supposed, in early times; see *Germanus, Lupus, Palladius*.

Independence of Scotland with respect to, similar to that of England, II. 151. Similar liberties in this point of the Gallican Church, I. 226; II. 443. And of Brabant and Flanders, I. 236, 237; II. 443, 444.

Legations, from the Pope, almost as rare as appeals to the Pope, until the Norman Conquest, I. 136; and see *Legates*.

Legenda Lignea, a Protestant book so called, published in 1653, headed by

a list of converts to Romanism, III. 503. b. 515.

Legislative Power, in England; see *Bishop of Rome, Kings of England.*

Legislators, Hobbes's contradictions and errors respecting; see *Hobbes.* Are not all elective, IV. 332.

Legitimation, Papal canon for the, of children born before matrimony, unanimously rejected by the secular barons in Parliament assembled, 20 Hen. III., II. 432.

Lent, Fast of, an Apostolical tradition, I. 53. Yet the duration of the, and the manner of observing it, very various in the primitive times, *ib.*

Leo I., or the Great, Pope 440—441, passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473. s. Held, that the sin of Judas was greater in despairing than in betraying Christ, II. 28.

—- *III.*, Pope 795—816, was convented before Charlemagne, I. 173. 220.

—- *IV.*, Pope 847—855, was convented before the Emperor Lotharius, I. 220.

—- *VIII.*, Pope 963—965, was established in the Papacy by authority of the Emperor Otho I. and the Council of Rome, I. 173. 206. Quitted all right in the election of Popes, and the investiture of Bishops, to the Emperor Otho I., I. 213; II. 403.

—- *X.*, Pope 1513—1521, called the Fifth Lateran Council, II. 624, 625. Appeal of the School of Sorbonne from, to a General Council, I. 220. Of the University of Paris from, to a General Council, I. 223. Reimposed Tenths under the old pretence of a stock for defence against the Turk, II. 425. But Charles V. and the German nation refused their assent, *ib.* Concordat of Francis I. with, I. 223.

—- *Allatius*, does not consider the Greek Church heretical, II. 330.

Leontius, Bishop of Antioch, conduct of, with respect to the Arians, II. 46.

Lequien, Father, books of, in support of the Nag's Head fable, III. 35. d. 40. f. 91. p. 114. g. 117. l. 127. r.

Leslie, John, D.D., Bishop of Orkney—of Raphoe—of Clogher, 1628—1671, I. lxxxiii.

L'Estrange, Hamon, book of, concerning the Sabbath, V. 23. b. Quotations in it from the Fathers answered, V. 23—27. Argument of, for the morality of the Sabbath, V. 18. Adopts Zanchy's argument, that the Fourth Commandment enjoins the sanctification of *a* seventh, not of *the* seventh, day, and so includes the Lord's Day, V. 29. Argues for a literal Sabbath day of twenty-four hours, V. 72. Argument of, from the Homily of the Place and Time of Prayer, answered, V. 68—73.

Lethargus, see *Luidhardus.*

Letters Patent, Royal, conferring Bishoprics; see *Bishops, Bishops English, Bishops Irish, Commission or Royal Assent.*

——— of Archbishop Bramhall; see *Bramhall, John,*

Lever, or *Leaver, Ralph*, author of a silly book upon Logic in 1573; see *Logic.*

Leviathan, The, a treatise so called, by Thomas Hobbes; see *Hobbes.* Hobbes's, a mere phantasm, IV. 516. Hobbes himself the true, IV. 517. The literal, no sovereign of the sea, IV. 517, 518.

———, *The Catching of*, by Bishop Bramhall, Works, Part iii. Discourse iii; see *Catching of Leviathan.*

Lewgar, Rev. John, a convert to Romanism, and friend of Chillingworth; author of Erastus Senior and Junior, in reply to Bramhall's tract upon Anglican Ordinations, III. 22. e. 39. f. Does not lay stress upon the Nag's Head fable, III. 39. f.

Lewis, see *Louis.*

Ley, Rev. John, correspondence of, with Abp. Ussher, respecting the Sabbath and Lord's Day, V. 75. p. 78.

Liberius, Pope 352—366, unjustly banished by the Emperor Constantius, and as unjustly restored, I. 173. Consented to the Arians, I. 254. And voted for the condemnation of Athanasius, *ib.* Deposed by the Roman clergy, I. 255.

Libertéz de l'Eglise Gallicane, Traictéz des; a collection (by Pierre and Jacques du Puy) of tracts so entitled, commencing with a treatise of Pithou or Pithœus; extracts from, I. 220—228; II. 426. 434. 443. 448.

Liberties, of the Gallican Church; see *Church of France.* Of the English, the same as the Gallican, II. 426. 434, 435. 443. 448. And as those of the United Provinces, II. 443. See *Church of England.*

Liberty, different senses of the word explained, IV. 34, 35. Distinguished from necessity and from spontaneity, IV. 28. Triple division of, by the

Schoolmen, into liberty from necessity, from sin, from misery, IV. 33, 34. Distinction between liberty from compulsion and liberty from necessitation, IV. 121. Compulsion and necessitation both opposite to, IV. 133. True, a freedom from necessity as well as from compulsion, IV. 395. Is not ignorance of necessitation, IV. 137. Of exercise and specification; see *Exercise, Specification.* Of contradiction and contrariety; see *Contradiction, Contrariety.* Of God, and of good Angels; see *Angels, God.*

Defined, IV. 33. 262, 263. 442. Definition of, from Bellarmine, IV. 173. 455. By Hobbes, IV. 166. 280, 281. 430. 443. True, is an universal immunity from all determination to one, IV. 33.

Reason the true root of, IV. 146. 413. The more reason, the more, IV. 394. Endeavour not of the essence of, IV. 430. There may be, when deliberation is ended, IV. 431. Degrees of, possible, IV. 127.

Division of the arguments for, IV. 37. Proofs of, and against necessity, from Holy Scripture, IV. 37—82. Texts of Scripture shewing, that men have power of election, and therefore true, IV. 37—54. Texts of Scripture shewing, that men may do many things, and do them not, and therefore have true, IV. 54—56. The interrogatories, expostulations, and the like, in Scripture, prove men to have true, IV. 56, 57. The liberty of Adam proves the, of all men, IV. 58. 62—64. Reward and punishment prove, IV. 64. Proofs of, and against necessity, from reason, IV. 82—115. From the story of Zeno, IV. 82. Denial of, overthrows the frame-work of all human society, IV. 84. Denial of, inconsistent with piety, IV. 102. Denial of, destroys the variety and perfection of the universe, IV. 109. If there be no true, there is no formal sin, IV. 112—115. Admonitions imply, because addressed to those only who are conceived to be free, IV. 98. 343, 344. Consultation implies, IV. 96—98. Praise moral, although not praise metaphysical implies, IV. 99. Resolution proveth election and, IV. 254—256. Hobbes's objections to this, answered, IV. 256, 257. The doctrine of, is an ancient truth, IV. 420. And maketh no man careless or thankless, IV. 487.

Hobbes's silly definition of, refuted, IV. 167, 168. 280, 281. 430. 443—445. It is one of negatives, IV. 167. 443. And far removed from the idea of moral, IV. 168. His instances to prove it, IV. 167. Men's experience contrary to his conclusions respecting, IV. 177, 178. 194. Hobbes confoundeth will and, IV. 265. His liberty no true, IV. 442. His, is omnipotence in show, in deed nothing, IV. 381. His silly assertion, that liberty to act does not imply liberty to will, IV. 27. 211. 221—223. 234. 274. 284—287. 371. 421. 462. 467. True, includes liberty to will, IV. 30—32. Liberty to will more reconcileable with prescience than liberty to do only, IV. 421. To give liberty to two and limit to one, as Hobbes does, is a contradiction, IV. 273. Hobbes's profound explanation answered, of the reason why liberty is supposed to be essential to religion, IV. 193—195.

See *Election, Free, Free-will, Necessity, Spontaneity, Voluntary, Will; Bramhall John, Calvin, Hobbes, Luther, Melancthon, Synod of Dort, Zanchy.*

Liberty, Defence of, from antecedent and extrinsecal necessity, by Bishop Bramhall; see *Defence of True Liberty,* &c.

Licenses, to build churches, necessary in different nations, I. 143. See *Statutes of Mortmain.*

Lichfield, design of King Offa to erect an Archbishopric there, II. 140.

——— *and Coventry, Bishops of;* see *Bayne, Bentham, Morton Thomas, Neil, Sampson.*

Liège, letter of the clergy of, against Paschal II., respecting the homage paid by Bishops to laymen, II. 450. Character given by the clergy of, in the same letter, of Pope Gregory VII., II. 450, 451.

Life of Archbishop Bramhall, I. iii—xv. See *Bramhall John, Harris Walter, Loftus, Morant, Taylor, Vesey, Ware.*

Likeness, conformity signifieth agreeableness as well as, IV. 293, 294.

Limbus Infantum, V. 177. Romish notion of, V. 180. i. Passages of St. Augustin against, V. 179. Passage of Scripture against, V. 180.

Limerick, Bishop of; see *Vesey.*

Lincoln, Bishop of, in 1424, case of the Pope with the; see *Fleming, Richard.*

———, *Bishops of;* see *Barlow Thomas, Bullingham, Fleming, Grosthead, Laney, Longlands, Neil, Remigius de Feschamp, Sanderson, Tayler John,*

Watson Thomas, White John, Williams John, Wolsey.

Liucoln, Parliament of; see *Parliament of Lincoln.*

Lincolnshire, rebellion in; see *England.*

Lineal Succession of Orders, see *Apostolical Succession.*

Lingard, John, D.D., the historian, acknowledged the falsehood of the Nag's Head fable, and the fact of Parker's consecration and that of the other Bishops in 1559-61, III. Pref. m. 40. f.

Linus, Bishop of Rome, ordained by St. Peter, I. 162. Ordained himself only eleven persons, *ib.* Patriarchate of, hardly large enough therefore to include Britain, *ib.*

Lipsius, the reviver of Stoical philosophy among Christians, IV. 116, 119. 373, 374. The terms Christian and Stoical necessity are employed by, IV. 119. 373. Distinction of necessity by, into four kinds, IV. 119. Great objections taken against the book of, IV. 119, 120. 374.

Lirinensis, Vincentius; see *Vincentius Lirinensis.*

Lisbon, University of; see *University of Lisbon.*

Litteræ Formatæ, II. 80. 471. 615. The want of, at the present time, to be regretted, *ib.*

Liturgies; see *Prayer, Forms of.*

Liturgy, English; see *Prayer, (English) Book of Common.*

———, *Scotch;* see *Prayer, (Scotch) Book of Common.* The Presbyterian Directory, so called; see *Kirk of Scotland.*

Llandaff, Bishops of; see *Godwin, Kitchin.*

Loftus, Dudley, L.L.D., I. ciii. Funeral Oration of, for Archbishop Bramhall, I. iii. cxiv. n.

Logic, technical terms of, IV. 129. 384, 385. Hobbes's ignorance of, see *Hobbes.* Fantastic treatise upon, under the name of Wit-craft, published in 1573 by one Ralph Lever, wherein all the technical terms are in English, IV. 210.

Lombard, Peter; see *Peter Lombard.*

Loudon, Bishop of, the Bishop of York took precedence of the, at the Council of Arles, and why, I. 159, 160. Was Dean of the Province of Canterbury, III. 55. t.

———, *Bishops of;* see *Bancroft, Bonner, Dunstan, Folliott, Grindal, King John, Laud, Mellitus, Ridley, Robertus Gemeticensis, Sandys Edwyn, Stokesly, Tunstall, Warham.*

Londonderry, see *Derry.*

Longlands, John, D.D., Bishop of Lincoln 1521—1547; sermon of, in 1538, at St. Paul's Cross, in favour of the Regal supremacy, I. 120; II. 218. 503. Was employed to obtain the consent of the University of Oxford to Henry VIII.'s divorce, II. 187. Pronounced sentence against Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine, II. 188.

Lord's Day, how far the observance of the, is grounded upon the law of nature, I. xcviii; V. 79. Natural reason dictateth not the holiness of one day more than another, V. 14. How far grounded upon the positive law of God, I. xcviii, xcix; V. 80. Institution of the, founded upon Scripture, as well as upon tradition, I. xcix, c; V. 31, 32. How far there is any precept in Scripture for the change from the Sabbath to the, V. 37. Immaterial whether there be a formal precept, *ib.* or a written precept, V. 38. Not so clear that there is no precept of the kind in Scripture, V. 38—41. The Sabbath changed to the, if not by our Lord's authority (which there is no cause to doubt), at least by that of His Apostles, I. xcviii—c; V. 32. Observance of the, an Apostolical precept, II. 455. Undeniable that the, is an Apostolical tradition, V. 33—36. This would not render the, only a human law, V. 36, 37. Is not a prudential constitution merely, V. 37. 62. See *Fourth Commandment.* Has been universally observed, V. 12. 34. 63. When the, began first to be observed, V. 41. Was solemnized in the Church before the New Testament was written, V. 38. Was observed through the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age, V. 42. Testimony of the Fathers to the early observance of the, V. 42, 43. Was observed in the days of, and by, the Apostles themselves, V. 43, 44. The early Christians accused of worshipping the Sun on account of their observance of the, V. 43. Rev. i. 10. the first time the *name* of the, is mentioned, although the *thing* was more early, V. 47. The expression in Rev. i. 10. means the, and not the Day of Judgment, or Easter Day, V. 43, 44. Is mentioned 1 Cor. xvi. 2, V. 39. 47. And Acts xx. 7, V. 48—50. And Acts ii. 1, V. 51—54. Passages in the Gospels concerning the, V. 55—58.

Authority of the, argued from the great things which have happened upon it, V. 53, 54. 60. Memorable events in the Old and New Testaments said to have happened upon the, *ib.* Tradition that the Day of Judgment shall happen upon a, V. 54. 60. May be truly said to be sacred to the whole Trinity, and why, V. 52.

The question of the, (i. e. whether by Divine or human right, and when and by whom established), not so great as some imagine, V. 30—32.

Why the weekly festival was changed from the Sabbath to the, I. xcix; V. 58—61. How the, differs from, and is related to, the Sabbath, I. c; V. 12. The name Sabbath only analogically applicable to the, V. 11, 12. See *Sabbath.*

Many Romanist and most Reforming divines asserted, that the Catholic Church and particular Churches have power to translate the public assemblies from the, to any other day of the week, and are not even bound to the septenary number, V. 10; and see *Aquinas, Bullinger, Calvin, Frith, Suarez, Tindal, Tostatus, Zuingle.* Calvin said to have actually deliberated about changing the, to the Thursday; see *Thursday.* Whether the, may be changed by the authority of the Church, I. c; V. 61. Such a change unlawful, V. 62. for want of authority, *ib.* from the ground of the ordinance, V. 63 from the perpetuity of the duty enjoined, *ib.*

Of the manner of sanctifying the, V. 64; and see *Justin Martyr.* According to the law of nature, *ib.* the evangelical law, V. 65. the positive law of God, V. 66. human laws, V. 67. Collection for the Saints made upon the, in the primitive Church, V. 39, 40. 47. 66. Recreations upon the, not unlawful, III. 576; V. 71. even in the judgment of Foreign Protestant Churches, III. 277. 576. or of Calvin himself, III. 576. Of the Book of Sports, III. 577. Rigour of the Scotch Disciplinarians concerning the, III. 277.

The Homily of the Place and Time of Prayer respecting the, explained, V. 68—73. It denies not the, the name of Sabbath, V. 73. But doth not identify the law of the Fourth Commandment with the, V. 69, 70. 73. Nor command a literal Sunday of twenty-four hours, V. 70, 71. It makes "the first day of the week," to signify the, V. 73. And holds the end of changing the weekly festival of the Church to have been in honour of Christ's Resurrection, *ib.* It derives the, down from the Ascension of Christ immediately, V. 54. 73.

Judgment of the Lord Primate Ussher concerning the, V. 74. 77—80; and see *Bernard, Ussher.* Writers of the English Church concerning the; see *Bramhall John, Brerewood, Heylin, White Francis.* Doctrine of the Sabbatarians concerning the; see *Bound, Brabourne, L'Estrange, Sabbatarians, Zanchy.* Of foreign Protestants; see *Gomarus, Rivet, Zanchy.* Of the Anabaptists, see *Anabaptists.*

The Primitive Christians prayed standing, upon the, V. 35.

Lord's Day, Letter of Bp. Bramhall concerning the, I. xcviii—ci; and see *Bernard.* Discourse of Bp. Bramhall respecting the Sabbath and the; see *Sabbath and Lord's Day, Discourse on the; Bramhall John, Works of.*

Lords, House of; see *Parliament, English.* Bishops expelled from the, in 16$\frac{4}{5}$, III. 8. i. Evidence from the Journals of the, in 1536—1547, for the fact and for the date of Bishop Barlow's consecration, III. 142. o. p. And in 1640, 1641, respecting the story of Bishop Morton's Speech allowing the Nag's Head fable, III. 8. i. 36. d. 37. e.

Lords Justices of Ireland, Sir Maurice Eustace and others sworn in as, in 1660, V. 136. e. Address from the Irish House of Commons to the, touching the election of their Speaker, V. 136. Answer of the, to Mr. Speaker's propositions made in the name of the House, V. 143, 144.

Lord's Supper, Sacrament of the, one of the two Sacraments generally necessary to salvation, I. 55. 272.

Doctrine of the Real Presence of Christ in the, held by the Church of England, but without presumptuously determining the manner, I. 8. 22; II. 211; III. 165; V. 217. Abate Transubstantiation, and we shall have little difference with the Church of Rome respecting the Presence of Christ in the, II. 211; III. 165; V. 217; and see *Andrewes.* Protestants do not deny the Bread to be the Body of Christ, but the Romanists' bold determination of the manner, by Transubstantiation, II.

211. What is effected by the priestly act of consecration in the, III. 165; V. 188—190; and see *Consecration.* Meaning of the "spiritual" Presence of Christ in the, see *Spiritually.* Excellent saying of Durandus respecting the Presence of Christ in the, I. 22. Varying language of the Fathers concerning the Presence of Christ in the, I. 10. q—u. 11. x. y. Explanation of that language, I. 13, 14. Doctrine of the Real Presence of Christ in the, held in the Saxon Church, but not Transubstantiation; see *Ælfric.* No differences in the Church directly about the Presence of Christ in the, for the first eight hundred years, I. 8. Yet different observations of the Sacrament, I. 9. And different expressions about it, I. 10. First difference about the Presence of Christ in the, I. 11—13. First determination of the manner of the Presence of Christ in the, I. 14; and see *Transubstantiation.* It opened a floodgate to a deluge of controversies, I. 14—19; and see *Adduction, Change, Conservation, Consubstantiation, Production.* Two farther differences followed from this bold determination of the manner of the Presence of Christ in the, viz. Communion in one kind, and Adoration of the Sacrament, I. 20—22; and see *Concomitance, Cup, Host.*

Is a Commemoration, Representation, and Application, of the all-sufficient Propitiatory Sacrifice of the Cross, I. 54, 55; II. 88. 276. 642; V. 188. 221. Not a Sacrifice propitiatory in itself by its own virtue, V. 221. All the essentials of the Romish Sacrifice contained in our celebration of the, V. 217. 221, 222. High expressions of the Fathers concerning the, I. 10, 11; V. 163, 164. See *Sacrifice.*

No more efficacious means for obtaining forgiveness of sins than the, V. 163, 164. The Priest is enabled to put away sins by the, V. 213.

Adoration of Christ in the, practised by the Church of England, but not adoration of the species of Bread and Wine, I. 20, 21; II. 36. 87. 494, 495. The Council of Trent enjoins the adoration of the Sacrament itself, I. 21. 45; II. 36. 87. Adoration of the, not known in the Greek Church, II. 634. Or in the Eastern, II. 61. The adoration of the, has excluded Protestants from participation in the Eucharist in the Roman Church, I. 110. It has been a cause of separation from the Church of Rome to many Protestants, II. 37. And a just cause, II. 56, 57. How far and when idolatrous, I. 44, 45; II. 87.

The detaining of the Cup from the laity decreed by the Council of Constance, with an express non-obstante to both the institution of Christ and primitive practice, I. 47. It cannot be proved out of the first four General Councils or by the universal tradition of the Church, I. 65. It is not proved by the account of the celebration of the Holy Eucharist at Emmaus in St. Luke xxiv, V. 56. It is a perversion of the sacred rites instituted by Christ, I. 167; II. 35. Romanists hold the Wine as necessary to be offered as the Bread, though not as necessary to be distributed, V. 56. Yet Bellarmine says the Bread may be taken away if the Cup be given, I. 20; V. 56. Half-communion is renounced by the Church of England, I. 54. And condemned by the Greek as well as by the English Church, II. 634. The Eastern Churches administer in both kinds to all Christians, II. 61. Half-communion is a cause of separation from the Church of Rome to many Protestants, II. 37. And a just cause, II. 56, 57. It is a just cause of separation between England and Rome, I. 110; II. 201—203. It is no indifferent matter, II. 201, 202. See *Bellarmine, Concomitance, Cup, Luther, Melancthon, Wine.*

"Breaking of Bread" mentioned in Acts xx. 9, explained by the Fathers, and by the Church of England to mean the, V. 49, 50. "Breaking of Bread" in St. Luke xxiv. 11. 30, meant the, or at least a figure of the, V. 56, 57. Evidence of the Fathers to this, *ib.*

Matter of the, varying practices and heresies respecting it; see *Bread, Wine.*

Need of preparation for receiving the, V. 163, 164.

Nothing in the account of the celebration of the, in St. Luke xxii, that maketh for the Romish doctrine of Ordination, V. 217, 218. Dangerous consequences of the Romish doctrine of Intention as regards the, V. 211.

Lotharius, Emperor, convented Pope Leo IV. before him, I. 220.

Louis IX., or *St. Louis*, King of France, called the Council of Aquisgrane, I. 206. Pragmatic Sanction of, I. 221. Letter of, to Arno Archbishop of Salzburg, I. 206.

—— *XI.*, King of France, persuaded at first by Æneas Sylvius to revoke the Pragmatic Sanction, but changed his mind upon the remonstrances of his people and enforced it, I. 222. Remonstrance of the Parliament of Paris to, Pro Libertate Ecclesiæ Gallicanæ, against the Pope, I. 222. 225.

—— *XII.*, King of France, convocated a Council at Tours in 1510 against Pope Julius II., I. 174. Anathematized by the Pope in consequence, I. 193. 222. Confirmed the Pragmatic Sanction, I. 174, 175. 222.

—— *XIV.*, King of France, driven out of Paris in 1651 by the Fronde, I. 23. l. Returned to Paris in triumph accompanied by Charles II. (then in exile), October 1651, V. 130. s. Bramhall present on the latter occasion, V. 130. Civil wars that desolated France during the minority of, I. 23; V. 156. Which were pretty nearly at an end in 1661, V. 156. n. See *Richelieu*.

Louis of Bavaria, Emperor of Germany, excommunicated by the Pope, II. 146, 147. Alliance made with, by Edward III. of England, notwithstanding, II. 147. Saying of William of Occham to, see *William of Occham*. Resisted the claim of Pope John XXII. to a concurrent power in the election of the German Emperors, I. 203. 211. 215. Appeal of, from Pope John XXII. to a General Council, I. 203. 215.

Lowther, Sir Gerard, Chief Justice of the Irish Common Pleas, impeached with Bramhall and others in 1640, I. viii. h. lxxxviii.

Lucar, Cyril; see *Cyril Lucar*.

Lucius, King of Britain; see *Eleutherius* Pope, *Elvanus Avalonius*.

Ludlow, Sir Henry, the Parliamentarian, impeached of treason by Charles I., III. 413, 414.

Ludovicus, see *Louis*.

Luidhardus, or *Lethargus*, a Christian Bishop in Kent before St. Austin, I. 267.

Luna, Peter de, Pope at Avignon under the name of Benedict XIII.; see *Benedict XIII.*

Lupus, see *Germanus*.

Lusitania, see *Portugal*.

Lusitaniæ Gemitus, against the Pope, I. 196. 224. 237, 238. 263; II. 214. 600.

Luther, opinion of, respecting the detaining of the Cup in the Lord's Supper, II. 201, 202. Held mission necessary for ministers, V. 259. Once against free will, but grew wiser and changed his mind, IV. 218. 283. 398. Maintained a necessity of immutability only, which implies merely a hypothetical necessity, IV. 398.

Had other causes of separation from Rome than the abuse of Indulgences, II. 236, 237.

Censure passed by, upon the Schoolmen of three hundred years older than himself, IV. 282, 283.

The Church of England has nothing to do with, II. 236. 267.

Defence of, by Chillingworth, explained, II. 66, 67. Ignorant citation of, by Hobbes, IV. 382. 397.

Lutherans, The, retained Bishops in Denmark and Sweden, and superintendents in Germany, II. 69. 564; III. 480. 517. 532. Assert Episcopacy in their Confessions, see *Confession of Augsburg*. Are not "unchurched" by English Episcopal divines, III. 517. See *Bishops*.

Lyons, Council of; see *Council of Lyons*.

——, *Primacy of;* see *Primates of Lyons*.

Lyranus, a Romish writer, testimony of, that Shrift in times past was not so rigidly observed, V. 223.

M.

Macarius, testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath Day before the time of Moses, V. 23. a.

Maccabæus, King of Scotland in Hector Boethius, law of, respecting allegiance, II. 422.

Machiavel, a pious fraud learned from, I. 78; III. 24. Was a heretic in policy, III. 485. Of the doctrine of, that princes should aim at greatness, not over, but in their subjects, III. 333, 334. Answer to, by Innocent Gentillet, II. 76; III. 169. 277. 496.

Maffei, Pietro, History of Æthiopia by, III. 557, 558.

Magdeburg, Archbishop of; see *Norbert*.

Magistrate, Civil, authority of the, derived from God, not from the people; see *God, King, People*. In what sense the, is styled by St. Peter "the ordinance of man," III. 318. Power of the, not from grace; see *Dominion, Grace*.

Power of the, relatively to the

Church; see *Church Catholic—Particular, King, Monarchy.* And to the Church in England; see *Church of England, Kings of England.*

The law not always prior to the, in point of time, III. 422. See *Law, Subjects.*

Obedience due to the, how far; see *Obedience.*

Seditious doctrines of the Court of Rome, and of some Popes respecting the; see *Court of Rome, Stephen III.* Pope, *Zachary I.* Pope. Of the Jesuits; see *Bellarmine, Jesuits, King, Mariana, Simancas.* Of the foreign Presbyterians; see *Beza, Calvin, Languet.* Of the Scotch Disciplinarians; see *Buchanan, Discipline, Disciplinarians, Presbyterians Scottish.* Of the English Puritans; see *Presbyterians English, Puritans.* Of the English Parliamentarians; see *Greville Lord Brooke, Parker Henry, Serpent-Salve.*

The, according to Hobbes, has a right as man to kill, but no right as magistrate to punish, a guilty subject, IV. 561, 562. 582; and see *Hobbes, Nature State of.* Hobbes maketh the, to be supreme arbiter of theological truth, IV. 330. 370. 386. 528, 529. 534. 540. 578. 590. Yet contradicteth himself elsewhere, IV. 578, 579. 590. See *Hobbes.*

Magna Charta; see *Charta, Magna.*

Magus, Simon; see *Simon Magus.*

Maintenance, what is meant by, in law, I. 36.

Major, Johannes; see *Johannes Major.*

Majorinus, a Donatist Bishop, II. 106. 203.

Malachi, St., Bishop of Down, one of the two Irish Bishops that have been canonized, I. lxxii. Life of, by St. Bernard, II. 545.

Mallet, Francis, nominated by Queen Mary to the see of Salisbury in 1558, but not consecrated, III. 232.

Malmesburiensis, Gulielmus; or *Malmesbury, William of;* see *William of Malmesbury.*

Man, freedom of the will of; see *Actions, Freedom, God Decrees and Foreknowledge of, Grace, Liberty, Necessity, Reason, Will.* Is ordinarily, not always, free, IV. 125. Cannot predeliberate perfectly of contingent events, IV. 429.

Never without laws, IV. 334. 368, 369. Never lawful for private men ordinarily to kill one another, IV. 335. See *Hobbes, Law, Magistrate, Nature State of.*

Created to be lord of the creatures, IV. 416. Of the dominion of, over the brute beasts, IV. 339—341. See *Beasts.*

Saying from Hesiod, Aristotle, and others, that there are three degrees of excellence in, IV. 486.

Man, Bishops of Sodor and; see *Sodor and Man, Bishops of.*

Manichees, The, account of the errors of, II. 329. Believed in two Gods, I. 8; II. 329; IV. 355. Held God to be the cause of sin, IV. 355. Condemned by the Church for rejecting free-will, IV. 217. Errors of, respecting the Lord's Supper, I. 8.

Mantuan, denunciation by, of the corruptions of the Roman Court, I. 180. 234; III. 478.

Maraldo, Signor, secretary to Pope Urban VIII., I. 231.

Marcellinus, Pope 296—304, burned incense to idols, I. 254. The small number of Bishops ordained by the Popes prior to the time of, proves their Patriarchate far too small to include Britain, and that they had little or nothing to do out of their own province, I. 161, 162.

———, Tribune, presided at the Collation of Carthage, I. 68. m.

Marcian, Emperor, confirmed the decrees of the Councils of Constantinople and Chalcedon, establishing the Patriarchate of Constantinople, I. 177; II. 184.

———, letter of St. Cyprian to Pope Stephen respecting a person so named, I. 61.

Marcionites, The, held God to be the cause of sin, IV. 355. Schismatically separated themselves from the Church, II. 97. Condemned by the Church for rejecting free will, IV. 217.

Margaret, daughter of Henry VII. of England, married to James IV. King of Scotland, III. 476. Letters of, about Bishop Barlow, III. 141. m.

Margetson, James, D.D., Archbishop of Dublin—of Armagh, 1661—1678, a Yorkshireman invited into Ireland by Sir C. Wandesford; consecrated Archbishop of Dublin by Bramhall, Jan. 18, 1661, I. xii. Recommended by Bramhall upon his deathbed as his successor in the see of Armagh, I. xxv. q.

Maria, Infanta of Spain, intended marriage of, with Prince Charles, in 1623, III. 525. It was no proof of Charles's inclination to Popery, *ib.*

Fears of Popery raised by the proposal in England, III. 540.

Mariana, John, a Spanish historian, and Jesuit, maintained the Papal claim to temporal supremacy, III. 301.

Mark, St., was St. Peter's disciple, II. 165. Founded the Patriarchal Church of Alexandria, *ib.*

Marprelate, Martin; see *Martin Marprelate.*

Marriage, retained by the Church of England more purely than by the Church of Rome, but not under the notion of a proper and general Sacrament, I. 56. Texts of Scripture relating to, IV. 569. The only Sacrament that can be received by proxy, according to the Roman Schools, III. 43.

Marshall, Stephen, B.D., a Presbyterian minister, absolved the released prisoners of the Parliamentarian army from the oath they had taken not to serve again against the King, III. 306. Sent as a Commissioner into Scotland by the English Parliament in 1643, V. 105. i.

Marston Moor, Battle of, I. x; III. Pref.

Martel, Charles; see *Charles Martel.*

Martene, denies the delivery of the Patin and Chalice to be essentials of Priestly Ordination, V. 217. t.

Martin II., Pope 882—884, I. 255.

——— *V.*, Pope 1417—1431, question discussed, respecting the confirmation by, of the decrees of the Council of Constance, I. 250—252; II. 251, 252; and see *Council of Constance.* Enforced the prohibition (by the Council of Constance) of tenths and first-fruits, II. 424. Translated Bishop Fleming from Lincoln to York in 1424, but his act reversed by King Henry V.; see *Fleming, Richard*, Legate of, protested against by Henry VI. King of England, by counsel of Humphrey Duke of Gloucester the Protector, I. 148; II. 442.

———, Bishop of Bracara, expressions of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r.

———, commissioner in England from Pope Innocent IV. in 1246, I. 195.

———, *Anthony*, Bishop of Meath 1625—1650, Provost of Trinity College Dublin in 1641, V. 81. n. Part taken by, in the debate respecting the Irish Articles in 1634, V. 80, 81.

———, *Gregory*, attack by, upon the English Translation of the Bible, III. 150, 151. Answered by Fulke, III. 151. r.

Martin, Henry, the Parliamentarian and Regicide, impeached of treason by Charles I., III. 413, 414.

——— *Marprelate*, treasonable and violent language of, III. 302.

Martyr, Peter, assisted at the Colloquy of Poissy, I. 68. o. Maintained Episcopacy, III: 473. How far Baptism thought necessary by, for the children of Christian parents, V. 173. Epistle of, to Bishop Jewel, eulogizing his Apology for the Church of England, III. 482.

Martyrdom, analogy of, to Baptism, V. 173. The grace of that Sacrament communicated in, without the Sacrament itself, V. 173, 174. How far this analogy holds, V. 174. Bellarmine's propositions with reference to this, V. 174. h. Is called a Baptism of Blood, V. 175. q. See *Baptism, Bellarmine.*

Martyrology of the City of London, a document so called, being an account of the sufferings of the London Clergy during the Great Rebellion, II. 96. 247; III. 509. See *Clergy, English.*

Martyrs, legend respecting the number of the, in the primitive Church, IV. 497. Esteem which the primitive Church had for the, IV. 330. The blood of the, is the seed of the Church, III. 353. The Innocents were, in deed although not in will, V. 176. Hobbes's profane speech concerning the, IV. 330. 497.

The, in the time of Queen Mary in England, number of, I. 124. It was greater than that of the Romanists put to death by Queen Elizabeth, *ib.* and see *Romanists.*

Charles I. and Abp. Laud were, for the Church of England; see *Charles I., Laud.*

Marvel, Andrew, satirical animadversions of, upon Bishop Parker's Preface to Bramhall's Vindication against Baxter, III. Pref. Bramhall himself treated with respect by, *ib.*

Mary, the Blessed Virgin, the Mother of God, I. 53. 102; II. 90. Nestorius a heretic for denying this title to belong to, II. 90. Perpetual Virginity of, an Apostolical tradition, I. 53. Worship of, condemned by the Greek Church, II. 632. Agreement of the Greek and English Churches concerning the worship of, *ib.* Ὑπερδουλεία asserted by the Church of Rome to be due to, I. 45. u. Ulti-

mate prayers addressed to, in the Church of Rome, I. 46. b.

Mary, Queen of England, title of Head of the Church in England continued to, at the beginning of her reign, but dropped upon her marriage with Philip, I. 29. y; and see *Kings of England.* Refused to admit Father Peyto, legate of Paul IV., into the realm, II. 216. 442, 443; and see *Peyto, Pole Reginald.*

The English form of Ordination expressly abrogated by, and not expressly restored by Queen Elizabeth at her accession, II. 274; III. 81; and see *Ordinal, English.* Articles of, sent to Bishop Bonner, respecting (among other things) the re-ordination of English clergy, III. 61. f. 114. g; V. 242, 243; and see *Bonner, Clergy English, Paul IV., Pole Reginald.*

Protestants put to death in the reign of; see *Martyrs, Protestants, Romanists.*

Grief of, for the loss of Calais, III. 345.

Statutes passed in the reign of; see *Statutes, English.*

——, Queen of Scotland, not saved from a bloody end by her constancy in the Romish Faith, I. 79. La Milletière answered respecting the intercession of, in Heaven, for her grandson Charles I., *ib.*

Mason, Francis, B.D., Archdeacon of Norfolk; book of, in vindication of the Orders of the Church of England, III. 22. d. Denied the fable of the Nag's Head Consecration as soon as ever it was coined, III. 22. d. 111. Extracts from the Archiepiscopal Register were published to the world before the book of, III. 119. Reckons seven writers of the English Church who affirmed the authenticity of that Register, III. 97. His account of their evidence corrected, III. 97. e—k. Argument of, defended, respecting the English form of Ordination, V. 219. Sacrifice, V. 221. Confession, or Shrift, V. 222. The legality of the English form of Ordination, as used in Queen Elizabeth's reign, V. 240, 241. The dispensative clauses in the Royal commission for Abp. Parker's confirmation and consecration, V. 238—242.

Mass, see *Sacrifice.* Private, rejected by the Greek as well as by the English Church, II. 634.

Master, relation of a servant to his, overthrown by Hobbes's principles, IV. 571, 572.

Matter, and power, indifferent to contrary forms and acts, IV. 448. Hobbes contradicts himself respecting this, IV. 587. Of analogical, IV. 445.

Matthew, St., preached in Æthiopia according to Socrates and Ruffinus, V. 34. a.

——— *Paris*, testimony of, to the extortions of the Court of Rome, I. 181, 182. Bitter complaints of, respecting the consequences of Papal provisions in England, I. 189; II. 405. And against Papal encroachments generally, II. 422. 557.

——— *of Westminster*, mentions the appointment of Bishops in England in general terms without specifying whether made by the King or no, V. 202. m. Corrects Prosper's account of St. German's mission to England, II. 536.

Matthews, Tobias, D.D., Bishop of Durham, Archbishop of York, 1594—1628; ordained Bramhall Priest, III. 132. Bramhall chaplain of; see *Bramhall, John.*

Matrimony, see *Marriage.*

Maud, Empress, dispensed with, for taking the veil, in the time of Anselm, by the sole authority of the King and Church of England, II. 448.

Maurice, Emperor, submission of Gregory the Great to, in an ecclesiastical matter, which St. Gregory disapproved, I. 176, 177; II. 199. 548; and see *Gregory I.* Pope.

Mauritius, see *Maurice.*

Maxima Cæsariensis, the ancient name of the northern British province under the Romans, whereof York was the metropolis, I. 159.

Maximian, Emperor of Rome, Thebæan legion massacred by, for refusing to sacrifice to idols, III. 342. 356; IV. 391. 555. Edict of, and of Diocletian, to destroy the churches, burn the Scriptures, and enfranchise the apostate slaves of Christians, III. 356.

Maximilian, King of the Romans, crowned so seven years before the death of his father Frederic III., I. 204. 205. Appeal of, with the Kings of France and Navarre and others, from Pope Julius II. to a General Council, I. 193.

Maximus, passages from, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 473.

Maxwell, John, D.D., Bishop of Ross —of Killala, Archbishop of Tuam, 1633—1646; pamphlets of, against

the Scotch Presbyterians, attributed to Bramhall, I. xxxv; III. 241. a.

May, or *Mey*, *William*, *D.D.*, Master of Queen's College Cambridge 1537—1553, restored 1559, Dean of St. Paul's 1545—1553; account of, III. 180. r. Signed the certificate of the legal validity of the second commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, III. 180. Was one of the proxies for Archbishop Parker at his confirmation, III. 182. Was nominated to the Archbishopric of York in 1560, but died before consecration, III. 228.

Meath, *Archdeacon of*; see *Bramhall*, *John*.

———, *Bishops of*; see *Martin Anthony*, *Ussher*.

Mede, *Joseph*, *D.D.*, discourse of, upon the Sabbath and Lord's Day, undeservedly censured by Archbishop Ussher, V. 76.

Medea, story concerning, in illustration of free will, IV. 147. 151. 416.

Mediâ Villâ, *Richardus de*; see *Richardus de Mediâ Villâ*.

Medici, *Katherine de*; see *Katherine de Medici*.

Meditation, little worth without making use of other men's experience, IV. 281; and see *Hobbes*, *Schoolmen*.

Medvinus, an English Priest, sent on an embassy to Rome by King Lucius, II. 169.

Melancthon, *Philip*, Epistle of, in favour of the Papacy, II. 281. Favoured Episcopacy, III. 536. j. Once against free will, but grew wiser and changed his mind, IV. 218. 283. Opinion of, respecting the use of honied water instead of wine in the Eucharist, II. 202. Intercourse of, and of the divines of Tubingen, with Joseph and Jeremiah Patriarchs of Constantinople, respecting the controversies between Papists and Protestants, II. 265. Censure passed by, upon the Schoolmen, IV. 282. Ignorant citation of, by Hobbes, IV. 382.

Melchiades, Pope 311—314, was one of the Imperial delegates, from whom the Donatists appealed to the Council of Arles, I. 159; II. 226.

Melchisedec, interpretation by the Fathers of the eternal Priesthood of, V. 226. English Priests are neither of the order of Aaron nor of that of, but of a third order distinct from both, V. 224—226; and see *Orders*, *English*.

Melit, see *Melitus*.

Melito, testimony of, that the Lord's Day was observed through the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age, V. 42.

Melitus, *St.*, Bishop of London, II. 132. Brought certain decrees of a Roman Synod to be observed by the Church of England, II. 134.

Melvil, *Andrew*, a Presbyterian Minister, saucy and seditious expressions of, against James I., III. 257.

Members, of the House of Commons, case of the five, impeached by Charles I., III. 414. 436.

Menandrians, *The*, heresy of, against the truth of Christ's Human Nature, I. 8. Respecting the Holy Eucharist, *ib.*

Menevia, or *St. David's*, Primacy of Wales transferred to, from Caerleon, and Llandaff, and when, I. 163. 178; II. 172. 185. 303. 541. Transferred from, to Canterbury, in the reign of Henry I., I. 178; II. 151, 152. 185. 544. See *Caerleon*, *St. David*, *Dionothus*, *Dubritius*, *Giraldus Cambrensis*.

Registers of the see of, in the time of Bishop Barlow, III. Pref. in fin.; and see *Barlow*, *William*.

———, ———, *Archbishops of*; *Bishops of*: see *St. David's*, *Archbishops of*; *Bishops of*.

Menna, Patriarch of Constantinople 536—552, privilege granted by Justinian to clerks at the request of, I. 172; II. 428. g.

Mentz, *Advices of*; see *Advices of Mentz*.

———, *Archbishop of*, paid 30,000 florins to the Pope for his pall, I. 215, 216.

Mercians, *The*, converted by Finanus, a Scottish Bishop, during the reign of Penda, I. 268. The, and the Northumbrians, had their religion and ordination from the Scots, never from the Bishop of Rome, II. 300. 528.

Merciful Doctors, *The*, Origen and others so called, because they held that the punishments of the damned were not eternal and might be lessened, IV. 246. 354. 538. Were condemned by the Church, IV. 354, 355. 538.

Mercy of God; see *God*, *Mercy of*.

Merits, meaning of, as held by the Church of Rome, I. 47. Used for acquisition, not desert, by the primitive Church, I. 57; II. 632, 633. Doctrine of the Church of England respecting, I. 56, 57. Of the primitive Church, I. 57. Of the Greek

Church, II. 632. 634. See *Justification, Works.*

Mervyn, Audley, afterwards *Sir Audley*, opened the proceedings against Bramhall upon his impeachment in 1641, in a very virulent speech, I. xxv. p; V. 137. f. Suit between, and Archbishop Bramhall, respecting the latter's land, I. xxv. ci. cx. Chosen Speaker of the Irish House of Commons in 1661, by favour of the Adventurers, V. 136. d. Two speeches of Archbishop Bramhall to, as Speaker of that House; see *Speech.* Style of the oratory of, noted even at that time for affectation, V. 137. f.

Metiochus, Athenian saying concerning, III. 44; IV. 228.

Metropolitans, see *Patriarchs, Primates.*

Metz, Council of; see *Council of Metz.*

Mey, William; see *May.*

Meyrick, Rowland, Bishop of Bangor 1559—1566, evidence for the consecration of, III. 219.

Michael, Emperor, preposterous intermeddling of, in ecclesiastical businesses, II. 231.

Milan, Primacy of; see *Primates of Milan.*

Milevitan Council, *Milevum, Council of*, } see *Council of Milevum.*

Militia, question respecting the, between Charles I. and the Parliament, III. 371. 436. Order for the, issued by the Parliament March 164$\frac{1}{2}$, III. 297.

Milletière, Théophile Brachet, Sieur de la, account of, I. 7. a. 62. 67. 69. A French Huguenot who went over to the Roman Church, *ib.* Patronized by Cardinal Richelieu, I. 7. a. 35.

Epistle of, to Charles II. whilst in exile, urging him to join the Romish Church, at length, I. cxxi—cl. Account of it, I. xxvi, xxvii. Reply to it by Bishop Bramhall, see *Answer* to the Epistle of M. de la Milletière. Vain proposition of, in it, for a conference between divines of the two persuasions, I. cxxxv—cxxxix. 65—69; and see *Conference.*

Presented also a treatise upon Transubstantiation to Charles II., to which the Epistle was prefixed, I. cxl. 70. Notice of, and reply to it, by Bishop Bramhall, I. 7—23. Controversy of, with M. Aubertin, respecting Transubstantiation, I. cxl—cxlii. 7.

Rash censure of, upon Charles I., I. 27, 28. And upon Archbishop Laud, I. 28. Indiscretion of, I. 24. Vain dreams of, I. 64. Is enthusiastical, I. 62. 64. Impertinence and sauciness of, I. 69. Pen of, overruns his wit, *ib.* Unskilfulness of, in his "demonstrations," I. 70. Demonstrations of, requited upon himself, I. 72. Much fallen in the latter end of his Epistle from his former charity in seeking the reunion of Christendom, I. 80.

Mills, or *Warham, John*, Canon of Canterbury, present at Abp. Parker's election, III. 192, 193.

Miltitius, Carolus, dispute of, with Tetzel, respecting indulgences, II. 237.

Milton, John, author of the Defensio Populi Anglicani, I. xxxv. xciv. Answer to that book erroneously attributed to Bishop Bramhall, *ib.* and see *Rowland.* Ill character of, when at College, I. xciv. Quotation from his Two Books of Reformation respecting Cranmer and his fellow Bishops, III. 476.

Ministers of Christ; see *Bishops, Clergy, Keys Power of the, Priests.*

Ministry of Reconciliation; see *Reconciliation, Ministry of.*

Miramoulin, Emperor of Africa, alleged offer of the sovereignty of England to, by King John, IV. 560, 561. e.

Missal, The Roman, extract from the Missæ pro Defunctis contained in, inconsistent with Purgatory, I. 59. From the rubric in, for Good Friday, enjoining the adoration of the Crucifix, I. 46. z. Hyperbolical expression of, respecting the sin of Adam, from the hymn sung at the benediction of the wax tapers upon Easter Eve, V. 131.

Mission, or *Vocation*, is necessary for pastors, by admission of Protestants, V. 259, 260. Extraordinary and ordinary distinguished, V. 259. Christ the source of all authoritative, V. 262. The Church the channel through which by succession it is derived to ourselves, *ib.* The Bishop the ministerial agent in conferring, V. 263. But only the ministerial agent, and cannot therefore revoke the gift once made, *ib.* Certain requisites, to the actual exercise of, are within the sphere of secular authority, *ib.* See *Bishops, Jurisdiction.* English clergy have due, V. 258. 261. 264; and see *Orders, English.* And therefore have more than private interpretation of Scripture, V. 265—268; and see *Bishops English, Clergy English, Judgment, Scriptures.*

Mixed Actions, see *Actions.*

Mixed Government, see *Government*.
Moderation of the Church of England in their reformation, and towards other Churches; see *Church of England*.
Molinæus, see *Moulin*.
Monarch; see *Hobbes, King*.
Monarchomachia, the name of Part I. of a book entitled The Image of Both Churches; see *Patenson*.
Monarchy, the first form of government, and the most authorized by God, V. 139. Is of Divine institution, II. 307. 550. All lawful government from God, but monarchy so in the highest degree of eminency, II. 551; III. 319, 320; V. 139. See *Divine Right, King*. Dissolution of a, is not in the power of the subject, III. 330; and see *Subjects*. Supremacy in ecclesiastical canons is a necessary part of civil sovereignty, II. 105; III. 243, 244; and see *King*. Hobbes's errors respecting, IV. 557. 583. 596; and see *Hobbes*. The Church of England in favour of, I. 37. Moderation and excellence of the English, V. 140; and see *Kings of England*.
Claim to a, over the Church, by the Bishop of Rome; see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy*.
Monasteries, Archbishop Bramhall's opinion of, and of their suppression by Henry VIII., I. 118—120.
Monica, mother of St. Augustin, prayers of for his conversion, I. 77; V. 125.
Monmouth, Geoffrey of; see *Galfridus Monumetensis*.
Monothelites, The, heresy of, II. 90. Denied fundamental truth by evident implication, *ib*. See *Honorius* Pope.
Monsters, distinction between the universal cause and particular causes in the production of, IV. 114, 115. 372, 373. 454.
Montague, Edward, Baron Kimbolton, afterwards Earl of Manchester; impeached by King Charles I., III. 413, 414.
——— *Richard*, Bishop of Chichester—of Norwich, 1628—1641; an able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67. Quotation from, on the power of the Bishop of Rome, II. 283. Esteemed indulgent to the Romanists, but in truth one of their saddest adversaries, *ib*.
Monte, Cardinal de, letter of, to Charles V., against the Diet of Spires, II. 215.
Montgomery, Rev. Robert, violent proceedings of the Assembly General of St. Andrews against, in defiance of the King's prohibition, III. 255.
Montpelier, Parliament of; see *Parliament of Montpelier*.
Montrose, Marquis of; see *Graham, James*.
Moody, Mr., V. Pref. in fin.
Moors, The, banished from Spain by Philip III., II. 111.
Moral Goodness, see *Goodness*.
——— *Persuasion*, what meant by, IV. 136. 396. The will inclined but not necessitated by, II. 105; IV. 136.
More, Sir Thomas, refusal of, to take the oath of supremacy, I. 121; II. 189. Supposed to have died for it, I. 186. Was imprisoned for opposing Henry VIII.'s marriage with Anne Boleyn, I. 121; II. 99. 501. Was not beheaded for opposing the Regal supremacy but the Act of Succession, *ib*. Styled a martyr by Cardinal Bellarmine, I. 186. See *Fisher*.
Opinion expressed by, in his 'Supplication of Souls,' of King John's donation of his Kingdom to the Pope, I. 186, 187—189. Advice of, to Henry VIII., respecting Luther and the Papal Supremacy, II. 189. Speech of, when Speaker, to the House of Commons, III. 415.
Morgan, Henry, Bishop of St. David's 1554—1559, deprived and at what time, III. 232. Died before his successor's consecration, *ib*. and see *Young*.
Morinus, denies the delivery of the Patin and Chalice to be essentials of Priestly Ordination, V. 217. t.
Morla, admission of, respecting the supremacy of kings over ecclesiastical persons, I. 165.
Morley, George, D. D., Bishop of Worcester—of Winchester, 1660—1684; letter of, to Bramhall, respecting the latter's Just Vindication of the Church of England, I. xxviii. k.
Morocco, Emperor of, embassy from an, to Charles I. in 1625, III. 527. See *Miramoulin*.
Mortmain, Statutes of; see *Statutes of Mortmain*.
Morton, John, L.L.D., Bishop of Ely, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1478—1501; negociated the marriage of Henry VII. with the daughter of Edward IV., III. 476.
———, *Thomas, D.D.*, Bishop of Chester—of Lichfield and Coventry—of Durham, 1616—1659, III. 98. o.
Calumny concerning, that he owned and justified the Nag's Head Consecration in Parliament in 164[illegible],

I. xxix; III. 24, 25; and see *Talbot*. Supposed occasion of his doing so, III. 26. The pitiful mistakes in this part of the story, III. 27. Pretended Speech of, upon the occasion, III. 28. Solemn Protestation of, in denial of the story, III. 28—31. Which he repeated in his will, III. 29. s. Attestation to that denial, of the other Bishops then in Parliament and still surviving in 1657 (when the calumny was published), III. 6. 32. Similar attestation of the Temporal Lords then in Parliament, III. 5, 6. 33. Similar testimony of Lords Brudenell and Say, III. 9. Similar Attestation of Henry Scobel Clerk of the Upper House of Parliament, III. 34. And of three other Clerks of Parliament, III. 7. The witness to the story, James Touchet Baron Audley; see *Touchet*. Possible origin of the story, III. 37. See *Bramhall John, Consecration of Protestant Bishops Vindicated*.

Was one of the twelve Bishops committed to prison Dec. 29, 1641, by the House of Commons, III. 8. i.

Held the Church of Rome to be a true Church, III. 519.

Book of, respecting Episcopacy, attributed to Archbishop Ussher, III. 485. i.

Life of, by his chaplain Barwick; see *Barwick, John*.

Moscow, Patriarchs of; see *Church of Muscovy, Patriarchs of Moscow*.

Mother, the, hath more right in her child than the father, according to Hobbes, IV. 568, 569. But the contrary enacted by the Jewish Law, IV. 569. And by the Twelve Tables, *ib*.

——— *of God;* see *Mary the Blessed Virgin, Nestorius*.

Motion, kinds of, according to Aristotle, IV. 407. There are other kinds of, than local, *ib*. Spirits are moved as well as bodies, IV. 407. How God is the cause of all corporal, IV. 237. Beginning of, is from the mover, IV. 447. Texts of Scripture respecting, IV. 407.

Motives, cannot compel the will, II. 105; IV. 136; and see St. *Augustin*, St. *Gregory Nazianzen*, *Liberty*, *Moral Persuasion*, *Will*.

"*Motus Primo Primi*," explained, IV. 126. 161. 289. 379. 432.

Moulin, Charles du, a French lawyer, account by, of Frederic III.'s intended Pragmatic Sanction, I. 204, 205. Of the Pope's proceedings at the Council of Trent, I. 259. Of the right of Patronage and Investiture of Bishops pertaining to the Kings of England and of certain other countries, V. 203.

Moulin, Louis du, attack of, upon Bramhall, as favouring Popery, III. 503. b.

———, *Pierre du*, the elder, a French Reformed divine, an advocate for Episcopacy, III. 535. Correspondence of, with Bp. Andrewes upon the subject of Episcopacy, III. 518. 535. Maintained a necessity of sinning only in respect of our original corruption, IV. 398. Held a Prebend in England, in the reign of James I., III. 536.

———, ———, the younger, acknowledgment by, of Bramhall's moderation towards Foreign Reformed Churches, III. 518. Account given by, of Romish intrigues in England during the Great Rebellion, I. xcvii. x.

Mountrath, Earl of; see *Coote, Sir Charles*.

Mover, see *Motion*.

Movership, First, vague unmeaning honour of a, attributed by Mr. Serjeant to St. Peter, and to the Bishop of Rome; see *Bishop of Rome*.

Murder, texts respecting, IV. 338, 339. See *Kill, Magistrate, Nature State of*.

Muscovia, see *Russia*.

Muzal, Patriarchs of; see *Elias, Patriarchs of Muzal*.

Myton, near Hull, first burning of houses was at, in the Great Rebellion, III. 451.

N.

Nag's Head, Fable of the Consecration of English Bishops at the, in 1559, III. 38. 42—44; V. 190. Invented and first published in 1604, abroad, III. 39. f; V. 246. n. By Holywood, see *Holywood*. Origin and history of it, III. 39. f. And of the publications to the present time upon both sides of the matter, III. Pref. 39. f. The lying fable newly revived in 1654—9, by Father Talbot, III. 21. 38, 39. With certain (equally) fabulous additions, III. 22—24. One respecting Bramhall himself, III. 23. Another respecting Bishop Morton, that he had allowed and justified the alleged consecration, I. xxix; III. 25; and see *Morton, Thomas*. Revived by Bishop Kenrick in 1840, see *Kenrick*.

Summary of the evidence against the fable, III. Pref. 41. 101, 102; and see *Bishops English, Parker Matthew, Records, Registers*. Con-

tradictions and defects of its narrators, III. 41—44. respecting the alleged consecrators, III. 42. the persons consecrated, *ib.* the time of the consecration, III. 44. It was published too late, to be true, III. 45, 46. viz. not until 44 years after the event to which it professed to refer, III. Pref. 39. f; and see *Holywood.* Not mentioned by any Romanist writer prior to 1604, III. 45, 46. Alleged testimony of Roman Catholic writers to it prior to Holywood, viz. of Bristow, Reynolds, Stapleton, Harding, III. 46. 124—130. And of Osorius, Parsons, the Rheims Testament, Weston, III. 130. e. Dr. Stapleton says nothing of it, but rests his objection to English Orders on other grounds, II. 274; III. 108. 126; and see *Stapleton.* Bonner's suit against Bp. Horne had nothing to do with it, see *Bonner.* Not one syllable about it in Sanders's book De Schismate Anglicano, III. 46. 230. It was never heard of before 1600, III. 104. And was contradicted as soon as it was published, III. 97. 100. 104, 105. See *Mason.* It is rendered impossible by the strictness of English laws, III. 49. Want of necessity for such an act, disproves it, III. 50. No want of ordainers at the time, III. 51. Either of English Bishops, III. 52. Or of Irish, III. 47. 52. Competency of the then Bishop of Llandaff to ordain, III. 53; and see *Kitchin.* The ordainers rightly ordained, III. 56—58. See *Bale, Barlow William, Coverdale, Creagh, Hodgskin, Scory.* Want of advantage in such an act, disproves it, III. 63. Such a consecration as it supposes, both useless and ruinous to the agents engaged in it, III. 66. Civil records and ecclesiastical registers contradicted by it, in time, place, consecrated, consecrators, I. 270; III. 67—70. The same records and registers confirm our own relation, III. 71—94. 216—229. See *Records, Registers, Rymer.* It is contradicted by 8 Eliz. c. 1, III. 95. 109; and see *Statutes English,* 8 *Eliz.* c. 1. And by the De Antiquitate Britannicæ Ecclesiæ, III. 96. 229; and see *Antiquitate De Britann. Ecclesiæ.* And by Holinshead, see *Holinshead.* And by Stow, see *Stow.* Evidence against it, of all sorts of witnesses, both Protestant and Romanist, III. 97—103. Testimony of the Earl of Nottingham, III. 105. 151. Story respecting an admission of it by Abp. Bancroft, III. 105. Supposed authorities for it, are all resolved into Mr. Neale, III. 107; and see *Neale, Thomas.* Of the quality of the (so called) witnesses alleged for it, III. 40. f. 116, 117. Testimony (so called) alleged for it, independent of Mr. Neale, III. 117. l.

Probable foundation of the legend, a dinner at the Nag's Head Tavern after the *Confirmation* (by proxy at Bow Church) of the several Bishops who were first confirmed or consecrated in 1559, III. 101. 108. Barlow, Scory, Grindal, Cox, Sandys, and Meyrick, being all confirmed upon the same day, viz. Dec. 20, 1559, III. 101. 218, 219. 227.

S. N.'s argument from it against English Orders answered, V. 244—246.

Nalson, John, D.D., a book of, called The Countermine, erroneously attributed to Bramhall, I. xxxv.

Nations, Deputies of the; see *Council of Constance.*

———, *Law of;* see *Law.*

Natura Naturans—Naturata, explained, IV. 526.

Natural Acts, see *Actions of Inanimate Creatures.*

Nature, dictates the existence and worship of God, IV. 519. Charter of, authorizing self-defence, III. 347. See *Nature, State of.*

———, *Law of;* see *Law.*

———, *State of*, Hobbes's frantic notion of a, as a state of war of all against all, IV. 334. 562. 566—568. 572. 593—596. Wherein it is lawful for any man to kill any man, IV. 335. 582. This right of killing, which belongs to every man in the, being retained in civilized societies by the magistrate alone, and being the sole ground of his power of life and death, IV. 561, 562. 582. Such a state never existed even among the most barbarous tribes of America, IV. 566. 593. The real "state of nature," IV. 593, 594.

Natures, The Two, in Christ; see *Christ.*

Nauclerus, testimony of, that Bishops paid homage of old in Hungary to laymen, i. e. to the King, II. 417.

Neale, Sir Phelim O; see *O-Neil, Sir Phelim.*

——, *Thomas, B.D.*, Professor of Hebrew at Oxford 1559—1569, a Roman Catholic, account of, III. 45. z. The sole direct witness quoted by the original

publishers of the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f. 44, 45. 107. 152, 153. Other (so called) witnesses afterwards raked up, independent of, III. 117. l. Is himself a negative evidence against the fable, III. 102. Is no witness, properly so called, at all, III. 117.

Necessary, what is meant by, strictly speaking, IV. 257—259. Actions; see *Actions of Inanimate Creatures, Necessity.* Causes, see *Causes.*

————, 'necessitate medii,' 'necessitate præcepti,' distinguished, II. 492.

Necessitarians, various theories adopted by, IV. 141—159; and see *Necessity.* Distinctions taken by, in order to save their doctrine harmless, IV. 115—141; and see *Apuleius, Chrysippus, Euripides, Fate, Lipsius, Seneca, Stoics, Virgil.*

Necessitation, distinction between liberty from compulsion and liberty from, IV. 121. Compulsion and, are both opposite to liberty, IV. 133. Liberty not ignorance of, IV. 137. See *Liberty, Necessity.*

Necessity, antecedent, extrinsecal, and absolute, distinguished from consequent and hypothetical, IV. 29. 110. 271. 405. The question between Bramhall and Hobbes of the former, not of the latter, IV. 184, 185. Hobbes confounds the two, IV. 29. 271. 364. 405. Absolute, admitteth no contrary supposition, IV. 412. Antecedent, involves compulsion, IV. 121. Election and antecedent, inconsistent in the same act, IV. 49. Hypothetical, what it is, IV. 126. 266. Quotation concerning hypothetical, from Aristotle, IV. 25. c. 264. Hobbes's ignorant account of hypothetical, IV. 122. Of immutability, see *Luther.* Of infallibility, same as hypothetical, IV. 110; and see *Synod of Dort.* Of being and acting (essendi—operandi), distinguished, IV. 264. 375. Seen and unseen, distinguished, IV. 341, 342. Distinction made between Stoical and Christian, IV. 116, 117. Christian (so called), only disguised Stoical, IV. 118. See *Fate.*

What is, described, IV. 257—259. 264, 265. Is not identical with God's decrees, IV. 156, 157. Is inconsistent with liberty, IV. 265. True liberty a freedom from, as well as from compulsion, IV. 121. 133. 395.

Arguments against, from Holy Scripture, IV. 37—82; and see *Liberty.* Arguments against, from reason, IV. 82—115; and see *Liberty.* Story of Zeno, applied to shew, that necessity of sin implies equal necessity of punishment, IV. 82—84. Doctrine of, overthrows the whole framework of human society, IV. 84. Hobbes's answer to this both irrelevant and untrue, IV. 88. The opinion of, is inconsistent with piety, IV. 102—104. And destroys the variety and perfection of the universe, IV. 109. And the possibility of formal sin, IV. 112—115. Takes away the nature of sin, IV. 366, 367. And leaves no room for reward or punishment, IV. 64. Punishment unjust for sin committed through antecedent, IV. 90. No man can be justly blamed, upon the theory of, IV. 275. Law useless on the theory of, IV. 92. Every theory of, proves too much, in proving Adam a necessary agent, which yet Necessitarians deny, IV. 58. 62—64. The prescience of God proveth infallibility and not, IV. 236. 246—249. In what way the will of God is the, of all things, IV. 157. 422, 423. Temptation does not involve an antecedent, of sin, IV. 91. Election and, inconsistent in the same act, IV. 49. Horrid consequences of the doctrine of, IV. 63. Inconveniences of the doctrine of universal, IV. 240. It taketh away all care of doing well, *ib.* Abuses do not flow essentially from good doctrine as they do from universal, IV. 484. Six supposed witnesses for, answered, IV. 397, 398. Hobbes's theory of, IV. 32. 58. 159—173; and see *Hobbes, Reason, Will.* His definition of, IV. 257, 258. His argument to prove universal, answered, IV. 478. His contradictory assertions respecting, IV. 589.

Other theories of, IV. 58, 59. Answered, IV. 59—62; and see *Astrology, Body, Causes, God Foreknowledge of, Objects, Reason.*

See *Liberty*, and the other heads there referred to; *Necessary, Necessitarians, Punishment, Stoics.*

Necessity, Antecedent and Extrinsecal, a Vindication of true Liberty from, by Bp. Bramhall; see *Defence of True Liberty* &c.

Neil, Richard, D.D., Bishop of Rochester—of Lichfield and Coventry—of Lincoln—of Durham—of Winchester, Archbishop of York, 1608—1641; Bramhall highly esteemed by, I. v.

Neil, Sir Phelim O; see *O-Neil, Sir Phelim.*

Nestorianism, what it is, II. 90. 329; and see *Nestorians, Nestorius.* The English Church free from, II. 328, 329. 631. How far the Eastern Churches are free from, II. 328. 629. 631; and see *Churches, Eastern.* Confession of a Nestorian Patriarch held orthodox by the Church of Rome, II. 85; and see *Elias.*

Nestorians, The, questionable how far they still hold the heresy of Nestorius, II. 328. 629. See *Nestorianism, Nestorius.*

Nestorius, Patriarch of Constantinople, heresy of, II. 90. First publication of the heresy of, how made, I. 102. Was quitted immediately by his flock, *ib.* Was a heretic for rejecting the expression of "the Mother of God," see *Mary the Blessed Virgin.*

Neubrigensis, Gulielmus; see *William of Newbrigg.*

Newcastle, Marquis of; see *Cavendish, William.*

Newton, Henry, Ambassador from Queen Anne to the Duke of Tuscany, letters of, respecting the attachment of Grotius to the Church of England, III. 584.

Nicene Creed; see *Creed, Nicene.*

Nicephorus, see *Phocas.*

Nicholas, Sir Edward, letter to, from Archbishop Bramhall, I. civ, cv.

Nicolas I., Pope 858—867, answer of the Archbishops of Cologne and Trèves with the Synod of Metz to; see *Council of Metz.*

——— *II.,* Pope 1058—1061, condemnation of Berengarius by, in a Synod at Rome, I. 11—14. Strangely confused and erroneous doctrine respecting the Real Presence, held by, himself, *ib.* Was condemned for it, even by Schoolmen, I. 12, 13.

Bull of, to Edward the Confessor, I. 137. 230; II. 128. 145; and see *Edward the Confessor, Kings of England.* Letter of, to Edward the Confessor, II. 145. Letter of Edward the Confessor to, II. 143.

——— *V.,* Pope 1417—1455, concordat of, with the Emperor Frederic III., I. 210. 216. Death of, I. 204.

Nicomedians, The, letter to, from Constantine the Great, II. 226.

Nidd, Synod of; see *Council of Nidd.*

Nill, the opposite of 'to will,' IV. 221. Not to will a mean of abrogation between willing and nilling, *ib.* The same faculty willeth and nilleth, IV. 448. See *Will.*

Nilus, Archbishop of Thessalonica, rejected the Pope's sovereignty over the Church by Divine right, II. 634. 644. Held the Popes to be the cause, procreant or conservant or both, of all the greater schisms in Christendom, I. xvii; II. 307. 323; III. 540. See *Bishop of Rome, Bramhall John.* Is denounced by Possevin, although Mr. Serjeant praises him, II. 635.

Ninian, St., a Briton and Bishop, how taught the Christian Faith at Rome, II. 169. Said to have converted the Picts, II. 169, 170.

N., N.; see *Talbot.*

Noailles, Cardinal de, waved the question of the validity of English Orders in condemning Courayer, III. Pref. m.

Nobility, The, infringements of the rights of, by the Bishops of Rome, by the Scottish Presbyterians; see *Bishop of Rome, Court of Rome, Disciplinarians, Presbyterians Scottish.* Grudge of Hobbes against, IV. 563.

"*Nolumus Leges Angliæ Mutari,*" declaration of the English Earls and Barons in Parliament assembled, 20 Hen. III., I. 140. 150; II. 432. 514.

Nomination of Bishops, see *Investiture.*

Nonconformists, in England, seditious doctrines of the Puritans at the time of the Great Rebellion, condemned by the earlier, III. 314; and see *Protestation.* Yet the seeds of those doctrines may be found among them, III. 316, 317; and see *Cartwright, Field, Goodman Christopher, Humble Motioners, Martin Marprelate.* Protestation of the, to the King, in 1605; see *Protestation.* The clergy at the time of the Rebellion not inferior to the, III. 581. The, suffered for faction, the clergy for faith, III. 582. See *Baxter, Presbyterians English, Puritans.*

Norbert, Archbishop of Magdeburg, affirmed in the time of Gregory VII., and Paschal II., that Antichrist was to be revealed in that age, II. 451.

Norman Kings; see *Kings, Norman.*

Normans, The, outnumbered by the English for some time after the Conquest, II. 529.

Norris, Sylvester, D.D., or *S.N.,* an English Jesuit, died 1630, account of, V. 199. a. Author of a book against the English Church called the Guide of Faith, I. xxxiv. 272; V. Pref. 199. Answer by Bramhall to a portion of that book, relating to English Orders; see *Orders English, Ordination Protestants' Defended.* Affirmed the fable

of the Nag's Head Consecration in that book, in 1621, III. 39. f; V. 244. Arguments of, against English Orders, answered; see *Orders, English.*

Northampton, Parliament of; see *Parliament of Northampton.*

Northern Rebels, in behalf of Romanism, in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., Elizabeth; see *England.*

Northumberland, Duke of; see *Dudley.*

Northumbrians, vain effort of Ethelbert King of Kent to convert the, to Christianity, I. 267. Were converted by Aidan, a Scottish Bishop, I. 267. 273. Had their religion and orders from Scotland, not from Rome; see *Church Saxon, Mercians.*

Rebellion of the, in behalf of Romanism, in the reigns of Henry VII., Edward VI., Elizabeth; see *England.*

Norton, Thomas, book of, respecting Pius V.'s Bull against Queen Elizabeth, II. 245. h.

Norwich, Bishops of; see *Freake, Hall, Hopton, Montague, Parkhurst, Reppis, Scambler, Thirlby, Turbes, White Francis.*

Nottingham, Earl of; see *Howard.*

Novatians, The, separated themselves from the communion of the Catholic Church, I. 109. Condemned all others but themselves, II. 97. Yet the Catholics did communicate with, II. 46, 47. 312. 583. 585. Origin of the schism of, was in personal pique, about the canons of the Church, II. 75. See *Schismatics.*

Novels, see *Justinian.*

Nowell, Alexander, D.D., Dean of St. Paul's 1560—1601, joined in suppressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans at Frankfort in 1554, III. 317.

N. S.; see *Norris Sylvester.*

"*Nunc Stans,*" St. Thomas Aquinas's definition of eternity, IV. 154. 175. 426, 427. 481.

Nuncios, Papal, in England in Charles I.'s reign, no proof of Charles's popery, I. 34; III. 527; and see *Con, Rosetti.* In Ireland in 1645, see *Rinuccini.*

Nuns, some, took the veil through fear of the French in the time of William the Conqueror, and Henry I., II. 447, 448. See *Béguines.*

Nuremberg, Diet of; see *Diet of Nuremberg.*

Nye, Philip, M.A., a Presbyterian minister, colleague with Mr. Marshall as Commissioner from the English Parliament to the Scotch in 1643, V. 105. i.

O.

Oaths, do not according to Hobbes bind more than 'naked' covenants, IV. 550. Presbyterians declaim against, yet exact them, III. 305. See *Covenant League and, Pact.*

Oath of Allegiance, due to kings from clerks, and not to the Pope, II. 416—422. English laws to that effect, II. 421. Was taken by Lanfranc without scruple, II. 465. Oath of English Bishops in the time of Henry VIII. repugnant to the, I. 149; II. 137. 179, 180. 357.

—— *of Bishops to the Pope,* at what time taken, I. 148. Made a condition of the reception of the Pall, I. 135. 149. x. 193; II. 417.

How it came in, II. 417—420. 465. No such oath made to the Bishop of Rome in the time of Gregory I. (as Bellarmine affirmeth), II. 419. First exacted by Paschal II., I. 135. 149. x. 187; II. 418. Sworn to laymen before that time, see *Platina.* Extended in the time of Gregory IX. to all Prelates, whether Bishops, Abbots, or Priors, II. 419, 420. 465.

Treacherous change in the form of, from "Regulas Sanctorum Patrum," to "Regalia Sancti Petri," I. 148, 149; II. 137. 419. 465. Both forms included in the Oath of English Bishops in the time of Henry VIII., I. 149. x. Form of the, in the case of Henry Deane, Warham's predecessor in the See of Canterbury, II. 556, 557.

Expressly called an Oath of Allegiance and Obedience, in the edition of it by Pope Gregory XIII., II. 417, 418. Convicts the Pope of schism, II. 620. Perfectly inconsistent with the existence of a free General Council, II. 438.

Oath of English Bishops in the time of Henry VIII., repugnant both to the Oath of Allegiance and to their duty towards General Councils, I. 149; II. 137. 179, 180. 357. English laws opposed to the, II. 420—422. See *Homage, Pall.*

——, *The Coronation, of the Emperors of Germany,* taken before the Popes of Rome, and claimed by them as an oath to themselves, I. 149, 150. 202. Arguments of William of Occham against this, I. 150.

——, *The Coronation, of the Kings of England,* taken at Westminster, I. 149. The King equally king before and after his taking the, III. 369; and see *Clark, Dudley, Parsons, Wat-*

son. Does not oblige the King to assent to all bills tendered to him, III. 369. Form of denial—"Le Roy s'avisera"—no proof to the contrary, III. 370. Must be interpreted by custom, III. 370. Forms and precedents prove the, to respect past not future laws, III. 371—376. Form of the, in the reign of Richard I., III. 374. John, *ib.* Edward II. and III., III. 373, 374. Richard II., III. 372, 373. 375. Henry IV., III. 370. 372, 373. 419. Edward VI., III. 372. 376. James I. and Charles I., III. 371, 372. 419. Corrected by Henry VIII. with his own hand, III. 371, 372. Form of the, set forth by Dr. Cowel, III. 372. By Bracton, III. 373, 374.

Oath, The Coronation, of the Kings of France, taken ordinarily at Rheims, I. 149.

——, *The Et Cætera*, what it was, III. 305. r. 396.

——, *The Ex Officio*, justified, III. 305; and see *Calvin.*

—— *of Supremacy*, III. 284, 285. 326, 327. Justified, II. 217—222. 452. Contrived by Romanists, I. 120; II. 218. Chief framer of the, was Bp. Gardiner, I. 120; II. 191. 503. Taken by all of any note in England in 1534 except Sir Thomas More and Bp. Fisher, I. 120, 121. In what sense the English maintain it, II. 219—222. Might well be laid aside, II. 222. Form of the, in the case of Abp. Parker, III. 201. Invalidated the Solemn League and Covenant, as being a prior and inconsistent oath, III. 284, 285. See *Jurisdiction, Kings of England.*

Obedience to the Church, how far necessary, I. 111. To withdraw, not always criminous schism; see *Schism, Separation.* Of acquiescence, distinguished from obedience of conformity, I. 101, 102.

——— *to the Pope*, grounds justifying the substraction of, I. 179—192; II. 199—201. 307. 552—575. It was lawful to withdraw, from Papal authority corrupted, II. 197. See *Bishop of Rome, Church of England, Church of Rome, Kings of England, Papacy, Protestants.*

——— *to the Civil Magistrate*, enjoined by Scripture, III. 348. Evasions answered by which this doctrine is avoided, III. 348—364. St. Paul's injunction of, a precept, not a counsel, III. 349. Active, against the law of God or of nature, not due to kings, I. 168; II. 178; III. 351, 352; IV. 390. 491—497, 498, 499. 543, 544. To be paid to God rather than man, III. 351; IV. 196. 502. Instances from Scripture, IV. 529. Due to God rather than to princes where their commands clash, I. 168; and see St. *Augustin.* Yet due to the king and the laws in doubtful cases, I. 169. And unjust commands may be justly obeyed, *ib.* and see *Church, Primitive.* Passive, due to kings without limitation, I. 169; II. 178; III. 351, 352; IV. 390. 491—499. 543. Religion no reason for failing in, III. 307. 341, 342. Pernicious doctrine of the Observator to the contrary, III. 353. See *King, Monarchy, People.*

Obedience, The Roman, not the Universal Church, II. 599. The rest of Christendom Catholic as well as, II. 79. 574, 599. See *Bishop of Rome, Church Catholic, Church of Rome.*

———, *Book of*; see *Goodman, Christopher.*

Obédience, Pays d'; see *Pays d' Obédience.*

Obedientiâ, Tract De Verâ; see *Gardiner, Stephen.*

Objects, of the theory of necessity founded upon the physical and moral efficacy of, IV. 58, 59. 61. The moral efficacy of outward, IV. 143—147. Is partly our own fault, IV. 143. May be overcome by a settled resolution, IV. 144. Outward, may be dangerous, IV. 146. Power of, concerneth the moral philosopher, IV. 405. How the understanding giveth to, their proper weight, IV. 417. How they are, and how they are not, the cause of seeing, IV. 291. Hobbes's contradictory doctrine respecting the, of sense, IV. 588.

Oblivion, Act of; see *Act of Oblivion.*

Observator; see *Parker, Henry.*

Occham, William of; see *William of Occham.*

Occult Virtue, see *Virtue.*

Odoardus Barbosa, account by, of the mode of celebrating the Holy Eucharist among the Indian Christians, II. 202.

Œcumenical Church; see *Church, Catholic.* Council; see *Council, General.*

Œnewulphus, see *Deneulfus.*

Offa, King of Mercia 758—794, admitted Papal legates into England, II. 140.

Oglethorp, Owen, D.D., Bishop of Carlisle 1557—1559, deprived, and when, upon Queen Elizabeth's accession,

III. 232. Died before his successor's consecration, *ib.*; and see *Best, John.*

Olaus Magnus, titular Archbishop of Upsal, present at the Council of Trent, I. 258.

Oldcorn, Father, a Jesuit, account of, III. 100. r. Testimony of, to the authenticity of the Archiepiscopal Register of the consecrations of Abp. Parker and his fellow Bishops in 1559—1561, and to the consequent legitimacy of the succession of English Orders, I. 270; II. 272; III. 100. 153. That testimony not denied by the Bishop of Chalcedon, II. 272; III. 100. 153.

Omnipotence of God; see *God, Omnipotence of.*

O'Neil, Sir Phelim, enmity of, towards Bramhall, I. ix. lxvi. Pretended a commission from Charles I. to set on foot the Irish Rebellion, I. 34; III. 456.

Onuphrius Panvinus, Continuation by, of Platina's Lives of the Popes, II. 168. 629. Testimony of, that the Nestorians do not hold the heresy of Nestorius, II. 629.

Operative Will, of God; see *God, Will of.*

Ophites, The, II. 97.

Opinions, noxious, are not justly punishable unless they are also noxious in the eye of the law, II. 109; and see *Laws, Penal.*

Christian communion implies not unity in all, I. 105, 106. Different, do not make different religions, III. 504. Are not essentials of religion, II. 27. 312. 586. No obligation to censure every, that is contrary to our own, II. 585—587. Of an inferior nature, are not necessary to be known, II. 291. 492. Are changed into articles of Faith by Romanists, not Protestants, II. 492. 635. See *Articles of Faith, Articles The XXXIX, Creed, Errors, Faith, Protestants, Schism, Separation.*

To take away diversity of, is not impossible, III. 571. To allow such a diversity is the way to bring about a reconciliation among Christians, *ib.* See *Baxter, Bramhall John, Reconciliation.*

Optatus, high expressions of, respecting the Holy Eucharist, V. 163. z. Comparison by, between schism and idolatry, II. 29. 31. Account by, of the origin of the Donatist schism, I. 110. Condemnation of the Donatists by, II. 105. 203. 312. Calls the Donatists his brethren in Christ, II. 31. 312. 585.

Ordain; see *Orders, Ordinal, Ordination.*

Order, Primacy of; Principality of; Superiority of: see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy*, St. *Peter, Primacy.*

Orders, Holy, whether a Sacrament or no; see *Ordination.* Necessary to the being of a Church; see *Church Particular, Hieronymus.* Succession of, from Christ; see *Christ.* Through the Church; see *Apostolical Succession, Church Catholic.* Through Bishops, see *Bishops.* Episcopacy the safest way, since Episcopal, only are allowed by all, III. 474. How far Episcopal, are essential to a Church; see *Bishops.* Character conferred in, indeleble; see *Character.* Power conferred in; see *Absolution, Consecration of the Elements, Keys Power of the, Ordination, Priests, Remission of Sins.* Jurisdiction a distinct thing from, see *Jurisdiction.* Valid although conferred in schism or even in heresy, III. 57; and see *Ordination.* Or by Antichristian prelates, V. 258. Disabilities for, V. 238. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning, IV. 533, 534; and see *Hobbes.*

Orders, English, form and matter of; see *Consecration of Bishops, Ordinal English, Ordination of Deacons—of Presbyters, Sacrifice.* Intention of the English Church in conferring; see *Intention.* Are neither of the order of Aaron nor of that of Melchisedec, but (like all other Christian priests) of a third order distinct from both, V. 224—226. Imply due mission, V. 258—261; and see *Mission.*

The Church of England arrogates to herself no new, see *Church of England.* In England before the Church of England had any commerce with Rome, V. 252; and see St. *Augustin* of Canterbury, *Luidhardus.* Many English Bishops received their, from British Bishops, I. 161, 162; II. 531; V. 252; and see *Church, British.* The Saxon Church in part had her, from Scotland, not from Rome; see *Church Saxon, Mercians, Northumbrians, Scots.* Derived in England by lineal succession through the Primitive Church, II. 39. Derived (properly speaking) from Heaven, not from Rome, V. 252. How received through Rome, V. 251, 252. Not wholly received through Rome, V. 252; and see

Whitaker. Derived from Rome, III. 135. t. What is meant by mixed ordination as spoken of, I. 113; II. 94.

Bishops who conferred the, at the Reformation, not suspended from their Episcopal functions, as revolters from the Catholic Church, heretics, or schismatics, III. 56, 57; V. 204—210. Were not wholly devised or conferred by secular persons at the time of the Reformation, V. 226—237; and see *Bishops English, Bonner, Cromwell Thomas, Henry VIII.*

Valid in the time of Edward VI., as regards the form of ordination; see *Bishops English, Consecration of Bishops, Ordinal English.* As regards the mode of nominating Bishops in that reign, V. 201; and see *Bishops English, Edward VI.*

Legitimate succession of, at the accession of Queen Elizabeth, II. 272; and see *Bishops English, Nag's Head Fable, Parker Matthew, Records, Registers.* In no way dependent at that time for their validity upon the sanction of Parliament, V. 235—237. Legal at that time as well as valid; see *Bonner, Horne, Jewel, Ordinal English, Stapleton.*

Legitimate succession of, at the time of the Great Rebellion; see *Bishops English, Bramhall John.*

Re-ordination of English clergy by the Church of Rome, no argument against the validity of; see *Re-ordination.* Arguments of Romish doctors against, answered, III. 124—127; and see *Bonner, Bristow, Harding Thomas, Reynolds William, Stapleton.* Alleged testimony of English lawyers against, III. 56—58; V. 242—244; and see *Brook, Sir Robert.* And of English Protestant writers, III. 134—136; V. 246—248; and see *Fulke, Whitaker.*

Assurance of English clergy in the truth, legality, and validity of, III. 170. Romish orders more doubtful than, V. 189.

Arguments of Father Talbot against; see *Nag's Head Fable, Talbot.* Of S. N.; see *Norris Sylvester, Ordination Protestants' Defended.*

Orders, Presbyterian, how far valid; see *Bishops.* Foreign Reformed, disallowed by Abp. Whitgift in the case of Travers in 1584, III. 135. t. Scotch, allowed by Abp. Grindal in 1582, *ib.* How far allowed by Abp. Bancroft in 1610; see *Andrewes, Bancroft.* How far disallowed by Abp. Bramhall in practice in 1661; see *Bramhall, John.* And in theory; see *Bishops, Bramhall John, Moulin Pierre du.*

Orders, Romish, form and matter of, character conferred in, intention in conferring, power conferred by, ministers of; see *Consecration of Bishops, Ordination of Deacons — of Presbyters, Priests.*

Denial of, by English writers, explained, V. 248, 249. Might be said to be "lost," because corrupted or abused, V. 248. Or to be lost in England relatively to English subjects, V. 249. See *Fulke, Whitaker.*

Are more doubtful than English, V. 189; and see *Intention.*

Ordinal, English, of Edward VI., V. 227, 228. When drawn up, III. 58. c. History of the, *ib.* Is a part of the Book of Common Prayer, III. 81, 82. Statutes respecting the, II. 274, 275; III. 58. c. 80, 81; V. 235—237.

Defence of the validity of the; see *Consecration of Bishops, Ordination of Deacons—of Presbyters.* Judged valid by Cardinal Pole in Queen Mary's reign, III. 60, 61. 115. g. 116. 129. And by Pope Paul IV., *ib.* How far judged invalid by Bonner and others, III. 114. g; and see *Bonner, Re-ordination.* Form and matter of the, in Episcopal Consecration, as published in 1549, III. 163, 164. 205. p. And in 1552, *ib.* As used at Abp. Parker's Consecration, III. 205. 212. Form and matter of the, in Episcopal Consecration, justified, III. 163, 164. Form and matter of the, in the Ordination of Priests and Deacons; see *Ordination of Deacons —of Priests.*

Illegal but not invalid in the reign of Queen Mary, III. 58, 59. Alleged condemnation of the legality of the, by the Judges in Queen Mary's reign, III. 56. 58; and see *Brook, Sir Robert.* How far legal at the accession of Queen Elizabeth, III. 79—82. Expressly abrogated by Queen Mary and not expressly restored (in the first instance) by Queen Elizabeth, II. 274, 275; III. 81; V. 240. Effectually restored by Elizabeth, even as regards legality, *ib.* by Sanders's own admission, III. 110. Statutes in the reign of Elizabeth respecting the, III. 79. p; V. 235—238. 240. See *Bonner, Harding Thomas, Horne, Jewel, Stapleton.* Dispensative clause in Queen Elizabeth's

second commission for confirming and consecrating Abp. Parker, probably had reference to objections against the legality of the, III. 79—83; and see *Commission or Royal Assent.*

Changes in the, in 1662, III. 164. m. 167. t.

Declares for Episcopacy, III. 471; and see *Bishops, Church of England.*

Ordination, a Sacrament, but in a larger sense, and not one of the two generally necessary to salvation, I. 272; III. 81. Whether or no a Sacrament, V. 189. 215, 216.

Called in the Primitive Church χειροθεσία, χειροτονία, Imposition of Hands, V. 216.

Matter and form of; see *Consecration of Bishops, Ordinal English, Ordination of Deacons—of Presbyters.* Matter and form of, are essentials of Christ's own institution, according to the Roman Schools, III. 106. Yet are changed by themselves by Papal delegation, *ib.* and see *Consecration of Bishops, Priests.*

Character conferred in, indeleble; see *Character.* Dangerous consequences of the Romish doctrine of Intention, as regards; see *Intention.* Jurisdiction is from, but princes apply the matter; see *Emperor, Jurisdiction, King.* How the right of ecclesiastical jurisdiction follows the right of, I. 159—162; II. 151. 528. 536, 537; and see *Church British—of England, Jurisdiction, Patriarchate of Rome.*

Succession in; see *Orders, Holy.* Of mixed; see *Orders, English.*

Of heretics, valid, so it have no essential defect of matter and form, III. 57; V. 204, 205. 209. 257, 258. There may be power of, where there is not purity of doctrine, *ib.* St. Athanasius and Pope Julius I. concerning Arian, V. 204, 205. Schismatical, similarly valid, III. 57; V. 209.

If otherwise valid, not rendered invalid by the acceptance or ratification of the temporal power, V. 227.

——— *of Bishops*, see *Consecration of Bishops.*

——— *of Deacons*, power conferred by the; see *Deacons.* Delivery of the Book of the Gospels to the deacon elect, added as the essential matter of the, by the Roman Church at the Council of Florence, V. 219. But not instituted by Christ, as is plain from the very nature of the case, *ib.*

Ordination, English; see *Orders English, Ordinal English.*

———, *Episcopal*; see *Bishops, Orders.*

——— *of Presbyters*, essential matter and form of the, according to Scripture and the Primitive Church, III. 126; V. 216; and see *Council of Carthage* the Fourth. Texts relating to the true matter and form of the, III. 126. Essential form of the, alone necessary, V. 187.

Different forms of the, in the Eastern and Western Churches, III. 165—167; V. 187. Both lawful, but the Western cometh nearer to the institution of Christ, III. 166.

Form and matter of the, in the Greek Church, I. 271; II. 61, 62. 275; III. 165, 166; V. 216. The, in the Greek Church, has not the double form and matter of that of the Roman, *ib.* Nor does it specify the peculiar office of Priests more than the English form, I. 271; II. 275; III. 165, 166; and see *Sacrifice.* Yet it has always been acknowledged valid by the Church of Rome, I. 271; II. 275; V. 216; and see *Goar, Habert, Martene, Morinus.*

Romish doctrine of a double matter and form in the, II. 39; V. 215, 216. It was introduced by the Council of Florence; see *Council of Florence, Eugenius* IV. Pope. It is contrary to the institution of Christ, V. 216. to the Primitive Church, II. 36. 39, 40; V. 216. to the practice of the Greek Church, I. 271; II. 61, 62. 275; III. 165, 166; V. 216. to the doctrine of many among the Roman Catholics themselves, V. 217; and see *Goar, Habert, Martene, Morinus.* Not in use in all places and in all times in the Church, V. 187. 218. Nothing in Holy Scripture to prove it, V. 217, 218. Nor in tradition, V. 218. Argument for it, from the Council of Florence, V. 219. See *Chalice, Patin.*

Form of the, in the Church of England, sufficient, in regard to the peculiar office of the Priesthood, III. 165—168; V. 187. It gives power to offer evangelical sacrifice, II. 88. 275, 276. 333. 642; III. 165; V. 188. 213; and see *Sacrifice.* And a ministerial power of remitting sins in Absolution, III. 167; V. 190. 213. and in Baptism, *ib.* and in the Lord's Supper, see *Lord's Supper.* It is lawful, V. 187. It does not give power to ordain or confirm, V. 189. Matter and

form of the, in the Church of England justified, I. 271, 272; III. 58. 126. 165; V. 214. Essential form of the, retained by Protestants, V. 187. Change in the form of the, in the Ordinal of 1662, III. 167. t. See *Ordinal, English.*

A Presbyter by delegation from the Pope may confer, according to the Roman Schools, II. 71; III. 26. 106; V. 247. 253. See *Aerians, Hieronymus.*

Power conferred by the; see *Absolution, Baptism, Consecration of the Elements, Keys Power of the, Lord's Supper, Priests, Remission of sins, Scriptures, Sin.*

Ordination, Protestant; see *Orders English, Orders Presbyterian.*

———, *Of Protestants'*, in answer to two papers brought by Captain Steward from Father Robinson; by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part iv. Discourse vi., V. 181—191. Contents of, V. 183. Account of, I. xxxiv.

———, *Protestants' Defended*, being an answer to the Twentieth Chapter of the Guide of Faith, by S. N., D.D.; by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part iv. Discourse vii, V. 193—278. Contents of, V. 195—198. Account of, I. xxxiv. 272, 273. Where and when written, V. 199. b. 228. k. 246. n. See *Bramhall John, Norris Sylvester.*

———, *Romish;* see *Orders, Romish.*

Ordo Romanus, expressions from the Administration of Baptism in the, respecting the Nicene Creed, II. 480.

Origen, language of, concerning repentance, V. 158. s. Supposed testimony of, concerning the Sabbath, no proof of the observation of it by the Patriarch Job, V. 23. Is a witness to the observation of the Lord's Day through the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age, V. 42. z. 43. d. See *Merciful Doctors, Origenists.*

Origenists, error of the, that the punishments of the damned are not eternal and may be lessened, IV. 246. 354. 538; and see *Hobbes, Merciful Doctors.*

Orkney, Bishop of; see *Leslie.*

Orleans, University of; see *University of Orleans.*

Ormond, Marquis (afterwards *Duke*) *of;* see *Butler, James.*

———, *Marchioness of;* see *Butler, Elizabeth.*

Orrery, Earl of, see *Boyle, Roger.*

Osius, see *Hosius.*

Osorius, a Portuguese Bishop, attack of, upon English Orders, in 1569, had nothing to do with the Nag's Head Fable, III. 130. e. Humphrey's reply to, at the time, *ib.*

Ossory, Bishop of; see *Bale.*

Oswald, Bishop of Worcester in the reign of Edgar, II. 141.

———, King of Northumberland 634—643, conversion of, to Christianity, I. 267. 273. Persuaded Berinus to preach to the West and South Saxons, I. 267.

Otho I., The Great, Emperor of Germany, exercised the right of calling ecclesiastical Synods, I. 206. Called the Council of Rome in 963, to settle the right succession to the Papacy, *ib.* Deposed Pope John XII., and caused Leo VIII. to be chosen in his place, I. 173. 206. Election of Popes and investiture of Bishops surrendered to, by Pope Leo VIII., I. 213; II. 403.

—— *III.*, Emperor of Germany, determined the succession to the Papacy between John XVII. and Gregory V., I. 173.

—— *IV.*, Emperor of Germany, I. 213.

——, a Papal legate in England, constitutions made by, received in England only so far as confirmed by the King, II. 429.

Othobone, legate in England of Pope Urban V., constitutions made by, not received in England, I. 139; II. 433. Except so far as they were confirmed by the King, II. 429.

Oxford, Bishops of; see *Bridges, Curwyn, Goldwell, King Robert, Parker Samuel.*

———, *University of;* see *University of Oxford.*

Oxomensis, Petrus; see *Petrus Oxomensis.*

P.

Pacianus, language of, respecting repentance, V. 158. q. Motto from, respecting the names of Christian and Catholic, prefixed to Bramhall's Just Vindication of the Church of England, I. 84. 112.

Pacification, Acts of; see *Acts of Pacification.*

Pacts, right and wrong antecedent to human, IV. 94, 95; and see *Law.* Hobbes holdeth no man bound to accuse himself under any circumstances by any, IV. 556. And makes a distinction between a covenant and a "naked" pact; see *Hobbes.*

Padua, University of; see *University of Padua.*

Paganism, ancient primitive sense of the word, II. 619.

Pall, the ensign of an Archbishop, when first used, II. 173. Not originally obtained from Rome, *ib.* What the, originally was, *ib.*

Was a free gift in the time of Pope Gregory the Great, II. 459. Sold afterwards for large sums of money, I. 180. 193. 215; II. 459. Exactions for receiving the, complained of by King Canute, I. 193. 264. And redress promised, but not given, *ib.*

Oath imposed upon Bishops at the reception of the, I. 149. x. 193; II. 417, 418; and see *Oath of Bishops to the Pope, Paschal II.* Pope.

Sending the, from Rome to the British Churches, was an arbitrary imposition of the Popes, I. 193. And the first badge of the Patriarchal authority of Rome in Britain, I. 162; II. 172. The first, sent into Britain, was after six hundred years, I. 162. 193. See *Church British, Patriarchate of Rome.* The, belonging to the see of St. David's, was not obtained from Rome, II. 173; and see St. *Samson.*

Palladius, whether sent by Pope Celestine to convert the British or Irish Scots is disputable, but whithersoever sent, he was rejected, II. 170. 301. Sent by the Pope "in his own stead," according to St. Prosper, II. 536.

Palm Sunday, Catechumeni went to petition for Baptism upon, in the primitive Church, II. 479.

Palmer, Herbert; see *Cawdrey, Daniel.*

Pandulphus, Cardinal, legate of Innocent III. to King John of England, I. 184. 188. 191.

Panormitane, Cardinal, makes the original of Shrift human, V. 223. q.

Panvinus, Onuphrius; see *Onuphrius Panvinus.*

Paolo, Padre, I. 143; II. 521. Doctrine of, respecting the temporal power of the Pope, I. 242, 243. Controversy of, against the Popes, for the republic of Venice, I. 142, 143. 242, 243.

Papacy, the primitive, i. e. a beginning of unity or principality of order, allowed by the Fathers, and not disputed by the Church of England; see *Andrewes, Beginning of Unity, Bishop of Rome,* St. *Cyprian, James I., Montague Richard,* St. *Peter, Primacy.* In this sense, was an excellent means of concord, II. 307.

The, as now maintained, i. e. an absolute spiritual monarchy by Divine right over the Church, is neither by Divine right nor by human, III. 547. Is proved neither by Scripture, nor by Tradition, nor by Fathers; see *Bishop of Rome.* Is contrary to Councils, and denied by many of the Romanists themselves; see *Bishop of Rome.* Was never acknowledged by the Church Universal, II. 197. 306. Parallel between the, and monarchy and Episcopacy, by Mr. Serjeant, answered, II. 307. 549, 550. Is made by the Pope and Court of Rome an essential article of the Catholic Faith, II. 243; and see *Bishop of Rome, Primacy.*

The, as now maintained, is the cause, either procreant or conservant or both, of all the greater schisms of Christendom, I. xvii. 97. 246. 248; II. 307. 323; III. 540; and see *Nilus.* Is a cause of the separation between England and Rome, II. 194. 242. The real differences between the see of Rome and the Church and Kingdom of England are about the, II. 351. 402. 457—461. Was not extirpated out of England, but restricted to its right limits, II. 551. See *Bishop of Rome, Church of England, Court of Rome, Henry VIII., Schism, Separation.*

A moderate, might prove useful, but dangerous, II. 282; and see *Melancthon.* Political advantages of the, II. 613. The, and not the Roman religion, accused of being a source of sedition, II. 606—608; and see *Bellarmine, Bishop of Rome, Court of Rome.* Is to be judged by what it is, not by what it ought to be, II. 322.

The Church not charged with erecting the, as it now is, but the Pope and his party, II. 482.

The, does not stand firm in the countries which have not been reformed, II. 323.

Papacy, The, i. e. the Papal dominions, laws in, similar to those of Mortmain, I. 143; II. 521.

Paphnutius, shrewd advice of, at the first Council of Nice, III. 407.

Papia, Council of; see *Council of Pavia.*

Papists, see *Romanists.*

Paradoxes, what are, IV. 400, 401. Hobbes's, see *Hobbes.*

Pardons, see *Indulgences.*

Parents, may kill their children according to Hobbes, IV. 434. 566. Yet

have no natural right over them, IV. 568.
Parfew, see *Wharton*.
Paris, see *Louis XIV.*
——, *Archbishopric of*, first established in 1622, I. 190. r.
——, *Archbishops* and *Bishops of*; see *Du Bellay, Retz.*
—— *Breviary*, see *Breviary.*
——, *Matthew*; see *Matthew Paris.*
——, *Parliament of*; see *Parliament of Paris.*
——, *University of*; see *Gerson, Sorbonne, University of Paris.*
Parishes, when said to have been first introduced, III. 490.
Parker, Henry, author of Observations upon King Charles I.'s Answers and Expresses, in 1642, styled by Bramhall the Observator, I. xxxi; III. Pref. Account of, III. 313. a. And of replies to his book, *ib.* Serpent Salve a reply to, see *Serpent Salve.* Other tracts by, of the same kind, III. 349. q. 401. u. 454. b.
———, *John*, eldest son of Archbishop Parker, III. 85. f. 217.
———, *Matthew, D.D.*, Archbishop of Canterbury 1559—1575, consecration of, III. 68. 84—86. Summary of the evidence for it, III. Pref. Evidence corroborative of the Register of it, III. 85. f. 87—94. 150. p. 216, 217. Record of it at length from the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 85, 86. 203—206. from the Transcript of the Register of it in C. C. C. library Cambridge, III. 210—213. Certificates to the authenticity of this Transcript, III. 213—215. See *Nag's Head Fable, Records, Registers.*

Congé d'Eslire for the election of, to the see of Canterbury, III. 71. 190. 216. Election of, by the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury, III. 72. 189—198. 216. Consent of, to his election to the see of Canterbury, III. 198, 199. First commission for the confirmation and consecration of, from the Rolls, III. 72, 73; and see *Commission or Royal Assent.* Letter to, from Sir N. Bacon, accompanying it; see *Bacon, Sir Nicholas.* Second commission for the confirmation and consecration of, from the Register, III. 52. 67, 68. 74, 75. 178, 179. 216; and see *Commission or Royal Assent.* Confirmation of the election of, III. 68. 83, 84. 175—203. 216. By whom consecrated, III. Pref. 56. 84. 174. 204, 205. 212. 216. Contradictions between Mason, Sutcliffe, and others, concerning his consecrators, III. 131. Consecrators of, were themselves consecrated, III. Pref.; and see *Barlow William, Coverdale, Hodgskin, Scory.* Bishop Barlow not the consecrating Bishop at the consecration of, III. 136. 205. o. Objections against the legality of the consecration of, III. 79. p. Dispensative clauses in the second commission for the confirmation and consecration of, see *Commission or Royal Assent.* Inthronization of, III. 68. 206—210. 216. Restitution of Temporalties to, III. 68. 94. 216, 217. Homage of, III. 94. 216. Oath of Supremacy as taken by, III. 201. Letters patent directed to, for the confirmation and consecration of Bishops Cox, Grindal, and Sandys, III. 67. 92, 93. 218, 219.

Register of, as Archbishop, kept with peculiar care, III. Pref. Account of its contents, III. 173. a. And genuineness, *ib.* See *Registers.*

Book of, De Antiquitate Britannicæ Ecclesiæ, or The Lives of Seventy Archbishops of Canterbury, III. 11, 12. 85. f. 92. 120—123. 229; and see *Acworth, Antiquitate De Brit. Ecclesiæ, Jocelyn, Yale.*

Day of the death of, III. 123. g. 217. Entry of the death of, in a blank space in his Archiepiscopal Register, III. 175.

Life of (in Latin), entitled Matthæus, in the De Antiq. Brit. Eccl., III. 85. f. 92. 121. z. Which is omitted in the second edition of that work, at Hanau, III. 122. It was probably written by Jocelyn, III. 12. d. 121. z. Another Latin Life of, contained in the "Historiola" of C.C.C. Cambridge, III. 12. f. 85. f. 92. q. Puritan translation of the latter Life of, III. Pref. 12, 13. 85. f. 92. q. Account of this translation and of its probable author, III. 12. f.
Parker, Samuel, D.D., Bishop of Oxford 1686—1688, published Bramhall's Defence of himself against Baxter, with a Preface, in 1676, I. xxxi; III. Pref. Contemptuous reply to that Preface by Andrew Marvel, III. Pref.
Parkhurst, John, B.D. Bishop of Norwich 1560—1574, joined in repressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans in 1554, at Frankfort, III. 317. Proofs of the consecration of, III. 223, 224.
Parliament, English, called of old Senatus Sapientum or Wittenagemot, III. 378. 380; V. 229.

Is not a merely temporal Court, V. 229, 230. Comprehends, besides the King and the nobility, also the Clergy and the Commons, III. 156; V. 229, 230. 237. Of Bishops' votes in the, III. 156. 339; and see *Bishops, English.* A complete, includes King, Lords, and Commons, III. 361; V. 141. Functions respectively of King, Lords, and Commons, III. 361. Eldest sons of Barons permitted to be present in the, to make them fit by degrees for taking part in them, IV. 564. How many members supposed necessary to make an, II. 638.

Convocation sits always at the same time with the; see *Convocation, English.*

Of the power of the, III. 378—399. Is not the essential body of the kingdom, III. 379. 381. Hath no power to call kings to account, III. 382. Nor to depose them, III. 384. Is subordinate to the King, III. 378. 386. Submissive behaviour of the, to Henry VI., III. 422. Has no power to make ordinances, even for the safety of the kingdom, without the King's consent, III. 360—362. Of the regal power of dissolving the, III. 392. Without the King's consent, is no Parliament, III. 398. Power of the King over a, II. 637, 638. Limitation of the sphere of the power of the, in the reign of Edward III., III. 390. Some subjects out of the sphere of the, and how, III. 394. With whom the legislative power in England doth rest, in the King alone, or in the King and the, jointly; see *Kings of England.*

Privileges of the, the King the source of them, III. 327, 328. 415. Privileges of the, may not supersede the constitution, III. 415. May not claim privileges of which subjects are incapable, III. 416. Privileges of the, must be measured by the laws of the land, III. 417. Privilege of the, pleaded by the Observator against Charles I.'s attempt to arrest the five members, III. 414.

Uses of the, III. 404; V. 140. Office of the, how limited to advice, III. 395. 397, 398. Useful both for counsel and for other ends, III. 403. Office of the, both for counsel and consent, and how, III. 389, 390. Limitation of the office of the, in the form of summons 23 Edw. I., III. 388. A complete, is the true salve for the sores of the commonwealth, III. 430. Yet many have been inconsistent with each other, *ib.* Instances of this, III. 430—432. And many have been abused to private ends, III. 433. The Observator's commendation of the, III. 423—426.

The Puritans disliked Bishops in the, yet wished ministers admitted, III. 304; and see *Presbyterians, English.*

The first, according to Stow, was in the 16th of Henry I., III. 379, 380. But differed much from the Parliaments of the time of Charles I., III. 380. Ancient parallels to the, III. 429. But very different from those of England, *ib.*

The Mad, in 1258, III. 430. Of Westminster in 1259, *ib.* Of Winchester in 1265, *ib.* Of Northampton temp. Hen. III., see *Parliament of Northampton.* Of Lincoln in 1301, see *Parliament of Lincoln.* The Lay, in 1404, III. 371. 419. 430. Of Batts in 1426, III. 430.

The, of 1534, assented to the overthrow of the Papal supremacy in England, I. 114; II. 99. 501. Was not compelled to do so, II. 99. 189. 501—504. The members of it were not Henry VIII.'s ministers, II. 267. Acts of the, by which Papal power was cast out of England in Henry VIII.'s reign, II. 396—399. See *Bishop of Rome, Hammond, Henry VIII., Statutes English.*

Treatment of the, by Queen Elizabeth; see *Elizabeth* Queen of England, *Wentworth Peter.*

The Young, in 1621, III. 405. 430.

Dissension of the, from the King, in the time of Charles I., how injurious to the Commonwealth, III. 297. Was not more interested in justice and tranquillity than other subjects, III. 407, 408. Serving the, not the Court, the way to promotion at that time, III. 410. Courtiers as well as countrymen were on the side of the, III. 408. No unnatural thing that a minority in the, should overpower a majority, III. 411—413. Nothing to justify the, in keeping Hull against the King, III. 443; and see *Hotham Sir John, Hull.*

Acts of the; see *Statutes, English. Parliament, French;* see *Parliament of Montpelier—of Paris.*

————, *Irish,* purposes for which the, of 1661, was summoned, V. 140

—142. Bramhall Speaker of the House of Lords in it; see *Bramhall, John.* Sir Audley Mervyn Speaker of the House of Commons in it, V. 136. d. Speeches of Bramhall to Sir Audley Mervyn upon his presentation as Speaker, V. 136—143; and see *Speech.* Answer of the Lords Justices to him as Speaker of the House of Commons, respecting its privileges, V. 143, 144. Sermon preached by Abp. Bramhall before the House of Commons in the; see *Bramhall John, Sermon.*

Acts of the; see *Statutes, Irish.*

Parliament, Scottish, Scottish Discipline injurious to the, by placing Presbyteries above it, III. 273. in authority, III. 275. in power, *ib.* in privileges, III. 276. See *Disciplinarians, Presbyterians Scottish.*

The, of 1560, ratified by a General Assembly of the Kirk of its own authority, III. 265. Of 1583, declared the Raid of Ruthven treason, III. 267. Of 1584, at Edinburgh, statute of, to restrain the Disciplinarians, III. 246. Which was protested against by the Ministers at its first promulgation, III. 266. Of 1594, at Edinburgh, on behalf of the Earls of Angus, Huntley, and Errol, III. 261. Of 1596, at Falkland and Dunfermline, to the same end, *ib.* Of 1606, restored their temporalties to the Scottish Bishops, III. 247. Of 1612, at Edinburgh, re-established Episcopacy, *ib.* Of 1648, little account made of, by the Presbyterians, III. 273, 274.

——— *of Batts,* A.D. 1426, III. 430.

———, *The Lay,* A.D. 1404, III. 371. 419. 430.

——— *of Lincoln,* under Edward I., A.D. 1301, declared the supremacy of the King, III. 384.

———, *The Mad,* A.D. 1258, III. 430.

——— *of Montpelier,* first erected by Philip the Fair in 1302, III. 379.

——— *of Northampton,* temp. Hen. III., prohibited the departure of any persons from the kingdom without the King's leave, II. 422.

——— *of Paris,* first erected by Philip the Fair in 1302, III. 379. Remonstrance of the, offered to Louis XI. against the Pope, Pro Libertate Ecclesiæ Gallicanæ, I. 222. 225; II. 426.

———*of Westminster,* A.D. 1259, } III.
——— *of Winchester,* A.D. 1265, } 430.

———, *The Young,* A.D. 1621, III. 405. 430; and see *Wotton, Sir Henry.*

Parma, Duke of, interdicted by Pope Urban VIII., I. 246.

Parmenianus, the Donatist, II. 106. 585.

Παροξυσμὸς, in Acts xv. 39, explained, I. 98.

Parpalia, Vincentio, sent by Pope Pius IV. to Queen Elizabeth, to negotiate an agreement between the Churches of England and Rome, allowing the English Liturgy, II. 85; III. 115. g.

Parry, attempt of, to assassinate Queen Elizabeth, II. 114; III. 331.

Parsons, Robert, the Jesuit, an able polemic writer for the Church of Rome, I. 67. But a virulent one, I. 32. Published a treasonable book in 1594, under the name of Doleman, against Queen Elizabeth, to prove the Infanta of Spain the right heir to the throne of England, II. 114; V. 121. Erroneous doctrine of, that the King is not king until after his Coronation, III. 370. Acknowledges, that kings are obliged to protect their subjects from the tyranny of ecclesiastical judges, I. 170. Grounds of denial by, in a tract published under the name of Hewlet, of English Orders, III. 130. e. Alleged testimony of, to the Nag's Head fable, III. 39. f. 46. a. 117. l.

Participantes, use of the term in the Primitive Church, I. 104.

Paschal II., Pope 1099—1118, devised a new oath for Archbishops when they received the Pall, I. 135; II. 418. The first that ever exacted an oath of fidelity to the Popes, from any foreign Bishop, I. 187; II. 418. Dispute of, with Henry I. of England and Henry V. of Germany respecting investiture of Bishops, I. 213; II. 406. Canon of, claiming the right of such investiture, itself sheweth the novelty of the claim, II. 418. Resolute speech of, to the agent of Henry I. of England, respecting investitures, II. 406. Similar speech of Henry I.'s agent to him, see *Henry I.* of England. Letter of English Bishops to, on behalf of the Church of Canterbury, II. 410. Complaint of, to Henry I., that appeals were not made to Rome from England, II. 439. Is called Antichrist by Norbert Abp. of Magdeburg, and by the Waldenses, II. 451. See *Bishops, Bishops English, Investiture, Oath of Bishops to the Pope.*

Paschalis, see *Sergius I.* Pope.

Paschasius, the first difference about the

Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, occurred in the days of, not long before the year 900, I. 11.

Passion, actions done in; see *Actions of Free Agents*. Often prevails against reason, IV. 415. Of fear and other passions, IV. 134—136; and see *Fear*.

Passive Obedience; see *Obedience*.

Pastoral Staff, see *Crozier*.

Pastors; see *Apostles*, *Bishops*, *Clergy*, *Priests*.

Patenson, Matthew, a Roman Catholic physician, book of, published in 1623 and 1653, entitled Jerusalem and Babel, or The Image of Both Churches, historically discussing whether Catholics or Protestants are the better subjects, II. 103. 246. 500; V. 206. g. Denies that Protestants are either heretics or excommunicated, V. 206.

Pates, Richard, Bishop of Worcester, when, where, and by whom consecrated, unknown, but probably in 1555, III. Pref. Deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, in 1559, and at what time, III. 232.

Prosecuted King Henry VIII.'s divorce from Queen Katherine as ambassador at the Court of Spain and at Rome, II. 188. Supported the Royal supremacy, II. 505, 506; III. 58, 59. Character given of, by Sanders, *ib.* Fled abroad upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, and continued abroad till his death, II. 246; III. Pref. a. Date of the death of, III. 232.

Patin, delivered to the Priest elect at his ordination in the Romish Church, with the Chalice, V. 215. p. This delivery held to be of the essentials of Priestly Ordination by the Church of Rome, *ib.*; and see *Ordination of Presbyters*. It was first added as an indifferent ceremony, V. 216. And afterwards obtruded upon the Church as an essential, *ib.* No mention in Scripture of such ceremony being needful, *ib.* Nor is it thought so by many Roman Catholic doctors, V. 217; and see *Goar*, *Habert*, *Martene*, *Morinus*. Nor is it practised in the Greek Church, see *Ordination of Presbyters*.

Patriarchs, The Old, of the Old Testament, did not observe the Sabbath, prior to the time of Moses, V. 20, 21. Evidence of the Fathers to this, V. 22—27. The Sabbath possibly observed by them out of piety, but not as a law, V. 25.

Patriarchs, are not of Divine right, I. 260. A human institution, yet no mere innovation, I. 259; III. 553. Not instituted by the Apostles unless in the earlier sense of the term, as meaning simply national Primates, I. 154; and see *Primates*. Are allowed by the Apostolic Canons, I. 154, 155; III. 553. How they came into existence in the Church, I. 155. Were created, either by General Councils, or in particular countries by provincial synods or sovereign princes, or by voluntary submission, or by custom, I. 259, 260. Owed their patriarchal power to the customs of the Church and the canons of the Fathers, II. 539. Ecclesiastical Primates established by Emperors in every province where there were civil Exarchs or Protarchs, I. 105; II. 180. 183, 184; and see *Cartwright, Church Catholic—Particular—Primitive*. Established by Emperors sometimes for other reasons, I. 156. Conversion does not confer patriarchal rights, I. 268; II. 133. See *Justinian, Council of Chalcedon—of Constantinople—of Nice—The Trullan, Patriarchate of Alexandria—Antioch—Cæsarea—Carthage—Constantinople—Ephesus—Jerusalem—Justiniana Prima—Rome*.

Priority among the, allowed to be due to the Bishop of Rome; see *Bishop of Rome*. The five great; see *Patriarchs, The Five Great*. Many Primates remained independent of the five great Patriarchs, I. 156; and see *Cyprian Privilege*. Metropolitans and, alike swallowed up by the Papacy, I. 265.

Subject to the Emperors, I. 176. Have been changed by the Emperors, I. 177; II. 548. Not wholly independent of kings in ecclesiastical affairs, II. 548, 549. English kings had power to alter the Patriarchates of, within their own dominions, II. 185. See *Emperors*, *King*, *Kings of England*.

Wherein consisted the authority of, I. 265. Independent of a single superior within their own Patriarchates, II. 149. It is schismatical to resist lawful, lawfully proceeding, III. 554. May err, and abuse, forfeit, or usurp power, I. 101. Power of, not of Divine right, and therefore may be either quitted, forfeited, or transferred, I. 260. In what cases obedience may be withdrawn from, I. 101; II. 183—187. Abuse of the

power of, no argument against its use, III. 555.

The Church of England has not in separating from Rome substracted obedience from its lawful; see *Church of England, Cyprian Privilege, Gregory I.* Pope, *Patriarchate of Rome.*

Power of the Pope as a, is inconsistent with his claim to an ecclesiastical monarchy, I. 60; and see *Bishop of Rome.*

Are admitted by the Eastern Churches, III. 557. And by the Æthiopian Church, *ib.* and see *Albuna.* And by Calvin, III. 553.

Patriarchs, The Five Great, or *Protopatriarchs,* viz. of Alexandria, Antioch, Constantinople, Jerusalem, Rome; preeminence of, and how it arose, I. 155, 156; II. 165. 185. Called "Universal Bishops," and why, I. 253. Question, whether "the First See," in the language of certain ancient Councils, does not mean any of the, and not the Patriarch of Rome alone, I. 255. Many Primates remained independent of the, I. 156; and see *Cyprian Privilege.*

Ought to have been summoned to the Council of Trent, whether heretics or not; see *Council of Trent.*

——— *of Abyssinia,* none present at the Council of Trent, II. 636. See *Church of Abyssinia.*

——— *of Æthiopia,* see *Church of Æthiopia.* Called by the title of Albuna, III. 557. Were subject to the Patriarchs of Alexandria, *ib.*

——— *of Antioch,* case between the, and the Cyprian Bishops, I. 156; and see *Cyprian Privilege.*

——— *of Armenia,* none present at the Council of Trent, II. 636.

——— *of Constantinople,* see *Patriarchate of Constantinople;* St. *Chrysostom,* St. *Gregory of Nazianzen, Ignatius, John, Menna, Nestorius; Cyril Lucar, Jeremiah, Joseph.*

——— *of Ethiopia,* see *Patriarchs of Æthiopia.*

——— *of Moscow, of Muzal,* none present at the Council of Trent, II. 636. See *Elias.*

——— *of Rome,* see *Bishop of Rome.*

Patriarchal Church, a, may apostate or fail, I. 43. See *Patriarchs.*

——— *Dignity, Government, Power;* see *Patriarchs.*

Patriarchate; see *Patriarchs, Patriarchal Church.*

Patriarchate of Alexandria, settled, as "of ancient custom," by the first Council of Nice, I. 155. Why preferred above Antioch, I. 177. Authority of the, over the Abyssinian Church; see *Church of Abyssinia.* Over the Æthiopian, see *Church of Æthiopia.*

Patriarchate of Antioch, settled, as "of ancient custom," by the first Council of Nice, I. 155. See *Patriarchate of Alexandria.*

———, *British;* see *Primates, British.*

——— *of Cæsarea,* why established there (prior to the Council of Chalcedon), rather than at Jerusalem, I. 177.

——— *of Carthage,* independent of Rome, I. 132. By imperial privilege, I. 130. 178. Made so by the Emperor Justinian of his own authority, notwithstanding the pretences of the Bishops of Rome, I. 178; II. 184. 234.

——— *of Constantinople,* at first a suffragan Bishopric under the Metropolitan of Heraclea, I. 177; II. 184. Established as a Patriarchate by the Canons of the Fathers in the Councils of Constantinople, Chalcedon, the Trullan, A.D. 381. 451. 692, I. 130. 155. 177. 261; II. 165. 184. 249. 290. 488—490. 534. 640. In spite of the opposition of the Popes, I. 155; II. 249. On account of the dignity of the city, I. 155. 159. 177; II. 184. Advanced to be the second Patriarchate, I. 177. Above Alexandria and Antioch, II. 640. Equalled to the Patriarchate of Rome, I. 155. 177. 261; II. 165. 184. 249. 290. 488. 490. 640; III. 553. Notwithstanding the protest of the Pope's legates, II. 249. Asiatic, Pontic, and Thracian dioceses assigned to the, I. 155. 177; II. 489. As large as all the Churches of the Roman diocese put together, II. 86. Authority of the, over the Church of Russia; see *Church of Muscovy.*

——— *of Ephesus,* destroyed, and how; see *Church of Ephesus.*

——— *of Justiniana Prima,* established by imperial privileges, I. 130. By the Emperor Justinian of his own sole authority, I. 178; II. 184. 234. Devices of the Popes to subject the, to themselves, I. 138. 178; and see *Gregory I.* Pope, *Vigilius* Pope.

——— *of Rome,* settled by the first Council of Nice, as "of ancient custom," I. 155. 261; II. 488; III. 553. By the Council of Sardica, in

honour of the memory of St. Peter, I. 155; and see *Council of Sardica.* By the Council of Chalcedon, as the seat of the Emperor, I. 155. 159. 177. 261; II. 184. 249. 290. 374. 488. 534; III. 553. Equalled by the last named Council to the Patriarchate of Constantinople; see *Patriarchate of Constantinople.*

Included (according to Ruffinus) originally only the Suburbicary Churches, i. e. a part of Italy, Sicily, Sardinia, Corsica, I. 156; and see *Primates of Arles — of Lyons — of Milan—of Vienne.*

Never extended to England for the first six hundred years, I. 130. 152—156. 158—164. 193. 259, 260; II. 34. 151, 152. 166. 300. 525. 641. Proof to the contrary rests upon our adversaries, I. 158, 159. Is not justified (in the inclusion of England) by subsequent usurpations, I. 158; and see *Cyprian Privilege.* The first badge of such authority in Britain was the sending of the Pall, see *Pall.* The British Islands were not, nor ought to be, subject to the jurisdiction of the, I. 259, 260. Was quitted in Britain, when the Popes claimed to be universal Bishops and spiritual monarchs of the Church, the two claims being inconsistent, I. 60. 152. 158. 260, 261; and see *Bishop of Rome.* Was forfeited, by rebellion against General Councils, I. 261, 262; and see *Bishop of Rome.* And by abuse, I. 262—264. Was lawfully transferred from the Popes by the king and nation of England, I. 264; and see *Church of England, Kings of England.* Bishop Bilson's summary of the claim of the Bishop of Rome to the, whether in Britain or elsewhere, I. 152. Britain not therefore included in the, because converted by Gregory the Great; see *Church British—of England—Saxon, Gregory I.* Pope, *Scots.*

Patricians, The, an heretical sect, II. 97.

Patrick, St., converted the Irish Scots, II. 169. Sent into Ireland by Amator, II. 170.

Patripassians, The, an heretical sect, II. 97.

Patronage, the, of a church, adjudged by the Roman Rota to the founder of it, II. 404. The, of Bishops; see *Investiture.* Of Bishops in England, belongs to the King; see *Kings of England.* Of Bishops in France, belongs to the French King; see *Kings of France.* In Apulia, in Hungary, in Scotland, in Spain; see *Kings of Apulia — of Hungary — of Scotland—of Spain.* In the Empire, see *Emperors.*

Paul, St., St. Peter superior to, but in primacy of order only, II. 135, 136; and see St. *Peter.* Called "the Head of Nations," by St. Gregory the Great, II. 154. Dispute of, with St. Barnabas, did not presently render them both schismatics, I. 98. Calumnies of the Ebionites against, I. c; V. 59.

Justifies and commands separation (between members of the Church) in some cases, I. 100, 101. The Pope is not included by, among the bands of unity, II. 319. 608. Doctrine of, respecting the rejection of Ishmael and of Esau, explained at length, IV. 67—78. Injunction of, to obey superiors, is a precept, not a counsel, III. 349; and see *King, Obedience.*

——— *III.,* Pope 1534—1549, Report to, of Nine Selected Cardinals, in 1538, respecting abuses in the Church, I. 208. 278; II. 385. 402. 445, 446. 448; and see *Pole, Reginald.* Remonstrance in it respecting selling dispensations, II. 385. 402. 446. 448. See *Cardinals.*

Treacherous and tyrannical conduct of, against England, II. 262. Bull of, excommunicating and interdicting England, decreed in 1535, published in 1538, I. 129. 257; II. 97, 98. 112. 238. Condemnation by, of the title of Head of the Church in England, founded on an error, II. 409. See *Henry VIII., Kings of England.*

Letter of, to the Emperor Charles V. against the Council of Spire, II. 215. Bull of, granting certain privileges to the Venetians, I. 243.

——— *IV.,* Pope 1555—1559, Cardinal Pole sent by, to reform and reconcile the English Church, in the reign of Queen Mary, I. 208. Acknowledged the validity of English Orders at that time, III. 60—63. 114. g. 116. 129. Revoked Cardinal Pole's legantine power in England, and designed Father Peyto in his stead, II. 216. 442, 443. but Queen Mary refused to receive him, *ib.* See *Peyto, Pole Reginald, Re-ordination.*

——— *V.,* Pope 1605—1621, Bull of, against the Venetian Republic, I. 240. Slighted and in conclusion beaten by the Venetian Republic, see *Venice.*

Pavia, Council of; see *Council of Pavia.*

Pays d' Obédience, what is meant by, I. 223. France not reckoned by the Church of Rome among the, *ib.*

Peace, between the Church of Rome and Protestant Churches; see *Reconciliation*. Grotius, Wicelius, and Cassander, were true lovers of, III. 511. Hobbes's principles are destructive of public, IV. 550.

Pelagianism; see *Germanus, Lupus.*

Penal Laws, against the Romanists in England; see *Laws, Penal.*

Penance, see *Penitence.*

Penda, King of Mercia 625—655, converted to Christianity by Finanus, a Scottish Bishop, I. 268.

Penitence, or *Penance*, retained by the Church of England more purely than by the Church of Rome, but not under the notion of a proper and general Sacrament, I. 56. See *Absolution, Confession, Indulgence, Repentance.*

Penitentiary Tax; see *Taxa Pœnitentiaria.*

Pennington, Alderman, impeached by King Charles I., III. 413, 414.

Pentecost, The Day of, fell on the first day of the week in the year of our Lord's Crucifixion, V. 51, 52. Who were present at that day, and upon whom the Holy Spirit fell, *ib.*

People, power not from the, III. 324. Cannot grant lawful dominion, III. 318. Have not granted it in England, III. 319. Power of the kings of England not from the, III. 378. Power not inherent in the, III. 323. And though it were so, yet in England compact has superseded the original right, *ib.* See *God, King, Kings of England, Monarchy.*

The King greater than the, collectively as well as singly, III. 325. 395; and see *Languet.* Both by Scripture and by law, III. 326. The King bound to protect his, III. 337. The King is a servant to his, yet his crown not therefore a donation from them, III. 345. The King not bound to grant the request of the, to their own hurt, III. 421. See *King, Obedience, Subjects.* Law of prerogative, not contrary to, but grounded upon, the law of 'salus populi,' III. 339.

The Presbyterians assert the supremacy of the, III. 302. Power inherent in the, a favourite doctrine of the Presbyterians, III. 323. Rights of the, a vain plea advanced for the Scottish rebellion, III. 285. See *Disciplinarians, Parker Henry, Presbyterians.*

Pepin, conduct of the Popes Zachary I. and Stephen III. towards, I. 131; III. 301.

Perjury, remarkable judgments upon, III. 310, 311. Texts relating to, III. 311.

Perkins, William, opinion of, respecting the difference between Romanists and Protestants, II. 204. And the duty of separating from the Church of Rome, II. 271. Ignorant citation of, by Hobbes, as favouring fatalism, IV. 382.

Permission; Permissive Will; see *God, Will of.*

Perron, Cardinal, letter of Isaac Casaubon to, III. 568, 569.

Persuasion; see *Liberty, Moral Persuasion, Motives.*

Pertenna, ancient palace of the Roman Emperors at York, so called, I. 159, 160.

Perth, General Assembly of; see *Assembly General of Perth.*

Petavius, quotation from, concerning Merits, I. 57.

Peter, St., was Bishop of Antioch before he was Bishop of Rome, II. 164, 165. 240. 290; III. 549. Not clear from Scripture that he ever was in Rome at all, II. 290. 378. Legend concerning the return of, to Rome, from Hegesippus; see *Hegesippus.* Only three persons said to have been ordained by, during his supposed twenty-five years Bishopric at Rome, I. 162. The Patriarchate of, therefore, not large enough to include Britain, *ib.* Whether Britain was converted by, II. 168; and see *Church British, Joseph of Arimathæa.* Legendary anecdote concerning the repentance of, IV. 359.

Had a primacy of order among the Apostles, II. 371, 372. 468, 469. 483. 609. 612; III. 549. Or a beginning of unity, II. 606. A principality given to, but one of order, II. 320. 483. Not of jurisdiction or of power, II. 372. Not a monarch, II. 136. How Head of the other Apostles, II. 155. 372. The other Apostles Pastors as well as, I. 153, 154; II. 156, 157. 372. Even Bellarmine makes the Apostles equal in power, see *Bellarmine.* St. John and, expressly declared to be equal by a Council of Alexandria, I. 153; II. 469. The Keys given to St. John as well as to St. Peter, II. 135. Comparison between St. Paul and, II. 136. Superior to St. Paul, *ib.* i. e. in primacy of order, *ib.* See *Apostles.* Neither he

nor any ancient Bishop ever pretended to a Headship of power, II. 609. See *Headship, Papacy, Primacy.*

No title in the Bishop of Rome to a spiritual monarchy as successor of, II. 136. 293. 302. The Pope is the successor of, but not by Christ's ordination, II. 290. 373. But if at all, from the Church, II. 374—377. See *Bishop of Rome.* A principality of order given to the successors of, but not in the see of Rome, II. 320. 483. Some Fathers fix the primacy to the Chair of, and to his successors for ever, III. 550. Yet this Chair is not fixed to Rome, II. 142, 143. 160—166. 240; III. 551. either by Divine right or by human, II. 160—166. See *Bishop of Rome, Papacy, Rome.* The Church of Rome is the boat of, and not Noah's Ark, II. 269; and see *Church of Rome.*

The Church of England has no controversy about the primacy of, II. 371, 372. Primacy of, in a right sense, approved or not opposed by the Church of England, II. 468, 469. 483. 609. 612. Allowed in that sense by Bp. Andrewes, see *Andrewes.* By Bp. Montague; see *Montague, Richard.*

Peter of Blois, see *Petrus Blesensis.*

—— *D'Osma*, see *Petrus Oxomensis.*

—— *the Hermit*, prediction of, respecting King John of England, I. 188.

—— *Lombard*, held the controversy between the Eastern and Western Churches respecting the Procession of the Holy Spirit from the Son, to be a mere logomachy, II. 629. First devised the septenary number of the Sacraments, I. 55. Distinction drawn by, between the external Sacramental ablution of Baptism, and its interior grace, V. 172. Quotation concerning Baptism cited by, from St. Gregory the Great, V. 177. Saying of, that "Deus potentiam Suam Sacramentis non alligavit," V. 175. l. Yet affirms the absolute necessity of circumcision under the Law, V. 177. x. Distinction from, between the several kinds of liberty, IV. 33.

—— *de Luna*, see *Benedict XIII.*

Peterborough, Bishops of; see *Laney, Pole David, Scambler.*

Peterpence, originally given to the Bishops of Rome as an alms, but in process of time exacted as a tribute, I. 149; II. 282.

Petilian, a Donatist, II. 235, 236.

Petition, the most proper kind of prayer, IV. 107. Definition of, from St. Thomas Aquinas, *ib.*

Petition of the clergy of Ireland to Charles II., I. cii—civ.

Petrus Blesensis, 1159—1181, one of the first that used the word Transubstantiation, I. 24. n.

—— *Oxomensis*, or *D'Osma*, Professor of Theology at Salamanca, held the original of Shrift to be human, V. 223. Condemned for it in 1479 by Pope Sixtus IV., V. 223. r.

Peyto, or *Petus, Father*, legate nominated by Pope Paul IV. to succeed Cardinal Pole in England, but not suffered by Queen Mary to enter the realm, II. 216. 442, 443. Nominated also by the Pope to the Bishopric of Salisbury, but excluded from it by Queen Mary, III. 232. Death of, III. 232.

Pharaoh, in what sense the glory of God was either the end or the consequence of the sin of, IV. 69. In what sense God is said to have hardened the heart of, IV. 70. 230. 310. Law of, to drown the male children of the Israelites, IV. 89. 325.

Philip of Macedon, built a city called Poneropolis (or Badmanchester) for all the seditious fellows in his kingdom, III. 430.

—— *IV.*, or *the Fair*, King of France, appeal of, from Pope Boniface VIII. to a General Council, I. 220. Donation of England to, by Pope Innocent III., I. 191. First erected (in 1302) the Parliaments of Paris and Montpelier, III. 379.

—— *II.*, King of Spain, title of Head of the Church in England dropped by Queen Mary upon her marriage with, I. 29. y.

—— *III.*, King of Spain, banished the Moors out of Spain in 1609, 1610, II. 111. Caused the book of Baronius to be publicly burned, and why, I. 229.

—— *IV.*, King of Spain, remedied upon his own authority the abuses of the Court of Rome, in the Kingdom of Castile, I. 230. 235; II. 220; and see *Urban VIII.* Pope.

Philo Judæus, passage from, respecting the law of nature, IV. 329. 368. The loadstone, II. 211; III. 319.

Phocas, Emperor in 602, an usurper, I. 158. Murdered his predecessor, I. 131. Was flattered and countenanced by Pope Gregory the Great, *ib.* Granted the title of Universal Bishop to Pope Boniface III., I. 131. 158. 269; II. 302. 305. The Papal

pretence of universal supremacy is more from, than from St. Peter, II. 302. 537. See *Bishop Universal, Bishop of Rome.*

Phocas, Nicephorus, Emperor in 963, law of, limiting gifts to the Church, I. 142.

Phœnix Plume, sent by Pope Clement VIII. to Ter Owen, II. 112, 113.

———, *The,* a collection of Tracts so called; Papers printed in, prove Charles II. to have died a Romanist, V. 122. b.

Picts, The, I. 194. Said to have been converted to Christianity by St. Ninian; see St. *Ninian.*

Pierce, Rev. Thomas, controversy of, with Baxter, from which arose the latter's attack upon Bramhall, I. xxxi; III. 503. b.

Pierson, Andrew, B.D., almoner of Abp. Parker, account of, III. 199. y. A witness to Abp. Parker's consent to his election to the see of Canterbury, III. 199.

Piety, definition of, from St. Thomas Aquinas, IV. 104. Hobbes mistaketh it to be an act of the judgment, *ib.* And to respect the power only of God, *ib.* Necessity inconsistent with, IV. 102.

Pilkington, James, B.D., Bishop of Durham 1561—1577, proof of the consecration of, III. 226. Commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 68. 226. First nominated by Queen Elizabeth to the see of Winchester, III. 224. 226. One of the Bishops alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.

Pimentel, Domingo, Ambassador from Philip IV. of Spain to Pope Urban VIII., I. 231.

Pisa, Council of; see *Council of Pisa.*

Πίστις, taken for the Creed; see *Faith.*

Pithou or *Pithœus,* see *Libertéz de l'Eglise Gallicane.*

Pitseus or *Pitts,* testimony of, to the story of Dinoth, II. 542.

Pius II., or *Æneas Sylvius Piccolomini,* Pope 1458—1464; retracted as Pope what he had asserted as a private doctor, I. 121. Condemned appeals from the Pope to a General Council, I. 214. Appeal of the School of Sorbonne from, to a General Council, I. 220. Deterred the Emperor Frederic III. from making a Pragmatic Sanction, I. 204. Persuaded Louis XI. for a time to revoke the Pragmatic Sanction, I. 222. See *Frederic II.* Emperor.

——*IV.,* Pope 1559—1565, Protest of Charles IX. of France against, at the Council of Trent, I. 221. 258; II. 640, 641. Courteous conduct of, towards England, II. 262. Offered Queen Elizabeth to confirm the English Liturgy and allow Communion in both kinds, if the Church of England would join that of Rome, II. 85. 275; III. 115. g.

Twelve new articles added by, to the Creed, i. e. at the Council of Trent, I. 26. 72; II. 200. 239. 241. 325. 365. 472. 475. 575. 592. 615. 622. And enforced upon all Christians by a Bull of, as necessary to salvation, I. 25, 26. 167. 247; II. 40. 201. 325. 472. 475, 476. 492. 585. 634. Creed of, so enforced, convinces the Roman Church of schism, I. 167. 247; II. 241. 325. 622, 623. And was a cause of separation to Protestants, II. 37. And a just cause of separation, I. 167; II. 56. 200. No tradition for the twelve new Articles of the Creed of, II. 463. Article of the Creed of, respecting the Papal supremacy, II. 239. 620.

Pius V., Pope 1566—1572, Bull of, entitled Bulla Cœnæ, what it was, II. 242; and see *Bulla Cœnæ.* Treacherous and tyrannical conduct of, against England, II. 262. Bull of, against Queen Elizabeth, I. 248; II. 112. 245; and see *Norton Thomas, Recusants, Romanists English.* Negotiations of, for the murder of Queen Elizabeth, II. 112. 114. Passage suppressed by, in a tract of Cardinal Cajetan; see *Cajetan.*

Placaert, see *Brabant.*

Placita, or *Pleas,* an. 23 Edw. I., V. 264. An. 24 Edw. I., I. 141; V. 264. An. 32 Edw. I., I. 141; II. 298. 442; V. 264. An. 34 Edw. I., *ib.* An. 1 Hen. VII., *ib.*

Plain English, a seditious pamphlet so called, in 1643, III. 402.

Platina, Papal Librarian, Lives of the Popes by, I. 160. 162. 172, 173. 184. 204. 254; II. 92. 168. j. 234. 405. 416. 424. 451. 629. t; V. 257. Confesses, that Bishops before the Popedom of Paschal II. swore fealty to laymen, I. 187; II. 405. 417. 465. Acknowledged the story of Pope Joan in the first edition of his Lives of the Popes, V. 277.

Plato, Year of, IV. 403. Anecdote of, to prove free will, IV. 144. Character given by, of Athenian Sophisters, IV. 542. Division by, of the three parts of government, II. 141.

Pleas, see *Placita.*

Pœna Damni—Sensûs, distinction between, V. 178. See *Infants.*

Pœnitentiuria, Taxa; see *Taxa Pœnitentiaria.*

Poissy, Colloquy of; see *Colloquy of Poissy.*

Poland, law in, similar to the law of Mortmain, I. 142; II. 521. Protestants in, not "unchurched" by English Episcopal divines, III. 517.

———, *Church of;* see *Church, Greek.*

———, *Kings of;* see *Kings of Poland.*

Pole, David, L.L.D., Bishop of Peterborough 1557—1559, named in the first commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker, but did not act, III. 72. Deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, and when, III. 73. c. 232. Date of the death of, III. 232.

——, *Reginald, D.D.*, Cardinal, Archbishop of Canterbury 1555—1558; Report of, as one of the Nine Selected Cardinals, to Pope Paul III. upon the corruption of the Church; see *Cardinals, Paul III.* Pope. Testimony of, to the necessity of a reformation in the Church, I. 208. Consecrated to the see of Canterbury the Sunday after Cranmer was burned, III. 149. Report of, to Pope Paul IV., respecting the reformation of the English Church, I. 208. Treatment of the English clergy by, in Queen Mary's reign, with respect to re-ordination, III. 60—63. 114. g. 116. 129. Acknowledged the validity of the English (i. e. Edward VI.'s) Ordinal, *ib.* See *Ordinal English, Paul IV.* Pope. Bucer's dead body taken up and burned at Cambridge by order of, I. 48; III. 472. Legantine power of, in England, revoked by Pope Paul IV., but his intended successor excluded the realm by Queen Mary, II. 216. 442, 443; and see *Peyto.* Date of the death of, III. 71. 232.

Opinion of, in his book De Concilio, on the title of Head of the Church as applied to kings, I. 115; II. 409. Respecting regal and ecclesiastical supremacy, II. 218. Distinction drawn by, between regal and sacerdotal Heads of the Church, I. 115, 116; II. 218. 409.

Register of, as Archbishop of Canterbury, III. Pref.

Polemic Writers, see *Writers.*

Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna, kept the feast of Easter at the time of the Jewish Passover, V. 47. Yet not condemned for so doing as a heretic or a schismatic, because he did not maintain the custom to be of universal necessity, *ib.* See *Easter.*

Polycrates, Bishop of Ephesus, did not observe the feast of Easter always on a Sunday, II. 176. Observed it at the time of the Jewish Passover, V. 47. Yet not condemned by the Church as a heretic or schismatic for so doing, because he did not maintain the custom to be of universal necessity, *ib.* Schismatically excommunicated by Pope Victor for so doing, I. 130. 161; II. 74. 139. 591. 636; and see *Irenæus, Victor I.* Pope.

Poneropolis, see *Philip of Macedon.*

Pontefract, the birthplace of Archbishop Bramhall, I. iii. cxiv. n.

Pontus, diocese of, assigned to the Patriarchate of Constantinople upon its establishment, I. 177; II. 489.

Pope, see *Bishop of Rome.*

Popery; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Papacy, Romanists.* No plot for introducing into England in Charles I.'s reign, III. 524; and see *Baxter, Bishops English, Bramhall John, Divines Episcopal, Reconciliation.* A similar design as weakly laid by Baxter to the charge of Grotius, see *Grotius.* Vindication of Bramhall from the Presbyterian charge of, as managed by Baxter; see *Baillie, Baxter, Bramhall John, Moulin Louis du.*

Porphyry, quotation from, respecting analogical matter, IV. 445.

Portugal, war for the independence of, with Spain, in 1640—1665, I. 237; IV. 574; V. 208; and see *John IV.* King of Portugal.

————, *Bishops of; Church of:* see *Bishops Portuguese, Church of Portugal, Kings of Portugal, Lusitaniæ Gemitus, University of Lisbon.*

————, *Kings of;* see *Kings of Portugal.*

————, *Bleatings of;* see *Balatus Ovium.*

Possevin, Father, censure passed by, upon Archbishop Nilus, II. 635.

Possibilities; see *God Foreknowledge of, Hobbes.*

Potentia—Potestas, difference between, II. 334.

Potter, Christopher, D.D., President of Queen's College Oxford 1626—1645; argument of, that separation from the Universal Church is schismatical, I. 99; II. 64. Which is mistaken by Mr. Knott, I. 99. And misquoted by the Bishop of Chalcedon, II. 64—66.

Power, irresistible, doth not justify all actions, IV. 75—78. 80; and see *God Omnipotence of, Hobbes, Justice.* Matter and, are indifferent to contrary forms and acts, IV. 448. 587.

Power of Bishops, see *Bishops.*

———, *Civil;* see *Disciplinarians, God, Jesuits, King, Magistrate, People, Presbyterians.*

——— *of God;* see *God, Omnipotence of.*

——— *of the Keys;* see *Keys, Power of the.*

——— *of Kings;* see *God, King, People.*

———, *Ministerial;* see *Priest.*

———, *Papal;* see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy.*

———, *Patriarchal;* see *Bishop of Rome, Patriarchs.*

Powers of the Soul; see *Soul.*

Præmunire, Statutes of; see *Statutes of Præmunire.* Incurred by the English clergy in the time of Henry VIII.; see *Clergy, English.*

Præterition, a term used by the Synod of Dort as an euphemism for reprobation, III. 505. h.

Pragmatic Sanctions, between France and the Popes, I. 263. Of Louis IX. of France, I. 221. Of Charles VII. of France, to confirm all the Acts of the Councils of Constance and Basle against the tyranny and usurpations of the Popes, I. 222. Revoked by Louis XI., *ib.* Confirmed again by him, and by Charles VIII., *ib.* And by Louis XII., I. 174, 175. 222. And partly given up by Francis I., I. 223. See *Concordat.*

Between Germany and the Popes, intended, by Frederic III., I. 204, 205.

Praise, moral (although not metaphysical), implies liberty, IV. 98, 99; and see *Liberty.*

Prayer, efficacy of, IV. 107, 108. 362, 363. Confidence in, IV. 362, 363. Texts shewing the efficacy of, IV. 107, 108. 362. Hobbes denieth it to be either a cause or a means of God's blessings, IV. 107—109.

Tears and, the only arms of the primitive Christians, I. 77; III. 352; and see *Obedience.* The only proper arms of women, especially of mothers; see *Monica.*

In an unknown tongue, renounced by the Church of England, I. 54. And cannot be proved out of the first four General Councils or by universal tradition, I. 65.

Prayer to the Saints, see *Saints.*

——— *for the Dead*, does not imply Purgatory, I. 59; and see *Purgatory.* Is not all condemned by the Church of England, I. 59, 60; II. 494. 633, 634. But only the Roman, for deliverance from Purgatory, *ib.* Many reasons may be assigned for, I. 60. Agreement of the Greek Church with the English concerning, II. 633, 634.

———, *Forms of*, letter of Calvin in 1549 to the Duke of Somerset, in favour of Liturgies and, I. 38.

———, *Book of Common, English*, Act passed for authorizing the, in the reign of Edward VI., II. 274, 275; III. 58. c. 80, 81. And for restoring the, upon the accession of Queen Elizabeth, *ib.*; and see *Ordinal, English.* Intended work of Bramhall, to prove the, warranted by the public Forms of all Protestant Churches, I. xxxvi, xxxvii; III. 280. Charged by Romanists with omission only, I. 248; III. 570. Confirmation of the, by the Pope, offered to Queen Elizabeth by Pope Pius IV.; see *Parpalia, Pius IV.* Pope.

———————, *Scotch*, sent to Bramhall as soon as finished by Archbishop Spottiswood, I. lxxxvi. Bramhall's opinion in favour of it, *ib.*

———, *Form of Common*, used in the Scottish Kirk; see *Kirk of Scotland.*

Preaching, never man suffered in England simply for, III. 578. but for seditious, schismatical, heretical, sermons, III. 578, 579. Exaggerated idea of the importance of, among the Puritans, III. 579. Seditious, among the Scotch Disciplinarians, and licence claimed for it; see *Disciplinarians, Discipline.* Liberty of judgment allowed to the clergy in, V. 267, 268. English canon (of 1603), regulating the number of sermons to be preached in each church annually, III. 581. See *Readers.*

Precedents, negative, prove more strongly than affirmative, II. 391, 392.

Prerogative, law of; see *King, Parliament, People.*

Presbyters, Ordination of; see *Ordination of Presbyters.* Due power of; see *Bishops, Bishops English, Priests.*

———, or *Lay Elders*, so called among the Waldenses, II. 62. Calvin's lay elders borrowed from them, *ib.* See *Elders, Lay.*

Presbyterians, The English; see *Nonconformists, Puritans.* Doctrines of, and of the Scottish and Foreign, re-

specting the civil and ecclesiastical powers, parallel with those of the Jesuits, I. xxxv. a; III. 301. 349. Deny the royal supremacy in matters ecclesiastical, III. 302. And assert that of the people, *ib.*; and see *Cartwright, Field.* Supersede the law of the land as being but man's invention, III. 304. 312; and see *Greville.* Would exclude Bishops from Parliament, yet admit ministers, III. 304; and see *Humble Motion.* Blame clergymen who are Privy Councillors, yet make ministers commissioners, III. 304. Complain of Church Courts, yet go beyond them in the very points complained of, III. 305. Declaim against oaths and subscriptions, yet exact them, *ib.* Murmur against the High Commission, yet establish Presbyteries, III. 306. 477. Slight Convocations and Councils, yet extol Assemblies, III. 306. Treasonable doctrine of, respecting obedience to the civil magistrate, III. 349. 364. Rebellious nature of the Discipline of, III. 307, 308. See *Field, Martin Marprelate.*

Have revived the heresy of the Aerians, III. 26, 27; V. 247. Dispense with oaths when it suits their interest, III. 306; and see *Downing, Marshall.*

Growth of, from self-interest and necessity, not from principle, III. 308, 309. The Brownists and, the Church of Rome's best friends in England, I. 36. The Church of England hath nothing to do with, I. 36; II. 48, 49.

Accusation brought by, against the Church of England, of Arminianism; see *Arminianism, Baxter.* And of Popery; see *Baxter, Bramhall John, Popery.* And of neglecting preaching; see *Preaching, Readers.*

Presbyterians, The Foreign, treasonable and seditious doctrines of; see *Beza, Calvin, Languet, Presbyterians English.* Rejected Bishops unwillingly; see *Bishops, Churches Foreign Protestant, Divines Foreign Reformed.* Make admissions equivalent to Episcopacy; see *Beza, Bishops, Calvin, Salmasius.* How far unchurched for want of Bishops; see *Bishops, Bramhall John, Church Particular, Churches Foreign Protestant.* Orders of, how far recognized by the Church of England; see *Orders Presbyterian, Re-ordination.*

———, *The Scottish*; see *Assembly, Disciplinarians, Discipline, Kirk of Scotland; Buchanan, Knox.* Orders of, how far recognized by the Church of England; see *Bramhall John, Orders Presbyterian, Re-ordination.*

Prescience of God; see *God, Foreknowledge of.*

Presence of Christ, in the Sacrament of the Holy Eucharist, the Real, not denied by Protestants, but the bold determination of the manner of it by Romanists; see *Adduction, Change, Conservation, Consubstantiation, Lord's Supper, Production, Transubstantiation.*

Price, Thomas, Fellow of Dublin College, Archdeacon of Kilmore in 1634, Bishop of Kildare, Archbishop of Cashel, 1661—1684; was Vesey's authority for the proceedings of the Irish Convocation of 1634, I. xx. t. Ordained Priest by Bishop Bedell before 1634, and (necessarily) examined by him in the Irish Articles, V. 81.

Priests, form of ordination of, in the Church of England; see *Ordinal English, Ordination of Presbyters.* In the Church of Rome, see *Ordination of Presbyters, Patin.*

Are neither of the order of Aaron nor of that of Melchisedec in the English Church, or in any other, but of a third and distinct order, V. 224—226.

English, have power to offer evangelical sacrifice, II. 88. 275, 276. 333. 642; III. 165; V. 188. 213; and see *Sacrifice.* And to consecrate the Holy Eucharist, III. 165—168; V. 213. which laymen and Deacons have not, III. 167. Have a ministerial power of remitting sins, V. 221, 222. In Absolution, III. 167; V. 190. 213; and see *Absolution.* And in Baptism, *ib.*; and see *Baptism.* And in many other ways, *ib.* See *Confession, Keys Power of the.* Have no power to ordain, III. 143; V. 189; and see *Hieronymus.* Or to confirm, V. 189; and see *Confirmation, Sacrament of.*

Boastful expression respecting the, of the Church of Rome, that he is "maker of his Maker," I. 16. Held by the Roman Schools, that the, by delegation from the Pope, may be authorized to confer Priesthood and inferior orders, and to confirm, II. 71; III. 26, 27. 106; V. 247. 253; and see *Aerians.* According to the Roman Schools, may take a part (if mitred Abbots) in the con-

secration of Bishops; see *Abbots, Consecration of Bishops.*

It is no Church that hath not; see *Church Particular, Hieronymus.* The Church of England hath true; see *Orders Holy, Orders English, Ordination of Presbyters.* Objections in Captain Steward's Papers, answered, against the truth of English; see *Ordination, Of Protestants'.* Objections of S. N. answered, see *Ordination, Protestants' Defended.*

Priests, Anglo-Romanist, foreign seminaries established for, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, I. 66; II. 113; and see *Allen.* King James I. does not say that the, died for religion in England, II. 121. Nor does Queen Elizabeth, II. 121—124. Died for treason, not for religion; see *Cecil, Laud.* Nothing in the penal laws to hurt a quiet Queen Mary's priest, II. 117. The penal laws against the; see *Laws, Penal.* Treasonable conduct of the; see *Romanists, English.*

Priesthood, of Christ; see *Christ.* In the Church of Christ; see *Ordination of Presbyters, Priests.*

Primacy, of order, not to be confounded with a supremacy of power, II. 321. 372. 387. 496; III. 551, 552. Some colour of Divine right for a, of order, II. 386, 387. Of order, conducible to the good of the Church, II. 612. And sufficient to prevent schism, II. 155, 156; and see *Beginning of Unity, Papacy, Schism.* To give a, of order, rests with a General Council, II. 609, 610.

Neither St. Peter nor any ancient Bishop (nor yet St. Gregory I. himself,) ever pretended to a Headship or, of power, II. 609. St. Peter had a, of order, not of power; see St. *Peter.* In what sense the, of St. Peter, is approved or not opposed by the Church of England, II. 371. 468, 469. 483. 609. 612; and see *Apostles, Church of England,* St. *Peter.*

A, of order, would not be denied to the Bishop of Rome by the Church of England, if he would be content with it, I. 80; II. 357. 495. 615. 625, 626. Nor a beginning of unity, II. 521. A, of order, not denied to the Bishops of Rome by St. Cyprian; see St. *Cyprian.* Nor by English divines; see *Andrewes, Bishop of Rome, Bramhall John, Montague Richard.* Nor by James I., see *James I.* King of England. The Papal, as now claimed, is a sovereign monarchical Headship of absolute power over the whole Church by Christ's own ordination, II. 511. The Papal, as so maintained, rejected by the Primitive Fathers, by the Eastern, Southern, and Northern Churches, by many of the Roman Catholics themselves; see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy.* St. Gregory the Great makes it schismatical in the Pope, to challenge a, of power, II. 248; and see *Bishop Universal, Gregory I.* Pope. The, of the Pope, how far attached to the city of Rome; see *Bishop of Rome, Rome.* The, of the Pope, is uncertain and interrupted, II. 617. The, of the Pope, supposed by Mr. Serjeant to rest in the College of Cardinals during a vacancy; see *Cardinals.* Mr. Serjeant's notion of a First Movership; see *Movership, First.* And of a "dry" primacy, II. 486. 602. 609. 626. See *Apostles, Beginning of Unity.*

Primates, or *Protarchs,* the same as Patriarchs in the ancient Church, I. 154; II. 614. The highest constitution of the Apostles exceeded not national, I. 154, 155; II. 149. 525. How some, came to be more respected in the Church than others, I. 155; II. 525. Either by custom, I. 155. Or from the grandeur of the city, *ib.* Or by decrees of Councils, *ib.* Or by edicts of princes, I. 156. Many, continued independent of the five great Patriarchs, *ib.* Metropolitan, ordained by Patriarchs, I. 265. Patriarchs and Metropolitans alike, swallowed up by the Papacy, *ib.* See *Bishops of Rome, Patriarchs, Primates of Arles—British—of Lyons —of Milan—of Vienne.*

——— *of Arles,* originally independent of the Roman Patriarchs, I. 156.

———, *British,* of York, of London, present at the Council of Arles, I. 159. Why York is placed before London, I. 159, 160. Independent of the Roman Patriarchs, I. 155, 156; II. 537; and see *Church British, Patriarchate of Rome.* Enjoyed the Cyprian privilege, see *Cyprian Privilege.* Were ordained ordinarily or always at home, and not at Rome, I. 159. 161, 162; II. 526. 537.

——— *of Caerleon,* independent of the see of Rome; see *Caerleon, Church British, Dionothus, Primates Welsh.*

——— *of Carthage,* independent of Rome, I. 156. Afterwards elevated into Patriarchs, see *Patriarchs of Carthage.*

Primates, Cyprian, independent of the Patriarchs of Antioch; see *Bishops Cyprian, Cyprian Privilege.*

————, *English,* Archbishops in England so styled, I. 164.

———— *of France;* see *Primates of Arles—of Lyons—of Vienne.*

———— *of Lyons, of Milan, of Vienne,* originally independent of the Roman Patriarchs, I. 156.

————, *Welsh,* invariably chosen by their own princes and synods, and ordained by their own suffragans, until the reign of Henry I., I. 159; II. 151; and see *Caerleon, Church Welsh,* St. *David, Menevia.*

Primitive Christians; } see *Church,*
———— *Church;* } *Primitive.*

———— *Fathers,* see *Fathers.*

Primrose, a Presbyterian Minister so named, admitted the Church of Rome to be a true Church, III. 519.

Prince, see *King.*

Principality of Order—of Power—of Priesthood; see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy, Primacy.*

Principium Unitatis, see *Beginning of Unity.*

Privilege of Parliament, see *Parliament.*

Privy Councillors, Presbyterians blame clergymen who are, yet make Ministers Commissioners, III. 304.

Προαιρετὸν, Τὸ, distinguished from τὸ ἑκούσιον, IV. 293. 295. From τὸ αὐτόματον, IV. 294, 295.

Procession of the Holy Spirit, see *God the Holy Ghost.*

Procumbentes, what meant by, in the primitive Church, I. 104.

Production of the Body of Christ in the Elements at the Holy Eucharist, scholastic theory of, I. 16, 17—20.

Propagandâ Fide, Congregation De; see *Congregation.*

Prophetical Office, of Christ; see *Christ.*

Prosper, account by, of the mission of Germanus and Lupus to Britain, II. 170—172. 536. See *Bede, Coustantius.*

Protagoras, the Atheist, book of, condemned by the Athenians to be burned, IV. 138. 450.

Protarch, see *Primate.*

Protestancy, not of the essence of the Church, V. 260; and see *Church of England, Protestants, Separation.*

Protestant Writers; see *Writers, Protestant.*

Protestants, do not make themselves a body distinct from the rest of the Christian world, II. 324. Profess no separation from the Universal Church, II. 54. 206. 306. Nor from the Roman Church, but only in her errors, *ib.* Different modes of expression upon the subject among, but the same meaning, II. 57. See *Separation.* Possibility and method of reconciliation between the Romanists and the, see *Reconciliation.* Were not in notorious rebellion at the time of the Council of Trent, II. 264. The Romanists and not the, condemned by the (modern) Patriarchs of Constantinople, II. 265; and see *Cyril Lucar, Jeremiah, Joseph, Melancthon.* Always professed Christ visibly, and not lurking invisibly in another communion, I. 71. Have not so many or so important controversies among themselves as are laid to their charge by Romanists, II. 324; and see *Confessions, Harmony of.* Great advantage of the, over the Romanists, in their choice of the foundation of Faith, I. 71; and see *Faith, Rule of.* Religion of the Roman Catholics not safer than that of the; see *Knott, Romanists.* The world is full of, if denial of the Pope's supremacy maketh Protestants, II. 108. 259. 295.

Protestants, English, i. e. the Church of England; see *Church of England.* Number of, put to death in Queen Mary's reign for their religion; see *Mary* Queen of England.

————, *Foreign;* see *Churches Foreign Protestant, Divines Foreign Reformed, Huguenots, Reformed French.* True causes of the separation of some, from the Church of Rome, II. 36. 236, 237. Romanists no fit persons to object schism to the, II. 71.

Protestants' Ordination Defended, by Bishop Bramhall; see *Ordination Of Protestants', Ordination Protestants' Defended.*

Protestation, respecting the King's supremacy, by the English Puritans in 1605, III. 302. 315. 352. 382, 383. The Solemn, for Church and State as by law established, taken by both Houses of Parliament in 1641, I. 33; III. 471. 520. Of Martin Marprelate, see *Martin Marprelate.*

Of Charles IX. of France against the Pope in the Council of Trent, I. 221. 258; II. 640, 641.

Of the Electoral College of Germany to Pope Benedict XII., I. 212.

Protopatriarchs; see *Patriarchs, The Five Great.*

Provinces, United; see *Brabant, United Provinces.*

Provisions, Papal, prohibited in England, II. 408; and see *Statutes of Provisors.* And in France, I. 228; II. 426. Bitter expressions of Matthew Paris against, I. 189; II. 405.

Provisors, Statutes of; see *Statutes of Provisors.*

Prudentius, quotation from, respecting obedience to the civil magistrate in things unlawful, IV. 196. 502.

Prussians, The, negotiations of, with Sharpe Archbishop of York, in 1710—1712, for obtaining Episcopacy from England, III. 536. j.

Prynne, William, forms of the Coronation Oath collected by, III. 370—374.

Psalms, The, are the best comforters under affliction, V. 113.

Pulpit, see *Preaching.*

Punishment, definition of, IV. 324. No proper, but for sin, IV. 243. Proper, is ever vindictive in part, IV. 92. 324. Seneca's saying concerning the nature of, IV. 324. And Cicero's, IV. 354.

The theory of necessity leaves no room for reward or, IV. 64. Unjust, for sin committed through antecedent necessity, IV. 90. No man justly punished except for crimes he might have shunned, IV. 242. Story of Zeno, shewing that necessity of sin implies necessity of, IV. 82. Parallel of the reward and, of brute beasts, not relevant to those of man, IV. 100. 317. The terms reward and, applied to brute beasts by analogy only, IV. 101. 347, 348. See *Beasts, Liberty, Necessity.*

Of the damned, eternal; see *Damned, Hobbes, Origenists.*

Hobbes's absurd theory concerning, IV. 561, 562. 582.

Extreme severity of the Scottish Presbyterians concerning, III. 260. 277; and see *Disciplinarians.*

Purgatory, early doctrines respecting the state of the soul between death and the Judgment inconsistent with the Romish doctrine of, I. 59, 60; II. 494. The Romish doctrine of, is an addition to the Creed præter Symbolum, I. 26; II. 241. And cannot be proved either out of the first four General Councils, or by universal tradition, I. 65. Supposed to have more colour in antiquity than other Roman doctrines, V. 191. But erroneously, V. 192. Prayer from the Missæ pro Defunctis in the Roman Missal inconsistent with the Romish doctrine of, I. 59. Passages of St. Augustin inconsistent with the Romish doctrine of, I. 59; V. 179. 192. Made an article of the Faith by the Roman Church, II. 241. 494. 581. Romish doctrine of, condemned by the Church of England, I. 59. Condemned by the 22nd Article of the Church of England, as besides, not as contrary to, Scripture, II. 581. 592. Agreement of the Greek with the English Church concerning, II. 633, 634. Is not implied in prayer for the dead, see *Prayer for the Dead.*

Puritans, The; see *Cartwright, Field, Goodman Christopher, Humble Motion, Martin Marprelate, Nonconformists, Preaching, Presbyterians English, Protestation, Sabbatarians, Sabbath.* Descent of Christ into Hell explained away by, II. 596. 619. Bp. Bilson's book against, upon the subject, II. 596. g. Called at the Hampton Court Conference, "Protestants out of their wits," III. 541.

Puy, Pierre and *Jacques du;* see *Libertêz de l'Eglise Gallicane.*

Pym, John, the Parliamentarian, impeached by Charles I., III. 413, 414.

Q.

Quakers, The, II. 564. 595.

Quality, infused by God, IV. 408.

Quarto-decimans, The, heretics and schismatics, and why, V. 47; and see *Polycarp, Polycrates.* Kept the feast of Easter at the same time with the Jewish Passover, and maintained this custom to be universally necessary, V. 47; and see *Easter.*

Quien, Le; see *Lequien.*

R.

Radcliffe, Sir George, impeached with Bramhall in 1640, I. viii. h. Letters from, to Bishop Bramhall, I. xxvii. f. xxxi. c.

Radulphus, see *Rodolph.*

Raid of Ruthven; see *Ruthven, Raid of.*

Rain, Hobbes's instance of a shower of, alleged by him to prove necessity, IV. 181. 184. 185—187. 473—476.

Raphoe, Bishop of; see *Leslie.*

Ravenna, Exarch of, I. 173.

Rawdon Papers, edited by the Rev. Edward Berwick, I. iii. Letters of Bramhall published from the, I. lxxxiii. lxxxvi, lxxxvii, lxxxviii. xci,

xcii. xciv. ci. civ, cv. Will of Abp. Bramhall from the, I. cvii—cxii.

R. C.; see *Smith, Richard*, Bishop of Chalcedon.

Readers, in the Church of England, great service done by, III. 579, 580.

Reason, is the true root of liberty, IV. 413, 414. The more reason, the more liberty, IV. 146. 394. See *Liberty.*

Of the doctrine, that the last act of the, necessitates the will, IV. 42, 43. 59. 61. 147—152. 288—291. 410—418. The last act of the, is itself an act of the will, IV. 42. Determines the will morally, not necessarily, *ib.* Nor yet to one course unalterably, IV. 43. Nor in such a way that the will cannot suspend its own act, *ib.* Nor antecedently or extrinsecally, *ib.* A man may will contrary to the dictate of the, IV. 412. Affection sometimes prevails against the, IV. 152. And passions, IV. 415. May be unable to determine between alternatives, as being equally circumstanced, IV. 414, 415. Judgment of the best Schoolmen respecting this theory, IV. 292. Held by Bellarmine, see *Bellarmine.* See *Judgment, Soul, Understanding, Will.*

Brute beasts do not act from; see *Actions of Brute Beasts, Beasts.*

Rebaptization, of persons baptized by heretics; see St. *Cyprian.*

Rebellion; see *King, Obedience, Treason.*

————, *The English*, in 1640—1660; see *England.* In behalf of Romanism, in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., Elizabeth; see *England.*

————, *The Irish*, in 1641; see *Ireland.*

————, *The Scotch*, in the reign of Charles I.; see *Scotland.*

Rebels, English, Irish, Scotch; see *England, Ireland, Scotland.*

Reconciliation, between all Christian Churches, the way to a, I. xiv, xv. How far and upon what terms the Protestant and Roman Churches are reconcileable, I. 80, 81. 278, 279; II. 277. 280. 361; III. 545, 546. Viz. by reducing the Creed to what it was in the time of the first four Councils, by reducing the Bishop of Rome from his monarchy to a principality of order, by reforming Divine offices, *ib.* These terms not new or untried, III. 558. Mr. Baxter's exceptions to them answered, III. 547—559.

All good Christians would desire a, with the Pope, if he were reduced to what he was from the beginning, III. 514, 515. 560, 561; and see *Cassander, Grotius, Wicelius.* With the Pope and Papacy as now maintained, no design of a, entertained by the English Bishops in Charles I.'s time, III. 514. Baxter's feeble reasons for accusing them of it, III. 515. 519—524. Other alleged reasons answered, III. 524—528.

One branch of the moderation of the Church of England is its desire of, I. 199; II. 313. 589; and see *Church of England.*

Archbishop Ussher's way of reunion between Romanists and Protestants, III. 571, 572. And King James I.'s, III. 565. 568, 569. And Mr. Chillingworth's, III. 568—572. Mr. Baxter's, III. 563. Conditions of, proposed by Mr. Baxter, III. 564—567. Absurd vagueness of them, III. 564.

Reconciliation, Ministry of, the English Church possesses the, V. 186, 187. Captain Steward's Papers against this answered, V. 185—191. See *Absolution, Keys Power of the, Orders English, Ordination of Presbyters, Priests.*

————, *Sacrament of*; see *Absolution.*

Records, reason against the Nag's Head fable, that it contradicts all the, of England, ecclesiastical and civil, III. 67—71. And that the same confirm our own record of the facts, III. 71—94. See *Nag's Head Fable, Parker Matthew.*

Ecclesiastical, see *Registers.*

Civil, testimony of the, to the due election and confirmation of the English Bishops at the accession of Queen Elizabeth, III. Pref. 216—229. Of Archbishop Parker in particular, III. 67—93. 216, 217. And to the due election and confirmation of Bishop Barlow, III. Pref. 137—144. 227, 228. And of Bishops Coverdale and Scory; see *Coverdale, Scory.* Extracts from the, were furnished to Bramhall by Dean Barwick; see *Barwick, John.* The, were published by Rymer from the Rolls; see *Rymer.*

Recusants, English; see *Romanists, English.*

Redgrave, a seat of Sir N. Bacon's in Suffolk, III. 72. b. First commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker signed there by Queen

Elizabeth, III. 73. Letter from Sir N. Bacon to Parker, accompanying that commission, also dated thence, III. Pref. p. 179. p.

Reformation, in the Church, three things necessary to make a, lawful, just grounds, due moderation, sufficient authority, I. 168; II. 187. Is sometimes necessary, I. 40. A respective necessity is a sufficient ground for, II. 179. Some errors just cause of, although not of separation, II. 55. Right rule of, I. 41. Danger in, I. 40. Power to effect a, 'tam in capite quam in membris,' claimed by the General Councils of Constance and Basle, II. 510; and see *Council General, Council of Constance—of Basle.* How far the power to effect a, belongs to kings; see *King.* Is not agreeable to all persons, especially not to the Court of Rome, I. 40. See *Church Particular, Schism, Separation.*

Need of a, in the Church, acknowledged by the Council of Trent, I. 40; II. 510. By Pope Adrian VI., I. 207. 278; II. 385. By Cardinal Pole, I. 208. By the Selected Cardinals, see *Cardinals.* By St. Bernard, see St. *Bernard.* Great need of a, in Germany, I. 207. A, in some measure effected by the German Emperors, I. 209; and see *Charles V.* of Germany, *Emperors German.*

————, *English*; see *Church of England, Henry VIII., Separation.*

———— *of the Clergy*, a document so styled, issued by Charles V. of Germany; see *Charles V.* of Germany.

Reformed Churches, Foreign; see *Churches, Foreign Protestant.*

————, *The French*; see *Aubertin, Charenton, Divines Foreign Reformed, Huguenots, Synods French Reformed.*

Reformers; see *Divines, Foreign Reformed.* All the first, did desire Episcopacy; see *Bishops.* Doctrine of the, against the immutability of the Lord's Day; see *Lord's Day.*

Regicides, trial and execution of the, Oct. 1660, V. 131.

Reginaldus, definition by, of the law of nature, IV. 329.

Registers, The, of Episcopal Acts and Ordinations, in England, II. 272. 333. 642. What, and what entries in each, III. 133. The evidence of the, indisputable, V. 255.

The, of the Archbishopric of Canterbury, in the time of Abp. Warham, very carelessly kept, III. Pref. Cranmer's still more so, III. Pref. 139. d. No argument can be drawn from omissions in either, against the consecrations of which the record is omitted, III. Pref. Entries in Cranmer's discussed at length; see *Barlow William, Coverdale, Scory.* Particular cases of omission in Cranmer's, and in Warham's, III. Pref. Change of form in the entries of consecration in Cranmer's, corresponding with the change of the law upon the subject in his time, *ib.* Further change in Cranmer's, consequent upon the change of Ordinal, *ib.* Cardinal Pole's, *ib.* Archbishop Parker's kept with peculiar care, III. Pref. 173. Account of Parker's, III. 173. a.

The, of Abp. Parker's confirmation and consecration, extracted from his Register, at length, and verbatim, III. 173—210. Proofs of the genuineness of the portion extracted, III. 174. a; and see *Parker, Matthew*, Blanks in it accounted for, III. 207. y. Transcript of that part of the extract which relates to Abp. Parker's consecration, from C. C. C. Cambridge, at length, III. 210—213. Certificates to the genuineness of this Transcript, III. 213—215. Two other transcripts are in the State Paper Office, III. 210. a. The, of Abp. Parker's consecration, and of that of the other Elizabethan Bishops in 1559—1561, were published to the world before Mason's book, III. 119. Why not published before James I.'s time, II. 273; III. 116. 161. Why not alleged by Jewel and Horne against Harding, Stapleton, and Bonner, II. 273, 274; III. 79. 113; V. 242—244. Admitted to be genuine by Father Oldcorn, see *Oldcorn.* By other Romanists, III. 98—101. Not concealed, III. 116. Adversaries of the Church of England driven to assert the, to be forged, III. 86. 158—162. Of the monstrous accusation of forgery against the, and the ignorant mistakes upon which it is founded, III. 158—162; V. 255, 256. Forgery impossible in such a case as this, III. 87. The laws of the kingdom recognize the, as evidence, *ib.* Are attested by notaries, III. 88. Certificate of six lawyers to the legality of the second commission for Abp. Parker, III. 88. 179, 180. Which has been enrolled upon his Register,

III. 179. q. Are recognized by a subsequent Act of Parliament, III. 89. 94—96; and see *Statutes, English, 8 Eliz. c.* 1. By the author of the book De Antiq. Brit. Ecclesiæ, III. 92. 96. 120. Table of the Consecrations of Parker and the other Bishops contained in the Antiq. Brit. Eccl.; see *Antiquitate De Britannicæ Ecclesiæ.* Are recognized by Holinshead, see *Holinshead.* By several other writers, III. 97—102. 131. 135. t. 229, 230. Agree exactly with our civil records, see *Records.* Corroboratory evidence of the truth of the, III. 216—229. Exactness of the, III. 156.

The, of the consecration of Bp. Barlow, why missing, III. Pref.; and see *Barlow, William.* It was not to be expected in more than one registry, III. 157.

Relics, Adoration of, no old article of the Faith, II. 581. No article of the Faith at all, but a mere opinion, *ib.* Condemned by the 22nd of the XXXIX. Articles as beside, not as contrary to, Scripture, *ib.*

Religion, opinions of an inferior nature in, not necessary to be known in order to salvation, II. 492. No obligation to censure every, much less every opinion, that is contrary to our own, II. 585, 586. Changes in, undiscernible, II. 491. See *Creed, Faith, Opinion, Schism, Separation.* True, consisteth not in obedience to princes, IV. 491—498; and see *Hobbes.* Is no justification of rebellion, III. 307. 343. A vain plea advanced for the Scottish rebellion, III. 286. See *Disciplinarians, Presbyterians, Scotland.* The Roman and English, are the same, II. 604; and see *Church of England—of Rome.* The Grotian, so called by Baxter; see *Baxter, Grotius.*

Remigius de Feschamp, Bishop of Lincoln 1067—1093, prescript of William the Conqueror to, claiming legislative power in ecclesiastical matters for the King, II. 434.

Remission of Sins, in Baptism, in Absolution, in the Holy Eucharist; see *Absolution, Baptism, Lord's Supper.* In what ways Priests are enabled to give, V. 190. 213; and see *Priests, Sin.*

Remonstrance, The, of the Long Parliament in 1641, was the beginning of the fears and troubles in England, III. 458.

Remonstrant Ministers, in Holland, desire of some among the, for Episcopacy, I. lxx.

Renaudot, Abbè, memoir of, upon English Ordinations, affirming the Nag's Head Fable, III. 40. f.

Re-ordination, of English clergy by the Church of Rome, history of the practice of the Church of Rome concerning the, III. 114. g. Is a gross sacrilege, III. 60. Is no argument against the validity of English Orders, III. 114—116. See *Bonner, Clement XI.* Pope, *Gordon John, Mary* Queen of England, *Paul IV.* Pope, *Pole Reginald.*

Of Presbyterian Ministers, in Ireland in 1661, conduct of Archbishop Bramhall respecting the, I. xxiv. xxxvii, xxxviii. See *Aubrey, Grindal, Whitgift.*

Repentance, what is, IV. 103. 359. Definition of, from St. Gregory the Great, IV. 359. Styled by the Fathers a "Second Table after Shipwreck," V. 149. 158. And a "Baptism of Pains and Tears," *ib.* Man's concurrence with God in, requisite, IV. 105—107. 359. Hobbes's opinion destroys, *ib.* See *Confession, Penitence, Sin.*

Replication to the Bishop of Chalcedon's Survey of the Vindication of the Church of England from criminous Schism, clearing the English Laws from the aspersion of cruelty; with an Appendix; by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part i. Discourse iii., II. 23—284. Contents of, II. 5—15. When written, II. 240. n. Occasion and editions of, I. xxviii. Appendix to, see *Appendix.*

Reppis, or *Rugg, William,* Bishop of Norwich 1536—1550, proof of the consecration of, III. Pref.

Reprobation, doctrine of St. Paul respecting, explained, as exemplified in the case of Esau, IV. 67—77.

Republic of Venice, see *Venice.*

Resistance, to the civil magistrate; see *Obedience.* Hobbes admitteth in deed, although he deny it in words, IV. 555; and see *Hobbes.*

Resolution, a settled, may overcome the moral efficacy of outward objects, IV. 144—147. Proveth election and liberty, IV. 254—257. Texts shewing the power of, IV. 144.

Restitution of Temporalties, of the Church; see *Temporalties.* Writ so called, what it is, III. 65. 94. 155, 156, 157. 231. Changes in the form of it, III. 155. a. In the case of Abp. Parker, III. 94. 216, 217. Of the other English Bishops consecrated at the beginning of the reign of Queen

Elizabeth, III. 218—228. Of Bishop Barlow, III. 141, 142. 155. 227.
Restoration, The, of Charles II., great blessings of, V. 132—135. Sermon of Archbishop Bramhall upon, see *Sermon.*
Retz, Jean-François-Paul de Gondi, Cardinal de, Archbishop of Paris in 1651, I. cxxxvii.
Re-union of the Romanist and Protestant Churches; see *Reconciliation.*
Revealed Truths; see *Essentials, Faith.*
Reward; see *Punishment.* Of brute beasts, see *Beasts.*
Reynolds, John, D.D., President of Corpus Christi Coll. Oxford 1598—1607, an able polemic writer for the English Church, I. 67. Ordained by Bishop Freake, III. 99. Controversy of, with Hart, III. 99. q. Did not oppose Episcopacy, III. 473.
———, *Thomas*, nominated by Queen Mary in 1558 to the see of Hereford, but not consecrated, III. 232.
———, *William*, an able polemic writer for the Romish Church, I. 67. Denial by, of the validity of English Orders, discussed, III. 125, 126. Says nothing of the Nag's Head Fable, III. 46. 125.
Rheims, Seminary at; see *Seminaries, Foreign.* Coronation Oath of the French Kings taken at, I. 149.
——— *Testament*, attack in the, upon English Orders, III. 130. e. Answered by Fulke, *ib.*
Rhenanus, makes the original of Shrift human, V. 223.
Richard, Archbishop of Armagh, character of, by Trithemius, I. lxxii. Canonization of, propounded but not effected, *ib.*
——— *I.*, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 374.
——— *II.*, King of England, Coronation Oath of, III. 372, 373. 375. Confessed himself bound by his Coronation Oath to pass a new grant to the Justices of Peace, III. 376. Commanded a Bill before Parliament for the confiscation of Church property to be cancelled, III. 420. 433. Set aside a Bull of Pope Boniface VIII., exempting the University of Oxford from the jurisdiction of the Archbishop of Canterbury; see *University of Oxford.* Statutes of Mortmain and of Præmunire passed in the reign of; see *Statutes of Mortmain—of Præmunire.* Throne of, usurped by Henry IV., III. 385, 386. Vengeance inflicted upon the murderers of, III. 386.
Richard III., King of England, assumed his Crown in the Court of King's Bench, III. 358. Remorse of, for the murder of his nephews, shewn by his having his hand continually upon his dagger, IV. 339; V. 134. Death of the wife of, III. 312.
Richardus de Mediâ Villâ, admission of, against Transubstantiation, I. 13. Doctrine of, respecting the salvation of abortive infants, V. 176.
Richelieu, Cardinal, project in the days of, for erecting or rather restoring a Patriarchate in France, I. 223, 224. 246. Project of, for re-uniting the French Reformed Congregations to the Church, I. 7. a. 80. Fomented the divisions in Charles I.'s reign in England, Scotland, and Ireland, I. 35; V. 156.
Ridley, Nicholas, D.D., Bishop of Rochester—of London, 1547—1555; Episcopal orders of, denied (and in what way) by the Commissioners at his degradation, III. 115. g. Was consecrated according to the old Ordinal, *ib.* Was degraded by Dr. Brooks Bishop of Gloucester, III. 115. g; V. 242. Milton's severe language concerning, III. 476.
Right, and wrong, antecedent to human pacts; see *Law.*
Righteousness, Inherent; see *Justice Inherent, Justification, Merits.*
Rights, of the Kings of England; see *Kings of England.* Invaded by the Court of Rome, I. 183—189. The, of the nobility, Bishops, and people of England, invaded by the Court of Rome, I. 189, 190. See *Court of Rome.*
———, *Papal*, divided by Gerson into three kinds, Divine, canonical, and civil, II. 376; and see *Bishop of Rome, Gerson.*
Rinuccini, John Baptista, Archbishop of Fermo, the Pope's nuncio in Ireland in 1645, I. 33.
Ripon, Monastery of, restored to Abp. Wilfrid by the Synod of Nidd, I. 135. g; II. 131.
Rites, see *Ceremonies.*
Rivet, a French Reformed divine, favoured Episcopacy, III. 536. Dissertations of, upon the Sabbath, against Gomarus, V. 78. Affirmed by Baxter to have agreed better with the Brownists, than with the Bishops of the English Church, III. 515.
Robert, Sir, the Scottishman; see *Robertus Venantius.*
Robertus Gemeticensis, made Bishop of

London and Archbishop of Canterbury, 1050—1052, by Edward the Confessor, I. 146.

Robertus Venantius, titular Archbishop of Armagh, present at the Council of Trent, I. 258.

Robinson, Father, apparently a Roman Catholic priest, papers sent by, to Bp. Bramhall, and answered by him, V. 185—191.

Rochelle, La, Synod of; see *Synods, French Reformed.*

Rochester, Bishops of; see *Fisher, Freake, Gest, Griffith, Heath, Hilsey, Justus, Neil, Ridley, Rodolph, Scory.*

Rodolph, or *Radulph*, Bishop of Rochester[a], received investiture of the Archbishopric of Canterbury in 1114, from Henry I., I. 263.

———, Duke of Sueveland, reward of, for his treason against Henry IV. of Germany, I. 256; III. 311.

Roe, Sir Thomas, ambassador of Charles I. at Constantinople, intercourse of, with the Patriarch of Constantinople, Cyril Lucar, II. 265.

Roger, Earl of Sicily; see *Urban II.* Pope.

Roland, Cardinal, rejected from the Papacy in favour of Victor III. by the Emperor Frederic III. and the Council of Pavia, I. 206, 207.

Roman Breviary; see *Breviary.*

——— *Catholic*, the very name of, a late device, unheard of in the primitive times, and for many ages after, V. 268. A contradiction in adjecto, II. 34. "Roman," in truth a diminution to the name, I. 109. See *Catholics, Church of Rome.*

——— *Catholics*, see *Romanists.*

——— *Church*, see *Church of Rome.*

——— *Court*, see *Court of Rome.*

——— *Liturgy*, see *Ordo Romanus.*

——— *Missal*, see *Missal.*

——— *Patriarch*, and *Patriarchate*; see *Bishop of Rome, Patriarchate of Rome.*

——— *Rota*; see *Rota, The Roman.*

——— *Schools*, see *Schools, Roman.*

Romans, Ancient, eulogy of Cicero upon the piety of the; see *Cicero.* Magnanimous behaviour of the, after the battle of Cannæ, IV. 558.

Romanists, whether the Protestants and the, differ in essentials, II. 203, 204; and see *Church of England.*

Require submission to the Church of Rome as necessary to salvation, I. 63; and see *Articles of Faith, Church Catholic, Papacy, Pius IV.* Pope. Are the true Donatists, II. 106. 203. 214. 256; and see *Donatists.* Answered concerning the possibility of salvation in other Churches than that of Rome, I. 198. Admit the possibility of our salvation as much exactly as we admit the possibility of theirs, I. 79, 80. 198; II. 205. 254, 255; V. 207, 208; and see *Clarâ Franciscus a Sanctâ, Patenson, Smith Richard.* Religion of the, not safer than the Protestant religion; see *Knott.* Are prayed for by the Church of England as materially heretical, II. 590. Some, are formal schismatics, II. 254. See *Church of Rome.*

Can pretend to no other Sacrifice than Protestants, II. 88; and see *Sacrifice.* Peculiar doctrines of the, see *Church of Rome.* Great advantage of the Protestants over the, in their choice of the foundation of Faith, I. 71; and see *Faith, Rule of.* No controversy concerning order or interior jurisdiction with the, in England, but about exterior and coactive jurisdiction, II. 453; and see *Jurisdiction.*

As many and great differences among the, as between them and the Eastern Churches, or the Church of England, II. 68. Are divided among themselves what the Catholic Church is, I. 63; II. 22; and see *Church, Catholic.* Divine right of the Papacy denied by many of the, II. 376. 511; and see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy.* Temporal supremacy of the Pope a doctrine of some, but not of all, II. 318; and see *Bishop of Rome.* Claim infallibility for the Church of Rome, and deny it to the Protestants, V. 274, 275. Yet are divided among themselves, who their infallible proponent is; see *Bishop of Rome.* Far from infallibly certain, upon their own grounds, whether the present Pope be truly Pope or no, V. 276, 277; and see *Bishop of Rome.* And far from agreed as to what that infallibility is, which they or part of them ascribe to him; see *Bishop of Rome.* Some of the, deny the Divine original of Shrift; see *Confession.* Are no fit persons to object schism to Protestants, II. 71.

The, and not Protestants, condemned by the Patriarchs of Con-

[a] Called by Bramhall erroneously Bishop of London. Henry I. nominated and invested *Richard* Bishop of London, but afterwards gave way to the election of Ralph Bishop of Rochester.—*Godwin.*

stantinople and by the Greek Church; see *Church Greek, Cyril Lucar.* Baxter's rash assertions about the, III. 559. Charles I. not a, see *Charles I.* How far Charles II. was a, see *Charles II.* Bramhall not a; see *Bramhall, John.*

The first separators of England from Rome were, whatever they were called, I. 97. 113—124; II. 105. 294. 499. 500. 508. that is, in all other controversies but that of the Papal supremacy, II. 98. 508. And were schismatics, if it be schismatical to withhold obedience as well as to withdraw it, I. 123. Sinned not against conscience in their separation, II. 107. See *Schism, Separation.* Title of Head of the Church in England, first given by the, to the kings of England, I. 29. 115; and see *Kings of England.*

Romanists, English, communicated with the Church of England prior to Pius V.'s Bull against Queen Elizabeth, II. 245, 246. No recusants known in England until the eleventh year of Queen Elizabeth, A.D. 1570, I. 248; II. 245. Behaviour of the, upon Queen Elizabeth's accession; see *Acworth, Bishops English.* Number of clergy deprived at that time, II. 246. Three Bishops fled the country for their religion at that time, II. 246; III. Pref. a. Treasons of the, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, II. 114—116. Not all alike involved in them, *ib.* English laws not cruel against the; see *Laws, Penal.* Exact numbers of the, who suffered under them, I. 124. i; and see *Bridgwater.* More Protestants suffered at the Great Rebellion than Romanists suffered under the penal laws, I. 124; II. 246. The, suffered for treason, not for religion, I. 124—126; and see *Cecil, Elizabeth* Queen of England, *James I., Laud.* Seminaries founded abroad for the; see *Priests Anglo-Romanist, Seminaries Foreign.* The, at Wisbeach; see *Watson Thomas, Wisbeach.*

Treasons of the, against James I.; see *Clark William, Garnet.*

Treacherous plots of the, against Charles I., I. xcv—xcvii; II. 47. Many in England at that time, disguised as Presbyterians, Independents, and the like, *ib.*; and see *Moulin.* Addresses to the, in England, by Bp. Bramhall, II. 351—353. 460—462. Treatment of the, in Ireland, by Lord Strafford and Bp. Bramhall, II. 124, 125. Were governed at this time by Archpriests; see *Archpriests.* And then by titular Bishops of Chalcedon; see *Bishop William, Smith Richard.*

Writers among the; see *Writers, Anglo-Romanist.*

Romanus, Pope in 898, I. 255.

Rome, the Chair of St. Peter not fixed to, by Divine right, II. 142, 143. 160—163. 240. 321; III. 551. Nor by human right, II. 163—166. The Chair of St. Peter not necessarily fixed to, by Bellarmine's own admission, II. 143. 240. 321. 378. 610; III. 551. And Gerson's, II. 610. The Chair of St. Peter may be removed from, by a General Council, *ib.* May become unfit for that chair and for a primacy of order, II. 321. 611. Has no privilege of continuance more than other places, II. 321. St. Peter Bishop of Antioch before he was Bishop of, II. 164. 240. 290; III. 549. See *Bishop of Rome,* St. *Peter.*

Constantinople equal to, II. 488. It was equalled to, by the Councils of Constantinople, Chalcedon, the Trullan; see *Council of Constantinople—of Chalcedon—The Trullan, Patriarchate of Constantinople — of Rome.*

Seminary at, for English Priests, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth; see *Seminaries, Foreign.*

Coronation Oath of the Emperors of Germany anciently sworn at, before the Popes, I. 149; and see *Oath Coronation of the Emperors of Germany.*

——, *Bishop of;* see *Bishop of Rome.*

——, *Church of;* see *Church of Rome.*

——, *Council of;* see *Council of Rome.*

——, *Court of;* see *Court of Rome.*

——, *Patriarchate of;* see *Patriarchate of Rome.*

Romish Emissaries, in England, disguised as Puritans, I. xcv—xcvii; and see *Romanists, English.*

——— *Orders;* see *Orders, Romish.*

——— *Writers;* see *Writers, Romish.*

Rosellis, Antonius de, opinion of, that men may withdraw from a Pope being heretic or apostate, I. 175.

Rosetti, Count, Papal nuncio in England during the reign of Charles I., I. 34. q.

Ross, Alexander, book of, called A View of all Religions, II. 616. 632.

——, *Bishop of;* see *Maxwell.*

Rossi, Cannachi, an instrument in the Papal plots against Cyril Lucar,

Patriarch of Constantinople, II. 267.

Rota, what meant by, I. 234.

——, *The Roman*, sentence of, that whoever built and endowed a church, should enjoy the patronage of it, II. 404. Condemns Papal dispensations as "odious things," II. 448.

Rowland, Rev. John, answered Milton's Defensio Populi Anglicani, I. xxxv. xciv. His book attributed to Bishop Bramhall, *ib.*

Royalists, English, in the reign of Charles I., charges of the Observator against the, as "masters of division," III. 399. retorted upon the Presbyterian party, III. 402.

————, *Irish*, forfeitures to the Crown in Ireland parted with by Charles II., in order to reinstate the, in their property, V. 132. 141.

Ruffinus, quarrel of, with St. Jerom, did not presently render them both schismatics, I. 98. Limits the Patriarchate of Rome in his own time to the Suburbicary Churches, I. 156; and see *Patriarchate of Rome.*

Rugg, see *Reppis.*

Rule, a Bishop called in Scripture, He that "ruleth" or that "has the rule," III. 474.

—— *of Faith;* see *Faith, Rule of.*

Rupert, Prince Palatine, chosen Emperor of Germany upon the deposition of Wenceslaus, in 1400, I. 203.

Russia, Church of; see *Church Greek—of Muscovy.*

Rusticus, a Roman deacon, withdrew himself from the communion of Pope Vigilius, I. 102.

Ruthven, Raid of, III. 267, 268.

Rymer, corrections of errors and omissions in the writs relating to Bishoprics in 1559—1561, as published by, in his Fœdera, III. Pref. last note.

S.

Sabbatarians, The; see *Book of Sports, Bound, Brabourne, Cawdrey Daniel, L'Estrange.* Argued for a literal twenty-four hours Sabbath, including the night as well as the day, V. 72.

Sabbath, grounds of the institution of the, V. 17, 18. Which are partly undiscoverable by natural reason, partly relate to the Jews alone, *ib.* Impertinent parallel between the, and certain heathen festivals, V. 12; and see *Ames, Clemens Alexandrinus, Eusebius.* Different kinds of, according to Epiphanius, V. 26, 27.

Was not first promulgated at the time of the Creation, in Gen. ii. 3, V. 19—21. 27, 28. Pretended promulgation of the, at that time, explained, V. 21. 27, 28. Gen. ii. 3. contains no precept respecting the, V. 19. Was observed by none of the Patriarchs up to the time of Moses, V. 20. Proof from Scripture, that the, was not observed before the Law, V. 20, 21. Proof from the Fathers, that the, was not observed before the Law, V. 22, 23. Alleged authorities of Fathers the other way answered, V. 23—27. Origen, V. 23. St. Cyprian, V. 24. St. Basil, V. 25. St. Gregory Nazianzen, *ib.* St. Athanasius, *ib.* Epiphanius, V. 26, 27. At what time first observed, V. 21. Law of the Fourth Commandment respecting the, see *Fourth Commandment.*

Whether and how far the law of the, is a moral (or natural) law, V. 13—18. Natural reason dictateth not the holiness of one day in the week more than another, V. 14. Man's conscience dictateth not the observance of the, *ib.* All mankind in all countries could not physically keep the, either upon a literal day or upon the same day, *ib.* The day of the, has been changed, V. 15. The grounds of the, are not moral, V. 17, 18. The law of nature prescribeth neither one certain day, nor one day indefinitely, out of seven, for the, V. 16. See *L'Estrange, Zanchy.*

The positive law of the, when and to whom given, and how binding upon Christians, V. 18—29. 68, 69; and see *Fourth Commandment, Gomarus, Rivet, Zanchy.*

By what authority, and when, changed to the Lord's Day; see *Apostles, Lord's Day.* Expressly abrogated by the Apostolic Council at Jerusalem, V. 36—38. Why so changed, V. 58—61; and see *Lord's Day.* Name of, applicable analogically to the Lord's Day, but other names (as Sunday or the Lord's Day,) more proper, V. 11, 12.

Judaico-Christian observance of the, in the Church, V. 44—47; and see *Easter, Saturday.* Was observed by the Ebionite heretics, V. 43. Puritan doctrine of the necessity of the observance of the, in the Christian Church, upon the Saturday; see *Brabourne.* Puritan doctrine of the necessity of keeping the Lord's Day after the manner of the; see *Book of Sports, Bound, Lord's Day, Sabbatarians.*

Doctrine of the Church of England respecting the; see *Homily on Place and Time of Prayer*. Of Bramhall, see *Sabbath and Lord's Day*. Of Ussher, see *Ussher*.

Sabbath and Lord's Day, Controversies about the, with their Respective Obligations, stated, discussed, and determined, by Bishop Bramhall; Works Part iv. Discourse i, V. 3—85. Contents of, V. 5—7. When and where written, I. xxxiii; V. Pref. 74. Question discussed to whom written, V. Pref. Probably to Dean Bernard, *ib.*

————————, Letter respecting the, by Bishop Bramhall, I. xcviii—ci. Probably addressed to Dean Bernard, I. xxxiii. xcviii. y; V. Pref. When and where written, I. xcviii. y. Preserved by Bp. Barlow; see *Barlow, Thomas*.

Sacraments, The Holy, not bare signs as our innovators would make them, II. 455; V. 190. 203. Not merely signs or commemorations, according to Hobbes's grievous error, IV. 533. Remission of sins granted in; see *Baptism, Lord's Supper, Priest*. Doctrine of the Real Presence; see *Lord's Supper, Presence, Sacrifice, Transubstantiation*.

How far necessary; see *Baptism, Lord's Supper*. God not so far tied to His, that He doth not or cannot confer the grace of them extraordinarily, V. 172. Saying of Peter Lombard, that "Deus potentiam Suam Sacramentis non alligavit," V. 175. l.

How the, are contained in the Creed, II. 470, 471. 474; and see *Creed*.

Communion in; see *Catholics, Communion*. Are the same Sacraments, purely and corruptly administered, II. 79. Administration of the, in a tongue unknown, an abuse in the Church of Rome, II. 35. 56, 57.

Distinction between the two which are generally necessary to salvation, and the symbolical acts to which the word in a larger sense is applicable, I. 55. 105. 272. The doctrine of seven, first devised by Peter Lombard, I. 55. First decreed by Pope Eugenius IV., in 1439, *ib.* And confirmed by the Council of Sens in 1528 and of Trent in 1547, *ib.* It was no old article of Faith, II. 241. It is enforced as an article of Faith by the Church of Rome, *ib.* It is rejected by the Greek as well as by the English Church, II. 634.

The five additional, of the Church of Rome, retained by the Church of England as useful and religious rites, I. 56; II. 35; and see *Absolution, Confirmation, Extreme Unction, Marriage, Ordination, Penitence, Visitation of the Sick*.

Protestants have forsaken no ancient Churches in, II. 35; and see *Church of England*. Agreement of the Greek Church with the English concerning; see *Church Greek, Cyril Lucar*. A right Hobbist cannot receive the, worthily, IV. 357.

Sacraments, The Seven, of the Church of Rome; see *Sacraments, The Holy*.

Sacrament of Baptism, see *Baptism*.

———— *of the Holy Eucharist*, see *Lord's Supper*.

Sacrifice, Christ the, wherewith we are reconciled to God, V. 220.

The Eucharistic, in what sense acknowledged by the Church of England, I. 54; II. 88. 276. 642; V. 188. 190. 221. Protestants have not pared away all manner of, V. 221. What are the essentials of the Eucharistic, according to the Roman Schools, V. 217. 221. All the essentials of the Romish, contained in the celebration of the Holy Eucharist according to the rites of the Church of England, V. 217. 221, 222. Papists can pretend to no other, than Protestants, I. 54; II. 88. 276. 642; V. 188. 190. 221. No difference about, if rightly understood, between the Churches of Rome and England, II. 276. See *Lord's Supper, Presence, Transubstantiation*. If any, is intimated in Luke xxii. 19, 20, it is Eucharistical, V. 218.

Of the Mass, renounced by the Church of England, if distinct (as it seems to be) from the Sacrifice of the Cross, I. 54, 55. Article 31. of the Church of England respecting the, of the Mass, explained, II. 581, 582. Agreement of the Greek Church with the English respecting the, of the Mass, II. 62. 633, 634. Romanists make daily as many distinct propitiatory, as there are masses in the world, V. 220.

Of the omission to mention, in the English Form of Ordination, II. 88. 275. 333. 642; III. 165. Power to offer evangelical, given by the English form of ordaining Priests, III. 165; V. 188. 213. See *Ordinal English, Ordination of Presbyters*.

Sacrobosco, see *Holywood.*

Saints, The, in Heaven, invocation of, not enjoined in Scripture, I. 57. When it was first introduced, I. 58. It was no old article of the Faith, II. 241. 494. 581. 633. It is made an article of the Faith by the Church of Rome, II. 241. 581. It is condemned by the 22nd Article of the Church of England, as besides, not as contrary to, Scripture, II. 581. Agreement of the Greek with the English Church respecting the invocation of, II. 633.

Comprecation with, allowed by both the Greek and English Churches, II. 633. Ultimate prayers to, condemned by both Churches, *ib.* Ultimate prayers addressed to, in the Church of Rome, I. 46, 47. 57; II. 494. Letter of Bishop Bramhall to Miss Cheubien respecting prayer to, V. 191, 192.

Of the intercession of, I. 57; II. 494; and see *Charles I.* of England, *Mary* Queen of Scotland.

Different theories concerning the way in which what passes upon earth becomes known to, I. 58. St. Augustin makes it doubtful (or rather false), whether such knowledge is possessed by, I. 79. See *Trinitatis Speculum.*

———, *The, upon earth*, collection of alms for, a proper work upon a festival, such as the Lord's Day, V. 39. 48.

Salcot, see *Capon.*

Salernum, medical school at, address from the, to Robert of Normandy, in Leonine verse, III. 494.

Salisbury, John, suffragan Bishop of Thetford 1536—1571, afterwards Bishop of Sodor and Man; named in the second commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, but did not act, III. 52. 75. 178. When consecrated himself, III. Pref. 56. y.

———, *Bishops of*; see *Abbot, Davenant, Deane, Gest, Jewel, Mallet, Peyto.*

———, *Cathedral Church of*, churches appropriated to the, by Henry I., of his own authority, I. 139.

Salmasius, or *Walo Messalinus*, admissions of, in favour of Episcopacy, III. 490. c.

Salus Populi; see *People, Prerogative.*

Salvation, an implicit submission to the Catholic Church sufficient to, II. 211. How much is necessary to be believed in order to, ordinarily, II. 278. It is necessary to, to forsake known errors, II. 59. See *Church Catholic, Creed, Errors, Essentials, Faith.*

How far the possibility of, is denied or admitted by Romanists of Protestants, or by Protestants of Romanists; see *Church of Rome, Protestants, Romanists.*

Salzburg, Archbishop of; see *Arno.*

Sampson, Richard, L.L.D., Bishop of Chichester—of Lichfield and Coventry, 1536—1554; proof of the consecration of, III. Pref. 140. d.

Samson, St., Archbishop of St. David's, at what time, II. 174. Pall of, not derived from Rome, II. 173, 174. Elected and consecrated independently of the Pope, II. 151.

Sancroft, Mr., I. xcviii.

Sanctâ Clarâ, Franciscus a; see *Clarâ, Franciscus a Sanctâ.*

Sanctify, of the manner of sanctifying the Lord's Day; see *Lord's Day, Sabbath.*

Sanction, Pragmatic; see *Pragmatic Sanction.*

Sanders, Nicholas, an able polemic writer for the Roman Church, I. 67. But a virulent one, I. 32. Sent to Ireland to countenance the Earl of Desmond in his rebellion, II. 112. 114. Account of the book of, De Schismate Anglicano, III. 46. b.

A virulent slanderer of Henry VIII., II. 191, 192. Slander of, against Anne Boleyn, II. 187. Beginning of the schism between England and Rome according to, I. 150. 235. Admission of, respecting the English Bishops of Henry VIII.'s reign, II. 505, 506; III. 59, 60. Words of, in concluding his "Visible Monarchy," retorted upon himself, II. 460.

Not one syllable about the Nag's Head Consecration in the book of, De Schismate Anglicano, III. 39. f. 42. 46—48; V. 248. n. Account given by, of the consecration of the English Bishops upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, quoted at length, III. 230. i. Admits therein the fact of Archbishop Parker's consecration and that of the other English Bishops consecrated at Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 98. n. 230. i. Indirect evidence that he never heard of the Nag's Head fable, III. 98. n. 102. 230. i. Testimony of, concerning Bishop Kitchin, III. 55. Admits, that clergy ordained by Edward VI.'s Ordinal were not re-or-

dained, but simply absolved and confirmed, by Cardinal Pole upon Queen Mary's accession, III. 62. 114. g.

Sanderson, Robert, D.D., Bishop of Lincoln 1660—1662, controversy of, with Baxter, whence arose the latter's attack upon Bramhall, III. 503. b. Reverence entertained for, by Baxter, III. 555. Doctrine of, respecting the sufficiency of Holy Scripture, *ib.*

Sandys, or *Sandes, Edwin, D.D.*, Bishop of Worcester—of London, Archbishop of York, 1558—1588; commission for the confirmation and consecration of, III. 67. 93. 219. Evidence for the consecration of, to the see of Worcester, at the time recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 219. One of the Bishops alleged by Fitzherbert, Fitzsimon, and Champneys, to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. Was first nominated by Queen Elizabeth to the see of Carlisle, III. 219. 226. Was present at Archbishop Parker's consecration, III. 206. 213. Joined in repressing the seditious proceedings of the Puritans at Frankfort in 1554, III. 317.

———, *Sir Edwin*, second son of Archbishop Sandys, account of, III. 434. r. Opinion of, respecting the duty of Parliament to refund Church property, III. 434.

Santa Clara, see *Clarâ.*

Saravia, good wish of, concerning seditious authors, III. 343.

Sardica, Council of; see *Council of Sardica.*

Sardinia, part of the original patriarchate of Rome, I. 156.

Satan, can solicit, but not necessitate, men to sin, IV. 91; V. 153.

Saturday, kept as a festival by the Church but not universally nor perpetually, V. 12. Observed of old in the Western Church, as a weekly fast rather than festival, where Jewish converts were scarce, V. 45. See *Sabbath.*

Saul, called the Head of the Tribes of Israel, 1 Sam. xv. 17, in what sense, I. 29; III. 326; V. 232. Meaning of the "shoulder" set apart for, by Samuel, V. 96.

Saxon Church; see *Bishops Saxon, Church Saxon.*

—— *Kings;* see *Kings, Saxon.*

—— *Sermon*, see *Ælfric.*

Saxons, The, how far converted to Christianity from Rome; see St. *Augustin* of Canterbury, *Church Saxon, Gregory I.* Pope, *Mercians, Northumbrians.* Many British Christians remained among, and transmitted their privileges, I. 266, 267; II. 529. Privileges of, transmitted to the Church of England; see *Church of England—Saxon.* Did not admit the Papal supremacy, II. 131—145; and see *Bishops Saxon, Church Saxon, Kings Saxon.*

Saxons, The South, converted to Christianity by Berinus an Italian, I. 267.

———, *The West*, converted to Christianity by Berinus an Italian, I. 267. Bishoprics among the, II. 138, 139.

Saxony, Confession of; see *Confession of Saxony.*

Say, Lord; see *Fiennes, William.*

Scalæ Chronicon; see *Graius, Johannes.*

Scaliger, Julius, definition by, of the will, IV. 394. Defence by, of the freedom of the will, IV. 287. And of terms of art, IV. 282.

Scambler, Edmund, D.D., Bishop of Peterborough—of Norwich, 1559—1594; commission to confirm and consecrate, III. 68. 225. Proofs of the consecration of, III. 225. One of the Bishops alleged by Champneys to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.

Schism, definitions of, I. 103. 108; II. 73, 74. 77. Definition of, by the Bishop of Chalcedon, II. 74. 80. Is moral as well as local, I. 101. What is single, i. e. mere schism, I. 103. Heresy and, distinguished, *ib.* The sorts of mere, I. 108. Is changeable, I. 109. And for the most part complicated with heretical pravity and violation of order, I. 110. Four ways of becoming heretical so as to be guilty of, I. 110, 111. In what way a Church becomes guilty of, I. 100; II. 355; V. 206, 207. Is not always about essentials, II. 27. 74—76. Has originated almost invariably in personal questions and not about doctrines, II. 75. Instances of this, II. 75, 76; and see *Donatists.* Every passionate heat is not, I. 98. Ecclesiastical quarrels of long continuance are not always, I. 98, 99. To communicate with schismatics is not always, II. 46. Schismatical, to resist a lawful Patriarch lawfully proceeding, III. 554. To withdraw obedience is not always criminous, I. 101, 102. See *Church Particular, Heresy.*

Communion in Faith doth not acquit from, II. 78. Of mental, II. 77. See *Catholics, Creed, Faith, Heresy.*

There may be just cause of separation, there can be no just cause of, II. 31. 236. The separators may be free from, and the other party guilty, I. 100. The Catholic Church cannot, particular Churches may, give just cause of separation, but even particular Churches cannot give just cause of criminous, I. 167; II. 32, 33. 65. 236, 237. 312. 588. See *Church Catholic, Church Particular, Separation.*

All (properly so called), is wicked, universal as well as particular, I. 167; II. 81. Every, not criminal, but sometimes necessary and charitable, I. 167. Is not a greater sin than idolatry, II. 28—31. See St. *Augustin, Optatus.*

Every one involved in a, is not a formal schismatic; see St. *Augustin, Schismatics.*

General and Provincial Councils the proper remedies of, I. 254; II. 148; III. 521, 522. A superiority or primacy of order (without a Headship of power) sufficient to prevent, II. 155, 156. 281. See *Bishops, Papacy, Primacy.*

Ordination of such as are in, see *Ordination.*

The Church of England accused of, but unjustly, see *Church of England.* The Reformation of the Church of England not schismatical, I. 207. and see *Church of England.* True beginning of the, between the Church of England and Rome, I. 248; II. 238; and see *Sanders.* The Church of England passive in the original of the, between herself and Rome, II. 238. 242. Protestants not authors of the, between Rome and England, II. 97. 105. 294. 306. 500; and see *Romanists.* The, between Rome and England, began before the Reformation, I. 207. Not the separation from the Church of Rome, but the cause, makes the, II. 58. Though the first separators were schismatics, yet the Church of England is free from, I. 126; II. 294. 506. Not doubtful whether the Church of England be in, or no, II. 28. 43. Proof of the guilt of the Church of England rests on the side of the Romanists, II. 497, 498. See *Separation.*

The Church but principally the Court of Rome is guilty of; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Court of Rome.* The Pope and the Court of Rome are most guilty of the, between the Churches of Rome and England; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of England—of Rome, Court of Rome.* The Pope the cause, procreant or conservant or both, of all the greater schisms in Christendom; see *Bishop of Rome, Bramhall John, Nilus.* Romanists no fit persons to object, to Protestants, II. 71. Many schisms in the Church of Rome, I. 126, 127. See *Church of Rome, Romanists.*

Many treatises concerning the, between Rome and England, at the time of the Great Rebellion, I. xxvii. f.

Schism, Just Vindication of the Church of England from the unjust aspersion of, by Bishop Bramhall; see *Just Vindication, Replication, Appendix.*

——— *Guarded*, and Beaten back upon the Right Owners, or a Clear and Civil Answer to the Railing Accusation of S. W., entitled Schism Dispatched; by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part i. Discourse iv, II. 355—646. Contents of, II. 339—349. Address to English Roman Catholics prefixed to, II. 351—353. When and where written, I. xxviii, xxix; IV. 213, 214. See *Clara Franciscus a Sancta, Hammond, Serjeant.*

Schismatics, who are, I. 112; and see *Schism.* Every one involved in a schism, is not a formal, II. 390. Invincible ignorance and an implicit faith free men from being formal, I. 127; II. 255. 584, 585. Do still in part remain in the Catholic Church, II. 80. 585. 590. See St. *Augustin, Church Catholic, Church Particular.*

To communicate with, not always schism, II. 46. See *Communion.*

Two kinds of Churches that are, those which separate themselves absolutely from the communion of other Churches, as the Donatists and the Anabaptists, and those which usurp a higher place than is their due, as the Church of Rome, V. 206, 207; and see *Schism.* Whether all those are, who want Bishops, III. 560; and see *Bishops, Churches Foreign Protestant.* They are, who would obstinately refuse to be reconciled upon right terms to the Church of Rome, III. 560, 561.

The Britannic Churches never judged to be; see *Church, British.*

The Church of England is not; see *Church of England, Schism, Separation.* The Church of England does not communicate with, II. 47—49. And would not necessarily be schismatical, though it did, II. 46. 47.

The Pope and Church but principally the Court of Rome are; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of Rome, Court of Rome.* The Pope is causally schismatical; see *Bishop of Rome, Bramhall John, Nilus.* Some Romanists are formally, II. 254; and see *Romanists.*

Ordination of, see *Ordination.*

Scholastic Distinctions, utility of, III. 567, 568. Sometimes over subtle, yet in the main both true and necessary, IV. 35. The weightier ecclesiastical controversies can never be distinctly stated without the help of, III. 567, 568; IV. 212. Grotius had been less open to attack, had his genius been less critical and more scholastic, III. 513. Hobbes's senseless scorn of, IV. 35. 123. 128—130. 209, 210. 260. 265. 282. 289. 382—386. 457.

Schoolmen, The; see *Schools.* Admissions of, against Transubstantiation, I. 13. Paradoxical questions of, respecting the manner of the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 14—20. Denunciations of, by Luther, and by Melancthon, IV. 282, 283. And by Hobbes; see *Hobbes, Scholastic Distinctions.*

Schools, The; see *Schoolmen.* Doctrine of the Roman, respecting the salvation of unbaptized and of abortive infants; see *Baptism, Infants.* Doctrines of the; see *Aquinas, Bellarmine, Buonaventura, Cajetan, Cassander, Gabriel Biel, Johannes Duns Scotus, Peter Lombard, Richardus de Mediâ Villa, Suarez, Vazquez.*

Scobel, Henry; see *Morton, Thomas.*

Scory, John, Bishop of Rochester—of Chichester—of Hereford, 1551—1585; record of the consecration of, vindicated, III. Pref. When consecrated, III. Pref. 56. y. Evidence for the consecration of, III. Pref. 70. s. 106. Acknowledged as a Bishop by Bonner, III. Pref. 70. s. 114. g.

Proof of the translation of, to Hereford in 1559, III. 227, 228.

Alleged share of, in the Nag's Head fable, III. 42.

Named in the first commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, III. 72. And in the second, III. 52. 74. 178. Joined in confirming Abp. Parker, III. 83, 84. 178. 182, 183. 185, 186. 200—202. And in consecrating him, III. Pref. 56. y. 86. 203—205. 211, 212.

Scot, Cuthbert, D.D., Bishop of Chester 1556—1559, deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, and at what time, III. 232. Fled abroad at that time, II. 246; III. Pref. a. Date of the death of, III. 232.

Scotland, see *Scots.* Investiture of Bishops in, belonged to the King, V. 203. Papal legates not admitted into, without the King's leave, II. 151. See *Kings of Scotland.*

Deliverance of, from the French, by the English in 1560, V. 89; and see *Kirk of Scotland.*

Reformation in, not better thought of by the Church of England than it deserves, II. 313.

Rebellion in, in 1636, 1641—1648; see *Bramhall John, Cavendish William, Commissioners, Glemham Sir Thomas; Covenant Solemn League and, Sermon.* Vain pleas advanced for that rebellion, III. 285—287. Religion a vain plea advanced for that rebellion, III. 286. Rights of the people a vain plea advanced for it, III. 285. The plausible words of the rebels in, to be tested by their deeds, III. 312.

Murder of the Earl of Montrose by the Presbyterians in; see *Graham, James.* Rebellious and traitorous acts of the Presbyterians in, against Charles I.; see *Assembly General of Edinburgh* A.D. 1648, *Scots.*

Offer of the crown of, to Charles II. in 1649, III. Pref. b; and see *Baillie.* Treatment of Charles II. in, in 1650, I. 75; V. 117.

Conquest of, by Cromwell after the battle of Dunbar, I. cxlvi; V. 117.

Scottish Bishops; see *Bishops Scottish, Spottiswood.*

——— *Church,* see *Church of Scotland.*

——— *Covenant;* see *Covenant, Solemn League and.*

——— *Discipline;* see *Discipline, Disciplinarians.*

——— *Kirk,* the Presbyterian; see *Assembly General, Kirk of Scotland.*

——— *Liturgy;* see *Prayer, Scottish Book of Common.* The Presbyterian form of; see *Kirk of Scotland.*

——— *Parliament,* see *Parliament of Scotland.*

——— *Presbyterians;* see *Disciplinarians, Presbyterians Scotch.*

——— *Rebellion,* in 1636, 1641; see *Scotland.*

Scots, The, belong to the Britannic Islands, II. 300. 527. The British and Irish, to be distinguished, I. 273, 274; II. 527. The Irish, the ancient and principal, *ib.* The

Britannic, a colony from the Irish, II. 527. The Irish, converted by St. Patrick, the British, by St. Columba, I. 274; II. 169. The Irish, joined with the Britons in refusing submission to Rome, II. 527, 528. The Mercians and Northumbrians had their religion and ordination from, not from Rome, II. 300. 528; and see *Church Saxon*, *Orders English*. Wall built by Severus to restrain the incursions of, into Britain, I. 194.

Sold Charles I., I. 75. Murdered the Marquis of Montrose, *ib.*

Treacherous and seditious conduct of, towards Charles II., I. 75; V. 117. Obligation of, to King Charles II., the greatest of any subjects' in the known world, I. 74. The loyal, excepted from Bramhall's censure, *ib.* The disloyal, deciphered, I. 75. No hope from the Scotch Presbyterian party until they repent, *ib.*

Scotus, Johannes Duns; see *Johannes Duns Scotus.*

Scriptures, The Holy, the Apocrypha excluded from the Canon of, by the Greek Church as well as by the English, II. 634.

Divine authority of, IV. 328. Antiquity of, IV. 329. Catholic consent for, IV. 330. The law of nature co-incident with, IV. 328. How they are a law to us, *ib.* Authority of, how contained, and why not expressed, in the Creed, II. 471. 474. 597. It is not dependent on the printer, IV. 327.

Are the rule of supernatural truths, I. 49; V. 269. In what way all truth necessary to salvation is contained in, III. 555; V. 30, 31. Contain all necessary supernatural truths, I. 49; V. 31. By Bellarmine's confession, *ib.* Are a rule rather than a judge, I. 49. The same rule of Faith as the Creed, II. 597. 630. Doctrine of the sufficiency of, not inconsistent either with prudential government or with the necessary means of finding out the right sense of Scripture, III. 522. Interpreted by the Catholic Church, the infallible rule of Faith, II. 22. 596. Interpreted by the Church Primitive and Universal or by the Church National, III. 542. Interpreted according to the analogy of Faith and the traditions of the Church, the ground of Faith in the Church of England, II. 575. 596. 630. This rule more certain than the Roman, of the Papal infallibility, I. 71, 72; II. 575. Tradition and, how reconciled, V. 31. Oral and immediate Tradition not a safer or readier rule of Faith than, II. 383. 575. That heretics have pleaded, for themselves, of no weight at all against this doctrine, V. 272. See *Church Catholic, Creed, Faith, Tradition.*

Doctrine of the Church of England respecting the interpretation of, I. 51, 52; II. 563. To whom the interpretation of, doth belong, and how far, I. 49, 50; V. 269; and see *Judgment of Direction—Discretion—Jurisdiction.* Authority of the English Reformers to interpret, V. 270. That the English clergy have only private interpretation of, and therefore no infallible or authoritative rule of Faith, answered, V. 265, 266. Hobbes maketh the sovereign prince the only interpreter of, yet obliged to make use of ecclesiastical doctors duly ordained, IV. 590. The sovereign the sole legislator, yet his hands tied by, according to Hobbes, IV. 591. The manner of, and qualifications for, expounding, according to the Church of England, I. 50—52. See *Bishops, Clergy, Orders.*

Election proved from, IV. 37. 41. 54. 283. And Free-will, IV. 223—225. Interrogatories, expostulations, and the like, in, prove man to have true liberty, IV. 56. Proofs from, of man's concurrence with the grace of God, IV. 239. 361. Texts of, attributing the will to do good works to the grace of God, IV. 232. All Hobbes's arguments out of, answered, IV. 229—240. His texts cited from, impertinently, IV. 229. His second sort of texts from, do confute him unanswerably, IV. 235. In his third sort of texts, he first woundeth and then giveth them a plaister, *ib.* See *Hobbes, Liberty, Necessity.*

Texts from, shewing the efficacy of prayer, IV. 107, 108. 362. Shewing the eternity of the punishment of the damned, IV. 246. Respecting Antichrist, III. 287. Slavery, III. 348. Against Limbus Infantum, V. 180. Respecting perjury, III. 310, 311. Murder, IV. 338, 339. The local motion of Angels, IV. 407, 408. Influence of the stars recognized in, IV. 307.

Institution of the Lord's Day founded upon, as well as upon Tradition, V. 31, 32. Objection answered, that there is no precept in,

for the abrogation of Saturday, and the solemnization of Sunday, I. xcix, c; V. 37. Immaterial whether there be a formal precept, V. 37. Or a written precept, V. 38. Not so clear that there is no precept of the kind recorded in, V. 38—41. Passages in, concerning the observance of the Lord's Day, V. 47—54. 55—58. See *Lord's Day, Sabbath.*

'Breaking of Bread' in, explained; see *Breaking of Bread.* Meaning of 'Death' in, IV. 233. of 'Hatred,' IV. 68. of Motion, IV. 407.

Obedience to the King enjoined by, see *King.*

Nothing from, to prove the Divine right of the Papacy, II. 377—379. S. N.'s argument from, answered, for the Romish Form of Ordination, V. 217. Arguments from, against Episcopacy, mere mistakes, III. 479.

Concerning various readings in passages of, that they do not affect our Faith, V. 115, 116. Disparaging terms applied to, by Romanists, III. 150; V. 260. 265. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning, IV. 327, 328. 532. 578.

Scudamore, Lord, assisted Bramhall with money when in exile, I. x. t. Evidence of the chaplain of, to Grotius's attachment to the English Church; see *Grotius, Turner.*

Sebastianus, a Roman deacon, withdrew himself from the communion of Pope Vigilius, I. 102.

Sectaries, Discourses against the English, by Bp. Bramhall, Works, Part ii. Discourses i. ii. iii. See *Bramhall, Works of.*

Sees, English; see *Bishoprics, English.*

Seeing, how the object is, and how it is not, the cause of, IV. 291.

Segovius, admission of, respecting the Papal supremacy, II. 376, 377. p.

Self-defence, of the Charter of Nature authorizing, III. 347. Hobbes teacheth that, supersedes all duties, IV. 554.

Sellenger, see *St. Leger.*

Selsey, see of, afterwards transferred to Chichester, I. 146. e. See *Wilfrid.*

Semeca, Joannes, the Glosser upon Gratian, admission of, against Transubstantiation, I. 12, 13. Opinion of, respecting the meaning of the word "Hoc" in the words 'This is My Body,' I. 15. Refers the origin of Shrift no higher than to an universal Tradition, V. 222.

Seminaries, The Foreign, for English Priests, founded by the Popes at Rome, Rheims, Douay, I. 66. 277; II. 113. Treasonable doctrines taught there, I. 66; II. 113. When and by whom founded; see *Allen, William.*

Semper, Ubique, et ab Omnibus; see *Consent, Universal.*

Seneca, definition of destiny by, IV. 116. End of punishment according to, IV. 324.

Senhouse, Richard, Bishop of Carlisle 1624—1626, consecrated at York in 1624, and why, III. 137. Bramhall's mistake with respect to the consecrators of, an exact parallel to the mistakes of Butler and Sutcliffe respecting Abp. Parker's consecrators, III. 137. b.

Sens, Council of; see *Council of Sens.*

Sense, Hobbes's contradictory doctrine that the object of, is and is not the same thing with the sense itself, IV. 588.

Sensitive Appetite, IV. 440; and see *Appetite.*

Sensus Divisus—Compositus, the terms defended against Hobbes, IV. 455.

Separation, between Churches, when lawful, I. 106—108. How lawful, I. 100. Christian communion sometimes admits and even commands a, I. 106, 107. Commanded in certain cases by St. Paul, I. 100. See *Communion.* Not the, but the cause, makes a schism, I. 100. 128; II. 58. There may be just cause of, there cannot be just cause of schism, I. 167; II. 31. 236. Errors in Faith obtruded justify a, II. 56, 57. 76. Some errors are just cause of reformation, but not of, II. 55. Some errors are merely excesses without guilt, and so no just cause of, II. 56. Views of particular persons not a just cause of, II. 55. The Catholic Church cannot, particular Churches may, give just cause of, although not of schism, II. 32, 33. 65. See *Church Catholic, Church Particular, Schism.*

Canon of the Eighth General Council concerning, I. 103; and see *Council of Constantinople* A.D. 869, 870.

Protestants confess no, from the Universal Church, II. 54. 206. 306. Nor from the Roman Church but only in her errors, *ib.* True causes of the, of some foreign Protestants from the Church of Rome, II. 36. 236, 237. See *Protestants, Protestants Foreign.*

The Church of England has not separated herself from the Catholic

Church, nor from all the Christian Churches in the world; see *Church of England.*

The, of the Church of England from Rome, was double, from the Court of Rome in the reign of Henry VIII., from the Church of Rome in that of Edward VI., I. 128; II. 242. 248. 351. 553. England active in the former, passive in the latter, II. 242; and see *Schism.* From the Court of Rome, total and absolute, from the Church of Rome, partial and negative only, II. 248. From the Court of Rome, made by Henry VIII. and the English, from the Church of Rome by the Popes themselves, II. 242. The, of the Church of England, is from the Court more than from the Church of Rome; see *Bishop of Rome, Church of England—of Rome, Court of Rome.*

The, of the Churches of England and Rome, is not in essentials, II. 259; and see *Church of England—of Rome.* But turns wholly upon questions of external coactive power, and violations of secular rights, I. 180—191; II. 351—353. 392. 396. 402. 452. 457. 557, 558; and see *Bishop of Rome, Henry VIII., Jurisdiction.*

Grounds of the, between the Churches of England and Rome, I. 179—192; II .194. 199—203. 236. 307. 552—557. Viz. the extortions and rapine of the Court of Rome, I. 180—183; II. 459. Usurpations and violations of all sorts of rights by the Court of Rome, I. 183—190. 263, 264; II. 459. 557. viz. of the kings of England, I. 183—189. of the nobility, I. 189. of the Bishops, I. 189, 190. of the people, I. 190. The destruction of ecclesiastical discipline by foreign jurisdiction, I. 190, 191; II. 459. The Pope's challenge of a spiritual monarchy by Divine right, I. 97. 192; II. 194. 242. The Pope's new articles of Faith, I. 81. 191; II. 56. 200; and see *Pius IV.* Pope. Peril of idolatry, I. 110, 191; II. 86, 87; and see *Lord's Supper.* The detaining of the Cup in the Sacrament, I. 110; II. 56. 201, 202; and see *Lord's Supper.* The Papal supremacy a sufficient cause of that separation, II. 241. The Pope's new articles of Faith a just cause of it, II. 56. 200. The detaining the Cup a just cause of it, II. 56. 201, 202. The Cyprian privilege; see *Church of England, Cyprian Privilege, Gregory I.* Pope. Mr. Serjeant reduceth the grounds of that separation to three, such as entrench upon conscience, temporal inconveniences, the exemption of the Britannic Churches from foreign jurisdiction, II. 556—571. Mr. Serjeant's exceptions to these answered, II. 559—562. Henry VIII. no ground of the, between England and Rome; see *Henry VIII.* Indulgences no ground of it, see *Indulgences.* The Church of England had better ground for the, than personal faults of Popes, II. 72. 148. 194. Two sorts of grounds justifying different degrees and kinds of, I. 179. The grounds of the English Church sufficient for reforming, which she did, though not for breaking unity, which she did not, II. 571. The assigned grounds of the, were just, whether they were the actual grounds or no, II. 310. See *Church of England, Court of Rome.* No other remedy for the English except, II. 308. Other countries not equally oppressed, II. 309.

The, of the Churches of England and Rome, was made with as much charity as possible; see *Church of England.* Was not a separation, I. 60. 81; II. 60. Was done publicly, I. 114.

The kingdom of England in her, from Rome, did make no new laws, but vindicated her ancient liberties, I. 129; II. 125. 296. 516; and see *Church of England, Coke, Fitzherbert, Henry VIII., Statutes English.* The first breach was made in the days of Pope Hildebrand, not of Henry VIII., II. 390. Errors of the Church of Rome not so obtruded as to compel, until four hundred years ago, III. 573.

The, between the Churches of England and Rome, made by Romanists; see *Church of England, Romanists English.* Though they who first made it, were schismatics, yet their successors are justified, I. 126, 127; II. 294. 500. 504. 506.

Gerson's account of the final, between the Greek Church and the Roman; see *Church, Greek.*

Separators, see *Separation.*

Sequestrations, of the English clergy during the Great Rebellion; Mr. Baxter's defence of, answered, III. 508—511.

Sergius I., Pope 687—701, succession to the Papacy between Paschalis and, determined by the Exarch of Ravenna, I. 173.

——— *III.*, Pope 904—911, I. 255.

Declared the orders conferred by Pope Formosus invalid, III. 151. 154. 171.

Serjeant, William, or *S. W.*, account of, II. 358. Seceded from the Church of England to that of Rome, II. 358. 467. 487. 506. 509. 592. 595. 597. Treatise of, against Bramhall and Hammond jointly, entitled Schism Dispatched, I. xxix; II. Pref. 363. a; IV. 213. Book of, entitled Down Derry, II. Pref. 285. 366.

Case between the Churches of Rome and England as stated by, II. 285. Principles laid down by, II. 286. Main principle of, admitted by the Church of England, II. 292. Two rules of unity according to, II. 467, 468. 496. Platform fancied by, of the Christian Church, II. 319. Doctrine of, respecting St. Peter's "first movership" in the Church, II. 373. 468, 469. 483. 547. 599. 613. Doctrine of, of immediate tradition, II. 465—467. 490. 492, 493. 571. 587. That doctrine deserted by himself when he quitted the Church of England, II. 467. Clusters of forgeries packed together by, in a few lines, respecting the Council of Chalcedon, II. 489, 490.

Manner of writing of, II. 359—362. Railing of, II. 577—580. Boyish insolence of, IV. 213. Bragging of, II. 367. 513. 554. Puerile, vague, and impertinent mode of argument followed by, II. 468—470, 471, 472. 483. 498—500. 513—516. 519, 520. 555. 572, 573. 601—606. 624. Prevarications of, II. 356, 357.

Sermons, see *Preaching*.

———, by Bishop Bramhall, unpublished; see *Bramhall, John*.

Sermon, preached in York Minster before his Excellency the Marquis of Newcastle, being then ready to meet the Scotch Army, January 28. 1643; by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part iv. Discourse ii, V. 87—110. Account of, I. xxxi. c. xxxiii; V. Pref. Passage from the public Prayers of the Scottish Kirk prefixed to, V. 89, 90; and see *Kirk of Scotland*. Text of, 2 Sam. x. 12. See *Cavendish William, Commissioners, Glemham Sir Thomas*.

———, upon the Restoration of Charles II., preached at Dublin April 23. 1661, being the day appointed for his Majesty's Coronation; by Archbishop Bramhall, Works Part iv. Discourse iii, V. 111—135. Account of, I. xxxiii, xxxiv; V. Pref. Text of, Psalm cxxvi. 7.

Sermon, entitled The Right Way to Safety after Shipwreck, preached before the Irish House of Commons in St. Patrick's Church, Dublin, June 16. 1661, at their solemn receiving of the Blessed Sacrament; by Archbishop Bramhall, Works Part iv. Discourse iv, V. 145—164. Account of, I. xxxiv; V. Pref. Published at the request of the House, V. 146. Text of, Prov. xxviii. 13. See *Repentance, Sin*.

———, on the Resurrection of the Body, preached at the Funeral of Archbishop Bramhall, at Christ Church, Dublin, July 16. 1663; by Jeremy Taylor, D.D., Lord Bishop of Down, Connor, and Dromore, I. xli—lxxvi. Account in, of Abp. Bramhall's Life, Works, and Character, I. lvi—lxxvi. Text of, 1 Cor. xv. 23.

Serpent-Salve, or a Remedy for the Biting of an Asp; by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part ii. Discourse ii, III. 289—496. Contents of, III. 291—296. Date and circumstances of the publication of, I. xxx, xxxi; III. Pref. 304. q. 339. u. 457. d. Bramhall's first publication, III. Pref. 299. See *Parker, Henry*.

Servant, Hobbes's principles overthrow the relation of a, to his master, IV. 571, 572.

Servetus, denounced by Calvin as a new Mahomet, V. 259.

Seventh Day; see *Sabbath, Saturday*.

Severs Hill; see *York, City of*.

Severus, Emperor of Rome, wall built by, to save Britain from the incursions of the Scots and Picts, I. 194. Died at York, I. 159.

Sewalus de Bowill, Archbishop of York 1256—1258, testimony of, to the extortions and rapine of the Court of Rome, I. 183. Excommunicated by Pope Alexander IV., *ib.*

Seymour, Edward, Earl of Hertford, Duke of Somerset, a promoter of the English Reformation, II. 500. Letter of Calvin to, in favour of Forms of Prayer and Liturgies, I. 38. g.

Sharpe, John, D.D., Archbishop of York 1691—1713, negotiation of the Prussians with, in 1710—1712, for obtaining Episcopal succession, III. 536. j.

Sheldon, Richard, a Roman Catholic Priest, conformed to the English Church, in 1611, III. 97. k. Testimony of, to the genuineness of the Register of Archbishop Parker's consecration, III. 97.

Sherborne, Robert, Bishop of Chichester 1508—1536, defended the royal supremacy, II. 505, 506; III. 59. Character given of, by Sanders, *ib.*

Sherborne, Bishopric of, II. 138, 139. Asser made Bishop of the, by King Alfred, I. 146.

Shimei, of the cursing of David by, IV. 230.

Shipmoney, III. 338.

Shireborne, Bishopric of; see *Sherborne, Bishopric of.*

Shrift, see *Confession.*

Sicily, part of the original Patriarchate of Rome, I. 156. 230. Ecclesiastical authority in, belongs to the Kings of Spain, I. 138. 229; II. 217. 221. 387. 512. By virtue of their regal authority, I. 230. Although likewise made legati nati of the Pope in, by a Bull of Urban II., I. 138. 229, 230; II. 145. 387. 512. Laws in, similar to the law of Mortmain, I. 142; II. 521.

Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge; see *Bramhall John, Hulet, Ward Samuel.*

Signi, Voluntas; see *God, Will of.*

Sigibert, King of the East Angles 636—638, converted to Christianity in France, I. 268.

Sigismund, Emperor of Germany, letter of, about the reformation of the Church, I. 209. Ecclesiastical reformation decreed by, in 1436, I. 210.

Signet Office, records of the, unfortunately burnt in the reign of James I., III. 41. Would have otherwise supplied additional evidence of the legitimate consecration of Abp. Parker and his fellow Bishops, *ib.*

Simancas, James, Professor of Civil Law at Salamanca, Bishop of Badajos; seditious doctrine of, respecting the temporal supremacy of the Pope, III. 301.

Simon Magus, held God to be the cause of sin, IV. 355. Condemned by the Church for rejecting free will, IV. 217.

Simonians, The, heresy of, against the truth of Christ's Human Nature, I. 8. Respecting the Holy Eucharist, *ib.*

Simplicity of God; see *God, Essence of, Simplicity of.*

Simpson, Rev. Nicholas, mandatary of the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury at Archbishop Parker's election, III. 189, 190. Probably the same with Archbishop Parker's chaplain of the same name, III. 189. q.

Sin, various definitions of, IV. 80. 318, 319. 368. A *de*fect, not an *ef*fect, having no true entity or being in it, IV. 74. The true nature of, IV. 369. Is properly irregularity, IV. 318. In the world before the civil law, IV. 368. See *Law.*

In what sense the glory of God is either the end or the consequence of the, of man, IV. 69. How God is the cause of the act, yet not of the sin of the act, IV. 74. Blasphemy to say, that God is the cause of, IV. 308. Or to say, that it is efficaciously decreed by God, IV. 308, 309. Why God did not make man impeccable, IV. 244, 245. Hobbes's theory makes God inevitably the cause of, IV. 81. 396. Hobbes's opinion destroyeth the omnipotence of God by making Him the cause of, IV. 355. 381. See *God, Hobbes, Menandrians, Simonians.*

The opinion of necessity taketh away the nature of, IV. 366. If there be no true liberty, there is no formal, IV. 112, 113. To be sin, must be the act of a free will against a just law, IV. 114. Story of Zeno, shewing that necessity of, implies necessity of punishment, IV. 82. No proper punishment but for, IV. 243. Temptation does not involve an antecedent necessity of, IV. 91. See *Liberty, Necessity.* A necessity of sinning maintained by certain Protestant divines in respect only of the original corruption of man, IV. 398; and see *Bucer, Zanchy.*

Sermon of Bp. Bramhall concerning forgiveness of, Works, Part iv. Discourse iv, V. 145—164; and see *Sermon.* Compared to a sore, V. 148. Cleansed only by the Blood of Christ, and in order to that, by repentance, *ib.* Diseases of the body and defects of the soul brought into the world by, V. 148, 149. Repentance 'the second plank' to save men from drowning by, V. 149. 185. Three good covers for, in Holy Scripture, Charity, Conversion, Forgiveness, V. 149—151. False covers of, V. 151—154. Unprosperous course of those who cover their, V. 155—157. Must be forsaken as well as confessed, V. 160—162. Means for obtaining forgiveness of, V. 162, 163. None more efficacious than the Blessed Sacrament of the Holy Eucharist, III. 167; V. 163, 164. 213. Remitted by Baptism, III. 167; V. 190. 213. And ministerially by Absolution, *ib.* In what ways

Ordination enables a Priest to put away, *ib.* See *Absolution, Baptism, Keys Power of the, Lord's Supper, Orders, Ordination of Presbyters, Priests, Repentance.*

Hobbes's contradictions respecting, IV. 581. 585. His errors concerning, IV. 81. 355. 381. 396. See *Hobbes.*

Sinner, how a, is said in Scripture to be "dead," IV. 233. See *Sin.*

Sinuessa, Council of; see *Council of Sinuessa.*

Sionis Cœnaculum, traditions respecting the, where the Apostles were upon the Day of Pentecost, V. 51, 52.

Sixtus I., Pope 119—128, ordained but four persons, I. 162. Patriarchate of, therefore, hardly large enough to include Britain, *ib.*

——— *III.*, Pope 432—440, convented before his tribunal by the Emperor Valentinian III., I. 172. Communion of, shunned by the Emperor Valentinian III., I. 102.

——— *IV.*, Pope 1471—1484, Bulls of, granting certain privileges to the Venetians, I. 243.

——— *V.*, Pope 1585—1590, book dedicated to, respecting the change in the Elements in the Holy Eucharist, I. 15; and see *Christopher de Capite Fontium.* Scoffing proposition for a marriage between the two Heads of the two Churches, Queen Elizabeth and, I. 32.

Skippon, Serjeant Major, commanded the London Trained Bands for the Parliament, in the Rebellion, III. 456.

Skyp, John, D.D., Bishop of Hereford 1539—1552, no regular record of the consecration of, III. Pref. 140. d. It is recorded in his own Diocesan register, *ib.* Other evidence for the consecration of, III. Pref.

Slavery, lawful for one man, or for a society, to enslave themselves to another, III. 347. Texts relating to, III. 348.

Sleidan, quotations from, respecting the Council of Trent, I. 258, 259; II. 332. 640.

Slingsby, Guilford, secretary to Lord Strafford, slain in the civil wars, V. Pref. b. Funeral Sermon for, preached by Bishop Bramhall, in York Cathedral, III. Pref. j; V. Pref.

Smith, Richard, titular Bishop of Chalcedon, notice of, II. Pref. a. Principal of the Romish clergy in England, *ib.* A person of eminence among the English Roman Catholics, II. 23. Survey by, of Bp. Bramhall's Just Vindication of the Church of England, II. Pref. Replication to the Survey of, by Bp. Bramhall; see *Replication.* Other books of, II. 53, 54. 268, 269.

Grants Faith, Church, and salvation, to Protestants invincibly ignorant of their errors, I. 79. 198; II. 44. 65. 205. 584. 637; V. 207, 208. Definition by, of schism, II. 80. Distinction made by, between the Pope and Papacy, II. 193. Admission of, respecting the Papal supremacy, II. 377. And that Roman Catholics were the authors of the separation between England and Rome, II. 105. Admits Father Oldcorn's testimony to the genuineness of the Register of Archbishop Parker's consecration, see *Oldcorn.*

Admits the orthodoxy of the Greek Church in fundamentals, II. 213.

S. N.; see *Norris, Sylvester.*

Society, the doctrine of necessity overthrows the framework of, IV. 84. See *Commonwealth, Law.*

Socinians, The, worse than the Arians, and why, II. 564. Not allowed to be a Church by the English Episcopal divines, III. 517. May admit the Apostles' Creed interpreted their own way but not as interpreted by the first four General Councils, II. 597. 619.

Socrates, naturally evil character of, corrected by his own assiduous care, IV. 100. 142. 406.

Sodor and Man, Bishops of; see *Salisbury, Stanley.*

Solomon, deposed Abiathar from the Priesthood and put Zadoc in his place, I. 172. Free-will shewn by the choice of, IV. 55. 300.

Somerset, Duke of; see *Seymour.*

———, *Henry*, Marquis of Worcester, conference of, with Charles I., respecting the controversies between the Roman and English Churches, III. 525.

Sommerville, John, treason of, against Queen Elizabeth, III. 331.

Son of God; see *Christ, God the Son, Jesus.*

Sorbonne, The School of, rejected the doctrine of the absolute universal monarchy of the Pope by Christ's own ordination, II. 317. 511. 606. Dispute in, whether the regiment of the Church be an absolute monarchy or a monarchy tempered with an aristocracy, II. 606. 642. Appeals of, from Popes to General Councils, I. 220. See *Gerson.* Al-

leged in the Council of Trent to hold the Divine right of Bishops, I. 189. Acknowledged the (English) orders of Dr. Gough at the time of the Great Rebellion, although they were denied by the Pope, III. 115. g.

Soto, Dominic, admission of, respecting the Papal Supremacy, II. 376, 377. n.

Soul, opinions in the primitive Church respecting the state of the, after death, I. 59; V. 192; and see *Purgatory.* Hobbes's grievous errors respecting the immortality of the, IV. 536. Not a distinct substance from the body according to Hobbes, *ib.* The understanding and will two powers of the reasonable, IV. 410; and see *Reason, Understanding, Will.*

South Saxons; see *Saxons, South.*

Sovereign; Sovereignty; see *King, Monarchy.*

Spain, no new religious can enter, without license royal, I. 143; II. 521. The Moors expelled from, see *Philip III.* King of Spain.

——, *Bishops of;* see *Bishops, Spanish.*

——, *Church of;* see *Castile Estates of, Church of Spain.*

——, *Infanta of;* see *Maria.*

——, *Kings of;* see *Kings of Spain.*

Spanheim, Frederic, the elder, Professor of Theology at Geneva 1632—1641, acknowledged English Episcopacy to be lawful, III. 485. l.

Sparke, Thomas, D.D., opinion of, concerning Romish orders in England, V. 250.

Specification, Liberty of, explained, IV. 33. 36. Not possessed by God or by the good Angels, IV. 121. 380. Liberty of Exercise not necessarily accompanied by, IV. 128. 278. See *Liberty.*

Speech, κοινωνίας ὄργανον, IV. 400.

——, of Archbishop Bramhall as Speaker of the Irish House of Lords, in 1661, to Sir Audley Mervyn on his presentation by the House of Commons for confirmation in the office of Speaker in that House,—the first, V. 136, 137. the second, V. 137—143.

Spelman, Sir Henry, MS. of, respecting Dionothus, II. 304, 305; and see *Dionothus.* Book of English Councils published by, V. 229, 230.

Spires, or *Spira, Diet of;* see *Diet of Spires.*

Spirit, The Holy; see *God the Holy Ghost.*

Spirits, are moved as well as bodies, IV. 407. Both bodies and, move themselves, IV. 408.

Spiritual Power; see *Bishops, Jurisdiction.*

Spiritually, what is meant by, as applied to the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, by Romanists and by Protestants, I. 22. i.

Spontaneity; see *Actions, Fear, Habit.* Hobbes confoundeth liberty with, IV. 28. What is, explained, IV. 263. 293. 299. 429. 460.

Sports, Book of; see *Book of Sports.*

Spottiswood, John, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, letter to, from Bp. Bramhall, I. lxxxvi. History of the Scottish Church by, known to Bramhall before its publication, III. 247. e. That History the source of Bramhall's information in writing his Fair Warning, *ib.* Dates the foundation of the Scottish Church in the year 203; see *Church of Scotland.*

Squire, attempt of, to poison Queen Elizabeth, II. 114; III. 331.

St. Andrew's, Archbishops of; see *Adamson, Spottiswood.*

——, *Assembly of;* see *Assembly General of St. Andrew's.*

Staff, Pastoral; see *Crozier.*

Stanhope, Edward, Archdeacon of Derry, I. lxxxiv, lxxxv. lxxxviii, lxxxix.

Stanislaus Christanovic; see *Christanovic, Stanislaus.*

Stanley, Thomas, Bishop of Sodor and Man from about 1510 to 1546, and 1559 to 1568, III. 232.

Stapleton, Thomas, D.D., an able polemic writer for the Romish Church, I. 67. As rational a head as any that Church has produced since the Reformation, III. 109.

Admission of, respecting the Papal Supremacy, II. 376, 377. q. Distinction of, between the essence and the perfection of a Church, II. 25. Respecting the interpretation of Scripture, I. 51. l. Respecting the obligation of human and positive laws, I. 62; V. 67.

Objections of, against the Episcopal Ordination of Jewel and of Horne, answered, II. 273, 274; III. 79. 126. Objects illegality to English consecrations at the beginning of Elizabeth's reign, upon various grounds, but says nothing of the Nag's Head fable, III. 46. 79. p. 108. 126—128. Assumes the fact of succession in English Orders by confining his arguments to their legality and validity, III. 98. n. 109. Latin translation of the Works of, in 1620, varies considerably from his original English, yet even the

former says nothing of the Nag's Head fable, III. 127. r.

Star Chamber, III. 337, 338. Accusations laid before the, against Bp. Bramhall; see *Bramhall, John.*

Stars, influence of the, as a cause of necessity, IV. 58, 59, 60. 141, 142. Occult virtue or influence of, IV. 306. Such influence recognized by Scripture, IV. 307.

St. Asaph, Bishops of; see *Barlow William, Davis, Goldwell, Wharton, Wood.*

State, The; see *Commonwealth, Hobbes, Nature State of, Society.*

Statutes, English, not of force in Ireland (in Bramhall's time) without a special Act, III. 465.

———, respecting the English Prayer-book and Ordinal, II. 274, 275; III. 58. c. 80; V. 235.

———, respecting the Papal power during the reign of Henry VIII., I. 117; II. 396—399. Related only to secular questions, and have nothing to do with spiritual power; see *Henry VIII., Jurisdiction, Separation.* Were declarative, not operative, I. 97. 143. 151; II. 296. 516—520. Were not the beginning of the English religion, II. 299. Were not new laws but new declarations of the fundamental laws of England, I. 97. 129. 151; II. 299. 519. See *Church of England, Henry VIII.*

———, respecting the Regal supremacy in the reign of Henry VIII., I. 116, 117; III. 395. 465. 493.

Statute of Carlisle, 35 Edw. I. c. 4, but usually called 25 Edw. I., and why, I. 145. d. Made in the days of Edward I. against the encroachments of the Bishop of Rome, I. 145; II. 408. 433. u; 514. 519. Proves the title of the Kings of England to the patronage of English Bishoprics, *ib.*

——— *of Clarendon*, when and by whom made, I. 143. Ancient laws to the same effect recited by the, I. 136. 143—145; II. 519. Forbids appeals to the Pope, I. 136. Directs appeals to be made in the last resort to the King, I. 144; II. 417. 439. 442. 514. 533. Inconsistent with the canon of the Sardican Council, II. 533, 534. Forbids the executing of Papal excommunications without the King's leave, I. 136; II. 441. Proves the title of the kings of England to the homage and investiture of English Bishops, I. 144; II. 407, 408. 519. Prohibits the clergy from quitting England without the King's leave, I. 144; II. 422. Directs the revenues of certain ecclesiastical dignities during a vacancy to be received by the King, I. 144. See *Henry II.* King of England.

Statutes of Gloucester, 6 Edw. I. cc. 9, 14, affirm the legislative power to rest in the King alone, III. 375.

——— *concerning Knights*, of Edward II.; see *Knights.*

——— *of Mortmain*, made in the reigns of Henry III., Edward I., and Richard II., I. 141. Why so called, I. 142. Defence of the, I. 119. 141—143; II. 521. Like laws to the, in Germany, Poland, France, Spain, Italy, Sicily, and in the Papacy itself, I. 119. 142; II. 521. and in the Roman Empire, I. 141, 142.

———, *Penal*, against the Roman Catholics; see *Laws, Penal.*

——— *of Præmunire*, how many and when passed, II. 298. s. 433. Evidence of the, against Papal encroachments and usurpations, I. 147. 195; II. 298. 441. And in favour of the rights of the Crown of England, I. 147, 148; II. 297. 421. 432, 433. 461. 514. Prohibit appeals to foreign prelates, I. 147, 148; II. 440. Prohibit Papal excommunications, I. 147; II. 298. 441. Give the patronage of Archbishoprics and Bishoprics in England to the King, I. 139. Severity of the, II. 421. 433. 502. See *Clergy, English.*

——— *of Provisors*, how many and when passed, II. 298. s. 433. u. Declare the Royal supremacy, I. 147; II. 146. 514; III. 376. No new laws but new declarations of the fundamental laws of England, II. 519. Prove the title of the Kings of England to the patronage of English Bishoprics, I. 146, 147; II. 298. 408, 409. 421. Severity of the, against those who favoured Papal usurpations, II. 421. 432, 433. 519. Condemnation of Papal exactions by the, I. 195; II. 425. And of Papal Provisions, I. 146, 147. 195; II. 408. And of Papal dispensations, II. 448.

Statute of the Six Articles, 31 Henry VIII. c. 14, I. 120. 129; II. 98. 130.

——— *of Waste*, 20 Edw. I. stat. 2;
——— *of Westminster*, 1 Edw. I., 13 Edw. I. stat. 1, 18 Edw. I. stat. 1. c. 1.
} affirm the legislative power to rest in the King alone, III. 375.

Statutes, English.
9 *Hen. III. stat.* 1, *c.* 36, statute of Mortmain; see *Statutes of Mortmain.*
20 ———. *c.* 9, I. 140; II. 298.
1 *Edw. I. anno* 1275, statute of Westminster; see *Statutes of Westminster.*
3 ——— *c.* 2, II. 421.
4 ——— *stat.* 3, *c.* 5, I. 140; II. 432.
6 ——— *cc.* 9. 14, statute of Gloucester; see *Statute of Gloucester.*
7 ——— *stat.* 1, respecting the Commission of Array; see *Array, Commission of.*
——— *stat.* 2, statute of Mortmain; see *Statutes of Mortmain.*
13 ——— *stat.* 1, statute of Westminster; see *Statutes of Westminster.*
18 ——— *stat.* 1, *c.* 1, statute of Westminster; see *Statutes of Westminster.*
20 ——— *stat.* 2, statute of Waste; see *Statute of Waste.*
25 ———, see *Statute of Carlisle.*
28 ——— *stat.* 2, III. 375.
35 ——— *c.* 4, statute of Carlisle; see *Statute of Carlisle.*
9 *Edw. II. c.* 14, Articles of the Clergy; see *Articles of the Clergy.*
17 ——— *cc.* 8. 14, I. 139.
1 *Edw. III. stat.* 2, III. 375.
25 ——— *stat.* 3, *c.* 4, II. 420.
——— *stat.* 6, statute of Provisors; see *Statutes of Provisors.*
27 ——— *stat.* 1, *c.* 1, statute of Præmunire; see *Statutes of Præmunire.*
2 *Richard II. c.* 7, I. 140.
3 ——— *anno* 1380, III. 376.
15 ——— *c.* 5, statute of Mortmain; see *Statutes of Mortmain.*
——— *c.* 6, I. 139; II. 433.
16 ——— *c.* 5, statute of Præmunire; see *Statutes of Præmunire.*
2 *Henry IV. c.* 3, I. 139; II. 433.
——— *c.* 4, I. 139; II. 433. 442.
4 ——— *c.* 2, II. 421.
——— *c.* 12, I. 139; II. 433.
6 ——— *c.* 1, II. 450. 460.
7 ——— *c.* 6, II. 433.
9 *Henry VI. c.* 11, I. 139.
21 *Henry VIII. c.* 13. } II. 396.
23 ——— c. 9. }
24 ——— *c.* 12, supremacy of the King asserted by, I. 115, 116; II. 296. 396. 517; III. 328.
25 ——— *c.* 14, II. 396.
——— *c.* 19, II. 396, 397; III. 255.
——— *c.* 20, II. 397; III. 13. k. 65. k. 73. c. 77. 79. p. 111; V. 200. d.
25 *Henry VIII. c.* 21, II. 393. 398. 458. 558.
26 ——— *cc.* 1, 3, II. 398.
——— *c.* 14, III. 78. o.
27 ——— *c.* 11, III. 64.
——— *c.* 15, II. 397.
——— *c.* 26, III. 395. 465. 493.
28 ——— *c.* 10, II. 117. 398. 452.
31 ——— *c.* 14, statute of the Six Articles; see *Statute of the Six Articles.*
35 ——— *c.* 1, II. 398. 452.
——— *c.* 3, II. 399.
1 *Edward VI., c.* 2, abolishing the election of Bishops by Deans and Chapters, III. Pref. 66. k; V. 200, 201. 228. Repealed by Queen Mary and not restored by Queen Elizabeth, *ib.*
3 *and* 4 ———, *c.* 12, ordering the English form of Ordination to be composed, II. 274, 275; III. 58. c. 80; V. 235.
5 *and* 6 ——— *c.* 1, authorizing the English Ordinal, III. 58. c. 80.
1 *Mary Sess.* 2. *c.* 2, abolishing the Book of Common Prayer, II. 274, 275; III. 58. c. 79. p. 80; V. 200. d. And repealing the Act of Edward VI. respecting the election of Bishops, III. 66. k; V. 200. d.
1 *and* 2 *Philip and Mary, c.* 8, II. 452.
1 *Elizabeth c.* 1, restoring the Regal and abolishing the Papal supremacy, II. 399. 452. 458; III. 65. k; V. 233. Gave the Queen no spiritual power, *ib.* Enactment of, respecting heresy, I. 272.
——— *c.* 2, restoring the Book of Common Prayer, and by inclusion the Ordinal, II. 274, 275; III. 58. c. 80. 81.
5 ——— *c.* 1, II. 117; III. 79. p.
8 ——— *c.* 1, respecting the English Ordinal, and ordinations performed according to that Ordinal, II. 274, 275; III. 79. p. 80. 82. 89. 91; V. 235—237. Confirms the fact of Abp. Parker's consecration and of the consecrations of the other English Bishops at that time, and disproves the Nag's Head fable, III. 94—96. Authorizes no other mode of consecration of Bishops than that prescribed in the English Ordinal, III. 109—111.
13 ——— *cc.* 1, 2, } II. 117.
23 ——— *c.* 1, }

39 *Elizabeth c.* 8, III. 80. p.
1 *James I. c.* 25, respecting the Prayer Book, III. 58. c. 66. k.
13 *and* 14 *Charles II. c.* 4, Act of Uniformity. } III. 58. c.
5 *Anne c.* 5, —— *c.* 8, Act of Union with Scotland. }
Statutes, Irish, 10 Hen. VII. *cc.* 5. 22, introducing English Statutes already passed into Ireland, III. 465. 10 Hen. VII. *c.* 20. respecting the cries of Butler-a-bo, Crom-a-bo, II. 111. 28 Hen. VIII., respecting the Papacy, I. 117, 118. and the regal supremacy, *ib.* 9 Car. I. (1634), respecting the Irish Church, I. vii. xix. 13. Car. II. (1661), respecting the Irish Church, I. xiii.
———, *Scotch;* see *Parliament of Scotland.*
St. David's, see *Menevia.*
———, *Archbishops of;* see St. *David, Dubritius, Hismael, Samson.*
———, *Bishops of;* see *Barlow William, Farrer, Laud, Morgan, Young.*
Stephen I., Pope 253—257, Councils held in Africa by St. Cyprian independently of, and against, I. 61. 99. Reprehended by St. Cyprian for receiving the complaint of one Marcian, I. 61. Opposed by St. Cyprian, III. 550.
——— *III.,* Pope 768—772, aided the revolt of Pepin against Childeric for his own ends, I. 131.
——— *VI.,* Pope in 896, I. 255. Treatment by, of the corpse of his predecessor Formosus, II. 92; III. 431. Declared the orders conferred by Formosus invalid, III. 151. 154. 171.
——— *Eduensis,* Bishop of Autun, one of the first that used the word Transubstantiation, I. 24. n.
Stephens, Dr., i. e. Bishop Gardiner, II. 102.
———, *Rev. Mr.,* a nonjuring clergyman; weak book of, on the authority of English Bishops, admitting the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f.
Steward, Captain; see *Bramhall Works of, Ordination Of Protestants', Priests, Robinson.*
Stewart, Peter, Vice-Chancellor of Ingoldstadt; evidence of, that the Greek Church denies the legislative power of the Popes, II. 634, 635. And that the differences of the Greeks with the Popes were about certain Papal exactions, II. 645.
St. German's, Bishopric of, II. 139.
Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury 1052—1069, succeeded by Lanfranc, I. 146.
Stirling, Articles of, A.D. 1648, intermeddled with the English and Irish Churches as well as with the Scotch, III. 267.
St. Leger, Sir Anthony, governor of Ireland; indentures of the great Irish and English families in Ireland to, renouncing the Papal supremacy, in 1540—1542, I. 122; II. 502.
———, *Arthur,* Canon of Canterbury in 1559, present at the election of Abp. Parker, III. 193.
Stoics, The, maintained the freedom of the will together with their doctrine of fate, IV. 287. Necessitarians attempt distinctions between the necessity maintained by, and that maintained by Christians of the same school, IV. 116—118. That God is subjected by, to destiny, destiny by Christian fatalists to God, IV. 116. That a necessary connexion of causes is held by, but God by Christian fatalists to be the One pervading Cause, *ib.* That contingency is denied by, but admitted by Christian fatalists, *ib.* Christian (so called) necessity only disguised Stoical, IV. 118.
Doctrines of, revived among Christians by Lipsius, IV. 119. 373. Hobbes a degree worse than, IV. 287.
Passages from St. Augustin concerning, IV. 287, 288. 423. Opinions of, are paradoxes, IV. 401.
See *Apuleius, Chrysippus, Lipsius, Seneca, Virgil.*
Stokesly, John, D.D., Bishop of London 1530—1539, pronounced sentence against Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine, II. 188. Joined in granting the supremacy to Henry VIII., I. 120; II. 218.
Stone, Hobbes's instance of a falling, to illustrate necessity, IV. 387. 411. 446. 462.
Stow, John, alleged testimony of, to the Nag's Head fable, III. 85. f. 117. l. 148—150. 153. Actual testimony of, against that fable, III. 149, 150. Inaccurate account given by, of the date of the deprivations of English Bishops at Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 74. c.
Account by, of the original of the English Parliament, III. 379, 380.
St. Paul's, Deans of; see *Barwick John, May, Nowell.*
Strabane, Lord; see *Hamilton, Claud.*
Strafford, Earl of; see *Wentworth, Thomas.*

Strode, William, the Parliamentarian, impeached by Charles I., III. 413, 414.

Suarez, admission of, respecting the supremacy of kings over ecclesiastical persons, I. 165. Doctrine of, respecting free-will, IV. 259. 382. That the Church hath authority to translate the Lord's Day to any day it pleases, V. 10. d.

Subjects, dissolution of sovereignty not in the power of; see *King, People.* Too great a latitude of judgment over their sovereign not to be allowed unto, III. 356; and see *King, Obedience.*

The positive laws of the kingdom the just measure of the liberties of, III. 366. May not claim privileges of which subjects are incapable, III. 416. A prince has no right to disfranchise his, by force, III. 343. See *King, Law, Parliament English.*

Hobbes's self-contradictions respecting the relation of, to the magistrate, IV. 561, 562. 580. 582; and see *Hobbes.*

Subscription, to tests, practised commonly at Geneva, III. 305. Though bitterly complained against by English Presbyterians, *ib.*

Suburbicary Churches; see *Patriarchate of Rome, Ruffinus.*

Succession, see *Eternity.*

————, *Apostolical;* see *Apostolical Succession, Bishops.* Uninterrupted in the Church of England, V. 189; and see *Church of England, Orders English.*

Suevic Confession; see *Confession, Suevic.*

Sufficiency, with respect to causation, two sorts of, IV. 451, 452; and see *Cause.*

Suffragan Bishops; see *Bishops Suffragan, Chorepiscopi.*

Sunday, a more proper (civil) name for the Lord's Day, than Sabbath, V. 11. See *First Day of the Week, Lord's Day, Sabbath, Scriptures.*

Συνείσακτοι; see *Council of Nice the First.*

Συντήρησις, corrupted into Synderesis, explanation of, IV. 346. And by St. Jerom, IV. 346. b.

Supererogation, Works of, denied by the Greek as well as by the English Church, II. 634.

Superintendents, established in Scotland, with everything appertaining to Bishops except the name, by the first Book of Discipline, A.D. 1560, III. 246, 247. See *Bishops.*

Among the Lutherans in Germany, II. 69. 564; III. 480. 517. 532.

Superiors, obedience to; see *Obedience.*

Supplentes, or Dispensative Clause; see *Commission or Royal Assent.*

Supplication of Beggars, A.D. 1527, assertion in the, that more than a third part of the realm was then in ecclesiastical hands, I. 118. Mention in the, of the pretended donation of the crown of England by King John to the Pope, I. 186.

———— *Souls,* in answer to the Supplication of Beggars; see *More, Sir Thomas.*

Supposition, necessity upon; see *Necessity.*

Supremacy of the Bishop of Rome, spiritual, temporal; see *Bishop of Rome, Papacy, Primacy.* Unanimously and freely rejected in England, in Henry VIII.'s reign, I. 114. 120—122; II. 97. 295. 503; and see *Bishops English, Bishop of Rome, Henry VIII., Parliament English.* And in Ireland, I. 122; II. 97. 295; and see *St. Leger, Sir Anthony.* The authors of the separation between England and Rome, were Romanists in all points but that of the; see *Church of England, Romanists, Separation.*

———— *of the King, in ecclesiastical causes,* a necessary part of civil sovereignty, III. 243, 244. But only a political supremacy; see *Church Catholic—Particular, King.*

When and by whom granted in England, I. 114. 120; II. 218. 503. V. 232. First granted in England by Romanists; see *Kings of England, Romanists.* And not unanimously or unhesitatingly, I. 122. e. To what extent granted or assumed in England; see *Bishops English, Kings of England.*

Possessed by the Kings of France, see *Kings of France.* Of Spain, see *Kings of Spain.* By the Emperors, of the Roman, Eastern, Western, German Empires; see *Emperors.* In the United Provinces; see *Brabant, United Provinces.*

Denied by the Presbyterians, III. 302. Who assert that of the people, *ib.* Overthrown in practice in Scotland by the Disciplinarians, III. 245—249. And denied by them in theory, III. 249—254. See *Discipline, Disciplinarians, Presbyterians English—Foreign—Scottish.* Denied by the Romanists; see *Bishop of Rome, Jesuits.*

———— *Oath of;* see *Oath of Supremacy.*

Sutcliffe, Matthew, D.D., Dean of Exeter 1588—1629, testimony of, to the fact of Abp. Parker's consecration as recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 98. m. 131. Mistake of, with respect to Abp. Parker's consecrators, III. 131. It was corrected by himself, III. 133. Opinion of, as to Romish Orders in England, V. 250.

Sweden, Episcopacy retained (by Lutherans) in, II. 69. 564; III. 480. 517. 532. Lutherans in, not "unchurched" by English Episcopal divines, III. 517.

Sylverius, Pope 536—538, justly banished by the Emperor Justinian, I. 173; II. 234.

Sylvester III., Pope, deposed by Henry II. Emperor of Germany, I. 173.

Sylvius, Æneas; see *Pius II.* Pope.

Symbolum, see *Creed.*

Symmachus, Pope 498—514, succession to the Papacy determined in favour of, against Laurentius, by Theodoric, I. 173.

Sympathies, and antipathies, IV. 431.

Syndeger, Bishop of Bamberg; see *Clement II.* Pope.

Synderesis, see Συντήρησις.

Synod; see *Council General, Council National, Council Provincial.* Power of assembling, in his own dominions, belongs to the king, II. 414, 415; and see *Emperors, King.* Authority of kings over; see *Emperors, King.* Scottish Disciplinarians overthrow the right of the magistrate to convocate, see *Disciplinarians.*

—— *of Dort*, authority allowed over the, to the civil magistrate, III. 244.

Doctrine of the, respecting Præterition and Universal Redemption, III. 505. Free-will maintained by the, III. 505; IV. 399. Deputies of one of the Dutch Churches at the, maintained a necessity of infallibility, which implies only a hypothetical necessity, IV. 398.

Inclination of some of the members of the, to Episcopacy, I. 38; III. 536. j; and see *Diodati.*

Scholastic terms employed by the, IV. 395, 396.

Synods, British, in the time of St. Augustin of Canterbury, two, concurred with Dionothus in refusing submission to the see of Rome, I. 163, 164. 201; II. 542, 543; and see *Dionothus.*

———, *English*, the right of convocating and confirming, is the King's; see *Henry VIII., Kings of England.* Diocesan, held in England twice in the year until the time of Henry VIII., III. 488. See *Convocation, English.*

Of Nidd, of Hedtfeld, of Hertford; see *Council of Nidd—of Hatfield—of Hertford.*

Two, in 1530, and 1532, admitted the Regal supremacy, I. 114; II. 218. 501. Another, in 1534, rejected the Papal supremacy, *ib.* Of 1536, Articles of Religion set forth by, III. 142. o. Of 1536, Declaration concerning General Councils made by, *ib.* Of 1537, set forth the Institution of a Christian Man, I. 122; III. 142. o. Of 1540, ratified the divorce of Henry VIII. from Anne of Cleves, III. 142. o. Original Instrument of the Process of that divorce, with all the signatures, in the State Paper Office, *ib.* Of 1552, Articles and Canons drawn up by, *ib.* Bp. Barlow present as Bishop at the, of 1536, 1537, 1540, 1552, *ib.*

Of 1571, 1603; see *Canons, English.*

Of the Province of York, in 1620, sermon preached before, by Bramhall, I. xvii; III. 540.

In 1640, asserted the Divine right of kings, I. 37; and see *Canons, English.*

Synods, French, power of convoking and confirming, is the King's; see *Kings of France.*

In 1651, in behalf of the Portuguese clergy, I. 224; and see *Bishops, Portuguese.*

———, ———, *Reformed*, none ever summoned without the King's sanction, III. 244.

Of La Rochelle in 1621, I. 7. a.

Of Alencon in 1637, and Charenton in 1645, respectively, suspended and expelled La Milletière from the French Reformed Congregations, I. 7. a.

———, *Irish;* see *Convocation, Irish.* Of Cashel in 1172, see *Council of Cashel.*

Synodus Francica, see *Council Germanic The First.*

T.

Talbot, Father Peter, a Jesuit, afterwards titular Archbishop of Dublin, books of, respecting Anglican Orders, published in 1657, 1659, under the initials N. N., I. xxx; III. 22. e.

39. f. Revived the Nag's Head fable in them, I. xxix, xxx; III. 22. 39. f. Arguments of, against the Form of Episcopal and Priestly Ordination in the Church of England, answered, III. 162—171. Calumny of, against Bramhall, III. 22, 23. Against Bishop Morton; see *Morton, Thomas.* See *Consecration and Succession of Protestant Bishops Vindicated.*

Tatians, The, heresy of, respecting the Holy Eucharist, I. 9.

Taulerus, see *Thaulerus.*

Taverner, Richard, author of the Postills, a College contemporary and friend of Archbishop Parker's, III. 199. v. A witness to Abp. Parker's consent to his election to the see of Canterbury, III. 199.

Taxa, Pœnitentiaria, I. 56. 180; II. 445. 447. Iniquitous nature of the, *ib.*

Tayler, John, Bishop of Lincoln 1552—1554, consecration of, by the English Ordinal, declared null in 1553, III. 115. g.

Taylor, Jeremy, D.D., Bishop of Down, Connor, and Dromore, 1661—1667, consecrated with eleven other prelates Jan. 18. 1661, by Abp. Bramhall, I. xii. Funeral Sermon of, for Abp. Bramhall; see *Sermon.*

Tecelius, see *Tetzel.*

Telaus, a British Archbishop, consecrated Bishops in Wales independently of Rome, I. 161.

Templars, The Knights, when established, II. 196. Rule of, said to have been written by St. Bernard, *ib.* St. Bernard's praises of, *ib.* When and why suppressed, *ib.*

Temporalties of the Church, always held lawful to alienate the, in certain cases, I. 119. Bills to confiscate the, in England, in the reigns of Richard II. and Henry IV.; see *Henry IV.* King of England, *Richard II.* Extent of the, in England, in the reign of Henry IV., III. 434. And in that of Henry VIII., I. 118. And in 1642, III. 434. Confiscation of the, in England, in the reign of Henry VIII., I. 118—120. English Parliaments since the 27 and 31 of Henry VIII. bound to make some restitution of the, in the judgment of Lord Verulam and Sir Edwin Sandys, III. 434.

Restitution of, writ so called; see *Restitution of Temporalties.*

Temptation; see *Liberty, Necessity, Sin.*

Tenterden Steeple and Goodwin Sands, proverb concerning, I. 41.

Tenths, and *First Fruits,* first imposed upon the clergy by the Popes as a stock for the defence of Christendom against the Turks, I. 215, 216; II. 422—425. Usurped by the Popes, II. 422—425. 449. First made an annual payment to the see of Rome by either Boniface IX. or John XXIII., at the beginning of the fifteenth century, II. 424. Gradual progress of the usurpation of, II. 422—425. Condemned and abolished by the Councils of Constance and Basle, II. 401. 424. Reimposed by Leo X., II. 425. But prohibited by the Emperor Charles V., I. 216; II. 425.

Law of Henry IV. of England against, II. 449, 450. English laws against, I. 215; II. 425. Assumed by Henry VIII. to himself, II. 409. See *Bishop of Rome, Church of England, Henry VIII., Kings of England.*

Refused to the Popes in Germany; see *Charles V., First Fruits, Grievances Hundred.* Condemned by the Kings of France, I. 221.

Terfeckan, or *Termonfeckin,* a palace belonging to the see of Armagh, I. cix.

Terman-o-Mongan, I. lxxxv.

Termon-Colahy, I. vi. x.

Termon-Feckin, see *Ter-Feckan.*

Terms of Art, necessary, IV. 128—130. Defence of, by Aristotle, IV. 282. By Scaliger, *ib.* Censure passed upon, by Luther and Melancthon, *ib.* Hobbes's presumptuous rejection of the received, IV. 128—130. 265. 382—386. Are ungrateful to rude persons, IV. 282.

All Hobbes's contention is about terms, not things, IV. 292. Of mental, IV. 399.

——— *of Reconciliation* or *Re-union,* between Christian Churches, and Romanists and Protestants; see *Reconciliation.*

Ter-Owen, Phœnix plume and indulgences sent to, by Pope Clement VIII., to encourage him in his rebellion against Queen Elizabeth, II. 113.

Tertullian, reverence of St. Cyprian for, I. 130. Salvation of, may be hoped, notwithstanding his falling off from the Catholic Church, II. 65.

Language of, respecting the Apostles' Creed, II. 472. Tradition, I. 200; V. 266. 270. The authority of Apostolical Churches, I. 130. His note of heretics, II. 213.

Doctrine of, respecting the Pre-

sence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r. Repentance, V. 158. q. s.

Testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath before Moses, V. 22. And that the Lord's Day was kept holy throughout the whole Church immediately after the Apostolic age, V. 42. y.

Doctrine of, respecting kingly power, III. 326. And obedience to the civil magistrate, III. 350.

Testimony of, to the number of Christians in early times, I. 162.

Tetzel, or *Tecelius*, or *Ticelius*, the Pope's Pardoner, impious saying of, about Indulgences, I. 180. Said to have died of grief when rebuked by Miltitius, II. 237.

That, the particle, sometimes signifies in Holy Scripture, not the main end, but only the consequent, of an action, IV. 69.

Thaulerus, or *Taulerus*, a Dominican monk, account of, III. 511. g.

Thebæan Legion, martyrdom of the, without their resistance, III. 342. 356; IV. 391. 555.

Thetford, Suffragan Bishop of; see *Salisbury.*

Thevnen, see *Boven.*

Theodore II., Pope in 898, I. 255.

———, Archbishop of Canterbury 668—693, in the reign of Egbert of Kent; sent by Pope Vitalianus at the request of the English, II. 134, 135. Treatment of, by Egbert, *ib.*

Presided at an English synod, II. 138. Presided at an English council in the presence of John legate of Pope Agatho, II. 413. Condemned Archbishop Wilfrid of York, I. 134; II. 131, 132. And impugned in so doing the decrees of the Pope, I. 134; II. 132. See *Alfred* King of Northumbria.

Did not hold the Divine institution of shrift, V. 222. Pœnitentiale of, V. 222. m.

Theodoret, testimony of, to the non-observance of the Sabbath prior to the time of Moses, V. 23. a.

Theodoric, King of the Ostrogoths, imprisoned Pope John I., I. 173. Determined the succession to the Papacy between Laurentius and Symmachus, *ib.*

Theodorus, see *Theodore.*

Theodosius I., The Great, Emperor of Rome, solicitude of, upon his deathbed, for the Church, V. 101. Exercised the right of summoning ecclesiastical synods, I. 207. Confirmed the decrees of the Councils of Constantinople and Chalcedon establishing the Patriarchate of Constantinople, I. 177; II. 184. Law of, limiting gifts to the Church, I. 141. Complaints respecting this law, of St. Ambrose and St. Jerom, I. 142; II. 230.

Theodosius II., The Younger, Emperor of Rome, convocated the General Council of Ephesus, and sent Candidianus thither to preserve peace and order, II. 228. Is no witness to Papal authority, II. 227, 228.

Theological Virtues; see *Virtues, Theological.*

Theophylact, doctrine of, respecting the Apostles being vicars of Christ, II. 152. Affirms the "Breaking of Bread" at Emmaus to have been the Holy Eucharist, V. 57. d.

Theory, insufficient without experience, IV. 549.

Thinne, see *Thynne.*

Thirlby, Thomas, Bishop of Westminster —Norwich—Ely, 1540—1559, joined in granting the supremacy to Henry VIII., I. 120; II. 218. 295. Deprived, and when, III. 232. Date of the death of, *ib.*

Thomas, St., the Apostle, observation of the Lord's Day propagated in India by, V. 34. b.

——— *Aquinas, St.;* see *Aquinas, St. Thomas.*

——— *à Becket*, or *St. Thomas of Canterbury*, Archbishop of Canterbury; see *Becket, Thomas à.*

——— *à Jesu;* see *Jesu, Thomas à.*

Thorney, Abbot of, his vain appeal to the Pope, II. 439.

Thought, definition of, IV. 249.

Thracia, province of, assigned to the Patriarchate of Constantinople by the Councils of Constantinople and Chalcedon, notwithstanding the opposition of the Popes, I. 155, 156. 177; II. 489.

Thurlby, see *Thirlby.*

Thursday, alleged design of Calvin to transfer the Lord's Day from the first day of the week to the, V. 10.

Thynne, Francis, testimony of, in his continuation of Holinshed's Chronicle, to the fact of Abp. Parker's consecration, and that of the other English Bishops consecrated in 1559, 1560, as recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 98. m. 229. g.

Tiberius Cæsar; see *Cæsar, Tiberius.*

Ticelius, see *Tetzel.*

Tichburne, Sir Henry, Member of the Irish House of Commons, June 1661,

V. 146. Governor of Drogheda 1641, and through the Irish Rebellion, V. 147. a.

Time, see *Eternity*.

Tindal, the English reformer, held the opinion that the Lord's Day might be changed by Christians to any day they pleased, V. 10. d. 62. q.

Toledo, Council of; see *Council of Toledo*.

Tolet, Cardinal, opinion of, respecting the controversy between the Eastern and Western Churches, about the Procession of the Holy Spirit, II. 629.

Tolwyn, Rev. William, one of the witnesses for Abp. Parker at his confirmation, III. 177. 200. Account of, III. 200. d. Name of, apparently misspelt in one passage in the Register of that confirmation, III. 177. Evidence of, III. 200.

Tongues, Cloven, of fire, wherein the Holy Spirit descended upon the Day of Pentecost, what meant by the, V. 51, 52.

Tonstall, see *Tunstall*.

Tophet, literal and mystical meaning of, IV. 195. 491.

Tostatus, doctrine of, that the Church has authority to translate the Lord's Day to any day it pleases, V. 10. d.

Touchet, James, Baron Audley, memoirs and account of, III. 35. d. 37. e. Author of the story respecting Bp. Morton's admission of the Nag's Head fable, I. xxix; III. 35—37. Arguments of Courayer and Le Quien concerning, III. 35. d. Must have known Bishop Morton by sight, III. 37. e. Father Talbot did not forge the testimony of, to this story about Bishop Morton, III. 35. d. Probable origin of it, *ib.*

Toulouse, University of; see *University of Toulouse*.

Tours, Council of; see *Council of Tours*.

———, *Estates of* France assembled at; see *Estates of France*.

Toxteath, Alderman of Drogheda, married Jane, second daughter of Archbishop Bramhall, I. xiii.

Tradition, universal, primitive, and perpetual, authority assigned to, by the Church of England, I. 52. Authority of, asserted by St. Augustin; see St. *Augustin*. By Bramhall, I. 130; II. 291. 352, 353. 594. 618; V. 31. By Dr. Field, V. 31. Heresies impeach not the perpetuity of, II. 352, 353. 493.

Apostolical, authority of, V. 31. Doctrine of the Fathers respecting Apostolical, V. 266, 267. Of St. Augustin, II. 68. 383; V. 34, 35. 40. 267. 270. The Church of England an enemy to upstart, not to Apostolical, I. 53; II. 634. The Creed an Apostolical, both materially and formally, II. 291. 494. Instances of Apostolical, I. 53; II. 291. Episcopacy, I. 53. Lent, *ib.* Undeniable that the Lord's Day is an Apostolical, V. 30. 33—36.

No universal, that the Pope's supremacy is of Christ's own ordination, II. 289—292. 600. Nor for the Divine right of the Papacy, I. 65; II. 292. 385—388. No Apostolical, for the Papacy as now maintained, I. 53. No universal, for the points in difference between England and Rome, I. 65; II. 494, 495. None for Purgatory, I. 65; and see *Purgatory*. None for the Romish matter and form of Ordination, V. 218; and see *Ordination of Presbyters*. None for Image worship, I. 65. None for Common Prayer in a tongue unknown, *ib.* None for detaining the Cup in the Sacrament from the laity, I. 20. 47. c. 65.

Oral and immediate, no certain rule, II. 381. 490, 491. Whether from parents to children, II. 382. Or the, of the present Church, II. 383. Not readier or safer than the Scriptures, *ib.* What is the true oral, II. 474. Written and perpetual, better than oral and immediate, II. 384. Of unwritten, V. 31. Mr. Serjeant answered concerning immediate, II. 465—467. 490. 492, 493. 571. 587. 630.

The, of the Roman Church, not the tradition of the Church Catholic, II. 383; and see *Church of Rome*. Papists make "Divine tradition," equal with the words, precepts, and doctrines of Christ, left us in writing, "Apostolical," with the written precepts of the Apostles, and "Ecclesiastical," with the written precepts of the Pastors of the Church, V. 31.

The Scriptures interpreted according to the analogy of the Faith and the, of the Church, are the ground of Faith in the Church of England, II. 575. 596. 630; and see *Church, Church of England, Creed, Faith Rule of, Scriptures*.

Traditores, what meant by, II. 75.

Transcript, of the record of Archbishop Parker's Consecration, in C.C.C. Library, Cambridge; see *Parker Matthew, Registers*.

Transient, distinguished from immanent, acts; see *Actions of Free Agents, God, Will.*

Transubstantiation, no old article of the Faith, II. 241. The Fathers did not touch either the word or the matter of, I. 24. Not held by the Saxon Church, I. 70. A new article in the days of Berengarius, after 1050, I. 11. First defined at the Council of Lateran in the days of Innocent III., in 1215, I. 14; III. 573. First mention of the word, by Petrus Blesensis under Pope Alexander III. in 1159, or by Stephen Eduensis in 1100, I. 24. n. The very word, in an old author, enough to prove him counterfeit, I. 55. Admissions of the Schoolmen against, I. 12, 13, 14. See *Ælfric, Berengarius, Innocent III.* Pope, *Nicolas II.* Pope, *Umbertus.*

Differences in opinion respecting, in the Roman Schools themselves, I. 14—20; V. 212. Yet they do not think the Sacrament invalidated thereby, V. 212. The definition of, opened a floodgate to a deluge of controversies and noisome questions, I. 14. Instances in detail, I. 14—20. See *Adduction, Conservation, Consubstantiation, Production.* The doctrine of concomitance, and the withholding of the Cup from the laity, followed from the definition of, I. 20. And the adoration of the Sacrament, I. 20, 21. See *Cup, Lord's Supper.*

Peril of idolatry from the doctrine of, I. 44, 45; II. 86, 87. 556.

Rejected from being an Article of the Creed by the Church of England, I. 55; II. 634. And by the Greek Church, II. 634. Placed by Protestants among the opinions of the Schools, not among the Articles of the Faith, I. 8; II. 211. Made an Article of the Faith by the Church of Rome, II. 241. No difference between the Churches of Rome and England about sacrifice (in the Holy Eucharist), if the doctrine of, be taken away, II. 276; III. 165; V. 217; and see *Andrewes.* Articles 28. and 31. of the XXXIX. Articles concerning, explained, II. 581, 582. See *Church of England —of Rome, Lord's Supper, Presence, Priests, Sacrifice.*

Treatise of La Milletière upon, presented to Charles II., I. 70; and see *Milletière.*

Travers, Walter, Presbyterian Orders of, disallowed by Archbishop Whitgift, III. 135. t.

Treason, worse than oppression, III. 494, 495; and see *Obedience.* A new kind of, devised by the English rebels, called "aggregative," I. 123. To exclude Charles I. from his own town (of Hull) confessed to be, even by the Observator himself, III. 437. See *Charles I., England, Parker Henry.* Impunity claimed by the Scottish Disciplinarians for the pulpit even in cases of, III. 256. Doctrines leading to, spread by the English and Scotch sectaries, I. 42; II. 318; III. 286, 287; and see *Beza, Buchanan, Calvin, Cartwright, Disciplinarians, Discipline, Field John, Goodman Christopher, Greville Fulke, Humble Motion, Knox, Languet, Martin Marprelate, Presbyterians, Scotland.* Similar doctrines spread by Romanists, *ib.*; and see *Bellarmine, Bishop of Rome, Court of Rome, Jesuits, Mariana, Simancas, Stephen III.* Pope, *Zachary I.* Pope. A happy thing if a General Council could be called to denounce an anathema against them, *ib.* Of Papists in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, II. 114, 115; and see *Priests Anglo-Romanist, Romanists English.*

Tredagh, see *Drogheda.*

Trent, Council of; see *Council of Trent.*

Trevern, J. F. M., Bishop of Aire—of Strasburg, in 1824, tacitly gives up the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f.

Trèves or *Triers*, Archbishop of, in 863; see *Council of Metz.* Archbishop of, in 1077, determination of the, against Pope Gregory VII., I. 217. Catechism of, II. 477.

Trevet, Nicolas, testimony of, to the story of Dinoth, II. 544.

Triers, see *Trèves.*

Trinity, The Holy, rule in Theology, that "Opera Trinitatis ab extra sunt indivisa," IV. 374. Hobbes's grievous errors concerning, IV. 526.

"*Trinitatis Speculum*," or "Glass of the Trinity," meaning of, I. 58.

Trullan Council; see *Council, The Trullan.*

Truth, of God; see *God, Truth of.* Our conceptions are not the touchstone of, IV. 456—459. To be sought in reason, not in vulgar notions, IV. 176. A certain and received, not to be deserted because hard to be understood, IV. 155. A man may know a, certainly, yet not know the manner of it, IV. 419. Hobbes maketh the magistrate supreme arbiter of theological, IV. 540. See *Hobbes.*

Tuam, Archbishops of; see *Maxwell, Vesey.*

Tubingen, Divines of; see *Melancthon.*

Tunstall, Cuthbert, L.L.D., Bishop of London—of Durham, 1522—1559, supported the regal supremacy, II. 295. 505. Sermon of, in behalf of the regal supremacy, preached at St. Paul's Cross in 1534, I. 120, 121. u; II. 218. 503. Epistle of, to Cardinal Pole, in behalf of the regal supremacy, I. 122; II. 503. Character of, given by Sanders, with respect to this, II. 505, 506; III. 59.

Sent to Queen Katherine with others to persuade her to lay aside the title of Queen, II. 188.

Efforts used to induce him to conform, upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, III. 231. Was named in the first commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker, III. 72. Committed to Abp. Parker's custody at Lambeth, III. 86. f. 217. 231. Deprived, and when, III. 73. c. 231, 232. Death of, at Lambeth, III. 73. c. 86. f. 232.

Turberville, James, Bishop of Exeter 1555—1559; deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, and at what time, III. 232. Died long after his successor's consecration, *ib.;* and see *Alley.* Mistake respecting, in Le Neve, *ib.*

Turbes, William, Bishop of Norwich 1146—1171, statute of Clarendon forced against, by Henry II., for publishing a Papal excommunication without the King's license, II. 442.

Turks, The, whether Antichrist or no; see *Antichrist.* Tenths first imposed upon the clergy by the Popes as a stock for the defence of Christendom against, I. 216; II. 423—425. Mr. Serjeant's ignorant talk about, II. 619. Book of Mr. Reynolds against the English Church called Calvino-Turcismus, III. 125, 126; and see *Reynolds, William.*

Turnbull, Hugh, Canon of Canterbury in 1559, but not present at Archbishop Parker's election, III. 193. Apparently not deprived, III. 193. b.

Turner, Rev. Matthias, chaplain to Lord Scudamore; see *Grotius.*

Twelve Tables, law of the, respecting the power of a father over his child, IV. 569. Law of the, against privilegia, II. 109, 110.

Twisse, William, D.D., correspondence of, with Archbishop Ussher, respecting the Sabbath and Lord's Day, V. 75. p. 76. 78.

Tyrants, The Thirty, at Athens, the Observator's groundless comparison between the Royalists at York in 1642-3 and, retorted, III. 495, 496.

U.

Ubiquity of God; see *God, Ubiquity of.*

Uladislaus, King of Poland, perjury of, against Amurath II., how punished, III. 311.

Ulysses, story of, to prove free will, IV. 144. 146.

Umbertus, Cardinal, penned the retractation imposed upon Berengarius by Pope Nicolas II., in 1059, I. 12. Equally in error with Berengarius himself respecting the Real Presence, only in an opposite extreme, I. 12, 13. Condemned for it by the Schoolmen themselves, *ib.*

Unbaptized Infants, see *Infants.*

Unction, see *Extreme Unction.*

Understanding, definition of the, IV. 290. 417. The will and the, explained, IV. 288. The will and the, two powers of the reasonable soul, IV. 410. How the, giveth to objects their proper weight, IV. 417. Theory of necessity grounded upon the efficacy of the last dictate of the, IV. 61. 147. 152. That theory contradicted by the facts, IV. 147. The, may be equally balanced between two alternatives, IV. 148. See *Liberty, Necessity, Reason, Will.*

Undertakers, in Ireland in 1641, Act of Parliament for the, III. 459.

Underwood, Rev. Mr., I. ciii.

Union, between Christian Churches, and between Romanists and Protestants; see *Reconciliation.*

United Provinces, growth of the, from "Distressed Orders," to the style of "High and Mighty States," V. 143. Political supremacy claimed by the civil magistrate in the, in ecclesiastical causes, III. 244. 256; and see *Synod of Dort.* The liberties of the Church of England the same as those of the, II. 443. See *Brabant.*

Unity, Christian communion does not imply, in all opinions, I. 105, 106; and see *Communion, Opinions.*

St. Paul's bands of, in his Epistle to the Ephesians, II. 319. 608. The Pope not included in them, *ib.* A Headship of Order, without one of power, sufficient for; see *Papacy, Primacy, Schism.* Mr. Serjeant's two

rules of, answered, II. 467. 496; and see *Serjeant.*

The Pope and Court of Rome did break the bonds of, not the Church of England, in the separation between the two Churches, II. 388. 394, 395; and see *Church of England—of Rome, Separation.* The grounds of the Church of England sufficient for reforming (which she did), although not for violating unity (which she did not), II. 571. 580; and see *Church of England, Schism, Separation.*

Unity, Beginning of; see *Beginning of Unity.*

Universals, nothing but words, according to Hobbes, IV. 424.

Universe, variety and perfection of the, destroyed by the opinion of necessity, IV. 109.

Universities, English; see *University of Cambridge—of Oxford.*

———, *Foreign,* decree of the, in favour of Henry VIII.'s divorce from Queen Katherine, I. 123; II. 188; and see *University of Anjou—Bologna—Bourges—Lisbon—Orleans—Padua—Paris—Toulouse.*

University of Anjou—of Bologna—of Bourges, condemned Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine as unlawful, I. 123; II. 188.

——— *of Cambridge,* decree of the, against the Papal supremacy in England, in 1534, I. 114; II. 97. 501. In favour of Henry VIII.'s divorce, I. 123; II. 188. Rule of the mess at the, in Bramhall's time, brought to illustrate liberty of election, IV. 37. 40. See *Corpus Christi College of, Sidney Sussex College of.*

——— *of Lisbon,* answers of the, to the States of Portugal, concerning the power of the Pope in that kingdom, I. 239.

——— *of Orleans,* condemned Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine as unlawful, I. 123; II. 188.

——— *of Oxford,* exempted by Pope Boniface VIII. from the jurisdiction of (Thomas Arundel) the Archbishop of Canterbury, but his Bull set aside by Richard II. and Henry IV., I. 168; II. 448. Decree of the, against the Papal supremacy in England, in 1534, I. 114; II. 97. 501. In favour of Henry VIII.'s divorce from Queen Katherine, I. 123; II. 188.

——— *of Padua,* condemned Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine as unlawful, I. 123; II. 188.

University of Paris, condemned Pope John XXII. for heresy, I. 254. Appealed from Pope Leo X. to a General Council, I. 223. Condemned Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine as unlawful, I. 123; II. 188. See *Gerson, Sorbonne.*

——— *of Toulouse,* condemned Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Katherine as unlawful, I. 123; II. 188.

Unjust Laws, see *Laws.*

Upsala, Archbishop of; see *Olaus.*

Urban II., Pope 1088—1099, Bull of, constituting Roger Earl of Sicily, and his heirs, Papal legates in Sicily, I. 138. 229, 230; II. 145. 512; and see *Kings of Spain, Sicily.* Entertained Anselm of Canterbury at the Council of Barre, as "the Pope," or "Apostle, of another world," I. 164. Expostulation of the English Bishops with Anselm for submitting to, II. 458.

——— *V.,* Pope 1362—1370, constitution passed by Othobone the legate of, not received in England, I. 139; II. 429. 433.

——— *VI.,* Pope 1378—1379, at Rome, at the commencement of the great Western schism; declared to be Pope by the King and Parliament of England 2 Rich. II., I. 140.

——— *VIII.,* Pope 1623—1644, moderation of, I. 68. Added the seminary to the Congregation De Propagandâ Fide, I. 66. h. Case of, with Philip IV. of Spain, I. 230. 278; and see *Castile Estates of, Philip IV.* King of Spain. Treatment by, of the Portuguese Church, I. 237—239; and see *Bishops Portuguese, Church Portuguese.* Quarrel of, with the Duke of Parma, I. 246. Reception of the Bull of, against Jansenius, in Brabant and Flanders, I. 236, 237; II. 443, 444.

Uriah, case of David and, IV. 312. 399. Hobbes mistaken in making the act of killing, to have been from God, IV. 74.

Ussher, James, D.D., Bishop of Meath, Archbishop of Armagh, 1621—1655; friendship of, with Bishop Bramhall, I. xxi; V. 74. Letters to, from Bramhall, I. lxxxix. xcv. Letter of, to Bramhall, respecting the latter's book called Serpent-Salve, I. xxxi. c. Sermon of Bramhall's sent to, I. xxxi. c; V. 91. a.

Letter of, to Bramhall, giving an

account of Lord Strafford's death, I. xxi. Was with Strafford at his death, I. xxi; V. 84. Friendly offices between Strafford and, V. 83, 84. Differed considerably from the ecclesiastical views of Strafford and Bramhall, I. xxi. Yet acted cordially with them, I. xxi; V. 74. Was forced by Strafford's decision of character into subserviency to him, V. 83. t. False accusation brought by Heylin against, of having advised Charles I. to sign the warrant for Strafford's execution, V. 83—85.

Conduct of, at the Irish Convocation of 1634, respecting the introduction of the English Articles into the Church of Ireland, I. xxxvi; V. 80. 82, 83. Required of his clergy subscription to both Irish and English Articles, V. 81. o. Opposition of, to the introduction of the English canons into the Church of Ireland, I. vii; V. 80. 82.

Tracts of, upon the Sabbath and Lord's Day, V. 20. s. 74. n. 75. p. 81. p. Published after his death by Dean Bernard, V. 74, 75. Divers things therein would have been omitted, had he published them himself, V. 76. Differences between Bramhall and, concerning the question of the Sabbath and Lord's Day, V. 78—80. 84. x. Undeserved censure passed by, upon Andrewes, Mede, Heylin, White, V. 76.

Indiscreet censure of, upon the custom of bowing to the Altar, and of placing it at the east end of the quire, and of bowing at the name of Jesus, V. 76, 77.

Terms of re-union between Christians proposed by, III. 571, 572; and see *Reconciliation.*

Death of, V. 75. o. Character and defence of, V. 83—85.

Usurpations, of the Pope; see *Bishop of Rome.*

V.

Valens, Emperor of Rome, an Arian, II. 229.

Valentinian I., the elder, Emperor of Rome, no witness to Papal authority, II. 227. 229, 230. Law of, limiting gifts to the Church, attributed wrongly to Theodosius, I. 141, 142; II. 230. Complaints of St. Ambrose and St. Jerom respecting it, *ib.* Other ecclesiastical laws of, II. 230. Confirmed St. Ambrose's election to the see of Milan, *ib.*

Valentinian II., Emperor of Rome, a young novice, misled by his Arian mother, II. 227. Conduct of St. Ambrose towards, respecting the Basilicæ, III. 351—353. Died unbaptized, yet considered by St. Ambrose as "baptizatus voto," II. 390; V. 174.

——— *III.*, Emperor of Rome, no witness to Papal authority, II. 226, 227. Refused to hold communion with Pope Sixtus III., I. 102. Convented Pope Sixtus III. before his tribunal, I. 172, 173.

Valentinians, The, an heretical sect, II. 97.

Valesius; see *Walsh, Peter.*

Varro, Caius Terentius, noble behaviour of the Romans towards, after the battle of Cannæ, IV. 558.

Vasquez, or *Vazquez*, admissions of, respecting Transubstantiation, I. 14. 17. Respecting the Iconomachi, I. 9. Extravagant speculations of, respecting Transubstantiation, I. 18. And respecting the permanence of the character impressed in Holy Orders, V. 209, 210.

Venantius, see *Robertus.*

Venice, Republic of, laws of the, respecting ecclesiastical matters, I. 240. Laws of the, restricting the entrance into the state of clergy with forbidden orders, I. 125. Law of the, limiting gifts to the clergy, I. 142. Argument of the Venetian orator to Pope Paul V. respecting it, I. 142, 143.

Origin of the troubles of the, with the Popes, in 1605, 1606, I. 142. 240. Bull of Pope Paul V. against the, I. 240. It was slighted by the, I. 241. Doctrines of the Venetian preachers, I. 242. Difference between England and the, in their several departures from obedience to Rome, I. 244. The chiefest difference between England and the, in this point, I. 245. Conclusion of the troubles of the, with the Pope, *ib.* Did as much towards the Popes as England, I. 240—245. Privileges of the, not granted by the Popes, I. 243. Bulls of Popes granting privileges to the, *ib.* See *Paolo, Padre.*

Troublous condition of the, in past times, III. 427. Aristocratical law of the, whence its glory is perpetuated, III. 298, 299.

Venne, Captain, the Parliamentarian, impeached by King Charles I., III. 413, 414.

Verulam, Lord; see *Bacon, Francis.*

Vesey, John, D.D., Bishop of Limerick,

Archbishop of Tuam, 1672—1716; Life of Archbishop Bramhall by, entitled Athanasius Hibernicus, I. iii. And republished as abridged by Morant, I. iii—xxxv. Edited Bramhall's Works in 1674—1677, I. xxv.

Vestments, changes in the, worn at the celebration of the Holy Communion in the Church of England, at the time of the Reformation, III. 204. k. 205. r. Hooper's contumacy respecting, see *Hooper*. Coverdale's irregularity respecting, see *Coverdale*. Contentions in the Church of England about, at the Reformation, II. 75, 76.

Vic, Anne Charlotte de; see *De Vic, Anne Charlotte*.

——, *Sir Henry de*; see *De Vic, Sir Henry*.

Victor I., Pope 192—201, dispute of, with Polycrates, respecting the time of observing Easter, I. 130; II. 74; V. 47. Excommunicated the Eastern Churches on account of it, I. 161; II. 74. 139. Condemned for so doing by Irenæus and the Fathers of that age, II. 75. 591. 636.

Of the legates sent by, into Scotland, II. 169.

——— *IV.*, declared Pope in 1160, by the Emperor Frederic I. and the Council of Pavia, I. 206, 207.

——— *Antiochenus*, expressions of, respecting the Presence of Christ in the Holy Eucharist, I. 10. r.

Victory of Truth, for the Peace of the Church; an Epistle from M. de la Milletière to the King of Great Britain (Charles II.) to invite his Majesty to embrace the Catholic Faith, I. cxxi—cl. Account of it, I. xxvi. cxl. d. See *Milletière*.

Vienna, in France; see *Vienne*.

———, *Archbishop of*; see *Guy*.

Vienne, Council of; see *Council of Vienne*.

———, *Primacy of*; see *Primates of Vienne*.

Vigilius, Pope, died in 555; communion of, forborne by a large portion of the Occidental Churches, I. 102. Refused to be present at the Fifth General Council, in 553, II. 249. Banished in consequence by the Emperor Justinian, *ib.* Artifice of, to secure authority over the new Patriarchate of Justiniana Prima, I. 138. 178.

Vincentio Parpalia; see *Parpalia, Vincentio*.

Vincentius Lirinensis, rule of, to call nothing in question, which hath been believed always, everywhere, by all Christians, II. 463; V. 271; and see *Consent, Universal*. Passage from, respecting a growth of the Faith without a change of it, II. 477.

Vindication, of (Bramhall) Himself and the Episcopal Clergy, from the Presbyterian charge of Popery as managed by Mr. Baxter; by Bishop Bramhall, Works Part ii. Discourse iii, III. 497—582. Contents of, III. 499—502. Occasion of, I. xxxi; III. 503. b. When and where written, III. 539. p. 540. 577. When and how published, I. xxxi; III. Pref. Violent preface prefixed to, by Dr. Samuel Parker; see *Marvel Andrew, Parker Samuel*.

———, *A Just*, of the Church of England, from the Unjust Charge of Criminous Schism; see *Just Vindication*.

——— *of True Liberty*, from antecedent and extrinsecal necessity; see *Defence of True Liberty*.

Viret, Jean, assisted at the Colloquy of Poissy, I. 68. o.

Virgin Mary, The Blessed; see *Mary, The Blessed Virgin*.

Virgil, quotation from, respecting the power of God over fate, IV. 116.

Virginia, no Bishops in, during the reigns of James I. and Charles I., I. 275.

Virtue, Occult, or influence, IV. 306; and see *Stars*.

Virtues, Theological, what they are, IV. 58.

Vision, theory of, held by Bramhall, IV. 291. How the object is the cause of, *ib.*

———, *The Beatifical*, decried by Hobbes as unintelligible, IV. 535.

———, *Knowledge of*, as distinguished from knowledge of approbation, IV. 60.

Vitalianus, Pope 657—672; see *Theodore*.

Vocation, see *Mission*.

Volition, what is meant by, IV. 285. Hobbes confounds the act of, with the will itself, IV. 164. 395. See *Will*.

Volo velle, the expression defended upon Scaliger's authority, IV. 287. 450.

Voluntariness, doth not depend on the will of others, IV. 297—300. Natural agents act determinately not voluntarily, IV. 393.

Voluntary Actions, see *Actions of Free Agents*.

Voluntas Signi—Beneplaciti; see *God, Will of*.

Vossius, so far assented to Episcopacy

as to hold a prebend in England, III. 536.

Vow, see *Dispensations*. A right Hobbist cannot, as he ought, IV. 358.

W.

Wadsworth, James, an Anglo-Romanist writer, once a member of the Church of England, III. 100. u. Controversy of, with Bishop Bedell, III. 80. p. 100. u. Account of, III. 100. u. Affirmed in 1615 an "attempted" consecration at the Nag's Head, III. 39. f. 42, 43. 100, 101. Yet bears witness to the Register of the consecration of Abp. Parker, as of a subsequent actual consecration, III. 100. Must have seen that Register before 1605, III. 100. u.

Waldenses, The, beginning of, very ancient, II. 317. Seceded from the Bishop of Rome in the time of Pope Hildebrand, II. 451. Eulogy of St. Bernard upon their faith and conversation, *ib.* Had Bishops, II. 62; III. 531, 532. And gave Episcopal ordination to the Fratres Bohemi under the name of "Seniores," *ib.* Affirmed in the year 1120, that the Great Antichrist was come, in the persons of the then governors of the Roman Church, II. 451. Cruelties enacted against, by the Church of Rome, I. 48; II. 317.

Waldensis, admits the original of Shrift to be human, V. 223. r.

Wales, incorporated with England by Act of Parliament 27 Hen. VIII., III. 465.

——, *Church of*; see *Caerleon, Church of Wales*, St. *David, Giraldus Cambrensis, Menevia, St. David's*.

Walo Messalinus, see *Salmasius*.

Walpole, Michael, principal of the English Jesuits, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, treasonable doctrine of, II. 114.

Walsh, ——, titular Archbishop of Cashel, imprisoned by Lord Strafford when Lord Deputy of Ireland, but dismissed after three or four days, II. 124, 125.

——, or *Valesius, Father Peter*, affirmed the validity of the English Ordinal, in 1674 and 1686, III. 115. g.

Wandesford, Sir Christopher, presented Mr. Bramhall to the rectory of Elvington, I. iv. Joined Viscount Wentworth in inviting him to Ireland, I. v. Letter from, to Bishop Bramhall, I. lxxxv. j. Letter to, from Abp. (then Mr. John) Bramhall, in 1628, V. end of Pref. Attended by Abp. Bramhall on his death bed, V. Pref. b. Funeral sermon for, preached by Abp. Bramhall, *ib.*

War, Hobbes teacheth, that unconfederate states may make, upon each other without any warning, IV. 552. And that no man is bound to go to warfare, IV. 553. See *Nature, State of.*

Ward, Samuel, D.D., Archdeacon of Taunton, and Master of Sidney Sussex College Cambridge 1609—1643, III. 568. a. Saying of, respecting the Schoolmen, III. 568. Was one of the English deputies to the Synod of Dort, III. 568. a.

——, *Thomas*, an Anglo-Romanist, scurrilous books of, respecting English orders, in 1688, 1715, 1719, asserting the Nag's Head fable, III. 39. f.

Ware, Sir James, article of, respecting Abp. Bramhall, in his Comment. de Præsul. Hiberniæ, I. iii.

Warham, William, L.L.D., Bishop of London, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1503—1533; supported the Regal supremacy, II. 218. 295. Words said to have been spoken by, to King Henry VIII., justifying the Regal supremacy, I. 120; II. 100, 503. But his other acts inconsistent with them, I. 120. u. Omissions in the Archiepiscopal Register of, III. Pref.

——, or *Mills, John*, Canon of Canterbury; see *Mills*.

Warning, Fair; see *Fair Warning*.

Warton, see *Wharton*.

Waste, Statute of; see *Statute of Waste*.

Watson, Rev. Richard, chaplain to Lord Hopton, author of a second Fair Warning in defence of Bramhall's, I. xxx; III. Pref. Published Dr. Barnes's Catholico-Romanus Pacificus, V. 209. t.

——, *Thomas, D.D.*, Bishop of Lincoln 1557—1559, deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, and when, III. 232. An alleged witness at second-hand to the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f. 107. In the custody successively of Bps. Guest and Cox, III. 108. Afterwards prisoner in Wisbeach Castle, III. 107, 108. Death of, III. 232.

——, *William*, a Roman Catholic Priest, treason of, against James I., III. 369. Acts of, declared treason, although committed before James's coronation, *ib.*

Wax Tapers, benediction of, upon Easter Eve in the Roman Church, V. 131. t. Expressions in the hymn sung upon that occasion, V. 131.
Wednesday, ever esteemed a fast in the Church, V. 12.
Welch, a Presbyterian minister, insolent expressions of, from the pulpit, against King James I., III. 259.
Wenceslaus, Emperor of Germany, occasion taken of the deprivation of, by Pope Boniface IX., to advance the Papal claim of concurrence in the election of the German Emperors, I. 203.
Wentworth, Peter, Member of the House of Commons in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, committed by the Queen during the sitting of Parliament for his conduct in the House, III. 392. 394.
————, *Thomas*, Viscount Wentworth and Earl of Strafford, Lord Deputy of Ireland; invited Bramhall to Ireland, I. v. vi. lviii, lix. Letter to, from Bp. Bramhall, I. lxxxiii. Treatment of the Roman Catholics in Ireland by Bp. Bramhall and, II. 124. Idle story respecting the hopes entertained of the conversion of, to the Church of Rome, II. 550. Efforts of, in conjunction with Bramhall, in behalf of the Irish Church, I. vii. lix. Part taken by, in the Irish Convocation of 1634, V. 80—83. The first of the Irish canons, declaring the adoption by the Irish Church of the English Articles, written by, and carried by his authority, V. 80. m. Was no cause of the Irish Rebellion, III. 455. Charles I.'s coronation oath no reason for his assenting to the condemnation of, by the Parliament, III. 420. Story refuted, of the grudge between, and Abp. Ussher, and that the latter caused Charles I. to sign the warrant for the death of, V. 83—85. Abp. Ussher's letter respecting the death of, I. xxi. Abp. Ussher was the spiritual adviser of, at the time of his death, V. 84. Voluntary petition of, to King Charles I., that he would sign the warrant for his death, III. 420. Proviso, that the case of, should not be drawn into a precedent, III. 436.
Westminster, Coronation Oath of the Kings of England taken at, I. 149. Tumults at, in the commencement of the Great Rebellion, III. 413. 436.
———— *Assembly*; see *Assembly Westminster, Cawdrey Daniel, Palmer.*
Westminster, Bishop of; see *Thirlby.*
————, *Cathedral of*, when founded, II. 145.
————, *Parliament of*; see *Parliament of Westminster.*
————, *Statute of*; see *Statute of Westminster.*
West Saxons; see *Saxons, West.*
Weston, Edward, D.D., attack of, in 1602, upon English Orders, III. 131. e.
————, *Robert*, Chancellor of Ireland, account of, III. 180. s. Signed the certificate of the legal validity of the second commission to confirm and consecrate Abp. Parker, III. 180.
Wharton, or *Warton*, or *Parfew, Robert, B.D.*, Bishop of St. Asaph—of Hereford, 1536—1558; consecration of, III. Pref. 142. p. Died shortly before the death of Queen Mary, III. 232.
Whitaker, William, D.D., Master of St. John's College Cambridge 1586—1595, and Professor of Divinity; account of, III. 134. p. An able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67. Defence of the doctrine of, respecting Orders, III. 134, 135; V. 250, 251—254. Opinion of, concerning Romish Orders in England, V. 250. Of the assertion of, that English orders are not derived from those of Rome, V. 251—254.
White, Francis, D.D., Bishop of Carlisle—of Norwich—of Ely, 1626—1638; an able polemic writer for the Church of England, I. 67. Treatise of, upon the Sabbath and Lord's Day, V. 36. 40. 47, 48. Translation by, of a passage of St. Gregory, needlessly cavilled at by Abp. Ussher, V. 76.
——, *John, D.D.*, Bishop of Lincoln—of Winchester, 1554—1559; deprived upon Queen Elizabeth's accession, and at what time, III. 232. Died before his successor's consecration, *ib.* and see *Horne.*
Whitgift, John, D.D., Bishop of Worcester, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1577—1604; disallowed the orders of foreign Presbyterians in 1584, in the case of Travers, III. 135. t. High expressions of, respecting the Regal supremacy, V. 233. 235.
Whitsuntide, one of the two ordinary seasons of Baptism in the primitive Church, V. 177.
Whittingham, William, Dean of Durham

1563—1579, seditious proceedings of, at Frankfort, in 1554, III. 317.
Whole, half more than the, a truth in Ethics, II. 484.
Wicelius, a Roman Catholic divine, account of, III. 511. e. A true lover of peace, III. 511. Labours of, to further a re-union between Romanists and Protestants, III. 511. e.
Wickliffe, John, condemnation of, by the Council of Constance, I. 250; II. 387. Denial by, of the Papal supremacy, condemned by that Council with a qualification only, *ib.*
Wife, texts of Scripture enforcing the subordination of a, to her husband, IV. 570. Hobbes's principles destroy that subordination, IV. 569, 570.
Wilfrid, Archbishop of York 667—711, in the reigns of Egbert of Kent, and Egfrid and Alfred of Northumbria; the first great appellant from England to Rome, I. 133; II. 131, 132. 438. Case of, discussed, I. 133—135. Bramhall's mistake respecting the settlement of it, I. 135. g. Appeal of, the first and only one made to Rome from England for the first thousand years after Christ, II. 438. It was an equitable rather than a legal appeal, II. 438, 439. The Pope's decision in it was not admitted, II. 132. 439.

Was made Bishop of Selsey (now Chichester) by King Edelwalk about 680, during his banishment from the see of York, I. 146.

Disputation between Bishop Coleman and, about the observation of Easter, II. 135. 176.
Wilihade, an Englishman, sent to convert the Germans, II. 232. Made Bishop of Breme by Charlemagne, *ib.*
Will of God; see *God, Will of.* Antecedent, and consequent, distinguished, II. 58.
—— *of Man*, defined by Scaliger to be "intellectus extensus ad habendum aut faciendum quod cognoscit," IV. 394. The, and the understanding, explained, IV. 288. The, and the understanding, two powers of the rational soul, IV. 410. The rational, is either a faculty of the reasonable soul, or the reasonable soul itself as it willeth, IV. 389. The faculty of willing is the, IV. 438. Hobbes confounds the act of volition with the, itself, volitio with voluntas, IV. 164. 395. And confounds liberty and the, IV. 265.

Is not a necessary cause of its own particular acts, IV. 170. 450. Is not a passive instrument as the sword in one's hand, IV. 268. The willing of man is not like a falling stone, IV. 387. 411. 446. 462. Elicit acts of the, cannot be necessitated, imperate can, IV. 130. 399. How far fear and the other passions determine the, IV. 124. 134. Difference between diversion and determination of the, IV. 253. Motives cannot compel the, IV. 136. Of the doctrine that the last act of the reason necessitates the; see *Judgment, Reason, Understanding.* How the, followeth the judgment of reason, IV. 288. Man may will contrary to the dictate of reason, IV. 412. A sufficient cause inclusive of the, only hypothetically necessary, IV. 173. Sufficient causes include not the actual determination of the, IV. 173, 174. See *Causes.* Other causes concur with the, to produce an action, IV. 448. A true, may be changed, IV. 296. Freedom of the, proved from Scripture, and from reason; see *Actions, Election, Freewill, Liberty, Necessity.*

Sin, to be sin at all, must be the act of a free, against a just law, IV. 114; and see *Law, Sin.*

The, no more than the bias of a bowl, according to Hobbes, IV. 271. Hobbes makes the, to be compelled, IV. 377. Hobbes's contradictory assertions as to the power of law over the, IV. 589. Reply to Hobbes's assertion, that liberty to act does not imply liberty to will; see *Liberty.* Hobbes's confusion between thinking and willing, IV. 249, 250. See *Hobbes.*
Will, Last, and Testament, of Archbishop Bramhall, I. cvii—cxii.
Willing, act of; see *Nill, Will.*
Willelmus, see *William.*
Willet, Thomas, notary public, account of, III. 185. j. One of the witnesses to Archbishop Parker's consecration, III. 88. 206. 213. Assisted also at his confirmation, III. 185. Afterwards ordained by Bishop Grindall, III. 185. j.
William the Conqueror, King of England, enjoyed the patronage and investiture of Bishoprics in the Church of England, II. 404. 406, 407. Nominated Lanfranc to the see of Canterbury, I. 146. Possessed legislative power in ecclesiastical affairs, II. 434. Law of, enforcing tithes, II. 428. Prescript of, to Remigius Bishop of Lincoln, II. 434. Laws

of, the same as those of Edward the Confessor, I. 136; II. 439.
William Rufus, King of England, enjoyed the patronage and investiture of Bishoprics in the Church of England, II. 404. 406. Nominated Anselm to the see of Canterbury, I. 146. Anselm himself invested by, II. 406. Held at his death the temporalties of three Bishoprics and nine Abbeys in his own hands, V. 232. a. Asserted the authority of English kings, I. 178.
———, agent of Henry I. of England to Pope Paschal II., resolute speech of, to the Pope, respecting investitures, II. 406.
——— *of Malmesbury*, testimony of, that the nomination and investiture of Bishops in England belongs to the crown, V. 202. l. That King Edgar possessed them, II. 407. That homage was paid of old by Bishops to laymen, II. 417. Opinion of, respecting King Alfred and Archbishop Theodore, in the matter of Archbishop Wilfrid's appeal to Rome, I. 134.
——— *of Newbrigg*, testimony of, that the nomination and investiture of Bishops in England belongs to the crown, V. 203. o.
——— *of Occham*, saying of, to the Emperor Louis of Bavaria, II. 317. 605, 606. Argument of, for the independence of the German Emperors upon the Popes, I. 150.
Williams, Rev. David, books of, in defence of English Orders against the Nag's Head fable, III. 40. f.
———, *John, D.D.*, Bishop of Lincoln—Archbishop of York, 1621—1650, speech of, about the Nag's Head fable, III. 37. That speech a possible origin of the tale concerning Bishop Morton, *ib.*
Wilson, Matthew; see *Knott, Edmund.*
Winchester, Bishops of; see *Andrewes, Bilson, Deneulfus, Edelwald, Fox Richard, Gardiner, Horne, Morley, Neil, Pilkington, White John, Wolsey.*
———, *Parliament of*; see *Parliament of Winchester.*
Wine, pure, used by some Churches in the Holy Eucharist, mixed by others, in the primitive times, yet without controversies, censures, or animosities, I. 9. Water used for, in the Holy Eucharist, by some early heretics, *ib.* Opinion of Melancthon respecting the use of honied water instead of, in the Holy Eucharist, where wine cannot be procured, II. 202. Substitute said to have been used for, in the Holy Eucharist, by some Indian Christians, *ib.* Notion of the Manichees concerning, I. 8, 9.
Wirtemberg, Duke of; see *Eberhard.*
Wisbeach Castle, Watson Bishop of Lincoln and other Romanists confined in, during the latter part of Queen Elizabeth's reign, III. 107, 108. Was the head quarters of the English Romanists at that time, III. 107.
Withred, King of Kent 693—725, ecclesiastical laws of, I. 137; II. 413. Called the Council of Becancelde in 694, II. 141. 414. Presided in it and confirmed its decrees, *ib.* Did not admit the Papal supremacy, II. 142. 234.
Wittenagemot; see *Parliament, English.*
Wittenberg, or *Wirtemberg*; see *Eberhard.*
Wolsey, Thomas, Cardinal, Bishop of Lincoln—of Bath and Wells—of Durham—of Winchester, Archbishop of York, 1514—1531; suppressed forty monasteries in order to found his two Colleges at Oxford and Ipswich, II. 104. Urged on the divorce of Henry VIII. from Queen Katherine for sinister ends, I. 123; II. 187, 188. Contrived and effected a distinction of that mixed body the Parliament into two assemblies, one secular, one ecclesiastical, the latter called the Convocation or Synod, V. 229. Words of, upon his deathbed, I. 35. Alleged præmunire incurred by the English clergy by their consent to the legantine authority of, I. 150.
Wood, Thomas, B.D., Canon of Canterbury in 1559, but not present at Archbishop Parker's election, III. 193. Deprived, III. 193. h. Had been nominated by Queen Mary in 1558 to the Bishopric of St. Asaph, but was not consecrated, III. 232.
Worcester, Battle of, September 3, 1651, I. cxlvii; V. 117.
———, *Bishopric of*, once a suffragan see to the Archbishopric of Caerleon, II. 526.
———, *Bishops of*; see *Bell, Bilson, Dunstan, Freake, Heath, Hooper, Latimer, Morley, Oswald, Pates, Sandys Edwin, Whitgift, Wulstan.*
———, *Florence of*; see *Florence of Worcester.*
———, *Marquis of*; see *Somerset, Henry.*
Works, good, texts attributing the will

to do, to God, IV. 232. Of necessity, piety, and charity, lawful even upon the Sabbath, and upon the Lord's Day in a greater latitude, V. 56.

Works of Archbishop Bramhall; see *Bramhall, John.*

World, arguments of Fathers to prove that the, cannot be spherical; see St. *Augustin, Lactantius.*

Worms, Council of; see *Council of Worms.*

Worship, of God; see *God, Worship of.* Of the Blessed Virgin, see *Mary The Blessed Virgin.* Of the Saints, see *Saints.* Of the Host, see *Lord's Supper.* Of the Crucifix, see *Crucifix.* Of Images, see *Images.* Of Relics, see *Relics.*

Worthington, Thomas, an Anglo-Romanist, translated Bristow's work against the English Church in 1608, III. 125. h. Additions made by, to Bristow's words, unfairly quoted by Le Quien as Bristow's own words, *ib.* Yet even thus there is not a word about the Nag's Head fable, *ib.*

Wotton, Sir Henry, saying of, that "prurigo disputandi scabies Ecclesiæ," I. 8. Another saying of, respecting violent remedies, III. 340. Account by, of the "Young" Parliament, of 1621, III. 405. 430.

———, *Nicholas, L. L. D.*, Dean of Canterbury and of York 1542—1566, account of, III. 186. m. Archbishopric of Canterbury said to have been offered to, by Queen Elizabeth in 1559, and refused, III. 187. m. Presided at the Chapter which elected Archbishop Parker, III. 186—188. Evidence that he was in England during the month of that election, although in France immediately before and in Scotland shortly after, III. Pref. n. 187. m.

Writers, English Protestant, many distinguished polemic, for the English Church, I. 67. Objections to English Orders from the language of, answered, III. 134—136; V. 246; and see *Fulke, Sparke, Sutcliffe, Whitaker.* Alleged language of, about Sacrifice, II. 276, 277. Justification by special Faith, II. 209. The extent of difference between the Roman Church and Protestants, II. 41. 203—205.

———, *Anglo-Romanist*, many distinguished, for the Church of Rome, I. 67. Every, without exception, from 1605 to 1625, mentions the Nag's Head fable, before 1605 not one, III. 39. f; V. 246. u.

Writers, Romish, many, deny the Divine right of the Papacy, II. 376, 377. And the Divine institution of Shrift and Confession, V. 222, 223. And the Romish doctrine of a double matter and form in Ordination, V. 217. Language of, respecting the Creed, II. 473. The freedom of the will, IV. 217. Concupiscence, IV. 439. Some, hold that the desire of Baptism on the part of parents suffices for the salvation of infants where Baptism cannot be had; see *Infants.*

Wrong; see *Evil, Law.*

W., S.; see *Serjeant, William.*

Wulstan, Bishop of Worcester 1062—1095, election of, to the see of Worcester, what share the Pope had in it, V. 203. n.

Y.

Yale, Thomas, L.L.D., Chancellor to Archbishop Parker, account of, III. 180. x. Signed the certificate of the legal validity of the second commission to confirm and consecrate Archbishop Parker, III. 180. Probable share of, in the De Antiq. Brit. Ecclesiæ, III. 12. d.

York, Archbishop of, Primate of England, II. 641. Anciently had jurisdiction over Scotland, II. 181. 530. How that jurisdiction was lost by the, see *Church of Scotland.*

———, *Archbishops of;* see *Grindal, Heath, Lee, Matthews, May, Neil, Sandys Edwin, Sewalus de Bowill, Sharpe, Wilfrid, Williams John, Wolsey, Young.*

———, *Bishop of*, took precedence at the Council of Arles of the Bishop of London, and why, I. 159, 160.

———, *City of*, an imperial city at the time of the Council of Arles, I. 159. Severus the Emperor died at the, *ib.* Constantine the Great said to have been born in the, *ib.* But without probability, I. 159. f. Royal palace of the Roman Emperors called Pertenna, since corrupted into Bederna, where situated in the, I. 159, 160. Severs Hill close to the, so called from the Emperor Severus, I. 159. St. Helen's Church in the, I. 160. St. Martyn's Church in the, Bramhall rector of it in 1617, 1618; see *Bramhall, John.* Was a pattern of loyalty to Charles I., V. 110. The Marquis of Newcastle shut up in the, by Fairfax, in June

1643, V. 110. g. Form of Oath of the burgesses of the, III. 452.
York Minster, Sermon in, before the Marquis of Newcastle, by Bishop Bramhall; see *Bramhall John, Sermon.* Another, for Mr. Slingsby, by Bishop Bramhall, preached in; see *Bramhall John, Slingsby.*
Young, Thomas, L.L.D., Bishop of St. David's, Archbishop of York, 1559—1570; proof of the consecration and translation of, III. 221. 227. One of the Bishops alleged by Champney to have been consecrated at the Nag's Head, III. 43. s.
Ypres, see *Jansenius.*

Z.

Zachary I., Pope 741—752, seditious doctrine of, addressed to Pepin, III. 301. Aided Pepin in his revolt against Childeric, for his own ends, I. 131.
Zanchy, opinion of, respecting the duty of separating from the Church of Rome, II. 271. Respecting episcopacy, III. 480. 483, 484. Maintained a necessity of sinning only in respect of our original corruption, IV. 398. Opinion of, respecting the morality of the Sabbath, V. 16. n. Argument of, answered, that the Fourth Commandment enjoins the sanctification of the *Sabbath* Day, not of the *Seventh*, V. 29.
Zeno, anecdote of, in confutation of fatalism, IV. 82, 83.
Zosimus, Pope 417—418, contention of, with St. Augustine and the African Bishops, respecting appeals to Rome, I. 99. It did not presently render either party schismatical, *ib.* Claim of supremacy grounded by, on a counterfeit canon of the Council of Nice, II. 374. And rejected by the African Bishops, *ib.*
Zuingle, at what time he began to preach, III. 147. Desired episcopacy, if he could have had it, III. 147. 491. 533. Held, that the Church has authority to change or translate the Lord's Day as it pleases, V. 10. d.
Zuinglians, our forefathers were not, III. 168. The, liked episcopacy, if they could have had it, III. 147, 148. 491. 532, 533.
Zurich Letters, when and by whom first published, III. Pref. 217. Contain in themselves complete evidence to the fact of Abp. Parker's consecration and that of the other English Bishops in 1559—1561, as recorded in the Archiepiscopal Register, III. 85. f. 217—224.

THE END.

OXFORD: PRINTED BY I. SHRIMPTON.

London: May 1846.

PREPARING FOR PUBLICATION,

A

NEW AND CAREFULLY EDITED EDITION

OF

BISHOP JEREMY TAYLOR'S WORKS;

WITH THE

LIFE BY BISHOP HEBER,

AND WITH THE

REFERENCES VERIFIED.

IN TWELVE HANDSOMELY-PRINTED VOLUMES, DEMY OCTAVO.

Address.

In consequence of the demand for a new edition of the Works of Bishop Jeremy Taylor, the Proprietors of Bishop Heber's edition have made arrangements with a learned and competent Editor, resident in Oxford, to prepare one which they hope will satisfy the wants expressed by scholars. There has been no modern edition of the Works of this greatest of the writers of the seventeenth century—our "poet divine," as he has been appropriately termed, in which the text has been collated with the original editions, and in which the references have been carefully verified. From the vast stores of learning with which his mind was replete, Bishop Taylor scattered

over his writings illustrative and corroborative quotations in profusion, without, on too many occasions, referring to the precise passages where they occurred; a habit which, while it has exposed him to unfriendly attacks from the enemies of the Church, has also made the task of verifying his references so difficult, that no one has hitherto ventured to undertake the responsible and laborious office of supplying an edition of his works complete in this respect.

The work will be published in demy 8vo. volumes, each containing 600 closely but handsomely printed pages, price Half-a-Guinea each, at intervals of two months. The First Volume will probably be published in January next.

☞ *Subscribers' Names received by the Proprietors, and all Booksellers.*

*** In consequence of the arrangement made with the present Editor being made known to the Committee of the Library of Anglo-Catholic Theology at their last meeting, they consented to withdraw the name of Jeremy Taylor from their list of authors whom they propose to publish in that series.

LONDON:

LONGMAN, BROWN, & CO.; F. & J. RIVINGTON; HATCHARD & SON; HAMILTON & CO.; SIMPKIN & CO.; J. BAIN; E. HODGSON; H. WASHBOURNE; H. C. BOHN; BICKERS & BUSH; C. DOLMAN; G. ROUTLEDGE.

OXFORD: J. H. PARKER.

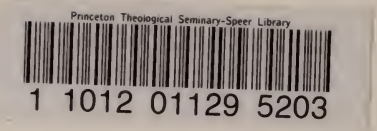
CAMBRIDGE:

J. & J. J. DEIGHTONS;
MACMILLAN, BARCLAY, & MACMILLAN.

LIVERPOOL: G. & J. ROBINSON.

BRISTOL: W. STRONG.

BIRMINGHAM: H. C. LANGBRIDGE.


Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library
1 1012 01129 5203